



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

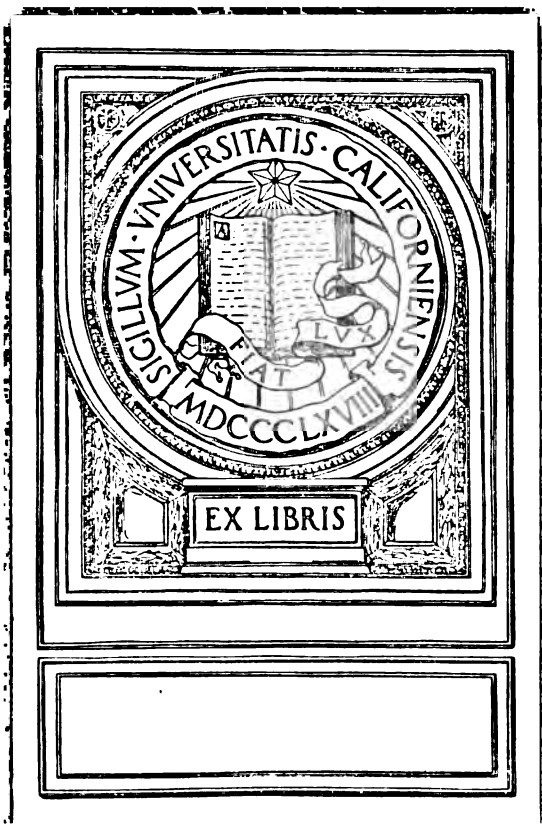
We also ask that you:

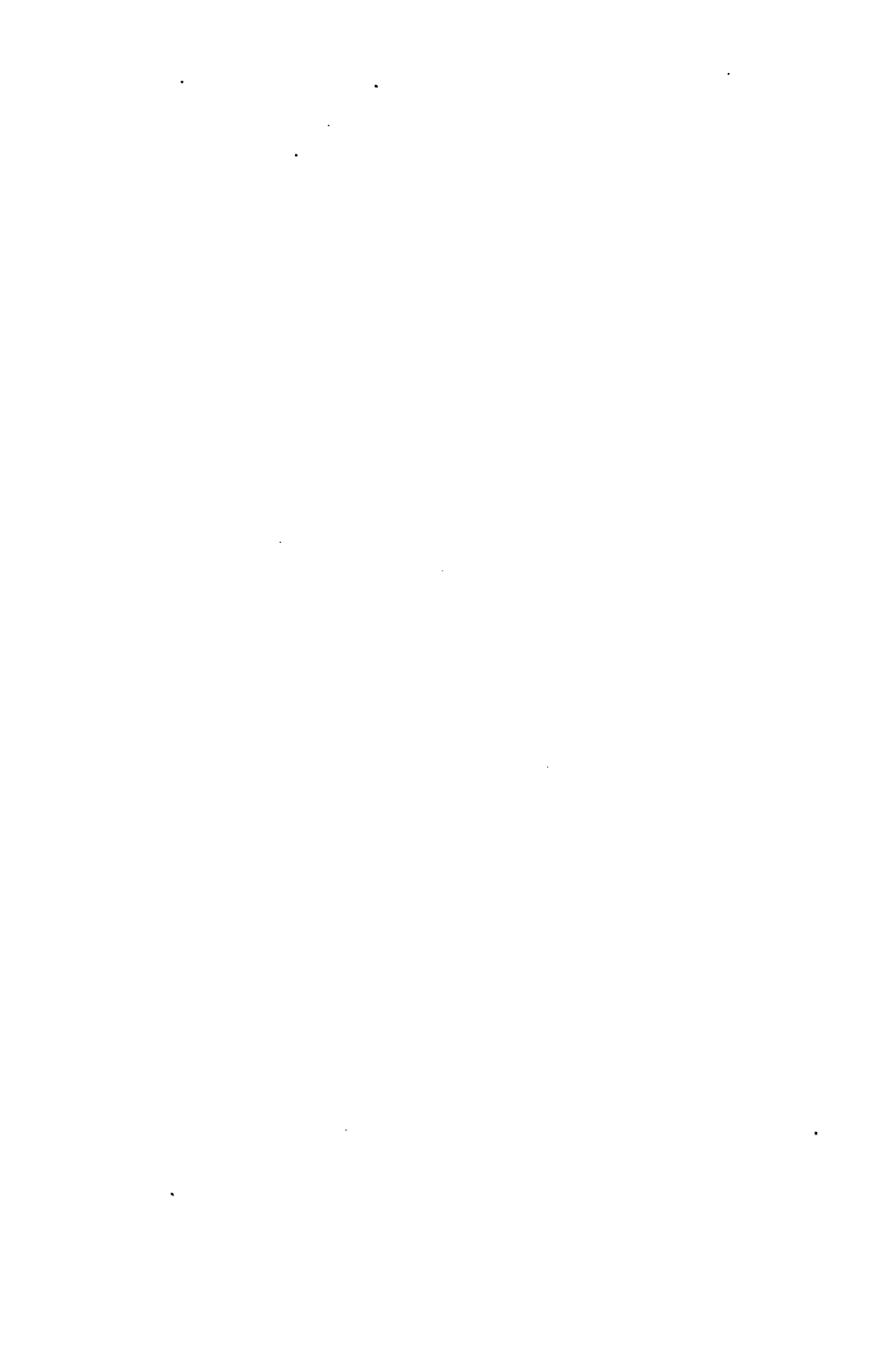
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

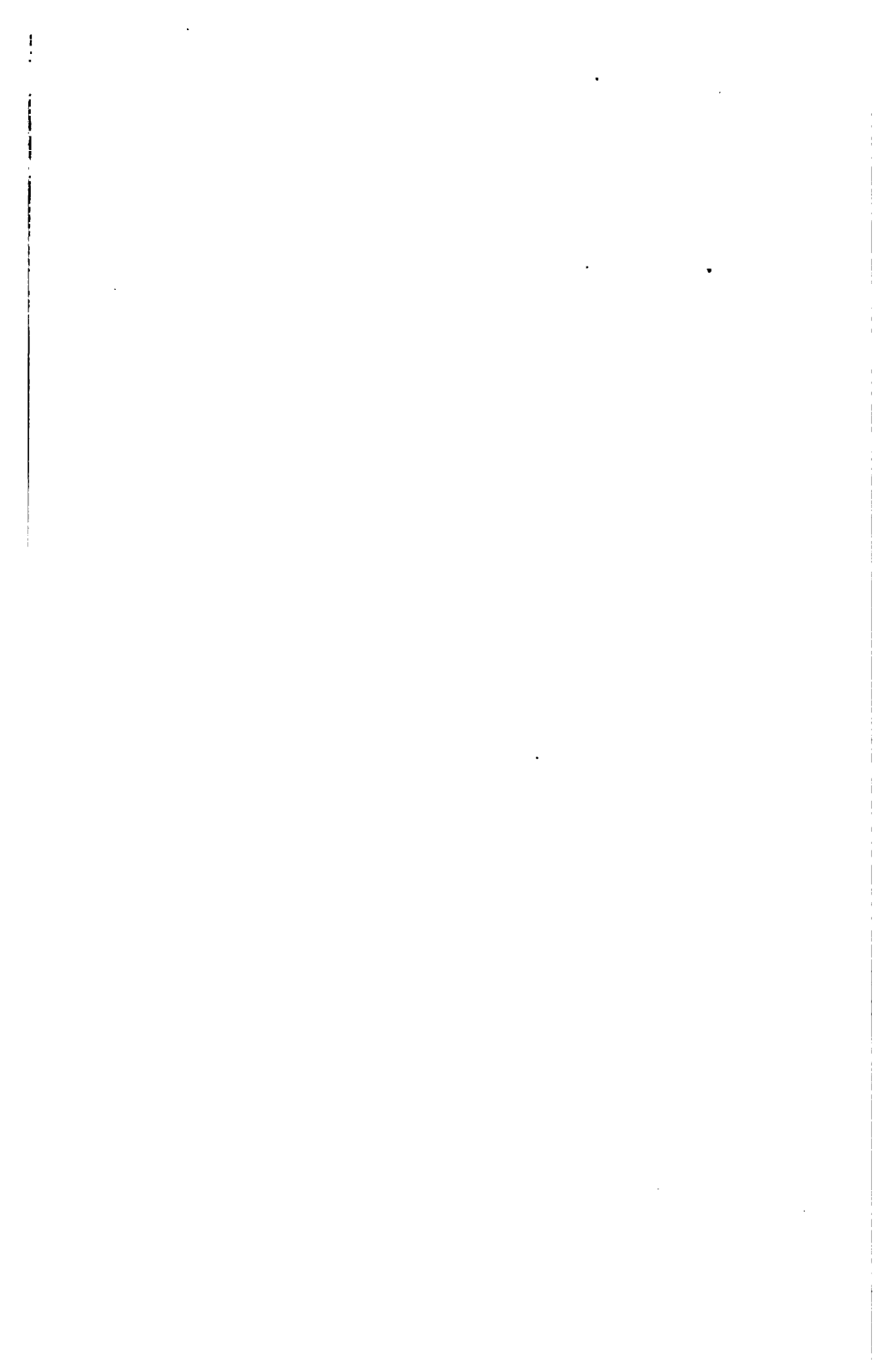
### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

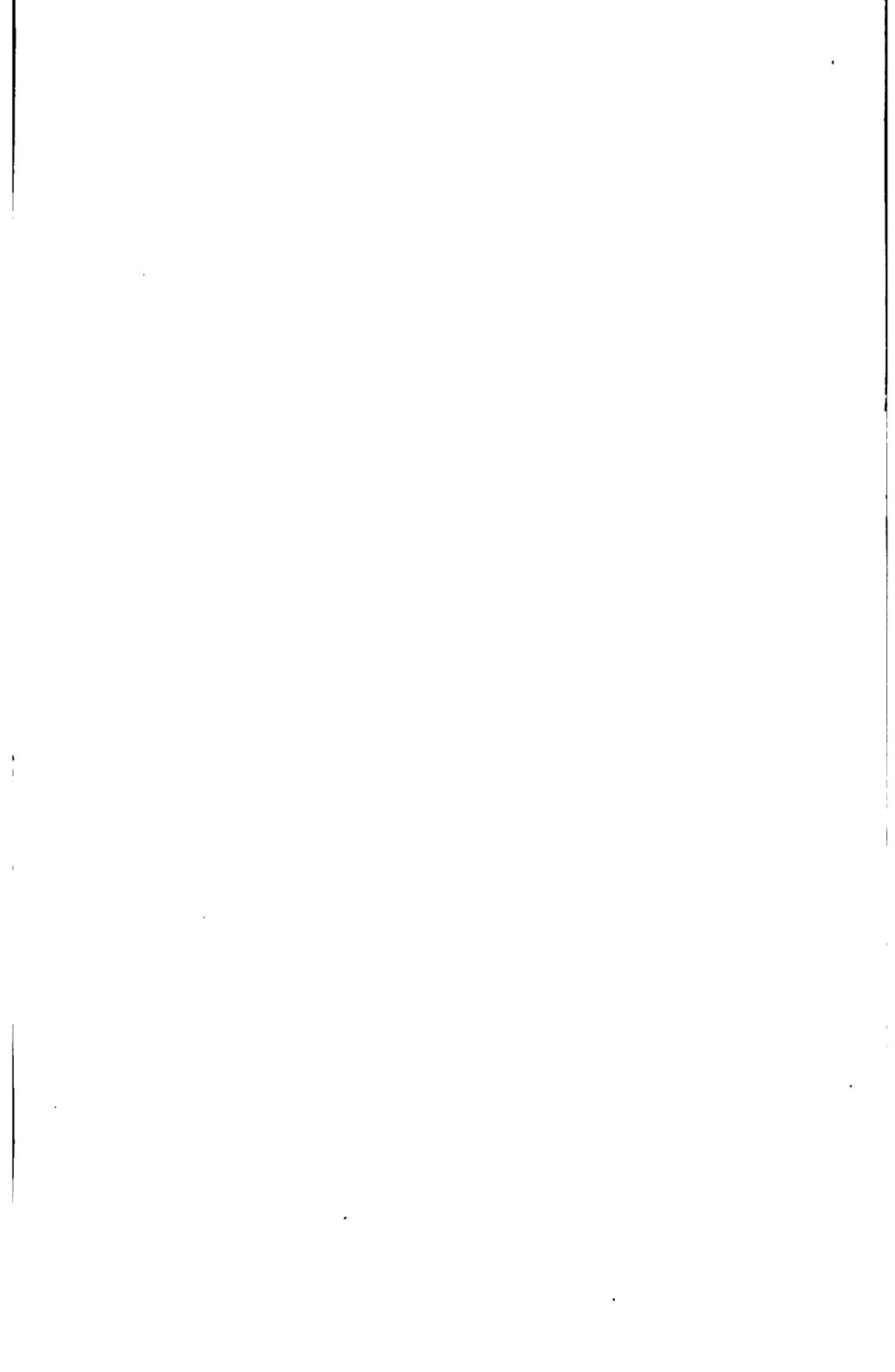












A TEXT-BOOK  
OF  
COLLOQUIAL JAPANESE

BASED ON THE  
**LEHRBUCH DER JAPANISCHEN UMGANGSSPRACHE**

BY  
**Dr. RUDOLF LANGE**  
PROFESSOR OF JAPANESE AT THE SCHOOL OF ORIENTAL  
LANGUAGES UNIVERSITY OF BERLIN

REVISED ENGLISH EDITION

BY  
**CHRISTOPHER NOSS**  
FORMERLY MISSIONARY OF THE REFORMED CHURCH, SENDAI



**METHODIST PUBLISHING HOUSE**

**TOKYO**

—  
**1907**



715  
L274

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED  
COPYRIGHT 1903 BY CHRISTOPHER NOSS  
REPRINTED APRIL 1907  
BY  
THE METHODIST PUBLISHING HOUSE  
TOKYO, JAPAN



# PREFACE

---

The basis of this book is the first volume of the series of *Lehrbücher des Seminars für Orientalische Sprachen*, published at Berlin in 1890. Its author, Dr. Lange, before his appointment at Berlin, had been for a number of years instructor in the German language at the *Daigaku Yobimon* (Preparatory School to the University) in Tōkyō. Since that time all his energies have been devoted to the task of making his countrymen acquainted with the Japanese language and literature.

My own experience as a missionary student of the language having proved the value of this work I prepared an English edition which was printed at Sendai, 1901-1903. After I undertook the task Dr. Lange sent me copious notes of corrections and additions gathered during his ten years' experience as a teacher. Justice to him requires me to state that I used the material thus graciously placed at my disposal with a very free hand, for several reasons. In the first place Dr. Lange had prepared his book with the needs of a German student in view, and while the needs of an English-speaking student are in the main the same, there are many cases in which an explanation intended for the one will not help the other. Secondly, Dr. Lange's notes were in many instances mere suggestions, very fruitful indeed, but not fully developed. And, finally, I felt that I had one advantage over the original author in that I had used his text-book when I first learned my Japanese, and was thus in a position to test it as he could not. My subsequent experience in the use of the language had revealed omissions not so apparent to the author himself. Accordingly it was my aim to recast all the material in such a way as to make it most helpful to the English-speaking student. This book is not a translation and Dr. Lange is not responsible for any errors that it may contain.

If I had been permitted to remain in Japan I might have undertaken a complete reconstruction of the work ; but that is out of the question for the present. A call for a second edition having come unexpectedly soon, I have had time only for a superficial revision, with constant reference to the second German edition, which appeared at Berlin in the early part of this year. The new *Lehrbuch* contains eight hundred pages, of which the last two hundred are devoted to an entirely new German-Japanese vocabulary. Since students now have access to a very satisfactory English-Japanese dictionary it does not seem necessary to include such a feature in the English edition. The improvements in the body of the new German edition were largely anticipated by the former English edition, in the preparation of which, as has been stated, Dr. Lange generously co-operated with me. Accordingly, in the main, the arrangement and the paging remain as before. The selections at the end have been somewhat increased.

The aim of the book is pedagogical rather than scientific ; hence the combination of system and no-system and the numerous repetitions. The pedagogical principle has been applied, for example, in the study of words. When it seems likely to aid the memory of the student to indicate the origin of a word, this is done ; but when the etymology is disputed or apt to be confusing, nothing is said about it and the student must learn the word as a whole. The repetitions in most cases are not accidental but designed. For the student must pass through three stages to become master of an idiom. First, he needs to be thoroughly convinced that there is such an idiom ; secondly, he must learn how to use it, and, thirdly, after he has entirely forgotten its existence he needs to be reminded that he cannot get along very well without it.

A truly scientific grammar of the colloquial is yet to be written. But in one respect this work may claim to be scientific : it has been the constant aim of Dr. Lange, and of myself, to set forth the language as it is actually spoken by the Japan-

ese themselves, not as we would speak it. The sentences have all been taken from the mouths of Japanese and repeatedly reviewed and criticized by competent Japanese. The sentences to be translated from English into Japanese were first written out in Japanese and then translated into English with a view to retranslation.

Dr. Lange acknowledges his obligations to Mr. Tsurutarō Senga and Mr. Tsuji Takahira, who assisted him with his two editions respectively. In the preparation of the former English edition, at every step I leaned heavily on my colleagues and friends Messrs. Tadashi Igarashi, Jirō Maeda and Iwae Irie. The proofs of the present edition have been read by Mr. J. L. Cowen and reviewed by Prof. Isao Matsuda. Thanks are also due to Rev. H. K. Miller and Mr. Cowen for invaluable assistance.

CHRISTOPHER NOSS

LANCASTER, PENNSYLVANIA

November, 1906.

# Contents

## INTRODUCTION

The Japanese language... ..	IX
Sinico-Japanese ... ..	IX
Words derived from western languages ... ..	XIII
The standard colloquial ... ..	XIII
Practical hints... ..	XV
Helps for further study ... ..	XVI

## ORTHOGRAPHY AND PRONUNCIATION

The ideographic script ... ..	XIX
<i>Kana</i> ... ..	XIX
<i>Rōmaji</i> ... ..	XXIII
Vowels ... ..	XXIV
Consonants ... ..	XXVII
Accent ... ..	XXXI

## THE NOUN

Number and gender ... ..	1
<i>Wa</i> and <i>ga</i> ... ..	3
Subordinate subjects ... ..	5
<i>No</i> ... ..	7
<i>Ni</i> ... ..	9
<i>Wo</i> ... ..	11
<i>No</i> substituted for <i>ga</i> ... ..	13
Compounds, VIII, IX... ..	15
Derivatives ... ..	21
PREDICATE ADJECTIVES ... ..	24

## THE PRONOUN

Personal ... ..	27
Honorifics ... ..	31
Demonstratives ... ..	36
“Same”, “such” ... ..	38
Interrogatives ... ..	42
Indefinites ... ..	45
“Every”, “other” ... ..	49
Translation of relatives ... ..	53
“Self”, “one another” ... ..	57

## THE NUMERAL

Native forms and combinations, XXI, XXII. ... ..	61
Chinese forms and units ... ..	67
Dates ... ..	73
Arithmetic ... ..	79

CONTENTS

vii

Numeratives, XXVI—XXVIII,...	82
Ordinals ... ..	93
<b>THE ADJECTIVE</b>	
Inflections ... ..	98
In compounds ... ..	105
Compound adjectives ... ..	109
Forms with <i>na</i> ... ..	113
Forms with <i>no</i> ... ..	119
Adjectival clauses ... ..	123
Forms derived from verbs ... ..	127
Substantivized adjectives ... ..	131
Comparison ... ..	135
<b>THE VERB</b>	
<b>FIRST CLASS—The Tenses</b> ... .. 141	
Conditional and imperative ... ..	147
Negative tenses ... ..	154
Negative conditional and imperative ... ..	158
Subordinative, XLIII., XLIV. ... ..	162
Negative subordinative ... ..	170
Desiderative and alternative ... ..	175
<b>SECOND CLASS</b>	
<i>R</i> group ... ..	179
Verbs in <i>eru</i> and <i>iru</i> ... ..	185
Honorific verbs in <i>ru</i> ... ..	189
<i>T</i> group ... ..	194
<i>S</i> group ... ..	199
<i>Masu, Mösu</i> ... ..	205
<i>Suru</i> ... ..	211
<i>K</i> group ... ..	221
<i>Oku, itadaku</i> ... ..	226
<i>Kuru</i> ' ... ..	230
<i>G</i> group ... ..	235
<i>B</i> and <i>N</i> group ... ..	239
Vowel group ... ..	244
<i>Morau, Shimau</i> ... ..	250
Causatives ... ..	254
Passives ... ..	259
Potentials ... ..	266
Idiomatic uses of the indicative ... ..	272
Uses of the stem ... ..	277
Compounds, LXVI.—LXIX. ... ..	284
Honorifics ... ..	309
<b>THE ADVERB</b>	
Derived from ordinary adjectives ... ..	314

Forms with <i>ni</i> ... ..	319
Forms with <i>to</i> ... ..	325
Duplicatives ... ..	330
Substantives as adverbs... ..	337
Subordinatives as adverbs ... ..	344
Ordinary adverbs ... ..	349
<b>THE POSTPOSITION</b>	
Postpositions proper, LXXVIII.—LXXIX. ... ..	362
Substantives as postpositions ... ..	383
Subordinatives as postpositions ... ..	390
<b>THE CONJUNCTION</b>	
Conjunctions proper ... ..	395
Substantives as conjunctions... ..	406
<b>THE INTERJECTION—APPELLATIONS</b> ... ..	
414	
<b>SYNTAX</b> ... ..	424
<b>STORIES</b> ... ..	427
<b>ANECDOTES</b> ... ..	434
<b>YUME NO GOKE</b> ... ..	444
<b>SHITAKIRI SUZUME</b> ... ..	452
<b>ADDRESS BY MARQUIS ITO</b> ... ..	461
<b>VOCABULARY-INDEX OF JAPANESE WORDS...</b> ... ..	466
<b>VOCABULARY TO THE ENGLISH EXERCISES</b> ... ..	555
<b>GRAMMATICAL INDEX</b> ... ..	586

### NOTE.

The abbreviations will hardly require explanation, except the letter (c), which indicates that a word is of Chinese origin.

Marks of parenthesis ( ) indicate explanations or paraphrases; square brackets [ ] indicate English words which are not to be translated into Japanese.

# INTRODUCTION

## THE JAPANESE LANGUAGE

The Japanese Language is the mother-tongue of about 50,000,000 persons. In Japan proper, excluding the recent accessions to the Empire, such as Taiwan (Formosa), the native population is linguistically homogeneous, with the exception of a few remnants of the aborigines. Even the Ainu, of whom about 18,000 may still be found in Hokkaido and Saghalien, are being rapidly assimilated.

The relation of the Japanese to other languages has not yet been satisfactorily determined. The attempt to discover an affinity with the Aryan languages<sup>a</sup> has, it must be said, not been successful; for the words that are identical or even similar are too few to justify the inference of a common origin. The same criticism is applicable to the attempt to establish a relation with the Semitic languages.<sup>b</sup> A comparison of Japanese roots with those of certain Altaic languages, such as the Mongolian, Tungusic, Manchurian, Turkish, etc., does not bring us any nearer to the solution of the problem.<sup>c</sup> Nevertheless Japanese is usually regarded as belonging to this great group of Altaic languages, for the reason that it has in common with them the characteristic known as agglutination. That is, in Japanese, as in all agglutinative tongues, inflection in the ordinary sense is replaced by a loose attachment of particles to the stem as suffixes, while the stem itself remains comparatively unaffected. But it must be noted that the colloquial as compared with the classical Japanese seems to be in a state of transition from the agglutinative to the inflectional stage. In regard to syntax also the Japanese is very much like some of the languages that belong to the Altaic group, e. g., the Manchurian.

### SINICO-JAPANESE

With Chinese the Japanese language proper has no relation whatever. In the former, words are properly monosyllabic and frequently end in consonants; in the latter they are mostly

---

<sup>a</sup> See Transactions of the Asiatic Society Japan, Vol. II., p. 199 ff.

<sup>b</sup> Japan Evangelist, October, 1906.

<sup>c</sup> Grunzel, *Entwurf einer vergleichenden Grammatik der altaischen Sprachen*, Leipzig, 1895.



polysyllabic, the syllables being uniformly composed of a vowel or of a simple consonant followed by a vowel.<sup>a</sup> The syntax too is utterly different.

Yet Chinese is of great importance in the study of Japanese, even of greater importance than Latin is in the study of English. Through the study of Chinese literature and the Buddhistic scriptures (which came to Japan in the form of Chinese translations), the importation of the Chinese arts and sciences, and the adoption of the ideographic script, it has come to pass that a great mass of Chinese words and expressions has found entrance into the Japanese language, in numerous cases even supplanting the native terms.

Accordingly modern Japanese is a mixture of native elements and words borrowed from the Chinese and possesses a rich vocabulary. For many ideas there are both Japanese and Chinese terms. Of the latter the greater number are not understood except in educated circles. Many, however, have become thoroughly naturalized; e. g., *sen-taku* laundry.<sup>b</sup> In many instances the Chinese expressions have supplanted the native. Thus, for example, the modern peasant calls thunder *rai* (c) rather than *kami-nari*. The dictionaries are full of classical native words which are understood only by those who make their study a speciality.

The common use of words derived from the Chinese is due not simply to the natural liking for foreign terms, but much more to the fact that the demand for new words expressing new conceptions is most easily and conveniently met by forming compounds from the Chinese. These are often remarkable for conciseness. "Telegraph" is *den-shin*, from *den* lightning and *shin* tidings. Marconi has no sooner perfected his great

---

a The only exception is *n*. But in genuine Japanese words, like *shinan* (classical future of *shinu* to die), the *n* is derived from *mu*. All other words ending in *n* are either imported from other languages or of onomatopoeic character.

b It rarely happens, however, that foreign terms are regularly inflected like genuine Japanese words. The rule is to regard them as substantives, adding *suru* (to do) to form verbs, *na* or *no* to form adjectives and *ni* to form adverbs. Sometimes a single word may serve all these purposes; e. g., *teki-tō* suitability, *teki-tō suru* be suitable, *teki-tō na* suitable, *teki-tō ni* suitably. But we also have such regular verbs as *tekita*, *tekitate* oppose, from *teki-tai*; *ryōru*, *ryotte* cook, from *ryō-ri*; *shikeru*, *shikette* be stormy, from *shi-ke*; *guchiru*, *guchitte* be silly (rare), from *gu-chi*; *taijiru*, *taijite* subdue (rare), from *tai-ji*, and the adjective *hidoi*, from *hidō*. Some nouns, like *uma* horse and *seni* cash, have been so transformed that few suspect their Chinese origin.

invention than the Japanese have a new word ready for the dictionary; namely, *mu-sen-den-shin* (*mu-sen* without line). "Automobile" is *ji-dō-sha* (self move vehicle). "Concrete" is *yū-kei* (having form); "abstract," *mu-kei*. The exigencies of our own time have called forth an immense number of new scientific and philosophical terms which the dictionary-makers have been quite unable fully to compile.

In order to speak correctly it is often important to know whether a word is of Japanese or of Chinese origin especially in using the honorifics and the numerals.<sup>a</sup> This distinction will be easy to make after a little practice. The Chinese vocables are very short. Monosyllables containing a long vowel or ending in *n* are generally of Chinese origin. These vocables usually occur not singly but in compounds, mostly of two components. There are, however, a few hybrid compounds (Ch. IX) like our own "automobile."

The pronunciation of the words taken from the Chinese is very different from that now in vogue in China.<sup>b</sup> Originally derived from certain Chinese dialects, it has apparently suffered great phonetic changes in the course of time, so that the Chinese cannot understand it at all. The classical pronunciation now taken as the standard by educated people is the *kan-on* (lit. sound of *Kan*). *Kan* or *Han* was the name of the dynasties that reigned in the north from B. C. 206 to A. D. 264.<sup>c</sup> But many older words, especially those connected with Buddhism, are pronounced according to the *go-on*. *Go* or *Wu*, at the time when Chinese literature was introduced into Japan, about A. D. 300, was one of the three Chinese states and included the provinces south of Shanghai. More modern sounds are known as *tō-on*, *Tō* or *Tang* having been the dynasty reigning from 618 to 913. Excepting proper names, there are very few words that follow the *tōon*, the most common being *an-don* lamp (old style), *chō-chin* lantern, *fu-ton* cushion, *tem-bin* balance, *fu-shin* building operations, etc.

a Another case in point is that of the word *teki* (different from the *teki's* above), used in formal speech as a suffix to nouns derived from the Chinese. The rule is that before a Chinese word no particle is needed, but before a native word *no* must be added; . e. g., from *ri-sō* ideal and *niu-gen* man, *risō-teki-ningen* ideal man, but *risō-teki no kuni* ideal country.

b See Lange, *Einführung in die japanische Schrift*, p. 70 ff and Chamberlain, "Introduction to the Study of Japanese Writing," p. 372 ff.

c *Kan* often means "China" in general, but like almost all Chinese words, occurs only in compounds; e. g., *kan-go* Chinese words *kan-ji* Chinese characters, *kan bun* (for *kan-bun*) Chinese composition, etc. See also p. 122a.

In a few words, such as *nan* south, the pronunciation has not varied. But in *Mei-ji* enlightened rule, *myō-nichi* to-morrow (*nichi* day) and *Min* the Ming dynasty, the same word has three different pronunciations. So the character *shan* in *Shan-hai* Shanghai is *shō inkan-on* and *jō* in *goon*. Practically only the *kanon* and *goon* need be taken into the account, and the student need not trouble himself much about the differences between them. Usually the *goon* is distinguished from the *kanon* by association with old Buddhistic terms. Compare :

<i>Goon</i>	<i>Kanon</i>	Japanese	English
<i>nin</i>	<i>jin</i>	<i>hito</i>	man, person
<i>nichi</i>	<i>jitsu</i>	<i>hi</i>	day
<i>dai</i>	<i>tai</i>	<i>ōkii</i>	great
<i>sai</i>	<i>sei</i>	<i>nishi</i>	west
<i>kou</i>	<i>kin</i>	<i>ima</i>	now
<i>on</i>	<i>in</i>	<i>koe, oto</i>	voice, sound
<i>gyō</i>	<i>kō</i>	<i>yuku, okonau</i>	go, perform
<i>myō</i>	<i>mei</i>	<i>na</i>	name
<i>hyō</i>	<i>hei</i>	<i>tsuwamono</i>	soldier
<i>kyō</i>	<i>kei</i>	<i>miyako</i>	capital
<i>shō</i>	<i>sei</i>	<i>tadashii</i>	right
<i>gon</i>	<i>gen</i>	<i>kotoba</i>	word, speech
<i>motsu</i>	<i>butsu</i>	<i>mono</i>	thing
<i>mon</i>	<i>bun</i>	<i>fumi</i>	letter
<i>ge</i>	<i>gwai</i>	<i>soto</i>	outside
<i>e</i>	<i>kwai</i>	—	picture
<i>ge</i>	<i>ka</i>	<i>shita</i>	under
<i>gwatsu</i>	<i>getsu</i>	<i>tsuki</i>	moon, month
<i>riki</i>	<i>ryoku</i>	<i>chikara</i>	power

Not infrequently one word may be pronounced in both ways without changing the sense ; e. g., *Tō-kyō* or *Tō-kei* (east capital). In most cases usage allows only one or the other. Thus we say *sai-kyō* west capital, i. e., Kyōto, but *sei-nan* southwest (lit. west south) ; *myō-ji* family name (lit. name character), but *sei-mei* the full name (family name and personal name) ; *ge-kwa-i* surgeon (lit. external branch physician), but *gwai-koku* foreign country ; *bimbō-nin* pauper, but *gwai-koku-jin* foreigner.

The tones or accents of the Chinese are disregarded, except in the composition of Chinese verses. This fact and phonetic decay have brought it to pass that ten, twenty or thirty characters may have exactly the same sound. This is the

a The Japanese equivalent of an ideogram as distinguished from the Chinese sound (*on*) is called *koe*, *kun* (c) explanation, or *yomi* reading.

most distressing feature of the spoken Japanese language. Men of the same set or clique have no difficulty in understanding their own technical terms, but to the uninitiated, even though they be well educated, rare Chinese compounds convey no sense until the speaker by writing in the air or by explanation indicates what the ideograms are.

#### WORDS DERIVED FROM WESTERN LANGUAGES

In comparison with the Chinese the number of words imported from the European languages is small. Thus we have from the Spanish and Portuguese *biidoro* (*vidrio*) glass (modern glass, *garasu*), *kasuteira* (*castilla*) sponge cake, *kompeitō* (*confeito*) candy; from the French, *shabon* (*savon*) soap, *shap-po* (*chapeau*) hat; from the Dutch, *kōhii* (*koffij*) coffee, *doutaku* (*sondag*) holiday; from the German, *chifusu* (*Typhus*), *torahōmu* (*Trachoma*) granular eyelids, etc. Many words have lately come in from the English; e. g., *baiorin* violin, *bōto* boat, *burashi* brush, *dokko* dock, *suraneru* flannel, *fūto-buru* football, *haikara* (lit. high collar) a foreignized Japanese, *hankechi* handkerchief, *inki* ink, *irumineishon* illumination, *katsuretsu* cutlet, *matchi* match, *naifu* knife, *peiji* page, *pointo* switch (on a railway), *rampu* lamp, *ramune* lemonade, *sandwichi* sandwich, *shatsu* shirt, *shichū* stew, *sutekki* stick, *suteishon* station, *tonneru* tunnel, etc. From the English through the French: *bifuteki* (*bifteck*) beefsteak. *Buranketto* blanket has become *ketto*.<sup>a</sup>

#### THE STANDARD COLLOQUIAL

In English there is now only a slight difference between the language of an essay and that of everyday conversation. In Japanese the written language and the spoken language have for centuries been developing separately. Scholars absorbed in the study of the ideograms and the literary style associated with them, have been quite indifferent to their mother-tongue proper. Even now it is hard to find a Japanese with any sense of colloquial etymology or grammar. When asked about the origin and significance of a word your informant proceeds to discuss the ideograms used to write it. Ask him about the conjugation of a verb, and he gives you paradigms from the

<sup>a</sup> There are also a few Japanese words in European languages; e. g., the Spanish *biombo*, from *byōbu* screen, moxa (p. 145a), kimono, riksha, jujitsu, etc.

classical grammar which have little or no application to the matter in hand. The Japanese have scarcely begun to make a serious scientific study of their own conversational language. On the other hand, of the few who are interested, some reveal their inherited prejudice against *soku-go* (vulgar language) by limiting its province to the small talk of everyday life. The student cannot be too wary in accepting Japanese opinions about the colloquial. But it goes without saying that in the language actually employed by the Japanese of the present day our authoritative guide must be found.

It can no longer be said that the colloquial of Tōkyō is normative. Tōkyō too has its dialectical peculiarities. We shall not go far wrong if we regard as the standard the language spoken in the higher educational institutions of the Empire. There is here a constant circulation and intermingling of teachers and students from all parts of the country, and it is here that the process of crystallization is going on most rapidly. This language of the schools, which will naturally be the language of the future, is being influenced both by the literary language and by English and other foreign languages. No obstacle should be placed in the way of the gradual assimilation of any needed material from the comparatively more terse and expressive literary language. The ideal of the *Gem-bun-it-chi-kwai* (*gen* speech, *bun* literature, *it-chi* union, *kwai* association) necessarily involves the modification of the colloquial, which in its present condition does very well for story-telling, but for other literary purposes is rather a clumsy instrument. Again, Japanese is being modified by the influence of English much as European languages have been influenced by Latin. The student will soon perceive that the speech of a Japanese versed in English is much clearer to him than that of a Japanese of the old school, even when both are speaking to their own people. As nearly all Japanese students are learning English or some other European tongue, the inference is obvious.

The development of the language has been most rapid around the centers Kyōto and Tōkyō. The most peculiar dialects are those of the northern and western extremities of Japan proper.

Thus, for instance, in Tōkyō one may say. *Watakushi ni kudasaran ka.* (Won't you give it to me?), while in the dialect of Satsuma this becomes. *Atai tamawan ka.* These dialects in many points preserve more of the classical language than the standard colloquial. For example, the people of the

the north say *yogambei* (it may be good), from *yokaru-beshi*, thus preserving the classical *beshi*.

In the ports there is a good deal of pidgin-Japanese (*Yoko-hama-kotoba*), which is to be avoided; e. g., *peke* = *dame* bad, spoiled. The student ought also to be on his guard against the slang of the laboring classes.

### PRACTICAL HINTS

It would be well for the student before he begins work on this book to go through a briefer course of the nature of a primer. To get a general idea of the genius of the language it is well at the outset to read rapidly a book like Chamberlain's "Handbook of Colloquial Japanese," not stopping to master the details. Imbrie's "English-Japanese Etymology" will be found helpful later on.

During the first year it will be a saving of time to employ as a teacher one who has a good knowledge of English. The teacher should be instructed when reading the Japanese sentences to vary them as much as possible. The student after translating into English should retranslate into Japanese. He will then be well prepared to take up the second set of exercises. If the teacher knows no English, have a friend instruct him how to proceed. Read to him the Japanese sentences one by one and have him criticise the pronunciation. Let him then ask simple questions which require the student to give the substance of the sentence in his replies. Let the teacher repeat each answer, correcting it as he does so. Don't let him ask questions about the grammar or definitions of words. Then translate the English sentences and ask the teacher to correct the translations in the same way. In translation it should be the aim of the student to render the ideas of the original in as brief a form as possible, translation word for word being quite out of the question in nearly all cases. When learning words the student should try to form in his mind a vivid conception of the actual thing or act or relation expressed by it, without reference to English equivalents. The measure of one's progress is the degree in which the untranslatable elements of the language are mastered.

One peculiarity of the Japanese must be kept constantly in mind, namely, the persistent consciousness of the relative rank of the speaker and the person addressed as shown in the choice of words and grammatical forms. For the same idea there may be two sets of expressions, one used when the

subject is a despised person or one's humble self, the other being reserved for use when the subject is a person for whom one wishes to show respect or when it is necessary to guard one's own dignity in dealing with an inferior. It is not easy even for a native to observe the proper distinctions without being either rude or excessively polite. The Japanese are extraordinarily polite to foreigners, and foreigners are expected to speak a little more politely than a native would under the same circumstances.

No progress is possible without the perpetration of ridiculous mistakes, and the time when one is still obviously "green" is the most opportune time for mistakes. The people are naturally generous and indulgent to newcomers. So the beginner is advised, whatever may have been his previous habit, to make it a rule to chatter about any and everything under the sun to anybody that will listen. As soon as he comes to feel sensitive about mistakes progress will be very difficult.

#### HELPS FOR FURTHER STUDY

The student who has mastered this text-book should be familiar with the grammatical structure of the colloquial and be well acquainted with about five thousand words. It is not practicable, even if it were desirable, to include more in a book of this character. In the selection the aim has been to gather a fully representative vocabulary of words that are in common use. Of the common terms, for every one that has been taken one or two have been left. The terminology of one's special business or profession will be learned almost without effort. But if one aspires to be able to converse freely on any subject of common interest, at least double the number of words contained here will be needed. A vocabulary grows only by practice, but practice is dependent on observation, and to prepare one's self for exact observation printed books are indispensable. It is a common experience that an entirely strange word just learned from a book may be heard several times within a few hours afterwards.

Colloquial literature consists mostly of stories and speeches of various kinds. There are a few collections of extracts in *rōmaji*, of which the best are: Lloyd, *Colloquial Texts*; Plaut, *Japanisches Lesebuch*, Berlin, 1891; *Benkyōka no Tomo*, Hongkong, 1892, the little monthly periodical *Yachigusa* published in Tōkyō, 1898-9, and the similar publication *Rōmaji* begun in 1905.

In choosing books written in the Japanese script the beginner should avoid those in which the *kana* are small or badly printed. Before he undertakes to read poorly printed books or newspapers it is necessary thoroughly to master the *kana* by the use of the children's first two or three readers or other colloquial books in which the characters are printed large, if they can be found. The exercises and conversations in MacCauley's "Introductory Course in Japanese" satisfy this requirement, but unfortunately the *hiragana* are written from left to right, an unusual arrangement not easy even for Japanese to read.

Of the numerous conversation books Muramatsu's *Meiji Kwaiwahan* is especially commended. Many of the expressions in Satow's *Kwaiwahan* have become antiquated, particularly those having references to travel in the interior.

Highly to be recommended, though the printing of the *kana* leaves much to be desired, are the *Mukashi-banashi* (ancient tales) and *Otogi-banashi* (entertaining tales) of Mr. Iwaya. In order to accustom the student to the style of these tales, one of them in romanized form has been included among the selections at the end of this book. Mr. Iwaya, whose *nom de plume* is Sazanami, also edits an interesting periodical called *Shōnen Sekai* (Young Folks' World).

Novels will also be very helpful. Older stories such as those of *Enchō* are not so well adapted to the needs of the student as those dealing with present conditions. For students who are interested in the conflict between old and new ideas in modern Japan the novels of Mr. Tokutomi (*Hototogisu*, *Omoide no Ki*, *Kuroshio*) are recommended.

In almost any newspaper colloquial material may be found in the form of interviews, reports of addresses, etc., and the volume of literature written in the style of lectures is constant y increasing. But the student will need to remember that to make a genuine colloquial sentence more is required than to end it with *de aru*, *de arimasu* or *de gozaimasu* (beware of "colloquialized" books!); also that a man may be a fine literary writer and yet have a wretched style in speaking. The style of the interesting old sermons of which we have had samples in *Shingaku Michi no Hanashi*, or *Kyūō Dōwa*, is of course antiquated.



In the study of colloquial grammar<sup>a</sup> beginnings have been made by Matsushita, *Nihon Kokugo Buntēn*, Tōkyō, 1901; Maeha, *Nihongoten*, Tōkyō, 1901; Kanai, *Nihon Zokugo Buntēn*, Tōkyō, 1901; Ishikawa, *Hanashikotoba no Kisoku*, Tōkyō, 1901; Irie, *Nihon Zokugo Bumpōron*, Sendai, 1902. Excepting the first and the last named, these books are themselves examples of the literary use of the colloquial. In the literature of the *Gembun-itchi* movement, such as Yamada's *Bunrei* and Sakai's *Futsūbun*, both published in Tōkyō, 1901, may be found illustrations of the colloquial as adapted for use in letters, documents, etc., and interesting discussions concerning colloquial style.

Brinkley's Japanese-English Dictionary is fuller and in many ways more satisfactory than its predecessor, Hepburn's. It is an invaluable treasury to those who have to depend on *romaji*. The student may profitably supplement it by one or more of the native *go-jū-on* dictionaries, Ōtsuki's *Genkai=Kotoba no Umi* (*gen* word, *kai* sea), Tōkyō, 1891; Mozumi's *Nihon Daijirin* (*dai* great, *ji* word, *rin* forest), Tōkyō, 1894, or Ochiai's *Kotoba no Izumi* (*izumi* fountain), Tōkyō, 1899. Of these the first is said to be the most scholarly; the last, most comprehensive. Some students will be especially interested in Churchhill's Dictionary of Military Terms and Expressions. The English-Japanese Dictionary of the Spoken Language, compiled originally by Satow and Ishibashi, third edition by Hampden and Parlett, Yokohama, 1904, is indispensable.

Chief among the desiderata is a new edition of Gubbins' Dictionary—a complete classified dictionary of Sinico, Japanese compounds on the plan of that still valued work.

---

<sup>a</sup> In this book the usual division of the parts of speech has been followed. In a scientific grammar this would probably have to be somewhat modified: Older grammars of the literary language divide all words into three classes. (1) *tai-gen* including nouns, pronouns numerals, interjections; (2) *yō-gen=haiaraku kotoba* (working words), including the verbs and adjectives, which are inflected, and (3) *teniwaha*, from *te*, *ni*, *no*, *ha* (=wa), including particles and postpositions.

# Orthography and Pronunciation

## THE IDEOGRAPHIC SCRIPT

As has been remarked, the Japanese have adopted the Chinese ideographic script, in which the characters are symbols not of sounds, but of ideas. They are like our Arabic numerals and mathematical signs, which are variously read in different languages, but have the same sense everywhere. To read Japanese texts readily one must master between four and five thousand characters. To accomplish this two or three years are required, even in the case of a bright student. But the attempt should be made. Every one who aspires to become so proficient as to be able to understand anything said in his presence and to express himself freely on any subject, must master the Chinese elements in the language. Generally the easiest way to do this is to learn the ideograms, and the easiest way to learn the ideograms is to learn how to write them. The attempt to learn to write beautifully like a native would be in most cases a waste of time, if not an impossible task, but at least the order of the strokes should be mastered.

But in the order of time the first and most important task is to get a firm hold on the grammatical structure and principal idioms of the language. The student who is ambitious to "master" the language is therefore advised to "divide," that is, to devote his first year to the study of the colloquial and postpone the study of the literary language and the characters to the second year.<sup>a</sup> Printed helps of two kinds will be available, those in *kana*, the native syllabary, and those in *rōmaji*, the romanized form.

### *Kana*

The Japanese began at a very early date to use the ideograms phonetically, that is, to indicate sounds without regard to the proper sense of the characters. They called them *kana*, from *kari-na* borrowed name. This use of the ideograms continues to this day in the case of proper names. Thus America is written *A-me-ri-ka* (亞米利加) the characters meaning

<sup>a</sup> Those who read The German will be pleased with Dr. Lange's *Übungs- und Lese-buch zum Studium der japanischen Schrift*, Berlin 1904. The selections it contains are exclusively colloquial.

respectively : next, rice, gain, add. <sup>a</sup> In the same way the ideogram for "root," called in Japanese *ne*, is often substituted for the homonymous character *ne*, (*mi-ne*) meaning "peak," as in *Hako-ne* and words like *ya-ne* roof (*ya* house).

Through this phonetic use of the Chinese ideograms there came into existence about A. D. 900 two syllabaries called *kata-kana* and *hira-kana*. A *kata-kana* (*kata* side) is written squarely, being in most cases a side or portion of a common character having the sound represented by it; e. g., ㄗ (*a*) from 阿, ㄨ (*i*) from 伊, ㄨ (*u*) from 宇, ㄎ (*ka*) from 加. The *katakana* are now used only in formal documents, in writing foreign names and interjections, in telegrams, etc. The *hira-gana* (*hira* level, ordinary) are characters written cursorily and, in most cases, very much simplified; e. g., ㄐ (*a*) from 安, ㄨ (*i*) from 以, ㄨ (*u*) from 于, ㄎ (*ku*) from 加. Formerly there was a great variety of them, but in our own times the employment of movable types in printing and the policy of the Educational Department have had the effect of practically reducing the number in common use to 48, one for each sound.

In the following table we give the *hiragana* arranged in the order of the *go jū on* "the fifty sounds." Under each *hiragana* is given the corresponding *katakana* and under that the equivalent in Roman letters.

The columns are read in order beginning with the right: *a*, *i*, *u*, *e*, *o*; *ka*, *ki*, *ku*, *ke*, *ko*, etc. Most dictionaries now follow this order, the *n* being sometimes regarded as a variant of *mu*. It is to be observed that there is no *yi*, *ye*, or *wu*. To make the scheme complete the corresponding syllables from the first column are sometimes put into the vacant places. *ivi*, *we*, *wo* are scarcely distinguished in pronunciation from *i*, *e*, *o*. It is also to be noted that the Japanese do not say *si*, *ti*, *tu*, *hu*, but *shi*, *chi*, *tsu*, *fu*. The table is of great importance for the conjugation of the verb. (See next page).

From the syllables in which the consonant is sound corresponding sonants are derived: from the *k* column, *ga*, *gi*, *gu*, *ge*, *go* (ㄎ ㄎゝ ㄎゞ ㄎゞ); from the *s* column, *su*, *ji*, *zu*, *ze*, *so* (ㄨ ㄨゝ ㄨゞ ㄨゞ); from the *t* column, *da*, *ji*, *su*, *de*, *do* (ㄨ ㄨゝ ㄨゞ ㄨゞ). Such change in the sound is called *nigori* (lit turbidness,

<sup>a</sup> The extreme of arbitrariness is reached in the case of some proper names that have been bodily imported from China, where the modern pronunciation approximates original sound. But the Japanese conventional pronunciation is pretty far off sometimes; e. g., New York is written 紐約: *hū-iku*. Here the ideograms give neither sense nor sound.

わ ワ	ら ラ	や ヤ	ま マ	は ハ	な ナ	た タ	さ サ	か カ	あ ア
wa	ra	ya	ma	ha	na	ta	sa	ka	a
ゐ ヰ	り リ		み ミ	ひ ヒ	に ニ	ち チ	し シ	き キ	い イ
wi	ri		mi	hi	ni	chi	shi	ki	i
ん ン	る ル	ゆ ユ	む ム	ふ フ	ぬ ヌ	つ ツ	す ス	く ク	う ウ
ru	ru	yu	mu	fu	nu	tsu	su	ku	u
ゑ ヱ	れ レ		め メ	へ ヘ	ね ネ	て テ	せ セ	け ケ	わ ヰ
we	re		me	he	ne	te	se	ke	e
を ヲ	ろ ロ	よ ヨ	も モ	ほ ホ	の ノ	と ト	そ ソ	こ コ	お オ
wo	ro	yo	mo	ho	no	to	so	ko	o

impurity). The *h* column by *nigori* becomes *ba, bi, bu, be, bo* (バ ビ ブ ベ ボ); by what is called *han-nigori* (*han* half), *pa, pi, pu, pe, po* (パ ピ プ ペ ポ). In Japanese writing the marks of *nigori* are often omitted.

There is another arrangement of the syllabary called *iroha* :

<i>i ro ha ni ho he to</i>	<i>chi ri nu ru wo</i>
<i>wa ka yo ta re so</i>	<i>tsu me na ra mu</i>
<i>u wi no o ku yo ma</i>	<i>ke fu ko e te</i>
<i>a sa ki yu me mi shi</i>	<i>we. hi mo se su</i>

This is in the form of a stanza of poetry giving expression to Buddhist sentiment :

<i>Iro wa nioedo</i>	<i>chirinuru wo ;</i>
<i>waga yo tare so</i>	<i>tsune naramu.</i>
<i>Ui no okuyama</i>	<i>kyō koete,</i>
<i>asaki yume mishi,</i>	<i>ei mo sesu.</i>

Though the blossoms (hues) are fragrant they fall away ;  
In this our world who will abide alway ?

To-day I crossed the very mountain-recesses of mutability ;  
And saw a shallow dream, nor was I intoxicated thereby.

Though these comparatively easy syllabaries have been in existence a thousand years, they have not supplanted the ideograms, but play only a minor role beside them. The Japanese syntax being so different from the Chinese, in ordinary Japanese composition the *hiragana* are interspersed among the characters to indicate modifiers, particles, terminations, etc.

Such composition is called *kana-majiri*, from *majiru* be mixed. Further, for the benefit of the uneducated, *hiragana* may be written to the right of the ideograms to indicate the pronunciation. This is called *kana-tsuki*, from *tsuku* be attached. It is thus possible to read most Japanese books without a knowledge of the ideograms. The traditional spelling corresponds to an ancient pronunciation which has been considerably modified in the course of time. In the case of native words the syllables of the *h* column have been most affected.

<i>kaharu</i>	be changed	is pronounced	<i>kawaru</i>
<i>kahi</i>	shellfish	„ „	<i>kai</i>
<i>ifu</i>	say	„ „	<i>iu</i>
<i>mahe</i>	before	„ „	<i>mae</i>
<i>hoho</i>	cheek	„ „	<i>hō</i>

But it is in the pronunciation of the Chinese words that the greatest changes have occurred. Thus *tou, tau, tafu* are all pronounced *tō* (not to speak of *towo* and *toho* in the case of native words); *kiyau, kiyou, keu* and *kesu* (see the *iroha* above) are all pronounced *kyō*. *Tōkyō* in *kana* is spelled *toukiyau*. The Japanese have been so indifferent to this traditional spelling that even among educated people hardly one in ten knows how to spell correctly. There has been a natural tendency to choose the briefest forms, as *keu* for *kyō*, *seu* for *shō*, *teu* for *chō*, etc. The Department of Education three years ago issued a regulation to the effect that sounds like *tō* should invariably be written to—; sounds like *kyō, ki yo—*, etc. This reform makes the *kana* spelling of the Chinese words almost as simple and phonetic as *rōmaji*.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> For example, even in the reformed *kana* the following must be written alike but pronounced differently: *kiyō* will wear and *kyō* to-day; *katsute* previously and *katte* one's own convenience.

## RŌMAJI

The system of romanization adopted for this book is identical with that followed by all the *rōmaji* dictionaries. A fair degree of uniformity has been secured through the efforts of the *Rōma-ji-kwai* (*ji* letter, *kwai* association), a society organized by Japanese and foreigners in 1885 for the purpose of effecting a substitution of the Roman script for the Chinese.<sup>a</sup>

A committee appointed by the Educational Department to investigate the question of romanization submitted a tentative report in 1900. The system recommended differs very little from that now in use. The chief innovations are the substitution of *si* for *shi* and *sya, syu, syo* for *sha, shu, sho*, following the analogy of *kya, kyu, kyo* etc. Further, the Committee would write *ci, ca, cu, co* for *chi, cha, chu, cho*, following presumably the analogy of Italian. The changes proposed have not been adopted in this book for the reason that the Educational Department has not yet reached a final decision in the matter, and it would be very inconvenient for the student to have in this book a system different from that followed by the dictionaries.<sup>b</sup>

In October, 1905, a new organization was formed, the *Rōmaji-hironé-kwai*, which publishes a monthly entitled *Rōmaji*. Both of the above forms of transliteration appear on the pages of this periodical: one writer spells *shashinjutsu* (photography) and another *syasinsitu*!

---

<sup>a</sup> While much of the Japanese literature, being intended for the eyes, is hardly intelligible without the ideograms, it is quite reasonable to expect that any conversation commonly understood through the ear should be intelligible when reduced to writing by means of an adequate phonetic system. But the full realization of the ideal of the *Rōmaji-kwai* must wait until the teachers, preachers and public speakers of Japan have by a process of natural selection evolved a vocabulary at once intelligible to their hearers and adequate to express thought on every subject, that is, until the spoken language becomes as satisfactory a medium of expression as the present written language is. Forces now at work in Japan will bring this about before very long.

<sup>b</sup> See *Kwampō* (Official Gazette), 5, Nov., 1900. The innovations proposed are comparatively unimportant. Others will be referred to incidentally. There are questions connected with romanization which press for an official solution and in most cases the suggestions of the Committee are excellent. Its report deals largely with the question of the division of words. For instance, the Committee would write *oagari nasai mase* for *o agari nasaimase*. In regard to this question great confusion now prevails. See also suggestions by Mr. Fujioka in his *Rōmaji Tebiki*, Sinkoronsha, Tōkyō, 1906.

*Rōmaji* is designed to represent phonetically the standard pronunciation of the present day. In reading *rōmaji* the general principle to be observed is that THE VOWELS ARE PRONOUNCED AS IN GERMAN; THE CONSONANTS, AS IN ENGLISH.

### VOWELS

As might naturally be inferred, in the case of English-speaking people it is the vowels rather than the consonants that are hard to pronounce.<sup>a</sup> In English the vowels are largely sacrificed to the accent. In Japanese the reverse is true, that is, the vowels govern the accent. What we call the long and short sounds of the vowels in English are really different sounds. In Japanese a short vowel has the same sound exactly as the corresponding long vowel, differing only as an eighth note in music differs from a quarter.<sup>b</sup>

The sounds of the (long) vowels are:

<i>a</i>	like	<i>a</i>	in	<i>father</i>	( <i>ä</i> )
<i>i</i>	"	<i>i</i>	"	<i>pique</i>	( <i>ē</i> )
<i>u</i>	"	<i>u</i>	"	<i>rude</i>	( <i>ōō</i> )
<i>e</i>	"	<i>e</i>	"	<i>prey</i>	( <i>ā</i> )
<i>o</i>	"	<i>o</i>	"	<i>hope</i>	( <i>ō</i> )

LONG VOWELS.—The long vowels are written *ā* (*aa*), *ī* (*ī*), *ū* (*uu*), *ē* (*ē*), *ō* (*ou*).<sup>c</sup> There are practically no diphthongs. *Au* is ordinarily pronounced and written *ō*; *iu*, *yū*;

a A vowel is called *bo-in* (mother sound); a consonant, *shi-in* (child sound).

b There are exceptions. For a sound very much like the English short "a" see *kyatta*. Before a double consonant or *n* followed by a consonant there is a natural tendency to modify vowels so as to resemble the English short vowels.

c *i* occurs almost exclusively at the end of adjectives, being a contraction of *iki* or *ishi*. Theoretically there is a difference between *ī* (chosen by the *Rōmaji* Committee) and *ei*, but practically they are not distinguished and we write uniformly *ei*. In the same way *ō* might be written *ou*; and this is done in the case of a verb like *you* "get drunk." Verbs uniformly end in *u*. Accordingly we write *kau* "buy," rather than *kō*, though the combination *o u* is in the case of a Chinese word always written *ō*. For the same reason we write *kuu* eat, rather than *kū*. The combination *i u* in the case of a Chinese word is written *yū* the rule having been that *u* (or *fu*) following a syllable ending in *i* makes a long sound, while *yu* following such a syllable makes a short one. (Thus *shi yu* results in *shu*, but *shī u* makes *shū*—in the reformed *kana* written *shī yu*—). But in the case of the verb *iu* "say" we depart from the rule, since the stem is commonly pronounced *ī*. We should, however, write *yuu* if the stem were pronounced *yūi*.

*eu, yō; ou, ō.* The combinations *ai, oi* and *ui* come nearest to being diphthongs.<sup>a</sup> For the purpose of this discussion *u* is practically a vowel. In singing it may form a syllable by itself. It follows that *au, in, un, en, on, kau, kin, kun,* etc., are long sounds.

If one wishes to speak intelligibly, it is a matter of prime importance to DISTINGUISH LONG AND SHORT SOUNDS. It is especially important to distinguish *o* from *ō*. Next in importance is the distinction between *u* and *ū*. Compare :

<i>oi</i> nephew	<i>ōi</i> many
<i>tori</i> bird	<i>tōri</i> thoroughfare
<i>koko</i> here	<i>kō-kō</i> filial piety
<i>koto</i> thing, affair	<i>kō tō</i> high class
<i>toki</i> time	<i>tō-ki</i> registration
<i>ho hei</i> infantry	<i>kō-hei</i> artillery
<i>yo-san</i> estimate	<i>yō-san</i> sericulture
<i>kuki</i> stalk	<i>kū-ki</i> atmosphere
<i>yuki</i> snow	<i>yū-ki</i> courage

To the Japanese ear the words in the one column are utterly different from those in the other. There are a few cases in which the length of a vowel is a matter of indifference. A final *ō* is often shortened; e. g., *sō shite* so doing, may be pronounced *so shite*; *katappō* one of the pair, *katappō*; *hontō* reality, *honto*; *benkyō* diligence, *benkyo*. More rarely *ō* may be shortened in other positions; e. g., *imōto* younger sister may be pronounced *imoto*. Final short vowels are sometimes lengthened; e. g., *sore jā*, for *sore ja* if that's the case. The *o* in *yoku*, well, may be lengthened.

SHORT VOWELS—The following points deserve notice :

*U* in *shu* and *ju* is often pronounced *i*, especially in Tōkyō: e. g., *shu jin* master becomes *shijin*; *bi-jutsu* fine arts, *bijitsu*. This is to be avoided as a corruption.<sup>b</sup> But the substitution of *i* for *yu* is not always bad; e. g., *iku* for *yuku* go, *kami ii* for *kami-yui* hair dresser (p. 830a).

Initial *u* followed by *ma* is practically silent, *uma* horse be-

<sup>a</sup> In the northern provinces and vulgarly in Tōkyō *ai* is pronounced like *ei*; e. g., *Sō ja nei* for *Sō ja nai* That's not so. In Tōkyō *ae* and *oe* are often pronounced like *ai* and *oi*; e. g., *kaeru* return, *kairu*; *koe* voice, *koi*. We might add to the diphthongs *au* in *kau* as commonly pronounced in Tōkyō. In western Japan *kau* is *kō*.

<sup>b</sup> In northern Japan people often reverse *i* and *u* saying, for instance, *sukesu* or even *shikous* for *sukoshi* a little.



ing pronounced *mma* (p. 11b).

*E* in early *rōmaji* texts was generally written *ye*. This spelling has been retained in the case of only two words, *ye* "to" and *yen* the unit of currency. The *Rōmaji* Committee would practically reverse this rule and write *e* for the post-position *ye*, but *ye* in other cases. The fact is that the pronunciation depends on the sound that precedes. The *y* is especially prominent when the preceding word ends in a vowel or *n*; e. g., *hei shi* military service (*heiyeki*), *meneki* exemption from the service (*menyeki*). The sound of *yen* is not *en*, as many foreigners pronounce it, nor is the *y* as distinct as in "yes."

*O* is sometimes corrupted so as to sound like *u*: e. g., *hitotsu* "one" becomes *hitutsu*; *asonde* amusing one's self, *asunde*; *kou-ban* this evening, *kumban*. This pronunciation should be avoided. On the other hand in some dialects *o* is substituted for *u*; in Niigata *shu-jin*, master, becomes *shojin*. *Yoi* "good" is commonly pronounced *ii*.

As has been said, *wo* is practically pronounced *o*. It is so written except in the case of the particle *wo* (the *Rōmaji* committee would write this also *o*), the pronunciation of which, like that of *ye*, depends on what goes before. The student must be on his guard in pronouncing a word like *shio* salt, in *kana* written *shi ho*. The *w* is hardly audible, but if the student is not careful he is apt to say *shio*, i. e., *sho*. In the same way *ki-oku* memory must be carefully distinguished from *kiyoku* purely and *kyoku* office.

When two vowels are brought together in compounds a *y* or *w* naturally creeps in; e. g., *ba-ai* case, becomes *bayai* or *bawai*. The *Rōmaji* Committee in such a case would write *y* after *i* or *e*, and *w* after *u* or *o*; e. g., *tsukiyau*, for *tsuki-au* associate; *umeyawaseru*, for *ume-awaseru* make up a deficiency; *guwai* for *gu ai* adjustment; *owashi*, for *o ashi* money. The Committee recommended that a list of such words be made, which is an excellent suggestion.

QUIESCENT VOWELS.—Words like *kyoku*, *ryoku*, etc., derived from the Chinese, were originally monosyllabic, though written with three *kana*: *ki yo ku*, *ri yo ku*. Accordingly in romanizing certain combinations the *Rōmajikwai* treated *i* as silent; e. g., *kyō* (*ke u*, now *ki yo*—), etc. Many Japanese would go further and write, for example, *kyok*, *ryok*. In native words there are many other cases in which the weak vowels *i* and *u* are practically inaudible, but the *Rōmajikwai* did not venture to extend its principle to them, probably on account of the

extreme difficulty of making rules to cover all cases. Not only does the pronunciation vary according to locality, individual idiosyncrasy, etc., but even the same word may be pronounced differently by the same person, depending on the nature of the context. Compare, for instance, *nakute* "there being none" and *nak'te mo* "though there are none." The addition of *mo* brings upon *na* and *te* a strong accent with the result that the *u* in *ku* disappears. A silent *i* or *u* is very apt to occur when *ki*, *ku*, *shi*, *su*, *chi*, *tsu*, *hi*, or *fu* precede any syllable of the *k s, t,* and *w* series, especially when that syllable is accented. Final *su* ordinarily loses the vowel and becomes *ss*, and the vowel in final *tsu*, *shi* and *chi* is barely audible. English-speaking people are apt to go to extremes in clipping final vowels. The *Rōmaji* Committee has recommended that a table be made of words in which there are silent vowels. It would write *tuski* for *tasuki* (cord to tie back the sleeves), *dongri* for *donguri* acorn, etc. The Japanese certainly do say *taski*, not *tasuki*. It is, however, impossible to decide all the cases without being more or less arbitrary. The plan of this book is to follow the spelling of the dictionaries, except in the Exercises, where apostrophes are used to indicate silent vowels.<sup>a</sup> Experience proves that this system is a valuable aid to correct pronunciation. But to avoid abuse we have been conservative. There are, for example, so many people who pronounce every vowel in *watakushi* that we do not feel justified in eliding the *u*, as the Committee does.

#### CONSONANTS

These will give the English-speaking student little trouble.

*G* when it does not stand at the beginning of a word is commonly pronounced like "ng" in "singing": *Nagasaki*, like *Nangasaki*; *uguisu* bush-warbler, like *unguisu*; *kago* basket or cage, like *kango* (to be distinguished carefully from *kan-go* Chinese word). This may explain the presence of the *n* in the names of the provinces *Bingo* and *Bungo* (*Bi-go*, *Bu-go*) In

<sup>a</sup> Dr. Lange himself prefers to use the apostrophes throughout. The compiler of the English Edition has ventured to disagree with him in regard to this one point, on the ground that so long as the matter is not officially determined, great inconvenience in the use of dictionaries will result from any alteration of the present spelling. It seems, however, certain that the Japanese when they once take the matter in hand will elide more *i's* and *u's* than Dr. Lange or any other foreigner has thought of doing. The spelling will in turn react on the pronunciation

western Japan, however, *g* is pronounced exactly as in "ago." See p. 69a.

*S* before *i* becomes *sh*. In some parts of western Japan, as in the vicinity of Ōsaka and in Kyūshū, *s* in the syllable *se* is pronounced like "h" or, more exactly, like the German "ch"; e. g., *omaken* for *omasen* (dialectical) there is not. In Tōkyō *se* may become *shi*; hence the change of *se-ou* carry on the back (*se* back, *ou* carry) to *shou*.

*Ji* is formed by nigori from *shi* or *chi*. In the province of Tosa the two sounds are distinguished, the former *j* being like "z" in "azure" and the latter like "g" in "age." In some places the former sound prevails, but in most parts of the country both *ヰ* and *ヱ* are pronounced *ji* as in "jig."

*Zu* too should have two sounds, *su* and *dsu* (often written *so*), from *su* and *tsu*, but the distinction is not generally observed and one or the other prevails.

*T* before *i* becomes *ch*; before *u*, *ts*.

*N* is pronounced "ng" before sounds of the *k* series; before sounds of the *h* (*b*, *p*) and *m* series it becomes *m*: *son-kei* respect; *son-gai* damage; *sambiyaku* three hundred, from *san* three and *hyaku* hundred; *sem-mou* specialty, from *sen* special and *mou* gate, department. The *Rōmaji* Committee in such cases would not change the *n* to *m*.

In some compounds the distinction between a final *n* and an initial *n* must be carefully observed. Compare *gen-an* original motion and *ge-nan* manservant.

*H* before *i* in Tōkyō and elsewhere is pronounced like *sh*, as in *hito* person. The student will do well to avoid this corruption.

*F* is not quite the same as the English "f," being formed by the two lips, not by the lower lip and the upper teeth. The study of foreign languages has, however, a tendency to make the *f* more like the English. The nigoried form of *fu* is *bu*, not *vu*. There is no *v* in Japanese. In the *h* series a labial sound, *p* or *f*, not *h*, characterized the syllables originally, and in some provinces there are still traces of this ancient pronunciation.

*M* before *u* has frequently been altered to *b*: e. g., *eramu*, *erabu* choose; *samushi*, *sabishii* lonely.

*Y* (*ya*, *yu* *yo*) occurs largely in combination with other consonants. One must carefully distinguish *myō* and *miyō*, *kyoku* and *kiyoku*, etc. In parts of northern Japan *y* when not combined with another consonant is commonly corrupted to *s* or *j*.

*R* is not quite the same as the English "r," especially in the syllable *ri*. The tip of the tongue is held more closely to the upper gum. In many places, as in Satsuma, *r* sounds like *d*. It is extremely difficult for the Japanese to distinguish the English "l" and the English "r," their own *r* being an intermediate sound. The vulgar sometimes trill *r*; e. g., *berrabō* fool.

*W* after *i* or *e* sometimes becomes *y*; e. g., *soryu*, from *sore wa* as for that. *Wa* and *wo* occur largely in Chinese words combined with *k* and *g*; e. g., *kwa-ji* conflagration, *gwai-koku* foreign country. In some parts the distinction between *kwa* and *ka*, etc., is carefully observed, but is neglected in Tōkyō. The reformed *kana* and the Committee's *rōmaji* ignore it. But the *w* is retained in this book, for reasons already indicated.

There is no need of "q" or "x," the former being represented by *kw* and the latter by *ks*.

DOUBLE CONSONANTS.—While the consonants in themselves are not so difficult, the student will need to be especially careful to DISTINGUISH SINGLE AND DOUBLE CONSONANTS. The double consonants are *kk*, *ss* (*ssh*), *tt* (*tch*, *tts*), *nn*, *pp*, *mm*. The best way to get them is to give a strong accent to the preceding syllable and then for a moment hold the vocal organs in the position required to pronounce the consonant in question. The second of the two will then sound distinct from the first. Distinguish carefully pairs like :

<i>ika</i> cuttle-fish	<i>ikka</i> how many days?
<i>dasu</i> put forth	<i>dassu</i> ( <i>ru</i> ) escape from
<i>i-shō</i> clothes	<i>is-shō</i> one's whole life
<i>kita</i> [he] came	<i>kitta</i> [he] cut
<i>i-chi</i> position	<i>it-chi</i> union
<i>ana</i> hole	<i>anna</i> such
<i>ama</i> nun	<i>am-ma</i> shampooer

Consonants which are single in the literary language are frequently doubled in the colloquial; e. g., *minna* for *mina* all, *onnaji* for *onaji* same, *mitsu* for *mitsu* three, *ammari* for *amari* too, *bakkari* for *bakari* only, *totta* for *toda* merely, *massugu* for *ma-sugu* straight (adverb).

Excepting *nn* and *mm*, the first of two double consonants is in *kana* represented by *tsu*. *Gakkō* school, from *gaku* and *kō*, may be written either *gakukō* or *gatsukō*. The compound *hattatsu* development is sometimes pronounced *hatsudatsu*.

*Nigori*.—In a compound<sup>a</sup> the first consonant of the second member is liable to the change called *nigori*: [hair].<sup>b</sup>

*shiraga* gray hair (*shira*=*shiro* stem of *shiroi* white, *kami*

*yakizakana* baked fish (*yaki* stem of *yaku* roast, *sakana* fish).

*shinjin* piety (*shin* faith, *shin* heart).

*jinja* Shinto temple (*jin* god, *sha* shrine).

*pandane* yeast (*pan* bread, *tane* seed). [pack].

*kwanzume* canned goods (*kwan* can, *tsume* stem of *tsumeru*

*tokidoki* at times (*toki* time).

*chikajika* soon (*chikai* near).

*sakurabana* cherry blossom (*sakura*, *hana*).

*shinjinbukai* pious (*shinjin* piety, *fukai* deep).

Since the *kana* for *wa* in native words is *ha*, this may also by *nigori* become *ba*; e. g., *wo wa* becomes *woba*. *Nigori* is less common in Chinese than in native words, and less common in compound verbs than in compound nouns. There is a great deal of fluctuation in the usage, euphony being the only guide. Thus we say *Ō-hashī* Great Bridge, but *Megane-bashi* Eyeglass Bridge (so named from its shape); either *Ō-saka* or *Ō-zaka* Great Slope; *an-nai-sha* or *annaija* guide; *sai-han-sho* or *saibanjo* court of justice.<sup>c</sup> In some instances the two forms have different senses; e.g., *chōsha* an elder or a superior, *chōja* a wealthy person. *Nigori* is not limited to compounds. The first consonants of some words which are commonly attached loosely to other words suffer *nigori*; e.g., *bakari* only, from *hakaru* consider. *Kiri* "only" may also be pronounced *giri*; *kurai* "about," *gurai*. *Mutsukashii* "difficult" is often pronounced *muzukashii*.

*Han-nigori*, that is, the change of *h* or *f* to *p*, occurs frequently in compounds from the Chinese when the first member ends in *n*. Thus *fun* be stirred and *hatsu* be aroused make *jumpatsu* enthusiasm; *man* be full and *fuku* stomach, *mampuku* satiety. From the native words *omou* think and *hakaru* consider we have *omompakaru* cogitate.

a The vowels suffer little or no change in composition. A final *e* in the first member of a compound is often changed to *a*. Thus from *kane* metal and *mono* thing we have *kanamono* hardware (but with *hako* box, *kanebako* money box); from *sake* liquor and *ya* house (p. 16), *sakaya* liquor dealer (but with *nomi* stem of *nomu* drink, *sakenomi* drunkard).

b In western Japan people say *shirage* from *ke*, which also means hair.

c There are two sounds to the Chinese character for 'god,' *shin* and *jin*. Compare *shin-gaku* theology, from *gaku* learning, and *jin-ja* Shinto shrine. The Japanese, by the way, say *Shindō*, not Shinto.

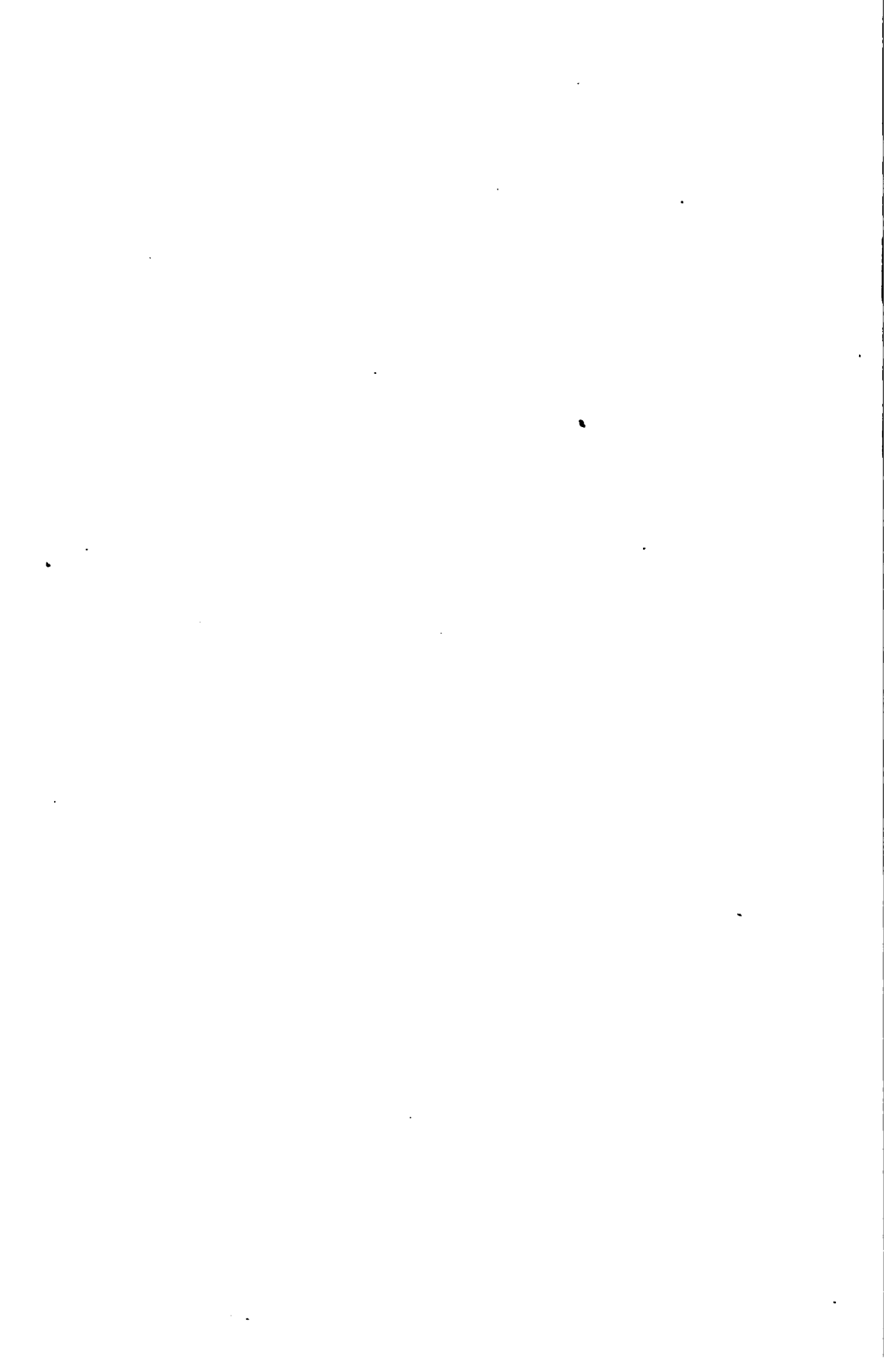
A preceding syllable coalescing with *h* or *f* may result in *pp*: *kiri* stem of *kiru* cut and *fu* (c) token make *kippu* ticket; *tetsu* iron and *hō* barrel, *teppō* gun. For other examples see p. 69 ff. Of native origin is *hipparu* bring along, for *hiki-haru*. An *h* between vowels tends to become *pp*: e.g., *akeppanasu* from *akehanasu* leave open; *mappira*, from *ma-hira* earnestly. The adverbs *yohodo* very and *yahari* still are also pronounced *yoppodo* and *yappari*.

## ACCENT

As has been intimated, if the student will take care of the vowels, the accents will generally take care of themselves. Among the vowels there is as it were an order of precedence. First there are the long sounds, then *a*, then *o* and *e*, and finally *u* and *i*. The stronger tend to draw the accent away from the weaker. Alternate syllables seem to pair off in the contest, the stronger pair winning. A combination tending to make a vowel quiescent may also affect the accent. When a difference between the vowels does not interfere, a word of three or four syllables is naturally accented on the first and third; e.g., *anata* you, *hanahada* very. The *a* before the causative ending *seru* or the potential ending *reru* is always accented. When a word is a compound, that fact naturally affects accents.<sup>a</sup> In general it is to be remembered that accent is not so strong as in English. It is one of the disadvantages of *rōmaji* that since the words look somewhat like English words the student is apt to give them English accents. To correct this tendency the student who wishes to acquire a natural pronunciation should do a great deal of reading aloud from the Japanese script under a Japanese teacher of the old school, if one can be found who is not afraid to criticise.

*Kiri*.—It is essential to good pronunciation to observe the *kiri* (lit. cutting), or *ku-giri* (*ku* phrase), that is, not to pause in such a way as to cut off particles, etc., from preceding words to which they belong.

<sup>a</sup> In western Japan homonymns are often distinguished by means of the accent. For example, *hana* flower has a marked accent on the first syllable as compared with *hana* nose. In the same way they distinguish *hashi* chopstick, *hashi* end, *hashi* bridge; *kaki* oyster, *kaki* persimmon and *kaki* fence; *kami* hair, *kami* paper and *kami* god, etc. The Japanese themselves are so much in doubt about these accents that the student can well afford to neglect them.



## THE NOUN.<sup>a</sup>

### CHAPTER I.

The Japanese language has, properly speaking, no article, no plural, and no gender.

1. There is an equivalent of the English "a certain," namely, *aru* (lit. existing): *aru onna* a certain woman. More recently this *aru* has come to be used also with plurals in the sense of "some." To the English article in its generic sense, as in "the cat" or "a cat" (speaking generally), corresponds the Japanese idiom: *neko to iu mono* what is called cat (*neko* cat, *to* particle of quotation, *iu* say, *mono* thing).

2. When there is need of bringing out the idea of plurality, the suffixes *ra*,<sup>b</sup> *domo* (from *otomo* companion), *shū* (c) or *shu* crowd, *tachi* (c) or *dachi* all, and *gata* (from *kata* side), may be employed. These are, with the exception of the first, used only with words denoting persons. The last is the most polite :

*Hyakushō* peasant; *hyakushōdomo* peasants.

*Ko* child; *kodomo* children.<sup>c</sup>

*Akindo* merchant; *akindoshū* merchants.

*Onna* woman; *onnashū* women (of servants girls, etc.).

*Oya* parent; *oyatachi* parents.

*Fu-jin* (c) lady; *fujingata* ladies.

Many words may be made plural by doubling :

*Kuni* country; *kuniguni* countries.

*Hito* person; *hitobito* people.

*Tokoro, sho* (c) place; *tokorodokoro, shosho* various places.

The plural may also be expressed by means of words used as prefixes meaning "many," "all," etc.

*Bankoku* all countries, from *ban* myriad.

*Shokoku* various countries (or provinces) from *sho* many.

---

a *Jūu-mei-shi* true-name-word, or simply *meishi*.

b The suffix *ra* is in the colloquial used mostly with pronouns. The ideogram used to represent it is 𠄎 "class." Both *ra* and 𠄎 may also have the sense of "etc."

c The words *kodomo* child, *wakaishū* young fellow (from *wakai* young), and *tomodachi* friend, have come to be used also in a singular sense. To make the plural sense of *kodomo* distinct, still another suffix must be added: *kodomora kodomoshū, kodomotachi*.



3. In the case of animals the masculine and feminine genders may be expressed by means of the prefixes *o* (*on*) and *me* (*men*); or, more commonly, by *osu* and *mesu* with the genitive particle *no*:

*Inu* dog; *oinu* (*inu no osu*); *meinu* (*inu no mesu*).

*Tori* fowl; *ondori* cock; *mendori* hen.

But it is to be observed that the Japanese usually leave the distinction unexpressed. For instance:

*Tori ga nakimashita.* The (or, a) cock crowed.

Here it is not necessary to say specifically *ondori*.

### Vocabulary.

✓ <i>akindo</i> trader, shopkeeper.	✓ <i>inu</i> dog.	犬 猫
✓ <i>hyakushō</i> peasant.	✓ <i>kitsune</i> fox.	
✓ <i>chichi</i> father.	✓ <i>neko</i> cat.	
✓ <i>haha</i> mother.	✓ <i>nezumi</i> rat, mouse. <sup>a</sup>	
✓ <i>otoko</i> man, male.	✓ <i>shika</i> deer.	
✓ <i>onna</i> woman, female.	✓ <i>uma</i> (proncd. <i>mma</i> ) horse.	
✓ <i>oya</i> parent.	✓ <i>usagi</i> hare, rabbit.	
✓ <i>ko, kodomo</i> child.	✓ <i>ushi</i> ox, cow.	
✓ <i>tomodachi</i> friend.	✓ <i>tori</i> bird, fowl.	

When nouns are joined by the conjunction "and" or enumerated in a series which is brought to a conclusion, *to* "and" or *mo* "too" is affixed to each (*—mo—mo*=both—and). When the series is not closed, that is, when only a few specimens of a possible list are given, *ya* or *dano* is affixed to each. *Ya* is always, and *to*, except in formal speech, usually, omitted after the last word. However the asyndetic construction is not uncommon in Japanese; e.g., *oya ko* parent and child.

### Exercises.

*Inu to neko. Oya to kodomo. Sh'ka ya usagi ya kitsune. Otoko mo onna mo. Ojika to mejika* (from *sh'ka*). *Chichi haha. Hyak'shō to akindo. Omma to menma* (from *uma*). *Onna mo kodomo mo. Uma dano, ushi dano, inu dano. Kitsune ya usagi ya nezumi. Ondori to mendori. Oushi mo meushi ma.*

a. Regarded as a variety of rat. Mice may be distinguished as *hatsuka-nezumi* 20 days' rat). White mice are *nankin-nezumi*. Comp. *nankin-usagi* white rabbit.

(In the following expressions no sign of the plural is required.)

Both father and mother. A cat and a mouse. Dogs and foxes. Horses and (*ya*) dogs and cats. Parents and friends. Shopkeepers and peasants.

## CHAPTER II.

Relations like the cases in European languages are expressed by means of the particles *ga* (Nominative), *no* (Genitive), *ni* (Dative), and *wo* (Accusative). Further, what we call the subject in English is often distinguished by the particle *wa*. But this particle is also attached to the word that becomes in English the grammatical object; and it may be added to the particles *no*, *ni*, *wo*, *de*, and to other words. To explain fully and systematically the uses of *wa* and its relation to *ga* would only confuse the beginner at this stage. Reserving more particular rules for later occasions, we shall now endeavor to state the main principles from which they are derived.

1. *Ga* simply marks out the subject, excluding other things, while *wa* indicates that an important predicate is to follow.

*Kore ga warui.* THIS (not the others) is bad (*warui* is bad).

*Kore wa warui.* THIS is BAD.

The former sentence answers the question, Which is bad? The latter is a reply to the question, What sort of a thing is this?

{	Who came?	<i>Dare ga kimashita ka.</i>
{	Tarō came.	<i>Tarō ga kimashita.</i>
{	Where is Tarō?	<i>Tarō wa doko ni imasu ka.</i>
{	Tarō just came.	<i>Tarō wa tadaima kimashita.</i>

It is a safe rule not to use *wa* when there is no occasion to think of two or more possible predicates. Hence in subordinate clauses the subject almost invariably requires *ga*.

*Tarō ga kimashita toki ni yuki ga futte imashita.*

Snow was falling when (*toki ni*) Tarō came.

2. When subjects only are contrasted *ga* is affixed to both. When predicates are contrasted so as to put a word in one sentence in antithesis to a word in another, both require *wa*.

Zen *wa* (good) *nase* (do); aku *wa* (evil) *nasu na* (do not).

Do good and not evil.

Note that *wa*, not *wo*, is attached here to what we should call:

the object. Logically *zen* and *aku* are subjects. It is a corollary of the above rule that *wa* may properly be used with the emphatic word in a negative sentence.

The foreigner often finds it hard to tell whether he ought to use *wa* or *ga* with the subject. There are cases in which *wa* only may be used, and other cases in which *ga* only is permissible; but often it depends on the point of view which is to be chosen. Sometimes in the same sentence either may be used with practically no difference in the sense. It may be in place also to warn the beginner that the usage is subject to considerable variations in the dialects.

### Vocabulary.

• <i>ahiru</i> duck (domestic).	• <i>hayai</i> swift, early.
• <i>kato</i> dove, pigeon.	• <i>osoi</i> slow, late.
• <i>karasu</i> crow, raven.	• <i>kuroi</i> black.
• <i>kiji</i> pheasant (green).	• <i>shiroi</i> white.
• <i>niwa</i> yard, garden.	• <i>osoroshii</i> frightful, terrible.
• <i>niwa-tori</i> barnyard fowl.	• <i>umai</i> (pron. <i>umai</i> ) delicious,
• <i>susume</i> sparrow.	agreeable to the taste. <sup>b</sup>
• <i>tsuru</i> crane.	• <i>utsukushii</i> pretty, beautiful.
• <i>uguisu</i> bush-warbler.	• <i>wakai</i> young.
• <i>ko-uma</i> , <i>komina</i> colt. <sup>a</sup>	• <i>warui</i> bad.
• <i>ko-ushi</i> calf.	• <i>yoi</i> good.
• <i>chiisai</i> small.	• <i>kono</i> this (here).
• <i>ōkii</i> large.	• <i>ano</i> that (yonder). <sup>c</sup>

Adjectives similar to the above, ending in *i*, may be used attributively, in which case they precede the noun. They may also follow the noun as predicates, requiring no verb. It should be remembered, however, that the simple adjective is thus used only in familiar talk. See Ch. XI.

### Exercises.

*Sh'ka ya kitsune wa hayai.<sup>d</sup> Kono kiji wa umai, ano*

a Not to be confounded with *koma*, which now denotes a full grown male-horse.

b Women usually say *oishii*.

c *Kono* and *ano* are used before nouns like adjectives.

d When several words are joined by *to* or *ya*, *wa* or *ga* is added only to the last.

*ahiru mo umai.*<sup>a</sup> *Shiroi inu. Ano utsukushii onna. Ano wakai onna wa utsukushii. Kono hatu wa shiroi; ano niwatori wa kuroi. Kono nezumi wa okii; ano nezumi wa chiisai. Ano uma wa hayai. Tsuru wa shiroi; karas' wa kuroi. Ano tori wa chiisai. Kono koushi wa okii. Shiroi nezumi wa utsukushii. Kono ushi wa osoi. Hayai uma wa yoi. Kono omma mo memma mo kuroi. Ano inu wa osoroshii. Uguis' wa chiisai. Komma dano koushi dano wa utsukushii.*

This calf is small. That horse is swift. This duck is young. This ox is slow. This black cat is large. That colt is beautiful. That white dove. Sparrows are small. That fowl is large. Cranes are beautiful. This large hen. Both pheasants and pigeons are delicious. That horse is small. Doves are beautiful. Those calves are large. Duck is delicious. This horse is bad. This dog is black; that dog is white. A white dove is beautiful. Cranes are large.

### CHAPTER III.

*Wa* does not designate a particular case. As we have intimated, it serves to isolate a word or expression, to make it conspicuous. Often it may be translated, "In regard to." It is used with especial frequency after words denoting time and place.

*Konnichi wa* (to-day) *yoi o tenki desu.*

It is fine weather to-day.

*Konnichi wa* implies at least a faint contrast with other times: else *wa* would not be used. Compare:

*Konnichi kaerimashita.* He<sup>a</sup> returned to-day.

*Konnichi wa kaerimasen.* He does not return to-day.

The second sentence implies, "he may return later." After a word with *wa* beginning the sentence the grammatical subject naturally requires *ga*, unless a second contrast is emphasized.

*Koko wa samusa ga tsuyoi.* Here the cold is severe (strong). In case we wished to contrast the cold and the wind, it would be:

*Koko wa samusa wa tsuyoku nai keredomo, kaze wa tsuyoi.*

Here the cold is not severe, but the wind is high.

<sup>a</sup> *Wa* or *ga* is usually omitted when *mo* is used.

A sentence like "The fox has a long tail," becomes :

*Kitsune wa o ga nagai.*

Here we observe that the subject with *wa* is grammatically disconnected from the sentence, while the predicate *nagai* (long) takes the subordinate subject *o* (tail) with *ga*.

*Nihon wa yama ga ôi.* Japan is mountainous.

Literally: In regard to Japan, mountains are many. Grammatically *yama ga ôi* is a complete sentence, but the expression simply fills the place of an adjective. Many similar expressions have become idiomatic. The adjectives most commonly modified by subjects with *ga* in this way are *yoi* and its opposite *warui*:

- kokoro-mochi ga yoi* feeling is good = comfortable.
- gen-ki ga yoi* vitality is good = vigorous, vivacious, lively.
- tsu-gô ga yoi* circumstances are good = convenient.
- yô-jin ga yoi* caution is good = careful.
- kuchi ga warui* mouth is bad = sarcastic.
- i-ji ga warui* temper is bad = ill-natured.
- sei ga takai* stature is high = tall.
- sei ga hikui* stature is low = short.
- ki ga mijikai* spirit is short = quick-tempered.
- yoku ga fukai* desire is deep = avaricious.

In case an antithesis is involved *ga may*, of course, become *wa*.

### Vocabulary.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>aski</i> foot, leg.   | <i>sô</i> elephant.   |
| <i>atama</i> head (ladies' word :<br><i>otsumuri, o tsumu</i> ). | <i>hito</i> person, man.  |
| <i>hana</i> nose, snout.   | <i>kata</i> side (polite for <i>hito</i> ).                       |
| <i>kao</i> face.   | <i>Nihon-jin</i> a Japanese<br>(polite: <i>Nihon no o kata</i> ). |
| <i>ke</i> fur.   | <i>Seiyô-jin, Sei yô no o kata</i><br>Westerner, European.        |
| <i>koé</i> voice.  | <i>ki</i> spirit, humor.  |
| <i>kuchi</i> mouth.  | <i>sei</i> stature.   |
| <i>kuchi-bashi</i> bill (of a bird),<br>from <i>hashi</i> bill.  | <i>gen-ki</i> vitality, liveliness.                               |
| <i>mimi</i> ear.   | <i>i-ji</i> disposition, temper, ob-<br>stinacy.                  |
| <i>o</i> or <i>shippo</i> ( <i>shiri-o</i> ) tail.               | <i>yô-jin</i> caution.  |
| <i>tora</i> tiger,   | <i>anata</i> you (polite).  |
| <i>usagi-uma</i> donkey.   | <i>nagai</i> long.  |
| <i>hikui</i> low.  | <i>takai</i> high.  |
| <i>mijikai</i> short.  |   |

## Exercises.

*Ano hito wa iji ga warui.. Ano hyak'shō wa genki ga yoi. Nihonjin wa sei ga hikui. Seiyōjin wa sei ga takai. Ano onna wa ki ga mijikai. Ushi wa atama ga ōkii. Tsuru wa ashi ga nagai. Tora wa ke ga utsukushii. Uguis' wa koe ga yoi (sings beautifully). Karas' wa koe ga warui. Ano otoko wa sei ga takai.<sup>a</sup> Zō wa hana ga nagai. Ahiru wa koe ga warui. Zō wa o ga mijikai. Usagi wa mimi ga nagai; usagi-uma mo mimi ga nagai. Ano hito wa kuchi ga warui. Komma ya koushi wa ashi ga nagai. Tsuru wa kuchibashi ga nagai. Ano akindo wa yōjin ga warui.*

He<sup>b</sup> is sarcastic. This child has a pretty face. Rats have long tails. Foxes and (*ya*) dogs are swift of foot; horses too are swift of foot. This dog has short ears; [his] tail also is short. This hare has black fur. Both doves and crows have short bills. He has short legs. She is careful. He is slow of foot. The duck has short legs.

## CHAPTER IV.

The particle *no* with a noun corresponds to the genitive case, and is rendered sometimes by the English possessive, and sometimes by the preposition "of":

*Tori no koe* a bird's cry.

*Nihon no ten-shi* the Emperor of Japan.

Notice that the limiting noun together with *no* always precedes the word which it limits. This is one instance of the general rule that all modifiers precede the principal or governing word.

In the classical style *ga* performs the same function as *no*:

*Kimi ga yo* the lord's (Emperor's) reign.

<sup>a</sup> *Ano otoko* (that fellow) and *ano onna* are not elegant. *Ano kata wa sei ga takai* is better. Still more polite: *Ano o kata wa o sei ga takō gozaimasu.*

<sup>b</sup> *Ano hito, ano kata,* etc., may mean either "he" or "she."

As in other languages, the genitive may be explicative or appositional.

*Otoko no ko* boy.

*Niwatori no mesu* hen.

*San-nin* (three persons) *no kodomo* three children.

*Musashi no kuni* the country of Musashi.

### Vocabulary.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>ko</i> young, offspring, egg (in the last sense, of fish only). | — <i>sake, shake</i> salmon.                      |
| <i>tama</i> ball.  | — <i>tai</i> sea-bream.                           |
| <i>tama-go</i> egg.  | — <i>tara</i> cod, haddock.                       |
| <i>karada</i> body.  | — <i>unagi</i> eel.                               |
| <i>mi</i> meat (of fish), fruit, nut.                              | <i>buta</i> pig (domestic).                       |
| <i>sakana</i> fish.  | <i>niku</i> (c) flesh, meat.                      |
| <i>me</i> eye.   | <i>akai</i> red.                                  |
| — <i>hire</i> fin.   | <i>mazui</i> unsavory, disagreeable to the taste. |
| — <i>hirame</i> flounder, flatfish.                                | <i>tsuyoi</i> strong, violent.                    |
| — <i>koi</i> carp.   | <i>mada</i> still, yet.                           |
| — <i>kujira</i> whale.   | <i>keredomo, keredo</i> but. <sup>a</sup>         |
| — <i>maguro</i> tunny.   |   |

### Exercises.

*Tomodachi no kodomo. Sakana no hire. Tai no atama wa okii. Maguro no mi wa akai. Tara no mi wa shiroi; unagi no mi mo shiroi. Koi no kuchi wa tsuyoi. Kujira no ko.<sup>b</sup> Ano hito no karada wa okii. Tai no hire wa akai. Shake no ko wa mazui. Tsuru no tamago wa okii; suzume no tamago wa chiisai. Koushi no niku wa umai. Kono buta no niku wa mazui. Ano otoko no ko wa iji ga warui. Kono uma no ashi wa shiroi keredomo, atama wa kuroi. Ano Seiyō no o kata wa genki ga yoi. Zō no mimi wa okii keredomo, me wa chiisai. Hyak' shō no uma wa osoi.*

The eggs of this fish are large. The fur of this tiger is beautiful. The child (*wa*) of that Japanese is quick-tempered.

<sup>a</sup> *Shikashi* has a stronger adversative sense, while *ga* is weaker.

<sup>b</sup> In speaking of very common animals briefer forms are usual: *konna*, *koushi*, *koneko*, *koinu*, etc. Kittens and pups are also called *nekogo* and *inukoro*. Note that *ko-tori* means little bird, not young bird (see Ch. VIII).

The eggs of this fowl are small. Veal is delicious. The donkey's ears are long. Whale's meat is unsavory. Pork is white. The whale has a strong tail. These kittens are pretty. His children (children of that man) are still young. This fish's fins are white. This dog's fur is black. This mouse's fur is white. This white hare's eyes are red. The head of the ox is large. The eyes of the flounder are small. The eggs of the carp are delicious. The head of the *tai* is delicious.

## CHAPTER V.

*Ni* following a noun correspondends to the dative case.

*Ano kodomo wa haka ni nite iru (imasu).*

That child resembles [its] mother.

The Japanese idiom resembles the Latin in another particular:

*Ushi ni tsuno ga aru (arimasu).*

To oxen are horns, i. e., Oxen have horns.

When a comparison is involved, *wa* may be added to *ni*; or we may say simply: *Ushi wa tsuno ga aru*. Oxen have horns. The construction with *ni* is preferred when there is a close relation between the objects, and especially when the parts of a person or thing are named.

*Ningen ni te ga aru (arimasu).* Men have hands.

*Watakushi ni wa imôto ga nai (arimasen).<sup>a</sup>*

I have no [younger] sister.

As a postposition *ni* has various other uses which will be explained in Ch. LXXVIII.

We add a few explanations concerning the use of verbs. In Japanese the verb always stands at the end of the sentence. In *nite iru* "are resembling" *nite* is the subordinative of the verb *niru* "to resemble," and *iru* means "is" or "are." *Iru*, when it stands alone, that is, not with subordinative, differs from *aru* in being used only when the subject is a person or some other living thing. The short forms *iru* and *aru* are used only in speaking familiarly, as to members of one's own family or to intimate friends. In polite speech, whether to those of higher rank than ourselves, or to strangers, even if they be of

<sup>a</sup> *Ni* is not required in: *Anata wa kasa ga arimasu ka.* Have you an umbrella?



lower rank, we must add to the concluding verb at least the suffixes *masu* (preset), *mashō* (future or probable), *mashita* (past). These are added to the stem of the verb.

<i>ari-masu</i>	<i>ari-mashō</i>	<i>ari-mashita</i>
<i>i-masu</i>	<i>i-mashō</i>	<i>i-mashita</i>
is, are	will or may be	was, were.

There are two classes of verbs. In the one class the form used at the end of the sentence, the conclusive form, is derived by adding *ru* to the stem. In the other class the conclusive form substitutes *u* for the *i* of the stem. In the vocabularies verbs of the former class are distinguished by the use of the hyphen, thus: *i-ru*, *ni-ru*. In Hepburn's Dictionary verbs are arranged according to their stems, as *i*, *ari*; in Brinkley's, according to their conclusive forms, as *iru*, *aru*.

### Vocabulary.

<i>abura</i> fat, oil, blubber.	<i>-nomu</i> flea.
<i>ha</i> tooth.	<i>-ebi</i> shrimp.
<i>hane</i> feather, wing.	<i>ōkami</i> wolf.
<i>hari</i> needle, sting.	<i>saru</i> monkey.
<i>hige</i> beard.	<i>ni-ru</i> resemble.
<i>tsume</i> nail, claw, hoof.	<i>i-ru</i> be (of living things),
<i>tsuno</i> horn, feeler.	live.
<i>koke</i> or <i>uroko</i> scale (of fish).	<i>aru</i> be (in existence or in
<i>-mushi</i> insect, worm, bug.	one's possession).
<i>-chō</i> , <i>chō-chō</i> butterfly.	<i>nai</i> not existent, not pos-
<i>-hachi</i> bee.	sessed (polite: <i>arimasen</i> ).
<i>hai</i> house-fly.	<i>yoku</i> well, frequently.
<i>-ka</i> mosquito.	<i>taku-san</i> much, many, in
<i>-kirigirisu</i> cricket.	great quantity. <sup>a</sup>

### Exercises.

*Hai ni wa hane ga aru (arimas')*; *ka ni mo hane ga aru (arimas')*. *Nomi ni wa hane wa<sup>b</sup> nai (arimasen)*.<sup>c</sup> *Hachi ni wa hari ga arukeredomo, chō ni wa (hari ga) nai*. *Buta ni chūisai*

<sup>a</sup> *Taku* and *san* are the Chinese equivalents of *sawa* marsh and *yama* mountain.

<sup>b</sup> The *wa* after *hane* implies, of course, a contrast: It is not by the use of wings that the flea moves.

<sup>c</sup> In the following sentences the student should change familiar forms to polite.

*shippo ga aru. Koi ni wa wroko ga aru. Ushi ni wa tsumo mo tsume mo aru. Kirigiris' ni wa hane mo aru.<sup>a</sup> Neko ni wa hige ga aru. Kono kodomo wa yoku (very much) haha ni nite imas'. Saru wa hito ni nite iru. Okami wa inu ni nite iru. Ano inu wa kitsune ni nite iru. Kono mushi ni wa hari ga aru.*

This bird is like a sparrow. That dog is like a wolf. Birds have bills. Both horses (*ni mo*) and deer have hoofs. The cat has claws. This horse resembles a donkey. Deer have horns. This monkey has a tail. He resembles a monkey. This cat has no tail. This calf (1) has no horns (3) yet (2). This child resembles its father (*chicki-oya*) very much. This child (1) has no teeth (3) yet (2). Hogs have a great deal of fat (*tabi san aru*).

## CHAPTER VI.

*Wo*, originally a particle of exclamation, designates the direct object. When several objects are connected by "and," *wo* is affixed to the last only. When *mo* is used, *wo* is generally omitted in the colloquial.

### Vocabulary.

<i>ha</i> leaf.	- <i>sagi</i> heron.
<i>hana</i> flower.	- <i>tombo</i> dragon-fly.
<i>ki</i> tree, wood.	- <i>u</i> cormorant.
<i>kuwa no ki</i> mulberry tree.	- <i>shishi</i> lion.
<i>matsu no ki</i> pine tree.	<i>kai-ko</i> silk-worm. <sup>d</sup>
<i>sakura no ki</i> cherry tree.	<i>kuda-mono</i> fruit.
<i>ume<sup>b</sup> no ki</i> plum tree.	<i>koku-motsu</i> cereal.
<i>ue-ru</i> plant.	<i>ya-sai, yasai-mono</i> vegetable.
<i>he-ki-ya</i> gardener. <sup>c</sup>	<i>nin-gen</i> human being.
<i>kusa</i> grass, weeds.	<i>ryō-shi</i> fisherman.
- <i>semi</i> cicada.	<i>kure-ru</i> give (not polite).

<sup>a</sup> That is, besides the legs by which it springs.

<sup>b</sup> *Uma, umai, ume* are pronounced with the *u* silent. But in *umi* sea the *u* is pronounced and accented.

<sup>c</sup> From *ue-ru* to plant, *ki* tree, *ya* house or tradesman.

<sup>d</sup> From *kau* keep (animals) and *ko* young.

*kuu* (*kū*) eat, devour.  
*tabe-ru* eat (elegant).  
*toru* take, catch.  
*ii*<sup>a</sup> no.

*chō-dai*<sup>b</sup> please give me, I  
 should like to have.  
*ni* in, by, at, to.  
*ka* interrogative particle.

### Exercises.

*Uma mo ushi no k'sa wo kuu* (*kuimas'*). *Ningen wa niku ya kokumotsu ya yasai wo taberu* (*tabemas'*). *U wa sakana wo toru* (p. 10c). *Shishi mo tora mo ningen no niku wo kuu. Ano hito wa onna no ko ni hana wo kureta*<sup>c</sup> (*kuremask'ta*). *Ano uekiya ga kono ume no ki to sakura no ki wo ueta*.<sup>d</sup> *Kodomo wa chōchō ya tombo wo toru. Otoko no ko wa tombo wo toru keredomo, onna no ko wa chōchō wo toru. Kaiko wa kuwa no ha wo kuu. Ano kudamono wo chōdai, Ryōshi ga sakana wo tak'san totta* (*torimash'ta*).<sup>e</sup> *Sakura no hana wo totta kodomo wa niwa ni imas' ka.*

The gardener planted a pine tree. Birds eat insects. Fishes also eat insects. Herons and (*ya*) cranes eat fish. I should like to have those cherry blossoms. The gardener gave the girl a flower. Did you plant this pine tree? No, the gardener planted [it]. The Japanese eat cereals (*ya*), fish and vegetables. Bush-warblers eat worms. Children often (*yoku*) catch butterflies. The mother gave the child some fruit. The cat catches mice. The farmer planted mulberry trees. Foxes catch chickens. Deer eat grass. I should like to have those plum blossoms. That child often (*yoku*) catches cicadas.

a This *ii* differs from the English "no" in that it denotes not so much an objective contradiction as a mere difference of opinion. It amounts to: You are under a false impression.

b From two Chinese words meaning to put on the top of the head, i. e., receive respectfully.

c The familiar past tense is formed by adding *ta* to the stem.

d *Ga* indicates that emphasis rests on *ano*. The man that planted the trees is that gardener, not some one else. If still more emphasis were needed, we might say: *Kono ki wo ueta hito wa ano uekiya desu*.

e When brief mention is made of a single instance the simple subject commonly requires *ga*, while *wa* is used in general statements. The student should observe this distinction in the exercises to be translated into Japanese.

## CHAPTER VII.

The predicative expressions given in Ch. III. may also be used attributively by substituting *no* for *ga* :

*O taku no jochū wa genki no ii (yoi) onna desu.*

Your maidservant (lit. m. of your house) is a lively woman.

*Sei no takai hito desu.* [He or she] is a tall person.

Such expressions occur frequently in Japanese and may be variously translated :

*Atama no ōkii sakana.* A fish with a large head.

*Ōkii atama no sakana* would be very wrong. Nor would it be euphonious to repeat a noun, thus : *Ano onna wa genki no ii onna desu.*

The reason why *no* may be substituted for *ga* is that *ga* was originally a genitive particle. See Ch. IV. As such *ga* is still used in the literary language and occurs in many proper names :

*Ume-ga-tani* plum-valley. *Tsuru-ga-oka* crane-hill.

The verb "is" or "are" after a predicate noun becomes *de aru* (contracted to *da*), *de arimasu* (contracted to *desu*), *de gozarimasu* (or *de gozaimasu*), the last being most polite and the first most familiar. Notice the difference between :

*Matsu no ki ga arimasu.* There are pine trees.

*Matsu no ki desu* (for *de arimasu*). They are pine trees.

## Vocabulary.

- |                                 |   |
|---------------------------------|---|
| - <i>ayu</i> , <i>ai</i> trout. | <i>ran</i> orchid.                        |
| - <i>iwashi</i> sardine.        | <i>un</i> luck ( <i>un ga yoi</i> lucky). |
| - <i>nishin</i> herring.        | <i>yoku</i> lust, passion, avarice.       |
| <i>kaeru</i> frog.              | <i>konjō</i> (lit. root-nature) dis-      |
| <i>kawa</i> river.              | position.                                 |
| <i>nagare</i> current, stream.  | <i>kyō-shi</i> teacher.                   |
| <i>nioi</i> odor, fragrance.    | <i>sei-to</i> pupil, scholar.             |
| <i>take</i> bamboo.             | <i>senchō</i> captain of a ship.          |
| <i>tokoro</i> place.            | <i>shi-kwan</i> officer.                  |
| <i>yama</i> mountain.           | <i>Ezo-jin</i> } native of Yezo.          |
| <i>sumō</i> wrestling.          | <i>Ainu</i> }                             |
| <i>sumō-tori</i> wrestler.      | <i>koko</i> this place, here.             |
| <i>ken</i> region, vicinity.    | <i>fukai</i> deep.                        |

*ōi* many, numerous. *noru* (with *ni*) ride, be on,  
*sukunai, sukenai* a few, scarce.<sup>a</sup> *mouru*, get aboard.

### EXERCISES.

*Tai wa atama no ōkii sakana des'. Nishin wa ko no ōi sakana des'. Anata wa kuchi no warui hito des'.<sup>b</sup> Umegatani wa karada no ōkii s'mōtori des'. Ano senchō wa yōjin no yoi hito des'. Nihon ni wa konjō no warui uma ga ōi. Tsuru wa kuchibashi no nagai tori des'. Ahiru wa ashi no mijikai tori des'. O Take san<sup>c</sup> wa iji no warui ko da. O no nagai saru mo aru shi,<sup>d</sup> o no mijikai saru<sup>e</sup> mo aru. Ano sh'kwan wa konjō no warui uma ni notte imas' (is riding). Ano kyōshi wa ki no mijikai hito des'. Koko wa sh'ka no ōi yama da Fujikawa<sup>f</sup> wa nagare no hayai kawa des'. Tamagawa<sup>g</sup> wa ayu no ōi kawa des'. Kono hen wa ka no ōi tokoro des'.*

That European is quick-tempered. Some butterflies have long, while others have short feelers (there are butterflies with long feelers and there are also those with short feelers). Mr. Shimada is a cautious person. Ōdate is a tall wrestler. Sardines are oily fish. That pupil is an ill-natured child. Japan is a mountainous country. That farmer is an avaricious fellow. That sea-captain is unlucky. Orchids are sweet-scented flowers (flowers of good odor). Here (*koko wa*) frogs are numerous. The Ainu have long beards. Among (*ni wa*) Japanese long-bearded men are scarce. [She] is a sarcastic woman.

a Notice that *ōi* and *sukunai* cannot be used attributively like the English "many" and "few," except when limited by a noun with *no*; e. g., *hone no ōi sakana* a bony fish (*hone* bone).

b It would be more polite to say: *Anata wa o kuchi no warui o kata de gosaimasu.*

c The name of a girl. *Sama* or *san* is added to names of persons or to titles of important personages, such as *tenshi sama* Emperor, *danna san* master of the house. In the case of girls *o* is always prefixed unless there are more than two syllables. *Sama* is also used in certain polite phrases, such as *o kage sama* I owe my good fortune to you (*kage* shadow), *go kurō sama* I have caused you much trouble.

d Notice the circumstantiality of the expression. *Shi* is a disjunctive particle that marks the transition from one coördinate clause to another. In classical language the simple stem of the verb is used in such a position. Thus *ari* might be substituted in the above for *aru shi*. *Shi* makes the transition more distinct.

e Instead of repeating *saru*, we may say *o no mijikas no mo aru.*

f A river near Mount Fuji.

g A river near Tōkyō.

## CHAPTER VIII.

Japanese resembles German in the facility with which compound nouns may be formed. Compounds derived from the Chinese are especially numerous.

1. The components may themselves be nouns :

*sakana-ichi* fish-market.

*oya-yubi* parent-finger, thumb.

*soto-gawa* outside. *uchi-gawa* inside.

*uri-zane-gao* melon-seed-face, i. e., beautiful face.

The following are of Chinese origin :

*kwa-ji* fire-affair, conflagration.

*ba-sha* horse-vehicle, wagon or carriage.

*tetsu-dō* iron-way, railroad.

*den-ki* lightning-spirit, electricity.

*tetsudō-basha* street car.

*denki-tetsudō* electric railroad.

2. One of the components may be an adjective :

*ao-mono* green things, vegetables, from *aoi*.

*waka-danna* young master, from *wakai*.

Numerous compounds are formed by the use of the prefixes *ō* great and *ko* small (in a few proper names *o*) :

*ō-kaze* great wind, typhoon.

*ō-mizu* great water, flood.

*ō-atari* great hit (in the theater or speculation).

*ō-mugi* barley. *ko-mugi* wheat.

*ko-yubi* little finger.

*ko-zutsumi* parcel, from *tsutsumi* bundle.

*ko-zō* little priest, apprentice, errand-boy.<sup>a</sup>

*ko-goto* little word, i. e., complaint, from *koto* word.

*ō-miya* great shrine.

*ō-yama* little mountain.

But it must not be presumed that such compounds may be formed at will, nor that a word forming a compound with one of the two prefixes may form one with the other also.

<sup>a</sup> Boys in former times had the hair closely cropped or shaved, like priests.

3. One of the components may be a verb. In genuine Chinese compounds an object-noun follows the verb that governs it, but in the case of pure Japanese words the object-noun precedes. This distinction, of course, does not apply where the verb is intransitive or where the noun is the principal component and the verb has the nature of a modifier.

*hi-tsuke* incendiary, from *hi* fire and *tsuke-ru* apply; but *tsuke-bi* incendiary fire.

*mono-morai* beggar (more commonly *kojiki*), from *mono* thing and *morau* receive; but *morai-mono* gift.

*mono-oki* storeroom, from *oku* put; *oki-mono* an ornament kept in the *toko-no-ma* (alcove of a room).

*tate-kata* style of building, from *tate-ru* build and *kata* mode; or *tate-yō*, from *yō* manner.<sup>a</sup>

*sei-shi* manufacture of paper, from *sei* make and *shi* paper.

*sha-shin* photograph, from *sha* to copy and *shin* truth.

*ji-shin* earthquake, from *ji* earth and *shin* (intr.) to quake.

Some nouns occurring in compounds are rarely, if ever, used alone; e. g., *ya* house, firm, tradesman. The Chinese *ka* (house) is in Japanese similarly used, but only of persons.

*kusuri-ya* druggist.

*tonya* (*toi-ya*) wholesale store, from *ton* inquire.

*kenchiku-ka* architect, from *ken-chiku* building operations.

*fuhei-ka* grumbler, from *fu-hei* dissatisfaction.

*tai-shok-ka* gourmand, from *tai* great, *shoku* eat.

## Vocabulary.

*aida* interval.

*kono-aika*, *konaida* recently.

*hi* fire.

*ichi* market.

*kusuri* drug, medicine.

*mono* thing, person.

*ura* rear, lining. :

*chō* street, town.

*hon* book.

*ba-sha* any vehicle drawn by [horses.

*gwai-koku* foreign country.

*ji-shin* earthquake.

*ken-kwa* quarrel.

*kin-jo* vicinity, neighborhood.

<sup>a</sup> *Shi-kata* and *shi-yō* are similarly formed from the stem of the verb *suru* to do. These words are daily used by every one who speaks Japanese. *Shikata ga nai*, or *Shiyō ga nai*. There is no help for it (no way of doing).

<i>ki-sha</i> railway train (lit. steam-vehicle).	<i>sono</i> that <sup>b</sup>
<i>kwa-ji</i> conflagration.	<i>tate-ru</i> build, erect.
<i>mei-butsu</i> noted product <sup>a</sup>	<i>tsuke-ru</i> apply,
<i>sha-shin</i> photograph.	<i>yuku, iku</i> go.
<i>tetsu-dō</i> railroad.	<i>wakaru</i> be clear, be understood. <sup>c</sup>
<i>watakushi</i> self, I.	<i>mō</i> already, now, still. <sup>d</sup>
<i>doko</i> where? (comp. <i>koko</i> ).	<i>yūbe</i> last night.
<i>aoi</i> blue, green.	<i>zui-bun</i> a good deal.
<i>chikai</i> near.	<i>ye</i> to, toward. <sup>e</sup>
<i>tōi</i> far, distant.	<i>sayō</i> as you say, yes.

## Exercises.

*Mō niwatori ga nakimashi'ta. Nihombashi<sup>i</sup> ni (at) sakanaichi ga aru (arimas')*. *Kanda ni (in) aomonoichi ga aru. Kono kisha wa doko ye ikimas'ka.*<sup>g</sup> *Hei,<sup>h</sup> Takasaki<sup>i</sup> ye ikimas'*. *Ber'rin ni wa tetsudōbasha ga ōi. Yūbe kinjo ni kwaji ga atta (arimashi'ta). Zuibun ōkii kwaji de atta (deshi'ta). Ber'rin ni wa*

a From *mei* name, fame, and *butsu*=*mono* (same as *motsu* in *kokumotsu*). The word is applied to a product which is characteristic of a given locality and so comes to be associated with its name.

b Corresponds to *ano, kono*. *Kono* may be called the pronominal adjective of the first person, *sono*, of the second, and *ano*, of the third. See Ch. XIV.

c This verb is properly intransitive and impersonal. *Watakushi wa wakarimasu*. I understand. *Wakarimasen*. I don't know. In some localities *wakarimasen* also means: I cannot agree; it won't do; it is impossible.

d The beginner may find it difficult to distinguish *mō* and *mada*. The latter is commonly associated with negative ideas and may be used alone in the sense of "not yet." *Mada samui*. It is still cold, it is not yet warm. *Mō* means "still" only in such expressions as *mō hitotsu* still one, one more.

e Words like this, corresponding to our prepositions, follow their nouns and should be called postpositions. See Chap. LXXVIII.

f The name of a bridge in Tōkyō (*hashi* bridge). In the next sentence *Kanda* is the name of a district in the same city, from *kami* god and *ta* paddy-field.

g When an interrogative sentence is formed with a word like *doko*, the subject (or object) of the English sentence often takes *wa*. *Ka* may be omitted when interrogative pronouns or adverbs are used.

h *Hei* or *hai* is a mere interjection meaning that the speaker is attentive to the words which have been addressed to him. *Sayō* is used in the same way, when reflection is necessary before an answer can be given.

i A town on the *Nakasendō*, one of the great highways of Japan.



*ōkii: kwaji ga s'kunai.*<sup>a</sup> *Yūbe no kwaji wa ts'kebi de atta keredomo, sono hi wo ts'keta mono wa<sup>b</sup> mada wakarimasen. Konaida ō-jishin ga arimash'ta. Doits' (Germany) ni wa jishin ga s'kunai keredomo, Nihon ni wa jishin ga ōi. Anata no shashin wo chōdai. Kono shashin wa anata ni yoku nite imas'.* *Kwaji wa tōi ka. Iie, chikai. Kono kinjo ni honya wa arimasen ka. Kono kinjo ni wa arimasen keredomo, ura no chō ni wa arimas'.* *Ano honya wa takai. Chiisai jishin wa ōi keredomo, ōkii jishin wa s'kunai. Ano hito wa doko ye ikimas' ka. Ōji<sup>c</sup> ye ikimas'.* *Kono kinjo ni sakanaichi ga nai ka. Arimasen keredomo, aomonoichi wa arimas'.* *Tōkyō ni wa kwaji ga ōi. Edo no meibutsu wa kwaji to kenkwa da. Kwaji wa Edo no hana.*<sup>d</sup>

Is there a drug store (*ga*) in this vicinity? Where (2) does this horse-car (1) go? [It] goes to Asak'sa.<sup>e</sup> In Tōkyō (*ni wa*) there are few horse-cars (horse-cars are few). The conflagration (of) last night was trifling (*chiisakatta*), but the earthquake was severe (*ōkikatta*).<sup>f</sup> In Japan there are still few railroads. Are you going (do you go) to America? I do not yet know. This house is well built (manner of building is good). She is a foreigner (*gwaiko-kujin*).<sup>g</sup> Where (2) are you (1) going? <sup>h</sup> I am going to the bookseller's. The gardener is planting (*uete imas'*) flowers. Does this photograph resemble me (*watakushi ni*)? Yes, it is a good likeness (well resembles you). There are many bookstores in New York.

a If *kwaji* were followed by *wa*, the natural implication would be that small fires were not infrequent.

b *Ii wo tsuketa mono* the person who started the fire. Verbs, like adjectives, modify nouns, there being no relative pronoun in Japanese.

c A village near Tōkyō.

d A proverb, suggested by the frequency of conflagrations in Edo (old name of Tōkyō). The meaning is that conflagrations are the finest sights in Tōkyō. Notice that the verb "to be" is often omitted in proverbs, for the sake of brevity.

e The name of a district in Tōkyō, from *asai* thin and *kusa* grass.

f Adjectives, like verbs, may be conjugated.

g This term, like *Seiyōjin*, is practically limited to the European races.

h In speaking of another's going, *oide desu* is more polite than *ikimasu*

## CHAPTER IX.

1. There are also compounds in which Chinese and Japanese words occur together :

*jō-bukuro* envelope, from *jō* (c) letter and *fukuro* sack.

*jū-bako* set of lacquered boxes, from *jū* (c) pile up and *hako*.

*moto-kin* capital, principal, from *moto* basis and *kin* (c) money.

*yu-tō* hot water vessel, from *yu* hot water and *tō* (c) tub.

Such mixed words are called *jūbako-yomi* or *yutō-yomi*. *Yomi* means reading, of the pronunciation of the Chinese ideograms. If both characters in *jūbako* were given the Chinese sound, they would read *jū-sō*; if Japanese, *kasane-bako*. So *yutō* is often read *yu-oke* and *motokin*, *gwan-kin* (c).

2. In many compounds the words retain their proper meaning and in translation must be separated by " and " :

*sai-shi* (c) wife and child (ren), family.

*ō-fuku* (c) or *iki-kaeri* going and returning,

*jō-ge* (c) above and below (also *ue-shita*), up and down.

3. In some cases there have been changes in the sound :

*akyūdo*, *akindo* merchant, from *aki* (*nai*) trade and *hito*.

*nakōdo* a go-between (in marriage), from *naka* middle and *hito*.

## Vocabulary.

*ie* house.

*uchi* interior, house. -

*yado* lodging, house.

*yado-ya* hotel. --

*tonari* next house, neighbor.

*mise* shop, store. -

*kami* paper.

*kutsu* shoe.

*shina*, *shina-mono* wares.

*shitate-ya* tailor. -- [letter].

*jō-bukuro* envelope (of a

*ne-dan* price.

*jū-bako* set of lacquered boxes.

*jōzu* skilful.<sup>a</sup>

*heta* unskilful.

*yen* circle, dollar (two shillings or 50 cents).

*dai-ku* carpenter. -

*ryō-ri* cooking.

*ryōri-ya* restaurant.

*sai-shi* wife and child(ren).

*tō-butsu* foreign goods.

<sup>a</sup> *Jōzu*, *heta* and many other words used as adjectives are really nouns. When used as predicates they must be followed by *desu* (*de gosaimasu*). *Ryōki desu* is illness, i. e., is ill. *Bimbō desu* is poverty, i. e., is poor.

<i>kip-pu</i> ticket.	<i>kuru</i> (stem : <i>ki</i> ) come.
<i>ō-fuku</i> going and returning.	<i>morau</i> receive.
<i>ōfuku-gippu</i> excursion ticket.	<i>tsure-ru</i> take along.
<i>are</i> that one (person or thing).	<i>uru</i> sell.
<i>kore</i> this one	„ <i>kudasai</i> please give me.
<i>dare</i> who?	<i>tada, tatta</i> only, merely.
<i>ikura</i> how much?	<i>made</i> until, as far as.
<i>ichi</i> (c) one.	<i>de</i> at, with, by means of. <sup>a</sup>

## Exercises.

*Kono akindo no shinamono wa yasui. Watakushi no tonari wa tōbutsuya des'. Ano ryōriya wa yoi ka, warui ka. Are wa ii ryōriya da. Kono yadoya no ryōri wa yoi. Kono kinjo ni yadoya ga tak'san arimas'. Ii shashinya wa s'kunai, Dai-ku wa ie wo tatemas'. Kono sh'tateya wa jōzu des'. Kutsuya ga kimash'ta. Doko de jōbukuro wo urimas' ka. Kamiya de urimas'. Yokohama made no (to) ōf'kugippu (wo kudasai). Kore wa ōf'kugippu des' ka. Ano kutsuya wa heta des'. Ano Nihonjin wa saishi wo tsurete Yōroppa ye ikimas'. Kono jūbako wa utsukushii, Kore wa utsukushii jūbako des. Nihonbashi no kinjo ni wa akindo ga tak'san orimas'.<sup>b</sup> Kono jūbako wa ikura des' ka. Kono jūbako wa nedan ga yasui, tattu ichi yen des', Kono yadoya no tatekata wa ii. Kono yadoya wa ii tatekata des'. Yūbe tonari no uchi ni kwaji ga arimash'ta. Ts'kebi de atta ka. Sayō, mada wakarimasen. Kono shashinya wa jōzu des'. Kono kinjo ni wa ryōriya mo arimasu shi, yadoya mo arimas'. Ano sh'tateya wa yasui keredomo, heta des'. Ano kamiya no jōbukuro wa warui. Dare ga<sup>c</sup> kita ka. Sh'tateya ga kimash'ta.*

<sup>a</sup> *De* is a postposition. In the sense of "at" or "in" *de* differs from *ni* in that it is used to indicate the scene of an action, while *ni* simply marks the place where a thing or person exists. *Tōkyō ni tomodachi ga arimasu.* I have a friend in Tōkyō, but *Tōkyō de tomodachi ni aimashūta.* I met a friend in Tōkyō.

<sup>b</sup> *Oru* or *iru* must be used in saying that a person or a living thing is in such and such a place. But: *mise ga takusan arimasu.* It is, however, permissible to use *aru* even of a living thing when it is in question whether such a thing exists or not. So it is correct to say: *Kono kinjo ni o isha san wa arimasen ka.* Is there no physician in this vicinity? But here *orimasen* would be more natural.

<sup>c</sup> An interrogative pronoun as subject always requires *ga*, never *wa*. The subject of the answer also requires *ga*.

This shoemaker is dear, but [he] is skilful. My tailor's house (*uchi*) is distant. My neighbor (*tonari*) is a photographer. How much (2) are these envelopes (1)? These envelopes are cheap. Taking wife and children along he goes abroad (to foreign countries). The peasant is selling (*utte imas'*) grain. The gardener is planting flowers. [I] received his photograph. Are these lacquered boxes dear or cheap? [They] are dear. Who has come? The shoemaker has come. Please give me [some] envelopes. In this vicinity (1) there are many (3) dealers in foreign goods (2). In this vicinity there are no hotels, but there are many restaurants. My tailor is skilful, but the shoemaker is unskilful. At this shop do [they] sell paper also? Last night at the hotel next door (*tonari no*) there was a fire. That fire was due to incendiarism. This photographer is skilful. In (*ni wa*) Berlin (1) there are many (3) good restaurants (2). Excursion tickets are cheap.

## CHAPTER X.

1. Nouns may be formed from adjective-stems by means of suffixes, such as *sa* and *mi*.

<i>atsu-sa</i> heat, thickness	from <i>atsui</i> .
<i>samu-sa</i> cold (of weather)	„ <i>samui</i> .
<i>tsumeta-sa</i> cold (of things)	„ <i>tsumetai</i> .
<i>taka-sa</i> height	„ <i>takai</i> .
<i>fuka-sa</i> depth	„ <i>fukai</i> .
<i>ōki-sa</i> size	„ <i>ōkii</i> large.
<i>uma-mi</i> deliciousness, sweet taste	„ <i>umai</i> .
<i>yowa-mi</i> weakness	„ <i>yowai</i> .

Nouns ending in *mi* often denote a certain degree of the quality expressed by the adjective.

<i>niga-mi</i> bitterish taste	from <i>nigai</i> .
<i>kuro-mi</i> blackish color	„ <i>kuroi</i> .
<i>shiro-mi</i> whitish color	„ <i>shiroi</i> .
<i>aka-mi</i> reddish tinge	„ <i>akai</i> .

In *aka-mi* lean meat, or red wood in the heart of a tree, *shiro-mi* white of an egg, or white wood, and *ki-mi* yolk, from *kii* <sup>a</sup>

a More usually called *ki-iroi*, from *iro* color.

yellow, *mi* is the noun meaning meat, substance.

2. Many nouns are stems of verbs or compounds into which such stems enter. They may be abstract, or concrete, or both.

*itami* pain, from *itamu* ache, be hurt.

*kurushimi* distress, from *kurushimu* grieve.<sup>a</sup>

*oboe* memory, from *oboe-ru* remember.

*hanashi* talk, story, from *hanasu* speak.

*hasami* shears, from *hasamu* place or hold a thing between two other things, as with chopsticks.

*hito-goroshi* murder, murderer, from *korosu* kill (comp. p. 16).

*hana-mi* viewing the flowers, from *mi-ru* see.

*yuki-mi* viewing the snow. *tsuki-mi* viewing the moon.

## Vocabulary.

*toshi* year.

*haru* spring.

*natsu* summer.

*aki* autumn.

*fuyu* winter.

*tsuki* moon, month.

*eda* branch.

*hasami* shears.

*ido* well.

*mizu* water.

*yu, o yu* hot water.

*yuki* snow.

*kurai, gurai*<sup>b</sup> grade.

*do* (c) degree (in measurements),

*ri* = 3900 meters or 2.44 miles.

*kimi* you (used by students).

*nani, nan* what?

*dono* which? (adjectival like *kono*).

*ni* (c) two.

*san* (c) three.

*jū* (c) ten.

*atsui* hot.

*samui* cold, chilly (of the weather).

*tsumetai* cold (of things, air, water, etc.).

*hidoi* cruel, dreadful.

*o-ide* coming, going, being in a place (polite 2, 3).

*kiru* cut.

*korosu* (stem: *koroshi*) kill.

*mi-ru* see.

a From the adjectives *itai* and *kurushii* we have also *itasa* and *kurushisa*. These are more abstract, denoting rather the degree of pain or distress than the sensation itself.

b Enters into such combinations as *ichi yen gurai* about one yen, *kono kurai* or *kore kurai* about this much. Whether to pronounce *kurai* or *gurai* is a matter of individual choice. Remember that *kurai* or *gurai* always follows the word which it modifies.

*oboe-ru* learn, remember.  
*dochi(ra), dotchi*<sup>a</sup> which?  
 (of the two), where?

*kotoshi* this year.  
*nakanaka*, contrary to expectation, very.

### Exercises.

*Kotoshi no atsusa wa nakanaka hidoi. Kono kawa no f'kasa wa dono kurai des' ka.*<sup>b</sup> *Kono fuyu no samusa wa hidoi. Yu wa nan do gurai atsui ka. San jū do des'.* *Kono yama no takasa wa dono kurai des' ka. Mada dono kurai des' ka wakarimasen. Nihonjin wa haru yoku hanami ni ikimas'.* *Nihonjin wa fuyu yukimi ni ikimas'.*<sup>c</sup> *Kawa no mizu to ido no mizu wa dochira ga tsumetai ka.*<sup>d</sup> *Natsu wa ido no mizu ga tsumetai. Watakushi wa oboe ga warui. Kodomo wa nakanaka oboe ga ii. Uekiya ga hasami de ki no eda wo kittle imas'.* *Kono tetsudō no nagasa wa dono kurai des' ka. Ni ju ri des'.* *Hitogoroski wa hidoi mon da. Aki wa tsukimi ga yoi. Anata doko ye oide des' ka. Hanami ni ikimas'.*

The cold (of) this year is very severe (strong). About how much is the depth of this well? Thirty meters (*meitor*)<sup>e</sup>. How high is this tree? Twenty meters. This year (*wa*) do you go to see the flowers? The water of this well is very cold. You have a good memory (*Kimi wa* memory is good). About how much is the length of this river? Thirty *ri*. Last night in Yokohama there was a murder. This year (1) there are many (3) incendiary fires (2). Where are you going? [I] am going to take a look at the snow. In summer the moonlight-views on the Sumida<sup>f</sup> are fine (good). In autumn the moonlight-views of Ōji are fine. The cold in (of) Germany is very severe. The heat on (of) the Indian Ocean (*Indo-yō*) is dreadful.

a The original sense of this word is, "which direction?" *Anata wa dochira ye oide desu ka.* Which way are you going?

b It is also correct to say *dono kurai arimasu ka.* Or we say, *Kono kawa wa dono kurai fukai ka*, where *kurai* is used adverbially.

c In these two sentences *haru* and *fuyu* are used like adverbs. When given the emphatic position at the beginning of the sentence they naturally take *wa*.

d Notice the peculiar manner of expression. In such sentences the Japanese does not require a comparative form of the adjective.

e It is (*desu*), or, There are (*arimasu*), thirty meters.

f *Sumidagawa* is the name of a river that empties into Tōkyō Bay at Tōkyō.

CHAPTER XI.<sup>a</sup>

A sentence in which the predicate is an adjective ending in *i*, if the sentence is affirmative and of the present tense, needs no copula in familiar discourse :

*Natsu wa hi ga nagai.* In summer the days are long.

The copula must be used when the sentence is negative, or in a past or future tense. With forms of *aru* or *nai* the adjective takes the adverbial inflection by substituting the syllable *ku* for *i*. Such forms in *ku* coalesce with *atta* and *arō* in compounds like *yokatta*, *yokarō*.

*Fuyu wa hi ga nagaku nai (arimasen).*

In winter the days are not long.

*Yūbe wa samukatta (samuku arimashita).*

Last night it was cold.

*Sore wa yoroshikarō (yoroshiku arimashō).*

That may do very well (be right).

The most polite forms of the verb "to be" are *gozarimasu*, *gozarimasen*, *gozarimashita*, *gozarimashō*, usually contracted to *gozaimasu*, etc. When any of these forms of the verb are used the *k* in the adverbial form of the adjective is elided and contraction occurs. Thus.

<i>nagaku</i>	<i>nagau</i>	<i>nagō</i>
<i>shiroku</i>	<i>shirou</i>	<i>shirō</i>
<i>waruku</i>	<i>waruu</i>	<i>warū</i>
<i>yoroshiku</i>	<i>yoroshiiu</i>	<i>yoroshū</i>

Between the familiar forms like *ii* (*yoi*) and the very polite forms like *yō gozaimasu* a middle way may be taken by using *desu*. Thus: *ii no desu*, *ii n' desu*, *ii desu*, and so forth. Grammatically *ii desu* and the like are open to criticism, but among men it is becoming quite the fashion to add *desu* to adjectives in *i*. But one never says *yoi de gozaimasu*.

The adverbial form in *ku* is also used before the verb *naru* become, *natta* (*narimashita*) became, *narō* or *naru d' arō* (*narimashō*) may become, *naranai* (*narimasen*) does not become.

<sup>a</sup> This chapter anticipates some points in the later and more complete discussion of adjectives, in order to enable the student to use them at once.

## Vocabulary.

<i>hi</i> day.	<i>nemui</i> sleepy.
<i>kaki</i> oyster	<i>nurui</i> tepid, not hot enough.
<i>meshi</i> boiled rice, a meal	<i>yoroshii</i> right, all right.
(polite : <i>go-zen</i> or <i>go-han</i> .)	<i>ari-gatai</i> (lit. hard to be) rare,
<i>michi</i> road.	precious. <sup>b</sup>
<i>maki-tabako</i> cigar, cigarette. <sup>a</sup>	<i>naru</i> become.
<i>byō-ki</i> illness.	<i>kesa</i> this morning.
<i>Nihongo</i> Japanese language.	<i>yo-hodo, yoppodo</i> a good deal.
<i>atarashii</i> fresh, new.	<i>dan-dan</i> gradually.
<i>furui</i> ancient, old.	<i>kon-nichi</i> to-day.
<i>itai</i> painful.	<i>saku-nen</i> last year.
<i>kitanai</i> dirty, mean, indecent.	<i>tai-hen</i> (lit. great change) ex-
<i>mutsukashii, muzukashii</i> dif-	traordinarily, very.
ficult.	<i>kara</i> from, after, since. <sup>c</sup>

## Exercises.

*Mō osoku natta (narimash'ta). Mada hayō gozaimas'. Mada osoku wa<sup>d</sup> gozaimasen. Sakunen wa watakushi no me ga taihen warukatta keredomo, kotoshi wa yoku natta. Ma! yoroshū gozaimas'.<sup>e</sup> Kore kara dandan samuku<sup>f</sup> narimas'. Konnichi wa o atsū gozaimas'. Watakushi wa nemuku natta. Anata wa o nemū gozaimas' ka. Iie, nemū gozaimasen. Kotoshi wa hayaku samuku narimash'ta. O itō gozaimas' ka. Watakushi wa ashi ga itō gozaimas'. Kono yu wa nuruku natta. Kono ido no mizu wa taihen tsuinetō gozaimas'. Kono ie wa atarashū gozaimas'. Watakushi no ie wa kitanō gozaimas'.<sup>g</sup> Wata-*

a From *maku* roll, wrap. When necessary to make the distinction, a cigar is called *ha-makitabako* and a cigarette, *kami-makitabako*.

b As in *arigatai oshie* precious doctrine (of religion), *arigatai koto* something to be grateful for. *Arigatō gozaimasu*. I thank you.

c *Kore kara* henceforth.

d *Wa* makes *osoku* emphatic: "It is anything but late." Compare in the last sentence *takaku wa*. With *wa* the uncontracted adverbial form is used, at least in Tōkyō.

e *Mā* is an interjection expressing satisfaction. The expression is about equivalent to: "Never mind; it's all right."

f In English the comparative is more natural.

g An expression of humility before a stranger: "I have too poor a house to entertain you properly."



*kushi ga warū gozaimash'ta.*<sup>a</sup> *Kesa no meshi wa taihen mazukatta. Watakushi no tomodachi no byōki wa taihen yoku narimash'ta. Watakushi no kao ga taihen akaku narimash'ta. Konnichi wa michi ga warū gozaimas'. Kore wa takō* (dear) *gozaimashō. Iie, takaku wa gozaimasen.*

Mount Fuji<sup>b</sup> has become white. My friend's illness has become serious (difficult). [In] autumn the days gradually become shorter (short); [in] spring the days gradually become longer (long). That child has grown (become) very large. To-day it is very warm. Thank you. In (*de wa*) Japan oysters are not dear. My illness is gradually getting better (becoming good). This rice is very delicious. This book is quite (*yohodo*) an old one. My shoes have gotten bad. From this on (*wa*) the days (*ga*) gradually become shorter. The cold (of) last year was very severe. The Japanese language is difficult. The earthquake (of) last evening was very severe. These cigars are cheap. Where (*doko ga*) does it hurt (is painful)? My feet hurt. Are you sleepy? Yes, I have become very sleepy.

<sup>a</sup> It was my mistake. Lit. I (and not another) was wrong.

<sup>b</sup> Fuji is the highest mountain in Japan proper, between 3,700 and 3,800 meters, or about 12,000 feet, high. It is called *Fuji san*, from *san* (c) mountain, or *Fuji no yama*.

# THE PRONOUN<sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER XII

The words corresponding to our personal pronouns are really nouns. They accordingly take the particles *wa*, *ga*, *no*, *ni*, *wo*. The genitive case (with *no*) corresponds to our possessive pronoun.

In speaking to another person one must use different words according to the real or supposed rank of the one addressed. It is, however, usual to regard a stranger of presumably equal rank as one's superior, and a stranger of lower rank as one's equal. As a general rule it is to be observed that personal pronouns are not used so much as in European languages and may be omitted when the context makes it clear which person is meant. This is especially true of pronouns of the third person; but those of the first and second person, *watakushi* and *anata*, are often used in polite conversation even in cases where their absence would not involve ambiguity.<sup>b</sup>

### 1. The pronouns of the first person are :

*watakushi*, *watashi* polite.

*ses-sha* (lit. rude person) used by gentlemen of the old school.

*boku* (lit. servant) used familiarly by men, as students, etc.

*ore*, *oira* (*ora*) vulgar.

*te-mae* (lit. this side, from *te* hand, side, and *mae* front, presence) humble.

*Watakushi* may be further contracted into *washi*, but this is vulgar. With *watakushi*, etc., *wa* tends to lose the sound of *w*, thus; *watashia* or *watasha*. *Ore* is derived from *onore* self; *oira* from the plural *onore-ra*. The classical pronoun of the first person, *ware*, and the possessive *waga* (as in *waga kuni*) are not used in conversation, but occur in speeches.<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> *Dai-mei-shi* representative-name-word.

<sup>b</sup> In sentences like "I will go too" personal pronouns must, of course, be translated: *Watakushi mo mairimashō*.

<sup>c</sup> Compare the proverb *waga ta ye misu wo hiku* to draw water to one's own paddy-field, i.e., "to look out for number one." *Ware* really means self, and in some dialects is used of the second or third person.

## 2. The pronouns of the second person are :

*anata sama*, *anata* formal, polite.

*o-mae san*, *omae* polite toward inferiors.

*kimi* (lit. lord) corresponding to *boku*.

*ki-sama* (from *ki* honorable) used in addressing one of the lower classes.

*te-mae* contemptuous.

*Anata* is derived from *ano kata* that side, that person. It is still used occasionally in the third person. Compare the German *Er* as formerly used of the second person. *Sonata* is impolite. In law courts *kisama* is not permitted; but judges use *sono hō* (from *hō* (c) side), which in ordinary speech would be contemptuous.

With *anata* and other pronouns of the second person *wa* is often omitted. *Anata dō nasaimashita ka*. What is the matter (lit. How have you done)? At times *anata* stands apart from the construction like a vocative or an interjection.

Notice that many of these pronouns which according to their etymology ought to be polite have in practice become familiar or vulgar. The classical *nanji* is never used in the colloquial. Foreigners should use *anata* generally, and in speaking to their own servants or to coolies *omae*.

## 3. For pronouns of the third person such expressions as the following may be used :

*ano o kata*, *ano kata*.

*ano o hito*, *ano hito*.

*ano otoko*, *ano onna*, *ano ko* less polite.

*are* that one there.

*aitsu* (*ano yatsu*),<sup>a</sup> *koitsu*, *soitsu* vulgar.

Of course, *kono* or *sono* may be substituted for *ano* in the above. The classical *kare*<sup>b</sup> is often heard in public addresses. Other expressions for he, she, it, they, are *mukō* yonder side and *saki* front, which frequently take *de* or *de wa*.

4. Plural pronouns are formed by the use of the suffixes *gata*, *tachi*, *domo* and *ra*, or by doubling :

<sup>a</sup> *Yatsu* is coming to be used more and more in the sense of *mono* thing or person,

<sup>b</sup> Compare *kare-kore* this or that, about.

- (1) *watakushidomo*, <sup>a</sup> *washira*.  
*bokura*.
- (2) *anatagata*.  
*omaesangata*, *omaetachi*, *omaera*.  
*kimitachi*.
- (3) *ano katagata*.  
*ano hitobito*, *ano hitotachi*.  
*arera*.

*Waga hai* our company, is a familiar expression for "we," "us," among students. Sometimes it is used in a singular sense.

### Vocabulary

(Include the lists of personal pronouns.)

<i>baka</i> fool, dunce.	<i>shoku-gyō</i> occupation, trade.
<i>fude</i> writing-brush.	<i>donata</i> who? (more polite than <i>dare</i> ).
<i>inaka</i> country (opp. of city).	<i>ikutsu</i> how many? how old?
<i>kuruma</i> wheel, vehicle, riksha.	<i>hatashi</i> twenty years old.
<i>kuruma-hiki</i> } riksha-man.	<i>mōsu</i> (stem: <i>mōshi</i> ) say, call (polite 1,3).
<i>kuruma-ya</i> }	<i>oshi-ru</i> . <small>〜(おし)</small>
<i>sha-fu</i> (c) }	<i>suru</i> (stem: <i>shi</i> ) do.
<i>meshi-tsukai</i> servant.	<i>ikanai</i> ( <i>ikimasen</i> ) it does not go, it won't do (German: <i>es geht nicht</i> ).
<i>na</i> name.	<i>ikenai</i> ( <i>ikemasen</i> ) it cannot go, it's of no use. <sup>b</sup>
<i>na-mae</i> name (of person only).	<i>kyō</i> = <i>konnichi</i> to-day.
<i>yō</i> business.	<i>nara</i> if.
<i>gak-kō</i> school.	<i>sore nara</i> ( <i>sonnara</i> ) if so, then.
<i>go-fuku</i> dry goods.	<i>to</i> that (at the end of a quotation).
<i>i-sha</i> physician.	<i>hai, hei</i> I have heard you, yes, all right.
<i>ka-nai</i> household, wife.	
<i>oku san</i> madam, wife of one in good social standing.	
<i>sen-sei</i> master, teacher (a term of respect).	
<i>shō-bai</i> mercantile business, trade.	

a One may hear *ware-ware* occasionally.

b There is practically no difference between *ikanai* and *ikenai*. The latter is more common. These words may be used like adjectives, as in *ikanai yatsu*, *ikenai hito*.

## Exercises

*Anata wa doko no o kata de gozaimas' ka.*<sup>a</sup> *Watakushi wa Tōkei*<sup>b</sup> *no mono de gozaimas'.* *Washi no uchi no meshitsukai wa inaka no mon' da.* *Kimi no sensei wa oshiekata ga jōzu des' ka.* *Sayō, taihen jōzu da.* *Sore nara boku mo ikō.*<sup>c</sup> *Ano ko wa doko ye ikimas' ka.* *Gakkō ye ikimas'.* *Boku no sensei wa kyō hanami ni ikimas'.* *Omae wa taihen osoi.* *Are wa doko no akindo des' ka.* *Hai, Yokohama no akindo des'.* *Ano hito wa me ga warui.* *Koits' wa baka da.* *Omae no uchi wa doko ka.* *Hai,*<sup>d</sup> *watakushi wa Tanaka san no kurumahiki de gozaimas'.* *Ano o kata wa watakushi no sensei de gozaimas'.* *Anata no go shokugyō wa nan de gozaimas' ka.* *Watakushi wa gof'kuya de gozaimas'.* *Kimi wa doko ye iku ka.* *Boku wa yukimi ni iku.* *Anata (wa) donata de gozaimas' ka.*<sup>e</sup> *Watakushi wa Watanabe Naoyoshi*<sup>f</sup> *de gozaimas'.* *Anata no ok'san wa o ikutsu de gozaimas' ka.*<sup>g</sup> *Kanai wa san jū de gozaimas'.* *Watakushidomo no kuni ni wa tak'san yama ga gozaimas'.* *Anatagata no kuni wa samū gozaimas' ka.* *Sayō, taihen samū gozaimas.* *Omaera wa ii shōbai wo shite iru,*<sup>h</sup> *washira no shōbai wa ikenai.* *Yūbe watakushi no uchi ye gwaikokujin ga kimash'ta; sono gwaikokujin wa akindo desh'ta.* *Ano hitotachi wa doko ye ikimas' ka.* *Sayō, Kawasaki*<sup>i</sup> *ye ikimas'.* *Ano ko wa ii ko da.* *Kore wa kimi no hon da.* *Kisama nan no yō da.* *Ano o kata wa isha de gozaimas'.*

Where is he from (man of where is he)? [He] is from Chōshū

a Corresponds to our "Where are you from?" One may also say, *Anata no o kuni wa dochira de gozaimasu ka.*

b *Kēi* is an alternative pronunciation of *kyō*, the ideogram for capital.

c I too will go (to him).

d *Hai* or *hei* often occurs in Japanese where we should not expect "yes" in English.

e Or, *O namae wa nan to osshaimasu ka.* Assuming previous acquaintance: *Donata de irasshaimashita ka.*

f Watanabe is the surname (*myō-ji*); Naoyoshi, the given name (*na*). The surname comes first in Japanese.

g Or, *O ikutsu ni o nari nasaimasu ka.* *Naru* here does not mean "to become" in an objective sense. Compare the English, "How much does it come to?"

h *Shite* is the subordinative of *suru* to do. *Shōbai wo suru* to do business.

i The name of a station between Tōkyō and Yokohama celebrated for its temple of *Kōbō Daishi* (*Daishi sama*).

(a man of Chōshū).<sup>a</sup> My wife is from the country (*inaka no mono*). My horse is still young (*toshi ga wakai*). Your (*kimi no*) riksha-man is very slow. Where (2) is he (1) going? [He] is going for a bath (*yu ni*). Who (2) is that gentleman (1)? [He] is my teacher. What is your name, please (Who are you)? My name is Ōmori.<sup>b</sup> Are you (*kimi i*) going to see the flowers to-day (2)? I too will go. You (*temae*) are a fool. Who are you (*omae san*)? I am Mr. Matsubara's servant. To what school (school of where) are you (1) going? In our country there are few railways, but in your country (*o kuni*) there are many. How old (*o ikutsu 2*) are you (1)? I am twenty. Is that your writing-brush? No, [it] belongs to the teacher (is the teacher's). His servant is from Tōkyō (a man of Tōkyō).

### CHAPTER XIII

In connection with the pronoun of the second person it is desirable to call attention to a peculiarity of the Japanese language which must be well understood if one is to speak properly. In polite conversation with a person (addressed as *anata*) one must be careful to avoid undue familiarity in referring to things which belong, or stand in any important relation, to the one addressed. Respect is indicated by prefixing to nouns of Japanese origin *o* (from *on*, still used in very formal speech) and *go* (rarely *gyo*) to Chinese words.

*Anata no o me wa ikaga de gozaimasu ka.*

How are your eyes?

*Nan no go yō de gozaimasu ka* (lit. Business of what is it?).

What are your commands? What do you wish?

The same rule is observed in speaking respectfully of a third person. Thus to a servant at the door:

a The name of a province at the western extremity of the main island. The original name is *Nagato* "long gate." *Chō* is the Chinese for "long," and *shū* is "country."

b *Ōmori to mōshimasu*. *To* is a particle indicating a quotation, and is sometimes translated by "that" but sometimes is untranslatable. *Mairu to mōshimasu*. [He] says that he is going. *Kore wa nan to mōshimasu ka*. What is this called? For another use of *mōsu* see p. 55 f and p. 95 c.

*Danna sama wa o uchi desu ka.*<sup>a</sup>

Is Mr.—(the master) at home?

The prefixes *o* and *go* may also be attached to adjectives, adverbs, numerals and verbs. Attention will be called to such instances later.

These prefixes have become inseparable parts of certain compounds:

*go-sho* palace (of the Emperor).

*go-sen, go-han* cooked rice, meal.

*o tama-ya* ancestral shrine, sepulcher (of princes).

*o ashi, o washi* money.

*o hiya* cold drinking water (woman's word).

*o naka* abdomen, stomach.

*o shiroi* face powder.

With certain words these honorifics are invariably used by women and children, though men may dispense with them.

*go kō-bi* reward.

*o kwa-shi* cake.

*o bon* tray.

*o yu* warm water.

*o cha* tea (but *cha no ki*).

*o ten-ki* weather.

*o hi* fire

*o ten-tō* or *tentō sama* sun.

*o kome* rice.

*o tsuki sama* moon.

Another prefix expressing respect, *mi*, occurs occasionally in compounds like:

*mi-kado* Emperor (obsolete), from *kado* gate.

*mi-kotonori* imperial rescript.

*mi-ya* shrine, imperial prince, from *ya* house.

In *o mi ashi*, a woman's expression, we find both honorifics. Women may even be heard to say *o mi o tsuke* (*o tsuke* soup made of *miso*), *o mi o hachi* (*o hachi* a vessel to hold cooked rice, from *hachi* bowl).

Rules for the use of honorifics are impossible: one must simply observe the usage. Some words whose Chinese origin is forgotten take *o* instead of *go*, like *o cha, o tentō sama*. Also:

<sup>a</sup> A more complete expression is *o uchi de (ni) irasshaimasu ka*. *Irassharu* is polite for *iru*. If Chinese words are used, this becomes: *go zaitaku desu ka, zai* being the equivalent of *aru* or *iru*.

*o dai-ji* (lit. important matter).<sup>a</sup> *o rei* thanks.<sup>c</sup>  
*o ka-gen* state of health.<sup>b</sup> *o se-ji* civility, flattery.  
*o ni-kai* second floor, upstairs. *o taku* house.

Again, *go* may be used with a Japanese word; e.g., with *mottomo* reasonableness,<sup>d</sup> *nengoro* cordiality, or with the adverb *yukkuri* to leisurely.<sup>e</sup>

With some words either *o* or *go* may be used:

*o tan-jō-bi* or *go tanjōbi* birthday.  
*o shoku-gyō* or *go shokugyō* occupation.

Some words are never used with honorifics, as *sen-sei* teacher, *shitsu-rei* impoliteness or *shik-kei* disrespect (student's word). But: *go bu-rei* rudeness.

Sometimes euphony forbids the use of an honorific. Thus we never hear *o oku san*. In some instances only special words may be used with *o* and *go*. Thus we say not *o atama*, but *o tsumuri*.

In some cases it is usual to add the honorifics even when speaking to inferiors, as in *Go ku-rō* Thanks for your trouble (*Ōki ni go kurō de atta*).

## Vocabulary

<i>kami (sama)</i> god.	( <i>o matsuri</i> ) local religious festival.
<i>mi-ya sama</i> imperial prince.	( <i>o tsumuri</i> ) head.
( <i>o mi-ya</i> ) shrine.	( <i>o ya-shiki</i> ) mansion (including grounds).
<i>danna (san)</i> master.	( <i>o kome</i> ) rice.
<i>o tama-ya</i> ancestral shrine, sepulcher (of a person of high rank).	<i>toki</i> time.
<i>o hiya</i> cold drinking water	( <i>o bon</i> ) tray.
(women's word).	( <i>o cha</i> ) tea.

a *O daiji ni nasai*. Take good care of yourself (lit. Make it an important thing).

b From *ka* increase and *gen* decrease. But *ki-gen* temper, state of health, takes *go* only.

c *O rei* may be my thanks to another or another's thanks to me. *O rei wo mōshiagetai* I wish to offer [you] my thanks. *O rei nado ni wa oyobinasen*. Thanks are unnecessary (lit. It does not extend to thanks and the like).

d *Go mottomo de gonaimasu*. You are quite right.

e *Go yukkuri nasai*. Don't be in a hurry to leave.



(o) <i>taku</i> residence, house.	<i>mairu</i> polite for <i>iku</i> , <i>kuru</i> (1, 3).
(o) <i>se-ji</i> civility, flattery.	<i>motsu</i> (stem: <i>mochi</i> ) have,
(o) <i>ten-ki</i> weather. <sup>a</sup>	hold.
<i>go-sho</i> imperial palace.	<i>motte koi</i> bring (lit. having
(go) <i>chi-sō</i> treat, feast. <sup>b</sup>	[it] come!). <sup>c</sup>
<i>em-pō</i> a distant place.	<i>oide nasaru</i> polite for <i>iku</i> ,
<i>ki-rei</i> beautiful, pretty, clean.	<i>kuru</i> (2, 3).
<i>kō-dai</i> immense, magnificent.	<i>choito</i> , <i>chotto</i> just a moment.
<i>rippa</i> splendid. <sup>c</sup>	<i>kom-ban</i> this evening.
<i>ippai</i> a cup-ful, one vessel-ful.	<i>ichi-ban</i> number one, most.
<i>deki-ru</i> issue, result, be produced, accomplished. <sup>d</sup>	<i>tai-sō</i> exceedingly, very.
	<i>ikaga</i> how?
	<i>oi</i> hello! say!

### Exercises

*Danna sama! uekiya ga mairimashi'ta. Sō ka: nan no yō de kita ka. Oi, Gons'ke! chotto koi (oide). Hei, danna sama, nan no go yō de gozaimas' ka. Cha wo motte koi. Gosho wa empō de gozaimas' ka. Iie, kono kinjo de gozaimas'. Tokugawake no<sup>h</sup> o tamaya wa doko de gozaimas' ka. Tōkyō de wa*

a *O tenki desu.* It is fine weather.

b When a person comes by invitation to a dinner he says: *Kōnnichi wa go chisō de gozaimasu.* On taking his leave: *Go chisō ni narimashita* or *Go chisō sama.*

c *Kirei*, *kōdai*, *rippa*, belong to the class of adjectives, mostly of Chinese derivation, which are really nouns, requiring in the attributive position the suffix *na*, and in the predicative position taking *desu* (*de gozaimasu*). The first two are apt to mislead the foreigner because they end in *i*. Beware of saying: *kōdai yashiki* or *Kono hana wa kirei.*

d *Dekimasu* it can be done, one can do it.

e *Koi* is too rude a word for a beginner to use acceptably even in commanding servants. It is better to say: *Motte oide nasai.* *Oide nasai* is the imperative of *oide nasaru.*

f In addressing any one, the name is sufficient. A vocative particle is not needed. *Yo* is often used after the divine Name in prayer, and *ya* by men in calling their wives, and by parents in calling their children, by name.

g A name commonly given to men-servants.

h In compounds *ke* means house, family. *Tokugawa* is the name of a family whose representatives held the position of *shōgun* from 1603 until the abolition of the feudal system.

*Shiba to Ueno ni arimas'.<sup>a</sup> Nikkō no o tamaya wa rippa de gozaimas'.<sup>b</sup> O matsuri ni wa hito ga kami sama ni mairimas'. Kōmban no o tsuki sama wa kirei des'. Konnichi wa ii o tenki de gozaimas'. Yūbe o tonari de go chisō ni natta (was entertained). Kyō no go zen wa mazui. Kyōto no o shiroi wa ii. Kono o shiroi wa nioi ga ii. Kore wa doko no o cha de gozaimas' ka. Uji no o cha de gozaimas'. O hiya wo ippai chōdai. O yu ga atsū gozaimas' ka. Kono o bon wa kirei de gozaimas'. Kono o sakana wa taisō oishū gozaimas'. Katoshi wa o kome ga yoku dekimash' ta. Anata no o taku wa dochira de gozaimas' ka. Watakushi no taku wa Shiba de gōzaimas'.<sup>d</sup> Ano akindo wa o seji ga ii.*

Sir (*danna san*), Mr. Tanaka's rikshaman has come. What does he want (on what business came)? The imperial palace at (of) Kyōto is not at all (*de wa nai*)<sup>e</sup> magnificent. Sir, what are your commands (what business is it)? Bring [some] rice (*gozen*). The sepulchers of the Tokugawa family are in the vicinity of [my] home. Then is your residence in Shiba? No, it is [in] Ueno. To-day the weather is bad. Are you going to see the flowers to-day? If the weather is fine (*tenki ga yokereba*), I will go. Both the rice and the fish are delicious to-day (1). The tea of Uji is the best. Give me a cup (2) of tea (1). Is that cold or hot water (Is it cold water; is it hot water)? At (*ni wa*) the Kanda festival fish is dear. Is your residence far [from here]? No, it is [in] this vicinity. How (2) is your head (1)? How much (2) is this tobacco (1)? It is only one *yen*. That prince's mansion is magnificent.

a The *wa* after *de* implies that there are also sepulchers in other places. Shiba and Ueno are names of parks in Tōkyō.

b Nikkō is a place north of Tōkyō, the site of the mausolea of the first and third shoguns.

c A place south of Kyōto celebrated for its tea.

d *De* here does not mean "in". It marks Shiba as a predicate noun. Lit. In regard to my house—it is Shiba. Compare: *Anata no o taku wa kono kinjo desu ka*. It would also be correct to say: *Shiba ni arimasu* or *kono kinjo ni arimasu*.

e *Wa* is generally attached to *de* in a negative sentence. *De wa* is often contracted to *ja*. *Sō ja nai*, That isn't so.

## CHAPTER XIV

The demonstrative pronouns are :

*kono, sono, ano* adjectival.

*kore, sore, are* substantival.

*Kono* and *kore* have reference to persons or things connected with the speaker ; *sono* and *sore*, to those connected with the person addressed ; *ano* and *are* to those which are removed from both. *Kono, sono, kore, sore*, may also have reference to persons or things that have just been the subject of conversation.

*Kono, sono, ano* are often equivalent to *kore no*, etc.

*Kane no kawari ni* instead of money.

*Sono kawari ni* instead of that.

*Hako no uchi ni* inside the box.

*Sono uchi ni* inside that (also, within a short time).

*Kono nochi* (*kono go*) after this, hereafter.

*Kore, sore, are* are used with words like, *kurai, dake, hodo*, though we might expect *kono*, etc. Thus : *kore gurai* (*kono gurai* is also proper), *kore dake, kore hodo* this much, to this extent. But *kono hodo* means "recently."

*Kore, sore, are* may denote a place or a time :

*Kore kara* from this point, henceforth, next.

*Kore made* until now.<sup>a</sup>

*Sore kara uchi ye kaerimashita.*

After that I returned home.

*Are kara Tōkyō made kisha de mairimashita.*

Thence to Tōkyō I went by train.

In the compounds *ko-naida, ko-toshi* we have the demonstrative pronoun. But in *kon-nen* this year, *kon-getsu* this month, *kon-nichi* to-day, *kon-ya* to-night, etc., we have the Chinese equivalent of *ima*.

## Vocabulary

(Include demonstrative pronouns.)

*pan* (Latin : *panis*) bread. *fune* ship, boat.

*pen pen.* *hachi* pot, bowl. △

<sup>a</sup> In these examples *koko*, here or *ima*, now, might be substituted for *kore*. Such words as *koko* and *ima* ought really to be included in a complete list of pronouns.

*hi-bachi* fire box.

*kotatsu* quilt-warmer.<sup>a</sup>

*dai-jin* minister of state.

*dō-butsu* animal.

*dōbutsu-en* zoological garden.

*ji-sho* dictionary.

*mikan* mandarin orange.

*soko* that place, there.

*attakai, atataakai* warm.

*ire-ru* put into.

*iru* is or are required, needed.

*iri-yō* need (noun).<sup>b</sup>

*kawaru* be changed, substituted.

*kawari* a substitute.

*kaeru* return.

*mawaru* turn, go round, travel about.

*yasumu* rest, retire, sleep.

*yasumi* vacation.

*kon-getsu* this month.

*koro* period of time.<sup>c</sup>

*kono-goro* recently.

*saku-jitsu* yesterday.

*fu-dan (ni)* usually, generally.

*tai-gai, tai-tei* for the most part, almost.

*mata* again.

*shikashi* but (See p. 8a).

## Exercises

*Kore wa nan de gozaimais' ka. Sore wa s'tōbu de gozaimas'.*  
*Nihon ni mo gozaimas' ka. Taigai Nihon ni wa gozaimasen*  
*ga, sono kawari ni hibachi to kotatsu ga gozaimas'.* *Anata,*  
*kono fude wa o iriyō de gozaimas' ka. Iie, sono fude wa iri-*  
*masen ga, ano fude wa irimas'.* *Saku-jitsu watakushi wa*  
*dōbutsuen ye mairimash'ta. Sore kara doko ye oide nasai-*  
*mash'ta ka. Sore kara ryōriya ye mairimash'ta. Kore wa*  
*anata no o uma de gozaimas' ka. Iie, tomodachi no des'.*  
*Oi, Take! cha wo motte oide, sore kara hi wo irete okure.<sup>d</sup>*  
*Kimi, kore kara doko ye iku ka. Kore kara uchi ye kaeru.*  
*Mata sono uchi ni mairimashō. Konoaida Itaria ni hidoi*

<sup>a</sup> A *hibachi* is a pot or box filled with ashes upon which charcoal is burned. A *kotatsu* is the same arranged so that it can be covered with a quilt and used for warming the feet and hands.

<sup>b</sup> *Sore wa iriyō desu.* That is needed.

<sup>c</sup> Used like *kurai* (See p. 22b). *Itsu goro* about when?

<sup>d</sup> *Motte koi* would be impolite. Instead of the simple imperative one may also use the subordinative with the imperative of *kure-ru* give, with or without the honorific *o*, thus: *motte kite (o) kure.* More polite than *kure* is *kudasai*, the imperative of *kudasaru*.

*jishin ga arimash'ta ; sono toki ni Nihon ni mo zuibun ôkii jishin ga arimash'ta. Kore wa warui jisho des'. Konogoro wa taihen ii o ienki de gozaimas'. Kongetsu wa gakkô ga yasumi des'.<sup>a</sup> Kotoshi no natsu no atsusa wa nakanaka hidô gozaimas'. Are wa Kishû no mikambune.<sup>b</sup>*

Recently a Japanese minister of state went to Germany. Then he went (*o mawari ni narimash'ta*) to Russia.<sup>c</sup> Recently the weather has been (is) bad. Where (2) are you going next (1)? Next I am going home. Is that a good pen? No, [it] is a bad one. Then give [me] that writing-brush. Do the Japanese generally eat bread? No, instead of that they eat rice (*meshi*). To-day the school takes a vacation (it is a fest). Is this a good school? Yes, [it] is a very good one. Do you need (*a iriyô des' ka*) this dictionary? No, I don't need it. Then please give [it] to me. Spring (of) this year is quite warm. Is there a zoological garden in Tôkyô (1)? Yes, there is (*aru koto wa arimas'*), but there are few (2) animals (1). This month (*wa*) the Japanese go a great deal (*yoku*) to see the flowers. Next I am going for a bath (*yu*). This flower is pretty; but [its] odor is bad. Is that a German (*Doits' no*) ship? No, it is a French (*Frans' no*) ship.

## CHAPTER XV

"The same" is to be rendered *onaji* (adverbial form: *onaji-ku*).

*Sore wa onaji koto desu.<sup>d</sup>*

That amounts to the same thing (is the same thing).

With some Chinese words compounds are formed by means of *dô*, the Chinese equivalent of *onaji*.

a Notice the peculiar manner of expression.

b *Kii* or *Ki-shû* (Compare Chôshû p. 31a) is the name of a province on the coast between Tôkyô and Ôsaka, nearer the latter city. This sentence is taken from a popular song. *Mikambune* is compounded of *mikan* and *funu*.

c The stem of the verb treated as a noun, with the honorific *o* prefixed, is used with *nasaru* or *ni naru* when speaking respectfully of others, as above.

d *Onaji mono* would be concrete, meaning the identical object, or, inexactly, an object of the same class. *Onaji koto* (often pronounced *onashi koto*) means rather the same idea.

*dō-koku* = *onaji kuni* the same province.

*dō-dō* = *onaji michi* the same road.

*dō-nen* = *onaji toshi* the same year.<sup>a</sup>

*dō-i*, *dō-setsu* the same opinion.

*dō-yō* the same manner.

*dō-kyū-sei* (lit. same class pupil) a classmate.

"As" in "the same as" is to be rendered *to*.

*Kore wa are to onaji mono desu.*

This is the same as that, or,

*Kore mo are mo onaji mono desu.*

This and that are the same.

*Watakushi mo anata to dōsetsu desu.*

I too am of the same opinion with you.

"Such" may be variously rendered:

*kō iu*, *kayō na*, *kō iu yō na*, *kono yō na*, *konna*.<sup>b</sup>

*sō iu*, *sayō na*, *sō iu yō na*, *sono yō na*, *sonna*.

*ā iu*, *ā iu yō na*, *ano yō na*, *anna*.

The contracted forms *konna*, *sonna*, *anna* used attributively are often contemptuous. With *ni* they are also used adverbially in the sense of "so".

*Sonna ni mitsukashiku arimasen.*

It is not so difficult [as all that].

Here *sō* may be substituted for *sonna ni*.

## Vocabulary

(Include words meaning "such")

*koto* thing, affair (abstract).

*koloba* word, language, dialect.

*te-gami* letter, epistle.

*wake* sense, reason, cause.

*dō* (c) road (only in composition).

*ji* (c) character, ideogram, letter, word.

*koku* (c) country (only in composition).

*nen* (c) year.

*satsu* (c) card, note, paper money.

a In the sense of "the same age" *onaji toshi* is contracted to *onaidoshi*.

b *Kō iu yō* would be literally: thus say manner. *Na* is the adjectival suffix. Compare *kōdai na yashiki* or *kirei na hana*.

c *Ā* has reference usually to what is to follow in the course of the conversation; *sō*, to what precedes.

<i>yō</i> (c) manner. <sup>a</sup>	<i>sukoshi</i> a little.
<i>i-mi</i> meaning, purport.	<i>iro-iro no, iroiro na, ironna</i>
<i>sho-sei, gaku-sei</i> student.	various, from <i>iro</i> color.
<i>shō-kin</i> specie.	<i>chigau</i> differ.
<i>gwaikoku-go</i> foreign lan- guages. <sup>b</sup>	<i>itasu do</i> (polite 1, 3).
<i>chiku-shō</i> beast.	<i>iu</i> say.
<i>Shina</i> China.	<i>oru</i> be (of a living thing), dwell. <sup>d</sup>
<i>onaji, dō</i> (c) same.	<i>tsukau</i> use, employ.
<i>mezurashii</i> uncommon, sin- gular.	<i>yomu</i> read.
<i>nikui</i> detestable (in com- position : difficult).	<i>ima</i> now.
<i>kochi, kotchi, kochira</i> in this direction, here. <sup>c</sup>	<i>metta ni</i> seldom (with negative verbs).
<i>mina, minna</i> all, all together.	<i>kō, sō, a</i> thus, in that man- ner.
	<i>ga</i> but (See p. 8a).

### Exercises

*Nihonjin wa Shinajin to onaji ji wo ts'kaimas' keredomo, yomiyō ga chigaimas'.* *Kono tegami wa anata no to onaji toki ni kimash'ta. Satsu wa ima shōkin to onaji koto des'.* *Sore wa kore to onaji nedan de gozaimas'.* *Kono koto wa kō iu wake des'...* *Kono kotoba wa kō iu imi des'...* *Kō iu mutsukashii ji wa taihen oboenikui.<sup>e</sup>* *So iu shinamono wa Nihon de wa mezurashū gozaimas'.* *Sakujitsu wa onaji hito ga ni do<sup>f</sup> kimash'ta. Watakushi wa ano o kata to dōnen de gozaimas'.* *Kore wa are to onaji hon des' ka. Iie, chigaimas'.*

a Much used in such expressions as : *Ano kodomo wa iji ga warui yō desu.* That child seems to be ill-natured.

b Compare *Nihon-go* Japanese Language, and *zoku-go* colloquial.

c Compare *dochi, dotchi, dochira* (p. 23a). Similarly : *sochi, sotchi, sochira ; achi, atchi, achira.* The *ra* here is the same as the sign of the plural. These words are like nouns and may be used with postpositions. *Kochira ye oide nasai.* Come this way. *Achi kochi* here and there.

d *Oru* is synonymous with *iru.* See Ch. V.

e By adding *nikui* to the stems of verbs many compound adjectives like this are formed. The opposite of *nikui* or *katai* (*gatai*) is *yasui* or *yoi.* Thus : *oboe-gatai, oboe-yasui, wakari-yasui, wakari-yoi,* etc.

f Twice. See Ch. X., Vocabulary.

*Gwaikokugogakkō no sensei wa minna Nihonjin des' ka. Iie, chigaimas'; Shinajin ya Nihonjin ya Frans'jin ya Doits'jin ya iroiro no kuni no hito ga orimas'.<sup>a</sup> Kono yama no takasa wa Fujisan to onaji koto des'. Go dōdō itashimashō.<sup>b</sup> Ā iu yō na shinamono wa nedan ga takai ka. Iie, sō de wa arimasen; yasū gozaimashō. Kō iu yō na ōkii uma wa Nihon ni orimasen. Kono shosei wa ano shosei to dōnen des'. Nihon no uguis' wa Seiyō no to onaji koto des' ka. Iie, s'koshi chigaimas'. Sō iu kami wa kotchi ni nai. Anna warui ningen wa mezurashii. Sensei! Kyōto no kyō wa Tōkyō no kyō to onaji koto des' ka.<sup>c</sup> Sayō, onaji koto des'. Inu chik'shō dōyō no itash'kata des'.<sup>d</sup>*

This character means the same (is the same meaning) as that character. Nihon and Nippon (*to wa*) are the same thing. Edo and Tōkyō are the same place. He (1) came by the same ship (3) as you (2).<sup>e</sup> The length is different, but the price is the same. That character has this (*kō iu*) meaning. Such a word is very hard to remember. There are many such difficult characters. Cold (3) as severe (2) as this (1) is rare. In (*ni wa*) Japan (1) there are few (5) such (2) high (3) houses (4). That farmer is a man (*mono*) of the same province as I. This tree is [of] the same height as that tree. In (*de wa*) Japan such fish are cheap. My children and [my] neighbor's (*tonari no*) children are of the same age. Those children are uncommonly ill-natured (Such ill-natured children are uncommon). Saikyō is the same thing as Kyōto,<sup>f</sup> but the meaning of the names is different.

a In some such cases either *aru* or *iru (oru)* may be used. It depends on whether one thinks more of the place or of the person.

b Or *O tomo (wo) itashimashō*, or *Go dōhan itashimashō*, from *han* (c) to accompany.

c Is the *kyō* in *Kyōto* the same as the *kyō* in *Tōkyō*?

d It's a beastly way of acting. In *inu chikushō* we have an instance of the asyndetic construction. With words like *dōyō* the particle *to* is often omitted.

e "Ship" is in Chinese *sen*. Accordingly: *dō-sen*.

f *Sai-kyō* west capital, in distinction from *Tō-kyō* east capital. In *Kyōto*, the ideogram *kyō* is the same—capital—and *to* is likewise capital or a chief city. Compare *to kwai* city, metropolis.



## CHAPTER XVI

The following serve as interrogative pronouns (*gimon-dar-meishi*).<sup>a</sup>

*dare* who?

*donata* who? (polite).

*nani, nan* what?

*dore* which? (substantival).

*dono* which? (adjectival).

*dochi, dotchi, dochira* which? (of the two, or of a very limited number), where?

*dō iu, dō iu yō na, dono yō na, donna* of what kind? what sort of...?

A plural is formed by doubling. Thus: *dare dare, dore dore, nani nani*.<sup>b</sup>

The substantival forms take the same particles (*ga, no, ni, wo, de*, etc.) as nouns. Observe that *ga*, not *wa*, occurs usually with interrogative pronouns.<sup>c</sup>

*Dare ga mairimashita ka.* Who came?

*Kore wa dare no mono desu ka.* Whose is this?

In this last *mono* may be omitted.

*Nani* may be used like an adjective.

✓ *Nani hito (nanibito, nampito) de gosaimashō ka.*

What sort of a man may he be?

*Nan nin arimasu ka.*

How many persons are there?

*Nan da ka, nan desu ka* is frequently used as an expletive.

The Japanese often say "how?" where we should say "what?"

a *Doko* where? and *itsu* when? might also with propriety be included in this list, as they are parsed just like nouns or pronouns.

b These words are closely joined in pronunciation and an almost inaudible *n* creeps in: *darendare, dorendore*. But the two parts are kept distinct in the exclamation: *Dore dore* Where is it? This last is often a mere interjection expressing surprise.

c In *Nani wa dō narimashita ka* How about that matter? we have an apparent exception; but *nani* here is really used indefinitely, like our "what-do-you-call-it" referring to a thing or person whose name is momentarily forgotten by the speaker. We have a real exception in *Dare wa kite dare wa kimasen ka* Who came and who did not come?

*Dō itashimashō ka* What shall I do? But:

*Omae wa nani wo shite iru ka* What are you doing?

*Dore*, like *nani*, may in certain connections be used like an adjective. Thus: *dore gurai*, *dore dake*, *dore hodo* are equivalent to *dono gurai*, etc., "how much?" See Ch. XIV.

Instead of *dono* we find *doko no* or *dochira no*, when the place or source is the object of inquiry.

*Omae wa doko no gakkō ye ikimasu ka.*

To what school are you going?

*Dō iu*, *donna*, etc., inquire after the nature of a thing. *Dō shita* (lit. how did?) is used in the same way. Observe further the very frequent idiom *nan to iu* (lit. what say?) which inquires after the name, but in many cases is practically synonymous with *dō iu*.

*Are wa dō iu (dō shita) hito desu ka.*

What kind of a man is he?

{ *Kono sakana wa nan to iimasu ka.*

{ *Kore wa nan to iu sakana desu ka.*

What do you call this fish? or, What fish is this?

Which day? (of the month) is *nan nichi* or *ikka*, from *iku* how many.<sup>a</sup>

## Vocabulary

(Include interrogative pronouns)

*ika* cuttle-fish.

*iro* color.

*kasa* umbrella.

*kura* storehouse.

*kane* metal

*me-gane* spectacles.

*tate-mono* building.

*dō-gu* utensils, furniture.

*uru dōgu* second-hand furniture, curio.

*te* hand.

*narau* learn, practice.

*te-narai* practicing penmanship.

*dai-gakkō*, *dai-gaku* university.

*gaku-mon* learning.

*hō-ritsu* law, statute.

*kwa-shi* sweetmeats, cakes.

*mo'ru-teki* object, purpose.

*suteishon* railway station.

*tōka* tenth day.

*migi* the right.

*aoi* green, blue, pale.

<sup>a</sup> The Japanese in making engagements name the day of the month rather than the day of the week.

*tame* advantage (—no *tame* *mise-ru* show.<sup>a</sup>  
*ni* for). *go ran nasaru* see polite  
*uchi* within (—no *uchi ni* 2, 3).  
among). *mochii-ru* use.

### Exercises

*Kono kotoba wa dō iu imi des' ka. Kono kami wa nani ni mochiimas' ka. Kore wa tenarai ni mochiimas'. Anata wa doko no s'teishon ye oide nasaimas' ka. Hai watakushi wa Shimbashi no s'teishon ye mairimas'. Kono furudōgu no uchi de<sup>b</sup> dore ga ichiban ii ka. Kono jubako ga ichiban ii. Kore wa dō iu tokoro de gozaimas' ka. Kore wa Tōkyōfuchō<sup>c</sup> de gozaimas'. Nani wo go ran ni iremashō ka. Megane wo misete kudasai. Dō iu megane wo go ran ni iremashō ka. Aoi no wo<sup>d</sup> misete kudasai. Doko no furudōguya ga ichiban ii ka. Kono tatemono wa nan des' ka. Kore wa kura des'. Kono uchi ni nani ga irete arimas' ka. Kono uchi ni ie no d. gu ga irete arimas'.<sup>e</sup> Dare ga kita ka. Anata no o tomodachi ga oide nasaimash' ta. Kore wa donata no kasa de gozaimas' ka. Kore wa watakushi no de gozaimas'. Kyō wa nan no o matsuri des' ka. Kyō wa Kompira sama<sup>f</sup> no o matsuri de gozaimas'. Konnichi wa nan nichu de gozaimas' ka. Konnichi wa tōka de gozaimas'. Anata wa nan no mok'teki de Seiyō ye oide nasaimas' ka. Gakumon no tame ni mairimas'. Nan no gakumon de gozaimas' ka. Hōritsu de gozaimas'. Doko no daigaku ye oide nasaimas' ka. Ber'rin no daigaku*

a More polite is *go ran ni ireru* (lit. put into the honorable look). Another polite expression is: *o me ni kakuru* (lit. hang on honorable eyes).

b Notice that here *de* is used rather than *ni*. Compare: *Kono furudōgu no uchi ni katana ga arimasu ka.*

c The city-hall of Tōkyō. Ordinary prefectures are called *ken*, but those which include the three great cities, Tōkyō, Ōsaka and Kyōto, are called *fu*. *Chō* (c) means office. Compare *kenchō*.

d The green ones. *Aoi* no is equivalent to *aoi mono*, *aoi bun*, or, in vulgar parlance, *aoi yatsu*.

e *Dōgu wo ireta oru* would mean that some one is putting them into the *kura*, but *dōgu ga irete aru* mean) that they have been put into the *kura* and are there. The former denote) action; the latter, a state. Equivalent to *irete aru* is *hätte oru* they are inside (entering).

f Name of a god. See Murray's Hand-book, List of Gods.

*ye mairimas'.* *Kore wa nan to iu sakana des' ka.* *Kore wa ika des'.* *Dotchi no ashi ga warui ka.* *Migi no ashi ga warui.* *O shōbugyō wa nan des' ka.*

What (2) flower is that (1)? Those are cherry blossoms, Who has come (came)? A European has come. Whose (2) is this book (1)? [It] is the master's book. Show me an umbrella. What kind of an umbrella shall I show you? What (2) meaning has (is) this character (1)? Whose (2) is this dictionary (1)? It is my friend's. Which university is the best? Which restaurant is the cheapest? To what (what called) place are you going? I am going to Yokkaichi.<sup>a</sup> Who (2) put that (1) into the lacquered boxes? What do hares eat? To which bookseller are you going? What kind of (2) meat is that (1)? It is venison, Which flowers did the gardener plant? [On] what day (of the month) is the festival of Kompira? The festival of Kompira is [on] the tenth. [Of] what color is the cormorant? The color of the cormorant is black. What bird is that? That is a heron. For what (2) do they use these lacquered boxes (1)? They put cakes into [them].

## CHAPTER XVII

Interrogative pronouns may be made indefinite (*fujō-dai-meishi*) by adding the particles *ka*, *mo*, *de mo*. Thus:

- |    |                     |                               |                      |
|----|---------------------|-------------------------------|----------------------|
| N. | <i>dare ka</i>      | <i>dare mo</i>                | <i>dare de mo</i>    |
| G. | <i>dare ka no</i>   | <i>dare no—mo</i>             | <i>dare no—de mo</i> |
| D. | <i>dare ka ni</i>   | <i>dare ni mo<sup>b</sup></i> | <i>dare ni de mo</i> |
| A. | <i>dare ka (wo)</i> | <i>dare (wo) mo</i>           | <i>dare de mo</i>    |

*Dare ka* is vague and means "some one," "somebody;" in questions, "any one," "anybody." *Dare mo* is comprehensive: "any one," "every one." It is mostly used with negative expressions, in which case it must be translated "no one." *Dare de mo* is likewise universal, but it individualizes ("any one you please"), and is more commonly used with affirmative predicates.

<sup>a</sup> A harbor on the coast of the province of Ise.

<sup>b</sup> Compare: *Dara ni mo kikitimasu.* He inquires (lit. hears) of no one. *Dare ni kuite mo sō iu hanashi desu.* Such is the story, ask whom you will.

<i>Dare ka kimashita ka.</i>	Has any one come?
<i>Dare mo kimasen.</i>	No one has come (comes).
<i>Dare de mo kite yoroshii.</i>	Any one at all may come.
<i>Dare de mo koraremasen.</i>	Not a single one can come.
<i>Dare mo shitte imasu.</i>	Every one knows it,
<i>Dare de mo shitte imasu.</i>	

Every one (though he be a fool) knows it.

*Donata ka*, etc., would be more polite.

Similar forms may be derived from *nani*, *dore*, *dochira*, *doko*, *itsu*, *ikura*, *dono*—, *donna*—.<sup>a</sup> They are very common in the colloquial.

<i>Dore ka motte kimashō ka?</i>	Shall I bring one of them?
<i>Dore mo motte kite kudasai.</i>	Bring them every one, please.
<i>Dore de mo motte kite kudasai.</i>	Bring any one of them, please.
<i>Itsu mo no uryū gakkō ye ikimashita.</i>	

I went to school as usual.

*Itsu de mo yō gozaimasu.* Any time will do.

*Donna hon ni mo machigai ga arimasu.*

Every book has its mistakes.

*Are wa donna hon de mo yonimasu.*

He reads any book.

*Donna kimono de mo yoroshii.* Any clothes will do.

The last sentence is equivalent to: *Donna kimono wo kite mo yoroshii.* The particle *mo* with the subordinative of the verb has concessive force, as will be explained more fully later. The fuller form of *de mo* is *de atta mo*, from *aru*.

But notice that the *de* in *de mo* often has the sense of at, with, etc.

*Do'ō no gakkō de mo kono hon wo mochiite orimasu.*

They use this book in every school.

For *de mo* we may substitute *to mo* in certain connections.<sup>b</sup>

*Nan to iimashita ka.* What did he say?

*Nan to mo iimasen.* He said nothing at all.

<sup>a</sup> Compare *dō ka* somehow or other, *dō mo* in every way, no matter how one tries (an exceedingly common expletive), *dō de mo* any way you please; also *dō ka kō ka* in one way or another, i.e., with difficulty. *Dō ka kō ka deki-mashita.* We did manage to get it done.

<sup>b</sup> This *to mo* and *tomo* together in the emphatic *ryōhō tomo*, both, are not to be confounded.

It is interesting to compare :

<i>Nani mo nai.</i>	There's nothing.
<i>Nani de mo nai.</i>	It's nothing at all.
<i>Nan to mo nai.</i>	It makes no difference to me.

For *ka*, *zo* may be substituted, and thus *nan zo* is equivalent to *nani ka*.<sup>a</sup>

In certain idioms *nani* without any particle may be used as an indefinite pronoun. Thus : *nani kara nani made* "the whole business." Notice also the very emphatic *nani mo ka (ni) mo* everything (with emphasis on "every") and *nan de mo ka (n) de mo*.

A common expression for "a certain person" is *dare sore*. This is used to designate a person in a supposed case, or one whose name it is inconvenient to give, and is equivalent to our "blank" or "Mr. So-and-so." It corresponds to the more literary form *nanigashi*, or *nan no taregashi (soregashi)*.

"Somebody" may be rendered simply by *hito*. "Something" is similarly rendered by *mono*.

*Hito to hanashi wo shite orimashita.*

Was speaking with somebody.

*Mono wo iu* to say something.

With adjectives "something" is to be rendered by *mono* (concrete) and *koto* (abstract).

*Kuroi mono* something black.

*Nani ka warui koto* something bad, bad behavior.

## Vocabulary

*kami, kami no ke* hair of the *mura* village, district, town-head.

*o kami san* wife, mistress of *tokai* clock, watch.<sup>c</sup>  
the house.<sup>b</sup> *uta* song, poem.<sup>d</sup>

a Compare *dō-zo* which is used like *dō-ka* in the sense of "please" *Dō-zo* is the more polite.

b This term designates married women among the lower classes. It is especially common among merchants and laborers.

c A watch may be distinguished as *kwai-chū-dokei (kwai-chū pocket within)*.

d To compose a poem is *uta wo yomu*.

*uta yomi* poet.

*gaku-sha* scholar, learned man.

*shim-bun* newspaper.<sup>2</sup>

*katappō* (*kata, hō*) one side, one of a pair.

*ryō-hō* two sides, both.

*omoshiroi* interesting.

*yasui* easy.

*honne-ru* praise.

*kari-ru* borrow, rent.

*kasu* (stem: *kashi*) lend, rent.

*sonzuru* (stem: *sonji*) think, know (polite 1.3).

*go sonji desu* you know (polite 2,3)

*shiru* know.

*wasure-ru* forget.

*tori-tsugu* transmit, announce (a visitor).

*ki* (c) spirit.

*iru* enter.

*ki ni iru* be liked.

*yaku* (c) office, function.

*tatsu* (stem: *tachi*) stand.

*yaku ni tatsu* be useful.

*bakari* } only, just, about.<sup>b</sup>  
*dake* }

## Exercises

*Dare ka koi (oide).*<sup>c</sup> *Dare ka no kasa wo karimashō.*  
*Watakushi wa dare ka ni kasa wo kashimashita keredomo dare ni kashita ka wakarimasen. Oi, Gons'ke! dare ka kita ka. Iie, dare mo mairimasen,*<sup>d</sup> *Sono shimbun ni nan zo omoshiroi koto ga gosaimas' ka. Iie, nani mo omoshiroi koto wa gobaimasen. Anata wa kono koto ga dekimas' ka.*<sup>e</sup> *Sore wa dare de mo dekimas'.* *Dare ka kita ; dare ka toritsugi wo shiro.*<sup>f</sup>

a A newspaper is more properly called *shimbun-shi*, from *shi* paper.

b Notice that *bakari* and *dake* follow the words which they modify, *ga* and *wo* being usually omitted. *Dake* differs from *bakari* in that it sets the limit more definitely. *Ichī yen bakari* about one yen. *Ichī yen dake* not more than one yen. But they are frequently interchangeable.

c The master of the house may say *koi* to his own servants; but the lady of the house may not.

d Here, as is quite common in negative sentences, the present stands for the past. Notice that the servant Gonske in his reply uses not *kuru*, but the polite verb *mairu*.

e The original meaning of *dekiru* is "come forth", "be produced." It is to be translated variously, depending on the context. *Ano hito wa dekinai.* He can't do it. *Dekimasu nara* if possible. *Mō shitaku ga dekimashita.* The preparations are now complete, everything is ready. The person is properly put in the dative case. *Watakushi ni wa hanashi ga dekimasen.* [It] is impossible for me to speak.

f *Shiro* is the imperative of *suru* to do. This is rude and familiar like *koi*.

*Watakushi wa kono uchi de* (among these people) *donata mo sonjimasen*. *Kono kotoba wa dare de mo mochiimas' ka*. *lie, utayomi bakari mochiimas'*. *Kono uchi de* (among these things) *dore ka o ki ni irimas' ka*. *lie, dore mo ki ni irimasen*. *Kore wa dare de mo ki ni irimas'*. *Dochira no ashi ga itai ka*. *Ryōhō tomo itai*. *Anata no o me wa dochira mo warū gosaimas' ka*. *lie, katappō bakari (dake) warū gosaimas'*. *Kono tokei wa nan no yaku ni mo tachimasen*. *Watakushi wa nani ka tabetai.*<sup>a</sup> *Nani ga yō gosaimas' ka*. *Nan de mo yoroshii*. *Nihonjin wa dare de mo kami no ke ga kuroi*. *Anata wa sono hon wo dare kara moraimash' ta ka*. *Tonari no uchi no hito kara moraimash' ta*. *Dare mo wakaranai hito wa arimasen*.

I will borrow some one's writing-brush. I loaned the dictionary to some one, but have forgotten to whom I loaned it. Has anybody come? Yes, the neighbor's wife (*tonari no o kami san*) has come. Is there anything new (*mezurashii*)? In this newspaper there is nothing new. That pupil knows nothing. Is that difficult (a difficult thing)? No, it is easy: any one can [do it]. Do you know any one (2) among these people (1)? Yes, I know all (*mina sama wo sonjite imas'*). Does every one (2) use this dictionary (1)? Only scholars use [it]. Among these curios which do you like? I like them all. Every one praises the ancestral shrines at Nikkō. Which [of the two] is better? Either will do (is good). This servant is not worth anything. There is a school in every village. This dictionary is not worth anything.

## CHAPTER XVIII

In cases where we use such pronominal words as "every," "all," "many," "other," etc., in Japanese the tendency is to use adverbial forms.

"Every one," if referring to persons, may be rendered by *mei-mei*, or *mem-men*, from *mei* name and *men* face, or by *tende ni*.

<sup>a</sup> This is the desiderative form of the verb *tabe-ru*. It means, I want to eat, I have an appetite for...



With words denoting time "every" becomes *mai* (c):

*mai-nichi* (*mai-jitsu*) every day.

*mai-asa*, *mai-ban* every morning, every evening.

*mai-nen* (*mai-toshi*) every year.

But with words denoting place the construction explained in the previous chapter is used:

*Doko no mura ni mo* in every village.

For a rarer idiom see *goto ni*, p. 321,

"All" is *mina* (*minna*) or *nokorazu*. These words, like *meimei*, etc., are commonly used adverbially, and immediately precede the verb. In some constructions they are to be translated "wholly" or "entirely." *Nokorazu* is properly the negative subordinative of the verb *nokoru* meaning "not (none) being left." *Mina sama* (*san*), much used in speaking of a company, is truly pronominal.

"Many" is *ōi* and "few" is *sukunai*; but these words, as has been said before, can be used only in the predicative position. The idea of "many" may be expressed in a different way by the use of the adverb *ōku* numerously:

*Hitobito ga ōku atsumarimashita.*

Many people assembled.

For *ōku* we may substitute *ōzei* (limited to persons), *takusan*, or *tanto* (persons and things). These words are really nouns used adverbially. From these are derived the adjectival *ōku no*, *ōzei no*, *takusan no* or *takusan na*.

"Another" is *hoka no*, *ta* (c) *no*, *betsu* (c) *no*, *betsu na*. Thus: *hoka no isha*, *ta no isha*, *betsu no isha* another physician. But the Japanese often use the adverbial form *hoka ni* where we use the adjective. The same idea is expressed by *mō* with a numeral: *mō hitotsu no hanashi* another story. "The other" is often *mukō no* the opposite one. The one.....the other..... is *katappō*.....*katappō*.....(from *kata* one of two, *hō* side). Instead of *hoka no hito* one may say simply *hito*:

*Kore wa hito no mono desu.*

This belongs to another person.

To Chinese words *ta* or *betsu* is prefixed without *no*, as in *ta-nin* another person (not a relative), *ta-ken* another prefecture *bes-shitsu* another room.

A peculiar expression is, *Hoka de wa (de mo) arimasen ga* .....I just want to say that.....(lit. It is nothing else whatever; but.....). This is used in broaching the subject about which one wishes more particularly to speak.

### Vocabulary

<i>machi</i> street, town (= <i>chō</i> ). <sup>a</sup>	<i>ta</i> other.
<i>tōri</i> passage, thoroughfare, street.	<i>han, han-bun</i> half.
<i>sakari</i> bloom, prime, culmination.	<i>mei-mei</i> every one, severally.
<i>shima</i> island. 島	<i>ō-zei</i> a great number.
<i>aka-gane</i> copper.	<i>chiru</i> scatter, disperse, wither and fall.
<i>ken</i> prefecture.	<i>irassharu</i> be, come, go (polite 2, 3).
( <i>o</i> ) <i>kyaku</i> ( <i>san</i> ) guest, customer, passenger.	<i>itadaku</i> receive with respect (used by a guest).
<i>tetsu</i> iron. 鉄	<i>kau</i> buy.
<i>bim-bō</i> poverty.	<i>shimau</i> finish, close.
<i>bimbō-nin</i> poor person.	<i>yake-ru</i> be burned.
<i>byō-in</i> hospital. 病室	<i>o agari nasai</i> please eat, drink (polite 2).
<i>byō-nin</i> sick person, patient.	<i>nokorazu</i> none being left, all.
<i>hei-tai, hei-sotsu</i> soldier.	<i>naka</i> inside (— <i>no naka ni</i> in).
<i>kanji</i> Chinese character.	<i>naka ni</i> among them.
<i>kwa-zan</i> volcano. 火山	<i>tama ni</i> occasionally, once in awhile.
<i>on-sen</i> hot spring.	
<i>ru-su</i> absence ( <i>rusu desu</i> is not at home.	

### Exercises

*Bimbōnin (ni) ko (ga) tak'san (aru).*<sup>b</sup> *Tak'san o agari nasai. Mō s'koshi o agari nasai. Arigatō, mō tak'san (de gosaimas').*<sup>c</sup> *Nihon no kodomo wa mina gakkō ye ikimas' ka. Sayō, taitei mina gakkō ye matrimas'. Yūbe no o kyaku wa*

a In the sense of town *chō* is used only in composition, as in *chō-nai* within the town. Technically the government determines the application of the term *machi* or *chō* in the sense of town; but popularly it is applied to any collection of houses which includes merchants' shops.

b The shorter form is a proverb: *Bimbōnin ko datsusan.*

c This is the expression generally used in declining to eat or drink more.

*ōsei de irasshaimash'ta ka. Sayō, tak'san de gozaimash'ta. Kono byōin ni wa itsu mo byōnin ga ōsei inas'. Doits' ni wa heitai ga tak'san orimas'. Mukōjima no sakura wa ima sakari desu ga, Ueno wa mina chitte skimaimash'ta.<sup>a</sup> Mina san! konnichi wa.<sup>b</sup> Kanji no uchi ni wa oboeyasui no mo arimasu shi oboenikui no mo arimas'. Nikon ni wa shima ga tak'san arimas'. S'mōtori wa taitai karada ga ōkii ga, tama ni wa chiisai no mo arimas'. Nihombashidōri no ie wa mina yake-mash'ta ka. Iie, hambun gurai yakemash'ta. Nikon ni wa akagane ga ōi keredomo, hoka no kane wa s'kunai.<sup>c</sup> Ano hito wa mainen onsen ye ikimas'. Watakushi wa maitoshi saishi wo tsurete hanami ni ikimas'. Mina uchi ni imash'ta ka. Iie, mina rusu de gozaimash'ta. Toshi no ichi ni wa hito ga meimei kai ni ikimas'.<sup>d</sup> Anata no o tomodachi wa go dōken mo hito des' ka. Iie, taken no hito des'.*

To-day [I] have eaten a great deal. To-day the patient ate a little. Please have a little more meat. Thank you, I have enough. I have forgotten almost everything. Was the school entirely burned? <sup>e</sup> No, about half was burned. My neighbor has a great deal of company to-day.<sup>f</sup> In this hotel there are many guests. In this town there are many sick people, but few hospitals. The cherry blossoms have all fallen already. I wish you all good morning (*o hayō gozaimas'*). As (4) the weather (2) is fine (3) to-day (1) all (5) are going to see the

<sup>a</sup> *Mukōjima* is a place near Tōkyō celebrated for its cherry-blossoms. *Shimau* to finish is often attached to the subordinative of a verb, as in this sentence. *Chitte shimaimashūa* (lit. falling they ended) they have fallen and are all at an end.

<sup>b</sup> *Mina san* is vocative. *Konnichi wa* is a common greeting like our, "How do you do?" It is elliptical for: *Konnichi wa yoi o tenki desu*, or the like.

<sup>c</sup> Since there is a contrast between *akagane* and *hoka no kane*, we should expect *wa* with both; but the former takes *ga* because *wa* precedes. It would also be correct to say *akagane wa*.

<sup>d</sup> *Toshi no ichi* is a street-fair held toward the end of the year. Here one buys things needed for the New Year's celebrations. *Kai ni iku* to go to buy. When the nature of the purchases to be made is not stated, one may say indefinitely, *kaimono ni iku*.

<sup>e</sup> A common expression for this is: *Gakkō ga maru-yake deshita ka*.

<sup>f</sup> Either *tonari ni kyaku ga ōsei orimasu* or *ōsei kyaku ga orimasu (imasu)* will do. Using *desu*, the sentence becomes *tonari no kyaku wa ōsei desu*.

flowers. There (*naka ni wa*) are words [that are] hard to learn but this [one] is easy to learn. On this island there are many volcanoes. The Japanese are almost all short of stature, but once in a while there is a tall one. Was your house entirely burned? <sup>a</sup> Yes, even (*mada mo*) the storehouse was burned. In England (*Eikoku*) there is much iron. Recently many Japanese have been (are) going to Germany.

## CHAPTER XIX

There are in Japanese no relative pronouns (*kwankei-dai-meishi*). Where we use a relative clause the Japanese simply prefix the verb of the relative clause to the noun or pronoun which in English would be the antecedent. As has been intimated before (p. 18 b), Japanese verbs may be used just like adjectives. In the translations of the following examples notice the different cases of the relative pronoun.

*Yaketa ie* the house that was burned.

*Yane no yaketa ie* the house whose roof was burned.

*Uekiya no ueta ki* the tree that the gardener planted.

*Shiranai hito* a man whom I do not know.

*Suzuki to iu hito* a man whom [they] call Suzuki.

*Na no aru hito* a man who has a name (reputation).

*Fune wo koshiraeru tokoro* a place at which they build ships.

*Mi no naru ki* a tree on which fruit is produced.

But by changing the voice we may obtain similar adjectival constructions in English, thus: the tree planted by the gardener, an unknown man, a man named Suzuki, a fruit-bearing tree, etc. In Japanese the use of the passive is limited to a few special cases. For this reason English passive participles and relative clauses with passive verbs are usually to be rendered by active verbs in Japanese.

Notice that the subject of the relative clause takes *no*. We have here the same substitution of *no* for *ga* as in the examples given in Ch. VII. In longer clauses *ga* also may be used.

---

<sup>a</sup> The question may be rendered more elegantly *go sen-shō deshita ka, senshō* being the Chinese equivalent of *maruyake*. In the answer we observe a peculiar use of *mada* in the sense of "even."

When the English antecedant is indefinite or the indefinite relative "what" occurs, the Japanese uses an attributive verb with *mono* or *koto*. *Mono* is used also of persons synonymously with *kito*. In certain connections *no* may also be substituted for *mono* or *koto*.<sup>a</sup>

*Hōritsu wo okasu mono* one who violates the law.

*Kinō mita koto* what [I] saw yesterday.

*Anata no ossharu no wa go motto mo desu.*

What you say is quite true.

We have observed in the examples given above that the indicative form of the verb, like the participle in English, is used adjectively. Hence many of our adjectives must be translated by the use of verbs. Further, in relative clauses, as in dependent clauses generally, the present often stands for other tenses. Thus:

*Aru hi Furubekki to iu gwaikoku no o kata ni aimashita.*

One day I met a foreign gentleman named Verbeck.

Here there is no occasion to change *aru* and *iu* to the past tense. Indeed they have practically become adjectives.

The idiom *to iu* often serves to turn a whole sentence into a relative clause, in which case it is not translated.

*Ano kata ga kondo Kōtōgakkō ni kita to iu Seiyōjin desu ka.*

Is that the foreigner that came to the Higher School recently?

As in the German, long and involved clauses may be used to modify nouns. Sometimes a noun may be directly limited by a succession of attributive verbs; but such multiplication of coördinate relative clauses is to be avoided. It is, however, quite natural to attach two or more verbs to one noun if all but the last are subordinatives.

*Ima ume no ki ni tomatte naite iru tori wa uguisu desu.*

The bird that is sitting (now) on the plum-tree and singing is a bush-warbler.

---

<sup>a</sup> This use of *koto* with an attributive verb is to be distinguished from another, more abstract, use of the same construction, as in: *Aru koto wa aru ga* (lit. As far as existing is concerned, it exist but.....) There is such a thing, but..... *Tabeta koto ga aru* I have eaten it before. *Kiita koto ga (wa) nai* I have never heard it. Notice that *mono* also may be used in an abstract sense, as in *Dō shita mon' deshō*. What is the matter?

## Vocabulary

<i>hako</i> box, case.	<i>namake-ru</i> be lazy, neglect.
<i>mi</i> fruit, nut.	<i>shaberu</i> chatter, talk.
<i>oni</i> demon, devil.	<i>suku</i> like. <sup>b</sup>
<i>shō-gakkō</i> elementary school. <sup>a</sup>	<i>sute-ru</i> cast away, discard,
<i>kōtō-shōgakkō</i> secondary school.	forsake.
<i>bun-ten</i> grammar.	<i>tasuke-ru</i> help, save.
<i>toku-hon</i> reader.	<i>todoku</i> reach, arrive (of things).
<i>kei-ken</i> experience.	<i>umu</i> give birth to ( <i>tamago</i>
<i>yū-bin</i> mail, post.	<i>wo umu</i> lay eggs).
<i>mane</i> imitation (— <i>no mane</i>	<i>amari</i> exceedingly, too, so
<i>wo suru</i> imitate).	very.
<i>hanasu</i> speak.	<i>saki ni, sakkī</i> before, a short
<i>kaesu</i> return (tr.).	while ago.
<i>kare-ru</i> wither, perish.	<i>kinō</i> yesterday.
<i>koshirae-ru</i> make, fabricate.	<i>ototoi</i> day before yesterday. <sup>c</sup>
<i>naku</i> cry, sing (of birds)	<i>dōso</i> please, I beg you, pray!

## Exercises

*Oi! sakkī kita hito wa dare (da) ka. Hai, dōguya de gozaimas'.* *Sakujitsu yaketa<sup>d</sup> ie wa donata no ie de gozaimash'ita ka. Kinō yaketa ie wa gakkō de gozaimas'.* *Kore wa dano shōgakkō de mo mochiiru hon des' ka. Iie, kōtō shōgakkō bakari de mochiiru hon des'.* *Mi no naru ki wa hana kara shireru* (Proverb).<sup>e</sup> *Anata ni (kara) o kari mōsh'ita<sup>f</sup>*

a There are two grades in the elementary schools, called *jin-jō* ordinary and *kō-tō* advanced. Originally there were three classes of schools, namely, *shō-gakkō*, from *shō* small, *chū-gakkō*, from *chū* middle, and *dai-gakkō*, from *dai* great. The schools that train graduates of *chūgakkō* for ordinary professions and prepare them for *daigakkō* are called simply *kōtō-gakkō*.

b *Anata wa sumō ga o suki desu ka.* Are you fond of [Japanese] wrestling? *Ano kodomo wa e no hon ga dai suki desu.* That child is very fond of picture-books. *Sumō wo sukimasu, e no hon wo sukimasu*, etc., would sound strange, but *sukimasu* is not uncommon.

c The Chinese equivalents for *kinō* and *ototoi* are *saku-jitsu* and *issakujitsu*.

d Attributive verbs like this *yaketa* need not take the polite ending *masu*. If the verb at the end of a sentence or principal clause is in the polite form, it makes the whole polite.

e *Shireru* is the potential or passive form and means here "is known."

f *O kari mōshita* is a very polite equivalent of *karita*.

*hon wa kore de gozaimas' ka. Sayō, sore de gozaimas'. Konogoro tateta ie wa yube yakete shumaimash'ta. Soko ni aru mono no uchi ni o ki ni iru mono wa gozaimasen ka. Watakushi wa amari shaberu hito wo s'kimasen. Kore wa yoku (a great deal) naku tori da. Kore wa yoku tamago wo unnu tori des'. Kono seito no uchi ni namakeru hito ga ōi. Watakushi ga ototoi yūbinbako ye ireta tegami ga todokimasen.<sup>a</sup> U no mane wo suru karas' (Proverb).<sup>b</sup> Sono bunten wo koshiraeta hito wa dare des' ka. Ano sensei wa keiken no aru hito des'. Are wa keiken no nai hito des' kara, sonna mutsu-kashii koto wa dekimasen. Zuibun na no aru gak'sha des'. S'teru kami (ga) areba (if there are) tas'keru kami mo aru (Proverb). Wakaru koto wa wakarimas'. Wakaranai koto wa nai. Watakushi wa mada maguro no mi wo tabeta koto ga arimasen. Ezojin wo mita koto ga arimasen. Sakunen niwa ni<sup>c</sup> ueta cha no ki wa mina karete shimainashi'ta.*

The man that came awhile ago is a merchant.<sup>d</sup> Those that were burned yesterday were all old houses. Please give me the umbrella that I forgot yesterday. In Japan (1) there are few (5) persons (4) that do not know (*shiranai* 3) the Chinese characters (2). Among (4) the Europeans (3) that live (2) in Japan (1) are there many (8) persons (7) that speak (6) Japanese (5)? Among the Europeans that live in Japan there are few persons that know (*shitte oru*) the Chinese characters. Please return the dictionary that I loaned to you. Please bring the newspaper that came day before yesterday. This is not to be put in there (not a thing that one puts in there *soko ye*). Where (*doko ni* 5) is (6) the box (4) into which you (1) put (3) the cigars (2)? Children that do not resemble (*ninu*) their parents [are] children of the devil (Proverb). There is no remedy (medicine) that one may apply (*ts'keru*) to fools (Proverb).<sup>e</sup>

a The present tense is often used, as here, where we should expect the past.

b Such a predicate as *shinde shimau* dies, perishes, may be supplied. Compare our proverb: Cobbler, stick to your last!

c We say *niwa ni*, not *niwa de*, because *niwa* is rather the indirect object than the scene of the action.

d The subject takes *wa* when the predicate is a noun.

e The verb *tsukeru* is used because the reference is to a plaster (*kō-yaku*). To administer medicine internally is *kusuri wo nomaseru* (cause to drink).

## CHAPTER XX

The word "self" has several equivalents in the literary language, but in the colloquial is usually rendered by *ji-bun*, from *ji* self and *bun* part, or by the rather more literary form *ji-shin*, from *shin* body or self. In "I myself," "you yourself," etc., "myself," "yourself," etc., are to be rendered by *jibun de* (*kara*), usually put in the adverbial position.<sup>2</sup> In speaking respectfully to or of a person the honorific *go* is prefixed.

*Jibun no mono wo jibun de kowashimashita.*

He himself broke his own things.

*Go jibun de oide nasaimashita.* He came himself.

*Jibun kara nanotte demashita.*

He introduced himself (telling his name came forward).

*Jibun* may also be used as a simple personal pronoun, taking the particles *wa*, *ga*, *no*, *ni*, *wo* and various postpositions. There are also plural forms, such as *jibuntachi*, *jibundomo*, *jibunra*.

*Jibun wa Tōkyō ye itte kazoku wa Kamakura ni nokoshite okimashō.*

He himself will go (lit. going) to Tōkyō and leave (lit. leaving will put) his family in Kamakura.

*Jibuntachi ga warui n' de arimasen ka.*

Are not they themselves in the wrong?

These examples might also be construed in the first person, according to the context.

Notice the use of *ji* in expressions derived from the Chinese, such as:

*Ji-bun no dekiru koto wo ji-man shite iru.*

He prides himself on his ability (*man* pride).

*Ji-sastu suru* to kill one's self, from *sastu* kill.

*Ji-gō ji-toku* (lit. self-act self-get).

A man's sin brings its own punishment.

The following idioms should also be noted in this connection:

*Karada wo arau* to wash one's self.

<sup>2</sup> It is an unsettled question among Japanese grammarians whether adverbs or adverbial expressions should always immediately precede the verb or not. Ordinarily *jibun de* is placed between the verb and its object, but in some cases it more naturally precedes the object.



*Kimono wo kiru* to dress one's self.

*Koshi wo kakeru* to seat one's self (on a chair or other raised object).

*Mi wo kakusu* to hide one's self.<sup>a</sup>

*Mi-nage wo suru* to drown one's self, from *nage-ru* to cast.

*Ware (mi) wo wasureru* to forget one's self.

The *mi* which occurs in the last few examples enters into the very common idiom *mi-no-ue* (lit. upon self) which means: one's personal fortunes, "fate."

*Mi-no-ue-banashi wo suru* to talk about one's own future.

"One another," "mutually," is rendered by the adverbial *tagai ni*. In addition there may be added to the stem of the verb the auxiliary *au* to meet.

*Tagai ni tasuke-au*. They help one another.

*Tagai ni hore-au*. They fall in love with each other.

Notice the use of the Chinese *dō-shi*, from *dō* same, together, and *shi* man, in: *Tomōdachi dōshi de hanashi wo suru* (lit. Friends among themselves speaking do). They hold a conversation just among themselves as friends.

## Vocabulary

*hara* abdomen, stomach.

*ikusa* war.

*samurai* one of the former  
military class, knight.

*tsukai* messenger, envoy.

*oya-ji* father.<sup>b</sup>

*ki-mono* clothes.

*tabe-mono* food.

*mi-so* a kind of sauce.

*zu* (c) drawing, plan, map.

*bun-shō* composition, sen-  
tence.

*bun-tai* style.

*ge-jo* maid servant.

*ji-bun, ji-shin* self.

*kyō-dai* brother.<sup>c</sup>

*ten-shi sama* the Emperor.

*de-ru* come forth, go out.

a The idiom *mi wo kakusu* is commonly used of a debtor hiding from his creditors, or of a hermit. "To hide one's self" is more commonly expressed by the passive verb *kakure-ru* to be hidden.

b *Oyaji* may be used contemptuously of any old man. It may also be used in speaking humbly of one's own father. In speaking of the father of a second person, use the polite Chinese equivalent of *oyaji*, *go shim-pu (sama)*. The most suitable term for ordinary purposes is *chichi* or *chichi-oya*.

c From *kyō* or *kei* elder brother and *dai* or *tei* younger brother. As a collective term *kyō-dai* often includes sisters like the German *Geschwister*.

<i>au</i> meet ( <i>hito ni au</i> ) meet a person).	<i>yokosu</i> send. <sup>a</sup>
<i>ki ga au</i> agree, be congenial.	<i>ji-satsu suru</i> commit suicide.
<i>hiku</i> pull, draw ( <i>zu wo hiku</i> draw a plan).	<i>ato de</i> after (following a past verb).
<i>hore-ru</i> fall in love.	<i>tagai ni</i> mutually, reciprocally.
<i>karu</i> write, draw.	<i>is-sho ni</i> in the same place,
<i>naosu</i> mend, heal, correct.	together (—to <i>issho ni</i> with).
<i>nuu</i> ( <i>nu</i> ) sew.	<i>mukashi</i> in ancient times.
<i>shinuru, shinu</i> (stem : <i>shini</i> ) die.	<i>to</i> when, if (with a verb in the present tense).

### Exercises

*Ano oyaji wa jibun no kodomo wo koroshimash'ta. Watakushi wa niwa no ki wo taitei mina jibun de uemash'ta. Ikeda san ga jibun de kimash'ta ka. Iie, ts'kai wo yokoshimash'ta. Anata wa kono bunshō wo go jibun de o kaki nasaimash'ta ka. Jibun no niwa ni<sup>b</sup> dekita hana wo jibun de motte kimash'ta. Ano hito wa jibun no ie ni hi wo ts'kemash'ta. Kono kodomo ga jibun de kono ji wo kakimashi'ta. Ano onna wa jibun no kimono wo mina jibun de nuimas'. O Some to Hisamats' wa tagai ni horeaimash'ta.<sup>c</sup> Watakushi wa ano hito to tagai ni ki ga aimas'. Mukashi Nihon no samurai wa warui koto wo suru to, jibun de hara wo kirimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Jibun ga tabemono wo koshiraeru to, umaku nai ga ; hito ga koshiraeru to, umai.*

He (*wa*) killed his own father. Who planted these flowers? I (*ga*) myself planted [them]. I myself will go to (*ye*) the physician. Did he write this composition himself? Yes, but some one probably corrected (*naosh'ta deshō* 3) the style (1) a little (2). It occasionally happened (*koto mo arimas'*) in ancient times [that] the Japanese Emperors themselves went (*oide ni*

a *Yokosu* is used only of sending persons or things to the speaker's own house or to the house in which he is at the time. The general term for "send" is *okuru*, or *todoke-ru* for things, and for persons *tsukawasu*.

b It is usual to say *niwa ni dekita* (*tsukutta*) *imo* potatoes raised in the garden, but *uchi de dekita* (*koshiraeta*) *pan* bread made at home, home-made bread.

c These are the hero and heroine of a drama, O Some being the woman's name.

d More elegantly : *seppuku shimashita*, from *setsu*=*kiru* and *fuku*=*hara*.

*natta*) to war. That woman killed her own children. That gentleman himself drew the plans of his own house. Did that pupil write these characters himself? No, the teacher wrote (*o kaki ni narimash'ta*) [them]. That woman sews her own clothes. People of the same country (*dō-koku*) help one another. That child is congenial to his brothers. Gompachi and Komurasaki fell in love with each other. Shibata Katsuie<sup>a</sup> died together with his wife and children. After (4) Shibata (1) killed (3) his wife and children (2), he killed himself. Did the maidservant go out shopping (*kaimono ni*)? No, the mistress herself went. People in (of) the country make [their] *miso* themselves.<sup>b</sup>

---

a Lord of Echizen,—died 1583.

b In this case *uchi de* may be better than *jibun de*. The adjective "home-made" becomes in Japanese *te-sei no* hand-made (a case of *yutō-yami*), as in *tesei no jōbukuro* home-made envelopes.

# THE NUMERAL<sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER XXI

The Japanese language has two series of numerals. One consists of native Japanese words; the other is borrowed from the Chinese. The native Japanese numerals in common use are:

<i>hitotsu</i> one	<i>mutsu</i> six
<i>futatsu</i> two	<i>nanatsu</i> seven
<i>mitsu</i> three	<i>yatsu</i> eight
<i>yotsu</i> four	<i>kokonotsu</i> nine
<i>itsutsu</i> five	<i>tō</i> ten

Those of two syllables are commonly pronounced with stress on the *t*: *mittsu*, *yottsu*, *muttsu*, *yattsu*

These numerals are used only for things, not for persons. They usually follow the noun. In case they precede the noun, they naturally take the particle *no*.

*Tokei futatsu, futatsu no tokei* two clocks.<sup>b</sup>

*Mō hitotsu kotoba ga arimasu.* There is one more word.

In telling the age of a child these numerals may be used alone, the word for "year" being understood.

*Hitotsu* may also be used as a kind of expletive in the sense of our "once."

*Hitotsu yatte go ran nasas.* Try it once (lit. one doing see).

The native numerals above "ten" are mostly obsolete, but some of them still occur in certain connections. Thus the old word for "twenty" appears in *hatachi* twenty years old and *hatsuka* twenty days or the twentieth day. "Thirty," "forty," etc., would be *mi-so*, *yo-so*, *i-so*, *mu-so*, etc. Of these, *miso* is still used in *misoka* the last day of the month according to the old calendar. *Momo* one hundred occurs in the classical *momo tose* one hundred years. *Ya-o* eight hundred appears in the familiar *yao-ya* greengrocer; *chi* one thousand, in *Chi-shima* thousand isles (the Kuriles), and *yorozu* a myriad, in *yorozuya* dealer in miscellaneous articles, jack-of-all-trades.

<sup>a</sup> *Sūshi* number-word.

<sup>b</sup> *Futatsu no tokei* would suggest that there are but two.

## Vocabulary

(Include the numerals up to "ten.")

<i>o jii san (jiji, jijii)</i> grand-father, old gentleman.	<i>iro-ha</i> syllabary.
<i>o bā san (baba, babā)</i> grand-mother, old lady.	<i>chū (c)</i> = <i>naka</i> middle.
<i>ototsan (oto)</i> papa.	<i>manju</i> a kind of cake.
<i>okka san (kaka)</i> mamma.	<i>tsūrei</i> (lit. common practice) usually.
<i>ani</i> older brother.	<i>saku-ya</i> last night.
<i>ane</i> older sister.	<i>zutsu</i> apiece.
<i>otōto</i> younger brother.	<i>hajime-ru</i> commence (tr.).
<i>imōto</i> younger sister.	<i>hajime</i> beginning.
<i>musuko</i> son, boy.	<i>hanashi</i> speech, conversation, story.
<i>musume</i> daughter, girl.	<i>hairu</i> enter ( <i>hайте oru</i> be inside).
<i>heya</i> room, apartment.	<i>osowaru</i> be taught, learn.
<i>mado</i> window.	<i>ochi-ru</i> fall <sup>a</sup>
<i>tansu</i> bureau, chest of drawers.	<i>sage-ru</i> let hang, suspend carry (of watches, decorations, etc.).
<i>hiki-dashi</i> drawer.	<i>wakare-ru</i> be divided, part.
<i>kago</i> basket, cage.	<i>yose-ru</i> cause to approach, bring together, add.
<i>kaki</i> persimmon.	
<i>tsubaki</i> camelia.	
<i>tsubomi</i> flower bud.	

## Exercises

*Anata no o imoto san wa o ikutsu ni o nari nasaimas' ka.*<sup>b</sup>  
*Watakushi no imōto wa mittsu de gozaimas'. Tonari no musume wa ikutsu des' ka. Tō des'. Watakushi no otōto wa kokonotsu des'. Ano hito wa tokei wo f'tatsu sageite imas'. Watakushi wa tamago wo yottsu tabemash'ta. Doits' no kodomo wa kokonots' kara chūgakkō ni hairu koto ga dekimas'.<sup>c</sup>*

a The verbs *ochiru* to fall down (of things in general) and *chiru* (of blossoms and leaves) should not be confused. The subordinatives are respectively *ochite* and *chitte*. Note also that we say *furu*, not *ochiru*, of things which fall from above, like rain, snow or volcanic ash.

b *O nari nasaru* is more polite than *narimasu*.

c Entering is possible, i.e. can enter. Our "can" is often to be translated by the use of this idiom.

*F'tats' to mitts' wo yoseru to, itsutsu ni narimas'.<sup>a</sup> Kinō no kwaji de kura ga f'tatsu yakemash'ta. Kono tans' wa hikidashi ga yottsu arimas'.<sup>b</sup> O cha (wo) hitotsu o agari nasai. Meimei tamago wo f'tatsu zutsu tabemash'ta. O jii san ga uchi no kodomo ni manjū wo hitotsu zutsu kuremash'ta. Kono heya ni wa mado ga mittsu arimas'. Watakushi wa mittsu no toki ni (at the age of three) okka san ni (by) iroha wo osowatta. Muttsu ni naru toki (ni) tenarai wo hajimemash'ta. Watakushi no hajime no ko wa (oldest child) kokonotsu no toki ni shinimash'ta. Mikan wo hitotsu chōdai. Kono kago no naka ni wa mikan ga tō haitte imas'.<sup>c</sup> Kono tsubaki ni wa tsubomi ga itsutsu arimash'ta ga, mina ochite shimaimash'ta. O hanashi ga f'tatsu ni wakaremash'ta.<sup>d</sup>*

How old is your older sister? My older sister is ten. In this room there are two windows. Bring me two eggs. American children go to school at (*kara*) the age (time) of six. I learn ten words every day. [My] older brother's son died at the age (time) of eight. At (*de*) last evening's fire six storehouses were burned. A foreign bureau usually has three drawers. This child at the age of two could not yet talk (*hanashi ga dekimasen desh'ta*). How old is this child? It is five. Please give me a (one) persimmon. Please give me one more. How much (3) are ten (*tō de 2*) [of] these oranges (1)? That camellia has seven buds.

## CHAPTER XXII

In combination with certain words, mostly of native origin, the numerals ending in *tsu* (and *ikutsu*) lose that termination, while *tō* becomes *to*, thus: *hito tsuki*, *futa tsuki*, *mi tsuki*, etc., *kokono tsuki*, *to tsuki* from *tsuki* month. Some of these words are:

a In Japanese one always says, not "is five," nor "makes five," but "becomes five."

b Notice that *arimasu* without *de* is used in such enumerations.

c In combination with the subordinative of a verb, *iru* or *oru* must be used even when the subject is not a living thing.

d [They] could not agree (lit. talk divided into two).

<i>ban</i> evening, night.	<i>ma</i> room.
<i>bin</i> bottle.	<i>maku</i> (lit. curtain) act (at a theater).
<i>hako</i> box.	<i>tabi</i> time ( <i>futa tabi</i> a second time).
<i>iro</i> color, kind.	<i>tokoro</i> place.
<i>kudari</i> (lit. descent) line (of a page).	<i>tōri</i> kind. <sup>a</sup>
<i>kumi</i> set, class, company.	

In *hito-e* single, *futa-e* double, *ya-e* eight-fold, double (of flowers) the *e* is not a separable word. Some of the words in the list here given may occur also with Chinese numerals, as in *ichi bin* one bottle, *roku tabi* six times.

Note also: *hito-suji ni* earnestly, from *suji* line, *hito-kuchi ni* at one mouthful, in a word, *hito-me ni* at a glance, <sup>b</sup> *hito-omoi ni* at the impulse of the moment (*omoi* thought), *hito ashi* one step, *hito iki* one breath. Distinguish:

*futa-go* twins.

*futatsu ni naru kodomo* a child two years old.

*futari no kodomo* two children.

"Triplets" is *mitsu-go*. <sup>c</sup> Distinguish also:

*mi kumi* three sets.

*mitsu-gumi* a set of three pieces.

Certain numerals are combined with *ka* (old word for day) as follows:

<i>futsuka</i>	two	days,	the	second	day
<i>mikka</i>	three	"	"	third	"
<i>yokka</i>	four	"	"	fourth	"
<i>itsuka</i>	five	"	"	fifth	"
<i>muika</i>	six	"	"	sixth	"
<i>nanuka</i>	seven	"	"	seventh	"
<i>yōka</i>	eight	"	"	eighth	"

<sup>a</sup> *Hito tōri de wa nai* It's unusual. *Hito tōri* is much used as an adverb meaning "in the main." *Ano hon wa hito tōri yomimashita* I have read the book in a general way (or, once through).

<sup>b</sup> *Hito-me de wa karimashita* I perceived it immediately. *Yama kara machi wo hito-me ni mi-orasu* to take a view of a town from a mountain (*mi-orasu* to look down).

<sup>c</sup> *Mitsugo* has another meaning in the proverb: *Mitsugo no tamashii hyaku made* The soul of a child three years old [remains the same] until [it becomes] a hundred years old.

*kokonoka* nine days, the ninth day

*tōka* ten days, the tenth day

*hatsuka* twenty days, the twentieth day

One day, or the first day, is *ichi nichī* (c). The last day of the month according to the old calendar is *miso-ka*; and the last day of the last month, *ō-miso-ka*: but the thirtieth is now usually called *san jū nichī* (c). Distinguish:

*itsuka* five days, the fifth day.

*itsu ka* at some time.

*ikka*, from *iku ka*, how many days, which day? (of the month).

In counting persons the following forms derived from native numerals may be used:

*hitori* one person; *hitori de* alone. <sup>a</sup>

*futari* two persons; *futari de* two together.

*yottari* four persons.

*ikutari* how many persons?

To these the honorific *o* is often prefixed. For other numbers the Chinese *san nin*, *go nin*, etc., are used. The form *mitari* is obsolete in the colloquial. One may also say: *ichi nin*, *ni nin*, *iku nin*; but not *shi nin* for four persons, because *shi-nin* means also a dead person, from *shi* death.

Notice that in such combinations as *chawan hito kumi*, *kodomo futari*, the nouns *chawan* and *kodomo* take the particles *ga*, *wo*, etc. Words like *hito kumi* and *futari* usually do not take *ga* or *wo*.

In rapid counting the native numbers are abbreviated to *hi*, *fu*, *mi*, *yo*, *itsu*, *mu*, *nana*, *ya*, *kono* (or *koko*), *tō*.

## Vocabulary

(Include lists beginning with *hitori* and *jutsuka*).

<i>bin</i> bottle.	<i>mago</i> grandchild.
<i>kumi</i> set, suit, class.	<i>hito-jini</i> violent death, loss of
<i>ma</i> room.	lite ( <i>hito</i> man, <i>shinu</i> die).
<i>tabi</i> time (of repeated occur-	<i>yake-jini</i> burning to death. <sup>b</sup>
rences).	<i>sake</i> rice-beer, alcoholic liquor.

<sup>a</sup> *Hitori* occurs in compounds like *hitori-musuko* an only son, *hitori-mae* a portion for one person, *Gozen wo hitori-mae molte kute kudasai*, Bring a meal for one.

<sup>b</sup> Compare further *kogoe-jini* freezing to death, from *kogoe-ru* freeze, *uchi-jini* death in battle, from *utsu* smite, fight. The corresponding verbs are *yake-jini suru*, *kogoe-jini suru* and *uchi-jini suru*.



*saka-zuki* wine cup.  
*kiku* chrysanthemum.  
*wan* bowl.  
*cha-wan* tea cup  
*sen-cha* infusion of tea.  
*ban* (c) evening, night. <sup>a</sup>  
*nichi, jitsu* (c) day (only in  
 compounds).  
*getsu, gwatsu* (c) month  
 (only in compounds).  
*shō-gwatsu* the first month.  
*kon-rei* wedding.  
*tan-jō* birth.  
*tanjō-bi* birth-day.  
*ayame* sweet flag.

*shō-yu* soy, a kind of sauce.  
*atsurau-ru* order (goods).  
*kakaru* be hung, amount to,  
 take (of time).  
*tatsu* (stem: *tachi*) set out,  
 start (—*wo tatsu* leave).  
*tasune-ru* inquire, visit.  
*tame-ru* (tr.) stop, lodge, en-  
 tertain (a guest or visitor).  
*tomaru* (intr.) stop, lodge, be  
 entertained (*ni tamaru*).  
*utagau* doubt, suspect.  
*itsu* when?  
*mae* front (—*no mae ni* before).  
*oyoso* about, approximately.

## Exercises

*Nana tabi tazunete hito wo utagae.*<sup>b</sup> *Senchajawan no hito kumi wa ikutsu des' ka.*<sup>c</sup> *Itsuts' ka to des'.* *Watakushi wa jūbako wo f'ta kumi atsuramash'ta ga, mada dekimasen. Kinō no kwaji ni (de) hitojini ga arinash'ta ka. Sayō, kodomo ga hitori shinimash'ta. Shōgwatsu ni wa taitei mitsugumi no sakazuki wo mochiimas' keredomo, konrei no toki ni wa kokonotsu gūmi wo mochiimas'.* *Muika no ayame tōka no kiku.*<sup>c</sup> *Anata o hitori des' ka. Sayō, mina rusu des'.* <sup>c</sup>*Yokohama kara Honkon made iku ni wa taitei nanuka kakarimas'.* *Ber'rin de*

a "Last evening," "this evening," and "to-morrow evening" become respectively *saku-ban*, *kon-ban* and *myō-ban*. In these *ya* may be substituted for *ban*. Compare the following list of Chinese compounds, all of which are in common use:

Last	This	Next
<i>saku-jitsu</i>	<i>kon-nichi</i>	<i>myō-nichi</i>
<i>sen-getsu</i>	<i>kon-getsu</i>	<i>rai-getsu</i>
<i>saku-nen (kyō-nen)</i>	<i>kon-nen</i>	<i>myō-nen (rai-nen)</i>

b *Utagae* is the imperative of *utagau*. The meaning of the proverb is: After you have looked for [the lost article] seven times, suspect [a thief].

c This proverb alludes to the third and fifth of the five great festivals, which are called *go sekkū*. At the third festival, which occurs on the fifth day of the fifth month (old style), it is customary to decorate the house with sweet flag, and at the fifth festival, on the ninth of the ninth month, chrysanthemums are exhibited. The proverb has reference to things that come too late to be of any use.

*Nihon no shōyu wa ikura shimas' ka.*<sup>a</sup> *Sayō, hito bin ga ichi yen gurai shimas'.*<sup>b</sup> *Sore wa yohodo takō gosaimas'.* *Sakuban ikutari o kyaku ga arimash'ta ka.* *Yottari arimash'ta.*<sup>b</sup> *Anata wa itsu Shina ye tachimas' ka.* *Kongetsu no yōka ni Yokohama kara fune ga demās' kara, its'ka ni koko wo tatte Tōkyō ni hito ban tomarimas'.*

It takes about twenty days to go from Japan to America.<sup>c</sup> He has four grandchildren. When is your birthday (*go tanjō bi*)? My birthday is [on] the seventh of this month. [My] father's birthday is on the fourth of next month. Please keep me one night. Do you need (*o iriyō des' ka*) one room or [is it] two? I need three rooms. When do you start? I start on the fourth or (*ka*) fifth of this month. At the great fire (*ōkwaji*) (of) recently four men and (*ni*)<sup>d</sup> four women lost their lives (*yake-jini shimash'ta*).

## CHAPTER XXIII

The Chinese numerals are :

<i>ichi</i> one	<i>jū shi</i> fourteen
<i>ni</i> two	<i>jū go</i> fifteen
<i>san</i> three	<i>jū roku</i> sixteen
<i>shi</i> four	<i>jū shichi</i> seventeen
<i>go</i> five	<i>jū hachi</i> eighteen
<i>roku</i> six	<i>jū ku</i> nineteen
<i>shichi</i> seven	<i>ni jū</i> twenty
<i>hachi</i> eight	<i>ni jū ichi</i> twenty-one
<i>ku</i> nine	<i>san jū</i> thirty
<i>jū</i> ten	<i>shi jū</i> forty
<i>jū ichi</i> eleven	<i>go jū</i> fifty
<i>jū ni</i> twelve	<i>roku jū</i> sixty
<i>jū san</i> thirteen	<i>shichi jū</i> seventy

<sup>a</sup> From *suru* to do. Compare our How much does it make?

<sup>b</sup> Not *orimashita* or *imashita*. The point is that we have guests. The question does not ask where they are.

<sup>c</sup> One may also say; *Yokohama to Sans'ranshi'ko no aida wa hatsuka gurai kakarimasu.*

<sup>d</sup> *Ni* is the postposition. In this connection it means "in addition to," "besides," and may be translated simply "and."

<i>hachi jū</i> eighty	<i>ni sen</i> two thousand
<i>ku jū</i> ninety	<i>sansen</i> three thousand
<i>hyaku</i> hundred	<i>hassen</i> eight thousand
<i>ni hyaku</i> two hundred	<i>ichi man</i> ten thousand <sup>a</sup>
<i>sambyaku</i> three hundred	<i>ni man</i> twenty thousand
<i>shi hyaku</i> four hundred	<i>samman</i> thirty thousand
<i>go hyaku</i> five hundred	<i>jū man</i> hundred thousand
<i>roppyaku</i> six hundred	<i>jū go man</i> hundred and fifty
<i>shichi hyaku</i> seven hundred	“ thousand
<i>happyaku</i> eight hundred	<i>hyaku man</i> million
<i>ku hyaku</i> nine hundred	<i>semman</i> ten million
<i>sen (issen)</i> thousand	<i>ichi oku</i> hundred million
<i>sen ichi</i> thousand and one	

Some people pronounce *shichi* as though it were written *hichi*; in combination *ku* may be pronounced *kyū*.

The most common terms used in measurements and their equivalents, are here inserted for the sake of convenience.

The Japanese foot-rule is called *sashi*, or *mono-sashi*, from *sasu* to point, measure. The ordinary *kane-zashi*, so called because carpenters' rules are made of *kane* metal, takes as a unit the *shaku*, which is equivalent to 11.93 inches or .30303 meter. <sup>b</sup>

10 <i>bu</i>	= 1 <i>sun</i>
10 <i>sun</i>	= 1 <i>shaku</i>
6 <i>shaku</i>	= 1 <i>ken</i> = 2 yards almost
60 <i>ken</i>	= 1 <i>chō</i>
36 <i>chō</i>	= 1 <i>ri</i> = 2.44 miles

For surfaces the unit is the *tsubo*,—one *ken* (six *shaku*) square.

30 <i>tsubo</i>	= 1 <i>se</i> ( <i>se-bu</i> )
10 <i>se</i>	= 1 <i>tan</i> ( <i>tan-bu</i> )
10 <i>tan</i>	= 1 <i>chō</i> ( <i>chō-bu</i> ) = 2.45 acres

<sup>a</sup> An alternative pronunciation for *man* is *ban*; but *ban* is used, not in the exact sense of “ten thousand,” but only in an indefinite sense like our “myriad.” Notice the familiar expressions *ban-sai* (*sai year*) Live forever Hurray! *semban arigatō*, *semban go kurō*, many thanks! Compare also: *man-ichi* ten thousand to one, i.e., by a bare chance, *hamban* certainly.

<sup>b</sup> The *kujira zashi*, so called because it was originally made of whale-bone, is longer by one fourth and is used for measuring dry goods. Both the *kane-sashi* and the *kujirasashi* are now usually made of bamboo.

For capacity the unit is the *shō*, equivalent to 1.804 liter, 1.588 English quart, 1.906 American fluid quart, or 1.638 American dry quart.

10 *shaku* (*saki*) = 1 *gō*<sup>a</sup>    10 *shō* = 1 *to*  
 10 *gō*                    = 1 *shō*    10 *to* = 1 *koku*

For weight the unit is the *mom-me*<sup>b</sup> = .13275 ounce or 3.75 grams. After multiples of *jū* and *hyaku* it is usual to say simply *me*. One pound avoirdupois is about 120 *me*.

160 *me*                    = 1 *kin*.  
 1000 *mom-me* = 1 *kwan* (*kwam-me*) = 8½ pounds

For money the unit is the *yen*, equal to about 50 American cents.

10 *rin* = 1 *sen*    100 *sen* = 1 *yen*

For "hour," "minute," "second," the terms are *ji*, *jun*, *byō*.

These terms are all of Chinese origin except *tsubo* and *se*, which take the Japanese numerals, thus: *kito se*, *futa se*, *mi se*, etc.

In asking for the number or amount of any of these units, prefix *nan*, or *iku*. This *iku* is *ikutsu*, which has lost the ending *tsu*, like the Japanese numerals. But in cases where *iku* and *ichi* are liable to be confused, *nan* is better.

Up to "ten" the Chinese numerals are used almost exclusively with words of Chinese origin. Beyond "ten" they are used also with words of Japanese origin. Thus: *jū ichi tsubo*, *jū ni tsubo*, etc. They always precede the nouns which they limit. In some combinations euphonic changes occur.

*Ichi* (*itsu*) unites with words beginning with *k* (*f*), *s* (*sh*), *t* (*ch*) and *k*:

<i>ichi hen</i>	becomes	<i>ippen</i>	one time, once
<i>ichi fun</i>	„	<i>ippun</i>	
<i>ichi sun</i>	„	<i>issun</i>	
<i>ichi shō</i>	„	<i>isshō</i>	
<i>ichi tan</i>	„	<i>ittan</i>	
<i>ichi chō</i>	„	<i>ichō</i>	
<i>ichi kin</i>	„	<i>ikken</i>	

<sup>a</sup> This *gō* differs from *go* five not only in the length of the vowel but also in the sound of the *g*, which is more nasal in the case of *gō* (*ngō*).

<sup>b</sup> Here *me* is the word for "eye." In this connection it refers to the notches on the scale, and hence means the measure of weight.

But we say: *ichi koku* (of rice). *Ikkoku*, or *ikkakoku*, means: "one country."

*Jū* produces similar changes: *jippen*, *jippun*, *jissun*, *jissō*, *jittan*, *jitchō*, *jikkin*.

*San* (as also *man* and *nan*) naturally causes *nigori* in the succeeding consonants: *samben*, *sampun*, *sansun*, *sandan*, *sangin*. Since both *shō* and *chō* through *nigori* become *jō*, it is customary to distinguish them thus: *sanjō* for *san shō* but *san chō*.

*Roku* (as also *hyaku*) coalesces with *h* (*f*), as in *roppen*, *roppun*. *Hachi* is irregular:

*hachi ken*, but *happjaku*.

*hachi fun*.

*hassun*, *hassen*, etc.

*hasshō*, *hasshaku*, etc.

*hattan*, *hattō*.

*hatchō*.

*hachi kin*, but *hakkakoku* eight countries.

If *hachi ken*, *hachi kin*, were contracted to *happen*, *hakkin*, they could hardly be distinguished from *hyappen*, *hyakkin*.

Business men to avoid mistakes generally use *nana* instead of *shichi*.

For similar reasons *shi* is displaced by *yo* in the following combinations:

*yo ban* number four.

*yo dai* four generations.

*yo dai* for vehicles.

*yo do* four times, or degrees.

*yo ji* four o'clock.

*yo jō* (*jō* = 10 *shaku*).

*yo jō* four mats.

*yo mai* (or *shi mai*) four flat things. (See Ch. XXVI.)

*yo nen* four years.

*yo nin* (*yo mei*) four persons.

*yo ri*.

*yo (n) rin*.

*yon sen* (or *shi sen*; *yo yen*).

Notice: *ichi nichi* (*jitsu*) a whole day, *maru ichi nen* a whole year, *ichi ji* for awhile, *ittan* once (*tan* morning).<sup>a</sup>

Small approximate numbers like our "two or three," "three or four," etc., are expressed asyndetically:

*Ni san nen* two or three years.

<sup>a</sup> This last is used only in cases where we employ "once" with the perfect tense as in *Ittan shō-chi shita koto wa kesshite i-yaku (wa) itashimasen*. Having once agreed to a thing, I will never break my promise. Compare *ichi ji* in *Ano hito wa ichi ji (wa) kwai-sha no yaku-in deshita*. He was at one time an official in the company.

*Futa koto mi koto* two or three words, a brief speech.

*Shi go nin* four or five persons.

*Nana yatsu no kodomo* a child seven or eight years old.

## Vocabulary

(Include Chinese numerals, and tables of units.)

*atai* value.

*dote* dyke, road on an embankment.

*kazu* number.

*tōri* kind, manner.

*saka-ya* liquor-dealer, liquor-store.

*me-kata* weight.

*sashi, mono-sashi* foot-rule.

*tō* grade, class.

*jō, chū, ge* upper, middle, lower. <sup>a</sup>

*i-jō* over (following a number).

*i-ka* under.

*tō* = 10 *shaku*.

*bu* =  $\frac{1}{4}$  *ryō* (old coin).

*dai-myō* feudal lord. <sup>b</sup>

*jimen* lot (of ground).

*jūn-kō* population (of a country or town).

*nin-zu* number of people (in a smaller social unit).

*mon-ji, moji* letter, character, ideogram.

*ryō-chi* domain, estate.

*shi-hō* four sides, square.

*shō-gun* commander-in-chief, "tycoon."

*shu-ru* kind, species.

*sō-ba* market price.

*tō-fu* bean-curd.

*rasha* woolen cloth.

*ataru* strike (—*ni ataru* to be equivalent to). <sup>c</sup>

*make-ru* be defeated, come down on the price.

*yoru* depend (—*ni yoru* depend on).

*ben-kyō suru* study, be diligent.

*hodo* = *bakari* (See pp. 36, 43).

*hotondo* almost.

*isshō-kemmei ni* with all one's might.

<sup>a</sup> The words *jō-tō, chū-tō, ka-tō* (*ka* being an alternative reading of the character *ge*) in the sense of "first class," "medium," "low class," are constantly used, with variety of applications. Recently, however, the officials have changed the names of the classes of railway passengers to *ittō, ni-tō, san-tō*.

<sup>b</sup> *Dai-myō* means literally "great name." This title was given to a feudal lord whose estate yielded him an income of at least 100,000 *koku* of rice a year. The *daimyos* now belong to the *kwa-soku* (nobility). Remember that *koku* with *man* suffers *nigori*, thus: *ni mangoku*.

<sup>c</sup> *Watakushi no oi ni atarimasu* [He] is my nephew. In a sentence like this *ni atarimasu* has practically the same sense as *de arimasu*.

<sup>d</sup> I.e. one life risk life. The subordinative of *maru, natte*, is usually added: *Isshōkemmei ni natte hataraku* to work with all one's might.

## Exercises

*Ichi ri wa san jū roku chō des'. Itchō wa roku jikken des'. Ikken wa rok'shaku des'. Isshaku wa jissun des'. Sakaya ni san ri, tōfuya ni ichi ri.<sup>a</sup> Ichi ri wa iku meitor' (nam-meitor') ni atarimas' ka. Ichi ri wa sanzen ku hyaku ni jū shichi meitor' ni atarimas'. Ichi meitor' wa sanjaku sanzun ni atarimas'. Jimen hito tsubo no ōkisa wa dono kurai ka. Hito tsubo no ōkisa wa rok' shaku shihō des'.<sup>b</sup> Sambyaku tsubo wa ittambu des'; jittambu wa itchōbu des'; itchōbu wa oyoso ichi hek'tar' to onaji gurai des'.<sup>c</sup> Mukashi no ichi bu wa ima no ichi yen no atai ga arimas'. Ima no sōba ni yoru to,<sup>d</sup> ichi dor' wa (dollar) oyoso ni yen ni atarimas'. Yokohama ye no ōf'kugippu wa ikura des' ka. Jōtō wa ichi yen go jissen, chūtō wa ku jissen des'; katō no ōf'kugippu wa arimasen. Jisshaku wo ichi jō to mōshimas'. Nikon ni wa mono<sup>o</sup>rashi ga ni shurui (f'ta tōri) arimas'; hitots' wa kujiravashi to mōshi,<sup>e</sup> mō hitots' wa kanezashi to mōshimas'; kujiravashi wa san jū shichi sanchimeitor' han ni atari, kanezashi wa san jū sanchimeitor' ni atarimas'. Ichi koku wa hyaku hachi jū rittor ni atarimas'. Ichi koku wa jitto, itto wa jisshō, isshō wa ju gō des'. Ichi rittor' wa oyoso go gō han ni atarimas'. Nippon no jinkō wa shi sen go hyaku man nin des'. Tōkyō no sōba de wa konogoro kome ga isshō ni jissen des'. Ikkin wa roppyaku g'ram' ni atarimas'. Shōgun wa happyaku mangoku no ryōchi ga arimash'ia. Ikkwanne wa semmonne des'. Ikkwanne wa sanzen shichi hyaku go jū g'ram' ni atarimas'. Kurumaya san! Ueno made ikura ka, ne. Hei, ni jissen de mairimashō. Sore wa takai, jū go sen ni make nasai.<sup>f</sup> Kono uchi wa ninzu ga ōi kara, tsuki ni shōyu ga hasshō gurai irimas'. Yoshiwara ye<sup>g</sup> iku dote wa hatchō arimas'. Ano ok'san wa isshō-kemmei ni Eigo wo benkyō shi'te orimas'.*

a This saying refers to a lonely place in the country. *Tōfu* is one of the most important articles of food among the Japanese.

b The scientific term for square foot is *heitō-shaku*; for cubic foot *rippō-shaku*.

c Such pleonasm as we have here with *oyoso* and *gurai* in the same sentence are not infrequent.

d Lit. if one depends on the present market price, i.e., at the present rate of exchange.

e *Mōshi* and *atari* are the stems of the verbs *mōsu* and *ataru*. See p. 14 d.

f This is less polite than *o make nasai*.

g The name of a district in Tōkyō, from *yoshi* good, lucky, and *kara* wildness.

It is (*aru*) 8 *ri* from Yokohama to Enoshima.<sup>a</sup> Eight *ri* are (*ni ataru*) how many miles (*iku mair'*)? Eight *ri* are almost twenty miles. How (*dore gurai*) high is Mount Fuji? The height of Mount Fuji is about 3,700 meters. How far (*dono gurai*) is it from here to Totsuka? <sup>b</sup> From here (1) to Totsuka (2) it is (*aru* 6), I should say (*mā* 3), about (5) 10 *chō* (4). About how much do you weigh (In regard to the weight of your body, about how many *kin* are there)? <sup>c</sup> I weigh (*aru*) 20 *kwan*. Twenty *kwan* are how many pounds (*pondo*)? Twenty *kwan* are about 165 pounds. The height of this house is three *jō*. The population of Japan is about fifty millions. That *daimyō* had an income of (*totte imash'ta*) 20,000 *koku* [of rice]. Rice now costs (*shimas'* 4) about (3) fifteen *yen* (2) per *koku* (1). Hello, *kurumaya!* how much is it to Enoshima? It's one *yen* and fifty *sen*. Four *to* are how many liters? Four *to* are 72 liters. How long is this cloth? By *kanezashi* this cloth measures (*aru*) about three *jō* six *shaku*. Three *jō* six *shaku* are about ten yards (*yar'do*). The number of the *katakana* is 48 characters (*ji*). One mile is 14 *chō* [and] 45 *ken*. The length of the river Tenryū<sup>d</sup> is about 60 *ri*; 60 *ri* are 146½ miles.

## CHAPTER XXIV

1. The Japanese calendar has been made to correspond to our Gregorian calendar in every respect except that the Japanese reckon years, not from the birth of Christ, but by periods (*nen-gō*). It used to be customary to create a new period whenever a great event occurred; but at the time of the Restoration it was decided that henceforth *nen-gō* should correspond to the reigns of the Emperors. The first year of the present period, *Meiji*, was 1868. Hence, to find the year of *Meiji* one must subtract 1867 from the Christian year. The year 1906 thus becomes: *Meiji san ju ku nen*.

a A romantic little rocky island near Yokohama. The *e*, meaning bay, is identical with the *e* in Edo (bay-gate).

b A place near Yokohama (lit. gate-mound).

c In old Japan such a question could hardly be asked, as people had a superstitious dread of weighing themselves.

d The Tenryūgawa rises in Lake Suwa in the province of Shinano and flows through the province of Tōtomi.



The first year of a period is called *gwan-nen*; thus the year 1868 is *Meiji gwannen*.

As a mere matter of interest, we add a list of the periods between 1830 and 1868, together with the years of the Christian era to which their first years correspond:

<i>Tem-pō</i> 1830	<i>Man-en</i> 1860
<i>Kō-kwa</i> 1844	<i>Bun-kyū</i> 1861
<i>Ka-ei</i> 1848	<i>Gen-ji</i> 1864
<i>An-sei</i> 1854	<i>Kei-ō</i> 1865

When giving a year of the Christian era use the word *sei-reki* "western calendar." Thus the year 1888 is called *seireki sen happyaku hachi jū hachi nen*.

A person's age may be stated by adding *sai*, another word for "year," to the number. Thus: *issai*, *san sai*, *hassai*, *jissai*. But in the colloquial it is usual to employ the simple numeral without *sai*. In stating the age of a child below ten the Japanese numerals are preferred. But in giving the ages of animals *sai* is commonly used. A horse five years old is called, not *itsutsu ni naru uma*, but *go sai ko*. *Ko* here is the same as the word meaning "child."

2. The names of the months are formed from the Chinese numerals and *gwatsu*. The reading *getsu* is less common, except in the case of *ichi getsu* January. Another name for this month is *shō-gwatsu*, from *shō* right. (Compare *shō-go* noon).

"One month" is *ikkagetsu*, from *ichi ka getsu*; "two months," *nikagetsu*, etc. This *ka*, which is the same as the *ka* in *ikkakoku*, is much used in such enumeration, being placed between the numeral and the noun. It means "a piece" or "unit."

3. In specifying the day of the month, *nichi* (*jitsu*) is used with the Chinese numerals, except in those cases where forms like *futsuka*, *mikka*, etc., are still available. So the "18th of January" is *ichi getsu no jū hachi nichi*. Notice that the 14th and 24th are called *jū yokka* and *ni jū yokka*. The old name for the first day of the month is *tsuitachi*, from *tsuki* moon or month and *tatsu* rise, because in the old calendar the month began with the new moon. The 1st of January is called *gwan-jitsu*.

In dates the order is the exact reverse of the English. The "3rd of November, 1852" becomes: *sen happyaku go jū ni nen ju ichi gwatsu mikka*.

We add a table of the days of the month.

<i>ichi nichi</i> ( <i>jitsu</i> )	} 1st	<i>jū roku nichi</i>	16th
<i>tsuitachi</i>		<i>jū shichi nichi</i>	17th
<i>futsuka</i>		<i>jū hachi nichi</i>	18th
<i>mikka</i>		<i>jū ku nichi</i>	19th
<i>yokka</i>		<i>hatsuka</i>	20th
<i>itsuka</i>		<i>ni jū ichi nichi</i>	21st
<i>muika</i>		<i>ni jū ni nichi</i>	22nd
<i>nanuka</i> ( <i>nanoka</i> )		<i>ni jū san nichi</i>	23rd
<i>yōka</i>		<i>ni jū yokka</i>	24th
<i>kokonoka</i>		<i>ni jū go nichi</i>	25th
<i>tōka</i>		<i>ni jū roku nichi</i>	26th
<i>jū ichi nichi</i>		<i>ni jū shichi nichi</i>	27th
<i>ji ni nichi</i>		<i>ni jū hachi nichi</i>	28th
<i>ju san nichi</i>		<i>ni jū ku nichi</i>	29th
<i>jū yokka</i>		<i>san ju nichi</i>	30th
<i>ju go nichi</i>		<i>san jū ichi nichi</i>	31st

4. As has been intimated before, the Japanese do not think so much of the days of the week as we do. The names of the week-days all have the suffix *yō-bi*, from *yō* (c) light, luminary and *hi* day. They are: *nichi-yōbi*, *getsu-yōbi*, *kwa-yōbi*, *sui-yōbi*, *moku-yōbi*, *kin-yōbi*, *do-yōbi*. The prefixes mean, respectively, sun, moon, fire, water, wood, metal, earth,—the names of the seven planets (*shichi-yō*). Final *bi* is often omitted: *nichi-yō*, *getsu-yō*, etc. "One week" is *issshū*, from *shū* revolution. "Which day?" (of the week) is *nani yōbi*.

5. Hours of the day are indicated by adding *ji* (time) to the Chinese numerals: *ichi ji*, *ni ji*, *san ji*, *yo ji*, etc. The word *fun* (minute) combines with the numerals thus: *ippun*, *ni fun*, *sampun*, *shi fun*, *roppun*, *hachi fun*, *jippun*.

*ichi ji jū go fun sugi* a quarter past one.

*ichi ji han* half past one.

*ni ji jū go fun mae* a quarter of two.

*Nan ji* (*nandoki*) *desu ka*. What time is it?

*Kisha wa nan ji ni demasu ka*.

[At] what time does the train leave?

In stating the length of time in hours add *kan*: *ichi ji kan*, *ni ji kan*, *yo ji kan*, *nan ji kan*, etc. This *kan* is the Chinese equivalent of *aida* interval.

The same idiom may be used in stating the length of time in years, months, or days, thus; *roku nen kan* (also *rokkanen kan*), *rokkagetsu kan*, *muika kan*, etc. Notice also:

*Sanganichi no aida wa doko de mo sōni<sup>a</sup> wo tabemasu.*

For three days (after New Year's) *sōni* is eaten everywhere.

## Vocabulary

(Include names of week-days.)

<i>hi</i> sun.	<i>sei-reki</i> European calendar
<i>hiru</i> noon, day-time.	(of the Christian year).
<i>yoru</i> night.	<i>kyū-reki</i> old calendar.
<i>de-bana</i> first infusion (of tea).	<i>shin-reki</i> new calendar (of
<i>bon</i> , <i>bommatsuri</i> festival of the	months).
dead. <sup>b</sup>	<i>go-zen</i> = <i>hiru-mae</i> forenoon.
<i>kan</i> (c)= <i>aida</i> interval.	<i>go-go</i> = <i>hiru sugi</i> afternoon.
<i>kō</i> (c) prince (following the	<i>mei-nichi</i> anniversary of a
name). <sup>c</sup>	death.
<i>sai</i> (c) year (especially of age).	<i>tsugi no</i> the next.
<i>tei</i> (c) emperor (following the	<i>aruku</i> walk.
name).	<i>hajimaru</i> begin (intr.).
<i>ban-cha</i> coarse tea.	<i>kakure-ru</i> be hidden.
<i>kei-ko</i> study, practice ( <i>keiko</i>	<i>nasaru</i> do (polite 2,3).
<i>suru</i> to study, recite).	<i>oki-ru</i> arise from sleep, awake.
<i>nen-gō</i> period.	<i>umare-ru</i> be born.
<i>i-shin</i> renovation, reforma-	<i>hajimete</i> for the first time.
tion.	<i>shika</i> only, merely (with a
<i>go is-shin</i> the Restoration.	negative verb.
<i>kas-sen</i> battle. <sup>l</sup>	<i>sugi</i> past, after (stem of <i>sugi-</i>
<i>gun-sei</i> military force, army.	<i>ru</i> to pass by, exceed.

## Exercises

*Oni mo jū hachi; ban-cha mo debana* (Proverb)<sup>d</sup> *Dai issei*

a *Zō-ni*, from *sō* (c) miscellaneous and *ni-ru* to boil, is a kind of soup.

b Also called *o bon*. The festival is celebrated on the 14th, 15th and 16th of the 7th month (old style). It begins properly on the evening of the 13th.

c This is now the highest of the five *shaku*, i.e., degrees of nobility. These are *kō* prince, *kō* (different character) marquis, *haku* count, *shi* viscount, *dai* baron. *Ito kō* Marquis Ito. *Okuma haku* Count Okuma.

d Even a devil when in the bloom of youth is beautiful and attractive; even if the tea is of a poor grade, the first infusion has an excellent taste. Instead of *jū hachi*, some say *jū shichi*.

*Wir'her'm' tei wa sen shichi hyaku ku jū shichi nen no san gwatsu ni jū ni nichi ni go tanjō ni narimash'ta ; sō sh'te sen happyaku hachi jū hachi nen no san gwatsu kokonoka ni o kakure ni narimash'ta ; sore des' kara ku jū issai ni o nari nasaimash'ta.*<sup>a</sup> *Per'ri to iu Amerika no ts'kai wa Kaei roku nen roku gwatsu no mikka ni hajimete Nihon ye kimash'ta. Sono toki wa kyūreki desh'ta kara, shinreki ni naos' to, shichi gwatsu no nanuka ni atarimas'. Kaei to iu nengō wa sen happyaku shi jū hachi nen kara sen happyaku go jū yo nen made desh'ta kara, Kaei roku nen wa sen happyaku go jū san nen ni atarimas'. Kono tsūgi no kisha wa yo ji jū go fun sugi ni demas'. Shimbashi<sup>b</sup> kara Ueno made aruku to, ichi ji kan hodo kakarimas'. Anata wa mainichi keiko wo nasaimas' ka. Sayō, mainichi ni ji kan zutsu keiko wo itashimas'.<sup>c</sup> Anata no sensei wa nan ji ni oide ni narimas' ka. Watakushi no sensei wa ban no shichi ji han ni mairimas'. Sen happyaku shichi jū nen ni F'rans' to Doits' no ik'sa ga arimash'ta ; sono ik'sa wa shichikagetsu kakarimash'ta. Sono ik'sa no yo nen mae ni Ōs'toria to P'rosha no ik'sa ga arimash'ta ; sono ik'sa wa tatta nanuka sh'ka kakarimasen desh'ta. Anata wa nan ji ni okimas' ka. Fuyu wa shichi ji ni okimas. Sen roppyaku nen no jū gwatsu ni Sekigahara no<sup>d</sup> kassen ga arimash'ta.*

a *Dai issei Wir'her'm' tei* is Wilhelm I. For *dai issei* see Ch. XXIX. *Tei* means "sovereign." "King" is *kwō* or *ō* (*sama*). The Emperor of Japan is called *ten-shi* heaven-son or *tennō*, from *ten-ō* heaven-king. *Mikado* is obsolete in the colloquial. The general term for "emperor" is *kwō-tei*. In speaking of exalted personages, *go tanjō ni naru* is equivalent to *o umiare nasaru*, and *o kakure ni naru* to *o shini nasaru*. Notice that with words denoting time the postposition, if needed at all, must be *ni*. What was said about the distinction between *ni* and *de* (p. 20 a) applies to places only.

b The name of a bridge in Tokyo. It is a case of *jūbako-yomi*, *shin* being the Chinese for "new." At Shimbashi is the terminal station of the railway between Tōkyō and Yokohama.

c With *suru*, *wo* is commonly omitted; but with the more formal *itasu*, unless the object is stated, it is better to use *wo*. *Keiko wo* may be contracted to *keikō*.

d The name of a village on the *Nakasendō*. For the *ga* see p. 13. *Seki* means a barrier between two feudal fiefs, a place where travellers in former times had to show their passports, while *kara* means wilderness. Sekigahara was the scene of a great battle in which Ieyasu, the founder of the last line of shoguns, won a decisive victory over his enemies.

*'eyas' kō no gunzei wa shichi man go sen nin desh'ta keredomo, Mitsunari no gunzei wa jū samman nin desh'ta. San jū shichi nen bakari nae ni Tōkyō ni ōjishin ga arimash'ta; sono toki ni hito ga jū man shi sen nin hodo shinda sō des.'*

*Taikō sama*<sup>a</sup> died, according to (*de*) the European calendar, in the year 1598. When (*toki ni*) *Taikō* died his child (*ko no*) *Hideyori* was six years old. The Restoration began in (from) the year 1868. At that time the Emperor was (*de irasshaimash'ta*) seventeen years old.<sup>b</sup> At what hour do you usually retire (*o yasumi nasaimas' ka*)? I usually retire at eleven o'clock. The train for *Kōbe* (*Kōbe ye iku kisha*) leaves at ten o'clock. What time is it now (*mō*)? It is probably (*deshō*) about (*goro*) four o'clock. Now (*konogoro*) the sun rises (*deru*) at about eight o'clock. The festival of *Suitengū* is [on] the 5th of January. The festival of *Kompira* is on the 10th of January. The anniversary of the death of *Gongen sama*<sup>c</sup> is the 17th of April. *Ieyasu* was born in 1542. The festival of the dead begins on (from) the 13th of the 7th month. The summer vacation of the university continues (is) seventy days. I study German one hour every day. At what hour does your teacher come? He comes [in the] morning at eight o'clock. *Nobunaga* died at the age of [*de*] 48 years. This year is the 39th [year] of *Meiji*. What day (of the week) is to-day?

a *Tai-kō* in ancient times designated a retired *kwam-paku* (prime minister). It is especially the title of *Hideyoshi*, who, though a man of low birth, attained to the position of *kwampaku*.

b *Irasshaimashita* is a contraction of *irassharimashita*, as *nasaimashita* is of *nasarimashita* and *gozaimashita* of *gozarimashita*. As the Emperor was born in 1852, he really was fifteen or sixteen years of age at the time of the Restoration. But the Japanese count the year of one's birth as a whole year and after the next New Year's day say that the child is in his second year or two years old. In speaking of a person's age seventeen years counted in the Japanese fashion is *kasoe-doshi de jū shichi* (*kasoe-ru* reckon, *tashi* year). In other connections, as in answering the question how many years one has been in the country, say *de-iri jū shichi nen* or *ashi kake jū shichi nen* (*ashi wo kakaru*: to straddle). Exactly seventeen years is *maru jū shichi nen* (*maru* circle).

c *Gongen* is a Buddhistic word meaning "temporary manifestation," i.e., re-incarnation of Buddha. In Tokyo this title is applied with especial frequency to *Ieyasu*, who is called especially *Tōshō-gongen* (*tō* east, *shō* illumine):

## CHAPTER XXV

The four arithmetical processes,—addition, subtraction, multiplication and division are called collectively *ka-gen-jō-jo*.

*ka* = *kuwae-ru* add. *jō* = *kake-ru* multiply.

*gen* = *hiku* subtract. *jo* = *waru* divide.

21 ni 31 wo *kuwaeru* to, 52 ni *narimasu*.

31 kara 17 wo *hiku* to, 14 ni *narimasu*.

19 ni 3 wo *kakeru* to, 57 ni *narimasu*.

200 wo 5 de *waru* to, 40 ni *narimasu*.

The verb *yose-ru* "bring together" may be substituted for *kuwaeru*, thus:

21 to 31 wo *yoseru* to, 52 ni *narimasu*.

In the multiplication table (*ku-ku*) a few euphonic changes occur. It is here added, merely for purposes of reference.

*ni nin ga shi*

*shi ku*, 36

*ni san ga roku*

*ni shi ga hachi*

*go go*, 25

*ni go jū (tō)*

*go roku*, 30

*ni roku no jū ni*

*go shichi*, 35

*ni shichi no jū shi*

*go ha*, 40

*ni ha no jū roku*

*gokku*, 45

*ni ku jū hachi*

*roku roku*, 36

*sa zan ga 9*

*roku shichi*, 42

*san shi no 12*

*roku ha*, 48

*san go no 15*

*rokku*, 54

*sabu roku*, 18

*san shichi*, 21

*shichi shichi*, 49

*sampa*, 24

*shichi hachi (ha)*, 56

*san ku*, 27

*shichi ku*, 63

*shi shi no 16*

*happa*, 64

*shi go*, 20

*hakkū*, 72

*shi roku*, 24

*shi shichi*, 28

*ku ku*, 81

*shi ha*, 32

Notice the change of *san* to *sabu* in *sabu roku* and compare *Sabu-rō*, a common personal name (lit. three man). The sound *n* is often interchangeable with *mu* and this again with *bu*.

Fractions are expressed by means of *bu* portion, which before *no* is pronounced *bun* :

*sambun no ni* two thirds.

*hachi bun no san* three eights.

Percentage is expressed by the units *wari* and *bu* (or *sku*):  
*ichi wari go bu* 15 %.

Once, twice, etc., are rendered by means of *do*, *hen*, or *tabi*. In the same sense *kwai* "turn" is often used, but this is not strictly colloquial.

*ichi do*, *ippen*, *hito tabi* once.

*san do*, *samben*, *mi tabi* three times.

*yo do*, *shi hen*, *yo tabi* four times.

*ju do*, *jippen*, *to tabi* ten times.

*Mainichi ni do zutsu* twice every day.

*Hi ni san dō zutsu* three times a day.

Double, treble, etc., are rendered by the aid of the compound *sō-bai*, or simply *bai*.

*ni sōbai* twice as many (much).

*sansōbai* (*sambai*) three times as many.

*hassōbai* (*hachi bai*) eight times as many.

*Ichī ryū nambai* one grain [produces] a myriad fold.

The word *bai* alone means *ni sōbai*.

## Vocabulary

*asa* morning.

*imo* potato.<sup>a</sup>

*arukōru* alcohol.

*bu* unit of interest, one  
per cent.

*bu*, *bun* fraction.

*hen* unit for times.

*bai* double.

*sō-bai*—fold.

*zen* (c) while (in composition).

*an-shō* memorizing.

*mon-dai* theme, subject under  
discussion, problem.

*kinri* } interest on money.  
*ri-soku* }

<sup>a</sup> The word *imo* has a wider scope than our "potato," including, as it does, a number of edible roots. The common (Irish) potato is *jagatara-imo*, or *jaga-imo*, from the name of the island of Java. The sweet potato is *satsuma-imo*, from the name of the famous province at the southern extremity of Japan.

<i>ryō-ji</i> , <i>chi-ryō</i> medical treatment ( <i>ryōji suru</i> to treat medically).	<i>wari</i> ten per cent.
<i>shoku-ji</i> meal ( <i>shokuji suru</i> take a meal).	<i>ae-ru</i> increase (intr.).
<i>kuwae-ru</i> add.	<i>fukumu</i> contain.
<i>hiku</i> subtract, deduct.	<i>kubaru</i> distribute.
<i>kake-ru</i> hang (tr.). apply, multiply.	<i>bikkuri suru</i> be astonished
<i>waru</i> split, divide.	frightened.
	<i>byōki ni kakaru</i> have an attack of sickness.
	<i>yorī, yorī mo</i> than, as (in comparisons).

### Exercises

*Sore wo mō ichi do yonde<sup>a</sup> kudasai. Kono sake wa ichi wari ni bu arukōr' wo fukunde imas'. Kono shimbun wa asa to ban ni<sup>b</sup> (mainichi ni do zutsu) kubarimas'. Kono byōki ni kakaru hiō wa taitei hyaku nin no uchi de ni jū nin wa shinimas'. Konogoro Doits' de wa kinri ga yas' kute taitei sambu han ka shi bu gurai des'. Nihon de wa kinri ga takai kara, ni wari no risoku wo toru hito mo arimas'. Hachi bun no ichi ni hachi bun no go wo kuwaeru to, shi bun no san ni narimas'. Ni ku jū hachi. Kusuri ku sōbai.<sup>c</sup> Ni do bikkuri.<sup>d</sup> Kyūshū no ōkisa wa Shikoku no bai des'.<sup>e</sup> Awajishima no ōkisa wa oyoso Iki no shi bai gurai des'. Watakushi wa sono mondai wo san do yonda kara, mō anshō ga dekimash'ta.<sup>f</sup> Roku ha shi jū hachi. Shina wa Doits' yori oyoso jū hassōbai gurai ōkii. Kono bunshō wa samben yonda keredo mo, mada imi ga wakarimasen. Jagatara imo wa shichi wari go bu mizu wo fukunde iru.*

a *Yonde* is the subordinative of the verb *yomu* to read (for *yomi-te*). The past tense is *yonda* (for *yomi-ta*).

b The postposition is added only to the last word, like *wa*. See p. 4d.

c The reference is to the large profits of the drug business. Notice the alliteration.

d Supply *shimashita* or *itashimashita*. This is a common expression for: [I] was greatly astonished.

e *Kyū-shū* (lit. nine countries) and *Shi-koku* (lit. four provinces) are the names of the two great islands south of the main island (*Hon-dō* or *Hon-do*) of Japan. In the following sentence we have the names of smaller islands.

f Lit. The committing to memory has been accomplished. The meaning is: I know it now.



The Japanese generally eat three times a day (*hi ni*). The American envoy Perry came to Japan twice. The students of the School for Foreign Languages recite (*keiko wo suru*) twice every day. The population of Kyūshū is double [that] of Shikoku. One *sen* is the hundredth part of a *yen*. One *sun* is the tenth part of a *shaku*. This *sake* contains 15% [of] alcohol.  $99-32=67$ . One minute is the sixtieth part of an hour. The physician (*ga*) has treated this patient four times. Mount Fuji is three times as high as Ōyama. Asia is four and a half times as large as Europe.  $17 \times 3 = 51$ . My (*uchi no*) hares have within one year multiplied (become) five fold. The number of soldiers in (of) Germany is about one hundredth of the whole population. This book seller sells at a reduction of (deducting) ten per cent. <sup>a</sup> The population of this town has within twenty years increased (*suete kimash'ta*) (to) four fold; twenty years ago there were 30,000 persons (*nin*), but now (*wa*) [they] have become 120,000 (persons).

## CHAPTER XXVI

In counting objects it is usual to make use of so-called numeral auxiliaries or numeratives, which designate the nature of the unit.

*Hako shichi ko* seven boxes. <sup>b</sup>

This *ko*, by the way, is an alternative pronunciation of the character read *ka* in *ikkagetsu*. Words of this kind are rare in English, but there are analogies in such expressions as "two suits of clothes" or "three head of cattle."

In the colloquial most of the numeratives are of Chinese origin, but there are a few native words still in use:

*Kami hito hashira* one god, from *hashira* post.

*Hato futa tsugai* two pairs of pigeons.

*Koya mi mune* three shanties, from *mune* ridge (of roof).

*Zashiki yo ma* four rooms, from *ma* space.

*Tansu itsu sao* five bureaus, from *sao* pole. <sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> As *wari* is of the nature of an auxiliary, *wo* is not required.

<sup>b</sup> *Nana hako* would be rather "seven boxfuls."

<sup>c</sup> Japanese bureaus have handles at both ends near the top, arranged so that they may be suspended from a pole and thus easily carried.

*Obi nu suji* six girdles, from *suji* line.

*Yōfuku nana kumi* seven suits of (European) clothes, from *kumu* to join.

*Kimono ya kasane* eight suits of (Japanese) clothes, from *kasane-ru* to lay one over another.

*Yoroi kokono soroi* nine sets of armor, from *sorou* to be in order, be a complete set.

Notice that the numeral with its auxiliary takes the same position in a sentence as a simple numeral, that is, it follows its noun. Analogous to *futatsu no tokei* is *hito hashira no kami*; but such reversal of the order is allowable only in certain cases. Moreover, in the examples given above the use of the simple numerals *hitotsu*, *futatsu*, etc., would not be wrong.

In this and the two following chapters a list of the most common numeratives is given.

1. For objects that are long in proportion to their width—sticks, trees, pencils, rolled or folded documents, needles, teeth, folding fans (*ōgi*), swords,<sup>a</sup> and the like : *hon*.

*ippon, sambon, shi hon, roppon, hachi hon, jippou, hyappou, nambon, iku hon.*

2. For objects that are broad and flat—paper, clothes, rugs, boards, dishes, coins and the like : *mai*.

*ichi mai, sammai, yo mai* or *shi mai, roku mai, hachi mai, jū mai, hyaku mai, nammai, iku mai.*

Note also *hammai* half a sheet, as in a Japanese book.

3. For animals of all kinds : *hiki*.

*ippiki, sambiki, shi hiki, roppiki, hachi hiki, jippiki, hyappiki, nambiki, iku hiki.*

For larger quadrupeds *tō* (head) may also be used. For birds the specific term is *wa*.

*ichi wa (ippa), samba, shi wa, roppa, hachi wa, jippa, hyappa, namba, iku wa.*

There is also a specific term for fishes—*bi* (tail)—but this is not common in the colloquial and would sound pedantic. In counting fishes *mai* and *hon* are often used, according to the shape.

<sup>a</sup> The specific numerative for swords is *furi* : *katana hūto furi*, etc.

4. For persons: *nin* (man).

*ichi nin* (*hitori*), *ni nin*, (*futari*), *san nin*, *yo nin* (*yottari*),  
*roku nin*, *hachi nin*, *jū nin*, *nan nin*, *iku nin* (*ikutari*).

A rather classical and yet not uncommon synonym is *mei* (name).

### Vocabulary

*arashi* } storm 大風  
*ō-kaze* }  
179 *ho* sail.  
*hashira* post, pillar. 柱  
*ho-bashira* mast.  
*kanzashi* (*kami*, *sashi*) hair-pin.  
*kiri no ki* paulownia. 桐  
*ori* cage, pen.  
*osu*, *mesu* male, female.  
*tako* octopus. 蛸  
*matchi* match. ば  
*chō-men* note book, account book, record.  
*chū-mon* order (for goods).  
*han-shi* white native paper (about 10 × 13 in.).

*ji-bun* (lit. time-part) time. 時  
(*o*) *yaku-nin* } official  
*kwan-ri* }  
*shim-motsu* present. 丁  
*shō-sen* merchant vessel.  
*nai-chi* interior of a country.  
*zak-kyo* mixed residence. 宅  
*age-ru* lift up, give (polite 1,3). 上げる  
*karu*, *katte* to hunt. 狩  
*kari-inu* hunting dog.  
*karyūdo* hunter. 獵  
*kau*, *katte* keep (animals).  
*kiru* wear, put on (clothes).  
*nomu*, *nonde* drink, smoke.  
*oru*, *otte* break.  
*ore-ru* be broken.

a The wood of the *kiri* tree is highly prized, being used to make bureaus, clogs, etc.

b The native word for "match" is *suri tsuke-gi* (lit. rub kindle-wood).

c Synonymous with *toki*. At the end of a clause *toki ni* or *jibun ni* is equivalent to "when."

d A now common synonym for *shim-motsu* is *okuri mono*. Another common term, *o miyage*, denotes, strictly speaking, a present brought by a person on his return from a journey.

e *Naichi-sakkyo* was a very familiar word in 1899, when the new treaties went into operation. *Nai-chi*, or *nai-koku*, is the opposite of *gai-koku*. Compare *nai-gwai jin* natives and foreigners.

f *Agemasu* I give it to you. *Ageru* may be added to the subordinatives of verbs that denote actions done for the benefit of the person addressed. *Shim-bun wo yonde agemasu*. [I will] read the newspaper for you.

g Henceforth in the vocabularies subordinatives of difficult verbs will be indicated in this way. The familiar past tense may then be formed by substituting *a* for *e*.

h Compare *akyūdo* (p. 19).

<i>tasukaru, tasukatte</i> be saved, escape with one's life.	<i>ne ga tsuku</i> take root.
<i>tatakau, tatakatte</i> to fight.	<i>tsuru, tsutte</i> hang (tr.), catch (fish) with hook and line.
<i>tatakai</i> a fight, battle, war.	<i>uchi-jini suru</i> die in battle.
<i>ne</i> root.	<i>sonzuru, sonjite</i> be injured. <sup>a</sup>
<i>tsuku, tsuite</i> stick, adhere.	<i>zai-ryū suru</i> reside.

### Exercises

*Anata wa mainichi hamaki* (p. 25 a) *wo nambon zutsu o nomi nasaimas' ka. Watakushi wa mainichi go hon zutsu nomimas'. Watakushi no tomodachi wa mainichi jippon zutsu nomimas'. Konaida wa sakana wo jippiki ts'tte kimash'ta.*<sup>b</sup> *Kyō wa samui kara, kimono wo mō ichi mai kimashō. Yūbe uchi no neko ga nezumi wo sambiki torimash'ta. Tombo ni wa hane ga yo mai arimas'. Kono shōsen wa hobashira ga sambon arimash'ta; ippon wa arashi de oremash'ta. Sono tatakai de sh'kwan ga go jū nin uchijini shimash'ta. Dōzo hanshi wo ni mai kudasai; watakushi wa ichi mai mo motte imasen kara.*<sup>c</sup> *Fude wo ippon kash'te agemashō. Ano karyūdo wa kariinu wo sambiki motte imas'. Ano basha wa nitōdachi*<sup>d</sup> *des'. Tako ni wa ashi ga hachi hon aru. Sono fude wa ikura ka. Hai, ippon go sen de gozaimas'; shikashi jippon o kai nasareba (if you buy) shi jū go sen ni makete agemashō. Kono uchi ni kami ga iku mai haitte imas' ka. Kono gakkō ni Doits'go wo keiko suru shosei ga ju yo nin arimas'. Matchi (wo) ippon chōdai. Kono hako no uchi ni matchi ga ni hon arimas' keredomo, kusuri ga tsuite imasen. Ano hito no byōki wo san nin no isha ga ryōji shimash'ta keredomo, tas'karimassen desh'ta.*<sup>e</sup> *Hirame wo ni mai shimotsu ni moraimash'ta.*

a From *son* injury, loss, and *suru*. Compare *sonzuru* (p. 48). But "to lose," as in business, is *son suru*.

b Lit. having caught with hook and line, I came. The verb *kuru* is used like *shimau* (p. 52a) as an auxiliary. *Kimasho*, in the next sentence, is from *kiru*.

c Such inversion of the natural order may be allowed when the clause with *kara* is not too long. With a negative verb *ichi mai mo* is analogous to *dare mo, nani mo*, etc. (Ch. XVII). *Motte* is the subordinative of the verb *motsu*.

d From *ni* two, *tō* head (of horses) and *tachi*, stem of *tatsu* to stand. Compare *ninimbiki*, used of a riksha drawn by two men.

e By adding *deshita* to a negative verb a negative past tense may be formed. A future may be formed similarly by adding *deshō*.

*Toriya ni kiji wo samba chūmon sh'te kite o kure! Kono kumi ni wa seito ga nammei arimas' ka. Naichi-zakkyo ni natta jibun ni Nihon ni zairyū sh'te oru Seiyōjin wa shi sen go hyaku ni ju ni nin desh'te,<sup>a</sup> sono uchi Doits'jin wa shi hyaku hachi ju ichi nin de gozaimash'ta.*

In this box there are (*haitte imas'*) a hundred matches. Five cigars, please! He smokes six cigars every day. The number of leaves (*kami-kazu*) in (of) this note-book is thirty. When (*jibun ni 4*) I (1) was (*otta 3*) in Tōkyō (2) the number of Germans [there] all told (*mina de*) was forty. This official keeps three horses. That merchantman has two masts; one (*wa*) was injured in (*de*) the recent storm. Lately the fishermen (*ga*) have not caught a single (even one) fish. I planted five *kiri* trees in my garden and (*ga*) all have taken root nicely (well). In (*de wa*) this war 50,000 soldiers were killed. As I have two writing-brushes, I will lend you one. There are in this box a hundred cigars; each (one) costs (*shimas'*) six *sen*. What is this bridge called? It is called *Sanmai-bashi*.<sup>b</sup> In the Zoological Garden there are over (*ijō mo*) a hundred monkeys. In this cage there are two lions; both (*ni hiki tomo*) are males. This dog has five pups (*ko*). Two hair-pins, please! There are two birds in that cage. The population of Yokohama is about 200,000.

## CHAPTER XXVII

5. For places and lots (of ground): *sho* (place) with *ka* (Compare *ikkagetsu* p. 74).

*ikkasho, sangasho, shikasho, rokkasho, hakkasho, jikkasho, nangasho.*<sup>c</sup>

For houses, shops, and also temples *ken* (eaves) is commonly used.

*ikken, sangen, shi ken, rokken, hachi ken, jikken, nangen.*

<sup>a</sup> The subordinative of *desu*.

<sup>b</sup> A narrow bridge near Ueno in Tokyo, originally made of three boards. Sakura Sōgorō on the occasion when he handed his petition to the Shōgun (for which offense he suffered the penalty of crucifixion) hid under this bridge.

<sup>c</sup> It is better not to say *iku-ka-sho*. With numeratives that begin with *k*, *iku* is to be avoided, for the obvious reason that confusion with *ichi* is likely to result.

The unit here is not necessarily one building, but rather the building or group of buildings occupied by one household <sup>a</sup>

6. For ships: *sō* (boat).

*issō, sanzō, shi sō, roku sō, hassō, jissō, nanzō, iku sō.*

7. For vehicles: *dai* (a stand, base). "Four vehicles" is *yō dai*. Specifically for heavy wagons and coaches, etc., *ryō* (pair of wheels) may be used. For rikshas the commonest term is *chō* (to hold a handle). <sup>b</sup>

*itchō, san chō, shi chō, roku chō, hatchō, nan chō, iku chō.*

8. For chairs: *kyaku* (leg).

*ikkyaku, san kyaku, shi kyaku, rokkyaku, hakkyaku, jikkkyaku, nan kyaku.*

9. For books: *satsu* (ticket, label, list).

*issatsu, san satsu, hassatsu, jissatsu, etc.*

Rather more classical is *kwan* (roll), which in composition with numerals is modified like *ken*. For complete sets of volumes the numerative is *bu* (department, group).

10. For letters and documents: *tsū* (= *tōri* p. 64a).

*ittsū, san tsū, hattsū, jittsū, etc.*

But most people use *hon* rather than *tsū*. One letter may also be designated *ippū*, from *fū* seal.

## Vocabulary

*isu* chair.

*kuni* country.

*minato* harbour.

*ni-guruma* cart.

*chin* (c) hire, fare.

*ka, ke* (c) = *ie* house, family (in composition).

*bin* (c) convenience, opportunity to send a message, mail (in *yū-bin*).

*sō* appearance (...*sō desu* it is said that).

*bes-sō* villa.

*gun-kan* war vessel.

*hō-yū* friend.

*ke-ga* wound.

*kō-en* public garden, park.

*kwai-sha* corporation, company.

*kwa-zoku* noble, the nobility.

<sup>a</sup> One household or family is called *ikka*, from *ka* (c) house. "The whole family" is *ikka nai* (*nai* interior) or *ikka-zoku* (*zoku* kindred). The alternative pronunciation (*ke*) of the same character is affixed to proper names to designate families, especially those of high rank; e. g., *Tokugawa-ke*.

<sup>b</sup> *Chō* is used for tools also: *nokogiri ichō* one saw, *ko-gatana ni chō* two pen-knives.

<i>kwō-kyō</i> the Emperor's residence.	<i>ha-sen suru</i> be wrecked (of a ship).
<i>nen-shi</i> beginning of the year. <sup>a</sup>	<i>omou, omotte</i> think (...to <i>omou</i> I think that).
<i>shō-setsu, shōsetsu-bon</i> , novel, romance.	<i>osou, osotte</i> attack.
<i>zō-sen-jo</i> shipyard, dockyard (lit. make-ship-place).	<i>sorou, sorotte</i> be uniform, complete. <sup>d</sup>
<i>hyakkwa-zensho</i> cyclopaedia. <sup>b</sup>	<i>tari-ru</i> be enough.
<i>jibiki</i> dictionary. <sup>c</sup>	<i>tōru, tōtte</i> pass through, pass by.
<i>Igirisu</i> England.	<i>tsubure-ru</i> be broken, crushed.
<i>Mōko</i> Mongolia.	<i>tsuku, tsuite</i> arrive.
<i>ato no</i> the remaining, the other.	<i>yatou, yatotte</i> hire (a person).
<i>koware-ru</i> be broken, wrecked.	<i>yobu, yonde</i> call.
	<i>mata</i> moreover.
	<i>tada-ima</i> just now, presently.

### Exercises

*Per'ri to iu Amerika no ts'kai wa hajimete Nihon ye kita<sup>e</sup> toki ni gunkan wo shi sō motte kimash'ta. Ropyaku nen gurai mae ni Mōkojin ga Nihon ye<sup>f</sup> ni do osotte kimash'ta ; hajimete kita toki ni wa fune wo shi hyaku go jissō motte ki, ni do me ni (the second time) kita toki ni wa nisanzen sō motte kita sō des'. Konaida no kwaji de ie ga nangen yakemash'ta ka. Ropyakken yaketa sō des'. Kuruma wo itchō yonde koi.<sup>g</sup> Ichininnori de gozaimas' ka, nininnori de gozaimas' ka. Mata ichinimbiki de gozaimas' ka, ninimbiki de gozaimas' ka.*

a *Nenshi ni iku* to go to tender New Year's congratulations. The word *nenshi* is used now exclusively in this sense of New Year's congratulations :— properly *nenshi no shūgi*, or *nen-ga*, from *ga* (c) to congratulate.

b From *hyaku* hundred, *kwa* branch of study, *sen* complete *sho* book.

c This is synonymous with the comparatively new word *ji sho*. It is a case of *jūbako-yomi*. *Ji wo hiku* to look up a word [in a dictionary].

d *O kyaku san ga soroimashita*. The guests are all here.

e Instead of the past tense the present *kuru* might also be used here : *kuru toki ni* at the time of his coming. Notice the frequent idiom *motte kuru, motte iku*. When the object is a person, *tsurete* must be substituted for *motte*.

f *Ye* here is to be construed with *kimashita*.

g *Yonde koi* call and come ! In English we should say "Go and call!" In the reply notice the double *de gozaimasu ka*. One might also substitute *yonde kimashō ka* (with *wo*) for *de gozaimasu ka*.

*nori no*<sup>a</sup> *ichinimbiki de ii. Tadaima Yokohama no minito ni gunkan ga nanzō tsuite imas' ka. Tadaima wa gunkan ga sanzō tsuite imas'; <sup>b</sup> *issō wa Doits' no gunkan de*<sup>c</sup> *ato no ni sō wa Igris' no gunkan deshō to omoimas'.* *Kono jibiki wa hassatsu arimas'.* *Gyokuhen*<sup>d</sup> *to iu jibiki wa jū ni satsu des'.* *Kōkijiten to iu jibiki wa ni jū shi satsu des'.* *Are wa nan to iu hon des' ka. Are wa Motoori Norinaga no kaita Kōjikiden*<sup>e</sup> *des'.* *Sorotte imas' ka. Iie, ni sats' tarimassen* (are lacking). *Ano bashagwaisha wa basha wo ni jū dai motte imas'.* *Kon-nichi wa kwōkyō no mae wo tōru toki ni*<sup>f</sup> *rippa na basha wo hachi ryō mimash'ta.* *Konaida Doits' kara tegami ga ni tsū kimash'ta.* *Ittsū wa Amerika no bin de ki, mō ittsū wa Indo wo tōtte kimash'ta.* *Ueno ni wa ryōriya ga ni ken arimas'.* *Ikken wa Nihonryōri wo shi, mō ikken wa Seiyōryōri wo shimas'.* *Sono hyakkwazensho wa ichi bu nan satsu des' ka. Ni jū shi satsu des'.* *Kono shōsetsu wa jū go satsu mono des'.* *Mito to Owari to Kishū wa mukashi go san to mōshimash'ta.*<sup>g</sup> *Mino to iu kuni ni wa Meiji ni jū yo nen no fuyu ni ōjishin ga atte, tsbureta ie ga jū mangan, shinda hito ga go sen nin, sore kara keganin ga ichi man nin mo arimash'ta to iu osoroshi koto ga arimash'ta.**

Over twenty ships were wrecked<sup>h</sup> in (*de*) the storm recently. In the harbor of Nagasaki there are (*tsuite imas'*) now three Russian men-of-war. This village has only (*sh'ka arimassen*) twenty houses. That nobleman has three villas; one (2) of them (1) was burned recently. What book is that? It is the

<sup>a</sup> This *no* is explicative. See p. 8.

<sup>b</sup> The subordinative of an intransitive verb with *iru* or *oru* may denote a state which is the result of the action expressed by the verb. Compare *hailte oru* (p. 44e).

<sup>c</sup> *De* here is equivalent to *de atte* or *deshūte*.

<sup>d</sup> The name of a dictionary of Chinese ideograms, from *gyoku*=*tama* jewel and *ken* book. The largest dictionary in common use is called *kōki jiten*. *Kōki* is the name of a Chinese period (*nengō*) and *ji-ten* synonymous with *ji sho*. Compare "Century Dictionary."

<sup>e</sup> The *Kōjiki* (lit. old affair record) is Japan's oldest historical work, dating from the beginning of the VIII. Century. Motoori, the most famous of Japanese grammarians, published the text, with commentary, in a book called *Kōjiki-den*.

<sup>f</sup> As I passed by the palace (lit. at the time of passing the front).

<sup>g</sup> The names in this sentence may also stand asyndetically. The princes of these provinces were related to the *shōgun*. It was provided that, if he had no heir, he might choose a successor from one of their families.

<sup>h</sup> Of a ship we say *koware ru*, *yabure-ru*, or *ha-sen suru*. Of a person: *hasen ni au*. This *ha* is the Chinese equivalent of *yabure-ru* to break.



book called *Taiheiki*.<sup>a</sup> How many volumes are there? There are about fifteen volumes, I think. How much is the hire (*yatoi chin*) of one riksha (for) one day? It is two *yen*. Engage (call) two carts. This company has a hundred street-cars. About how many houses do you visit (*mawaru*) at New Year's (*uenshi ni*)? I visit about twenty. I went to the houses of two or three friends, but they were all out. The house of Shimazu held Satsuma and Ōsumi until the Restoration. At the shipyard of Yokosuka<sup>b</sup> [they] are now constructing (*koshiraeru*) two men-of-war. How many parks are there in Tokyo? There are three. One chair is (was) broken.

## CHAPTER XXVIII

11. For vesselfuls, bucketfuls, cupfuls : *hai* (= *sakazuki*).

*ippai, sambai, shi hai, roppai, hachi hai, jippai, nambai, iku hai.*<sup>c</sup>

For medicine, tobacco, or tea, the unit is *fuku* (*kusuri wo fuku suru* to take medicine), which undergoes the same changes as *hai*.<sup>d</sup> *Fuku* is also used for *kake-mono* (hanging scrolls or pictures), but the ideogram in this case is different.

12. For pairs of stockings, pantaloons and shoes : *soku* (foot).

*issoku, sanzoku, hassoku, jissoku.*

For pairs of other things *tsui* (to correspond) is used, as in *kwa-bin ittsumi* a pair of vases. But a pair of animals is *hito tsugai*, from *tsugai* couple (See p. 82).

## Vocabulary

*ma* = *aida* interval.

*chichi* milk.<sup>e</sup>

*biiru* beer.

*kōhii* coffee.

a The *Tai-hei-ki* (lit. great peace-record) is a famous historical work, recounting the events of the XIV. Century.

b A naval station on the coast of Sagami, just within the entrance to Tokyo Bay.

c *Ippai desu.* It is full.

d *O cha wo ippai (o agari nasai)* Have a cup of tea! The numerative *fuku* is used for tea mostly in connection with the ceremonial *cha no-yu*.

e Cow's milk is usually called *gyū-nyū*. *Gyū*=*ushi*; *nyū*=*chichi*.

*toso* spiced *sake*. <sup>a</sup>

*budō* grape.

*budō-shu* wine.

*sake-nomi* drinker, toper.

*tabi* [Japanese] sock.

*kutsu-tabi* [European] sock,  
stocking. <sup>b</sup>

*geta*, *ashida* wooden clog. <sup>c</sup>

*wara* straw.

*waraji* straw sandal. <sup>d</sup>

*naga-gutsu* boot.

*hana-ike* vase (*ike-ru* to  
keep alive).

*kwa-bin* vase (lit. flower-  
bottle).

*sei-fu* the government.

*kiitsui* intense, strong (of  
liquors, odors etc.), tight  
(of shoes).

*koi* dense, strong (of tea,  
etc.)

*shio* salt.

*karai* acrid.

*shio-karai* } salty. <sup>e</sup>

*shoppai*

*iya na* disagreeable.

*kirau*, *kiratte* dislike. <sup>f</sup>

*ne-ru* go to bed, sleep.

*nemuru*, *nemutte* sleep, slum-  
ber.

*nemu-ke* drowsiness.

*you*, *yotte* be intoxicated. <sup>g</sup>

*same-ru* become sober, come  
to one's senses. <sup>h</sup>

*nodo* throat.

*kawaku*, *kawaite* dry (intr.).

*nodo ga kawaku* be thirsty.

*hanasu* separate.

*meshi-agaru* take (food or  
drink—polite 2, 3).

*nige-ru* flee.

*ure-ru* be able to sell.

*yaku*, *yaite* burn (tr.).

*yaki-mono* pottery.

*dai-bu* very, pretty.

*yo-dōshi* the whole night  
through.

*tabi ni*, *tambi ni* (after a  
verb) as often as, when-  
ever.

## Exercises

*Dōso mizu wo ippai kudasai ; watakushi wa shiokarai mono  
wo tabemash'ta kara, daibu nodo ga kawaite kimash'ta. O*

<sup>a</sup> *Toso* is drunk only at New Year's.

<sup>b</sup> Called also *kutsu-shita*, from *shita* under.

<sup>c</sup> *Geta* is the generic term. *Ashida* are very high clogs used in rainy weather.

<sup>d</sup> This word is derived from *wara* and *kutsu*, thus: *waragutsu*, *waransu*, *waranji*, *waraji*.

<sup>e</sup> *Shio-karai* is the more elegant word of the two.

<sup>f</sup> "I dislike it" is usually *kirai desu*. *Sake ga dai kirai desu*. I dislike *sake* very much. Compare *suki desu* (p. 55b). *Iya desu* is equivalent to *kirai desu*.

<sup>g</sup> *Sake ni you* to be intoxicated with *sake*. *Fune ni you* to be seasick.

<sup>h</sup> *Me ga sameru* to wake up. *Nemuku ga sameru* to recover from drowsiness. *Yoi ga sameru* to get sober after intoxication.

*cha wo ippai ikaga de gozaimas'ka.*<sup>a</sup> *Arigatō gozaimas'.* *Watakushi wa chiisai sakazuki de sake wo tada shi hai bakari nomimash'ta, shikashi sake ga taihen ni tsuyobatta kara, daibu yomimash'ta.*<sup>b</sup> *Watakushi wa nemuku naru tambi ni koi cha wo nisambai nomu to, nemuke ga samemas'.* *Tabako wo ippuku meshiagarimasen ka.*<sup>c</sup> *Arigatō, watakushi wa tabako ga kirai de gozaimas'.* *Waraji wa issoku ikura des'ka.* *Issoku issen go rin de gozaimas'.* *Sonnara ni soku kaimashō.* *Sono hanaike wa hitotsu ikura ka. Kono hanaike wa ittsumi des' kara, hitotsu hanash'te wa*<sup>d</sup> *uremasen.* *Iya iya sambai, nige nige go hai.*<sup>e</sup> *Watakushi ga kuni ye kaerimas' toki Nihon no seifu kara hanaike wo ittsumi moraimash'ta ga, sono hanaike wa Satsumayaki*<sup>f</sup> *de gozaimash'ta.* *Sakuban koi cha wo shi hai nonda kara, yodōshi neraremasen desh'ta.*<sup>g</sup> *Watakushi wa nagaguts' wo ni soku koshiraete moraitai ga,*<sup>h</sup> *issoku ikura des'ka.* *Sayō, issoku go yen de gozaimas'.* *Issakujitsu no ban wa biir' wo roppai nonda keredomo, s'koshi mo yomimasen desh'ta.*

A cup of tea, please! I bought five pairs [of] socks. How much were they a pair? They cost (*shimash'ta*) 75 sen a pair. Give me two pairs of clogs. I drink three glasses [of] milk every morning. Have another (*mō*) cup of coffee! As this wine is pretty strong, if [a man] drinks (*nomeba*) but (*mō*) three glasses, he will become intoxicated. That man is (*de*) a

a How about a cup of tea? The reply *arigatō gozaimasu* does not imply refusal. In declining to drink one may say, *Mō o cha wa itadakimasen.* One may also use the polite phrase, *O kamai kudasaru na* (negative imperative) Never mind!

b Or, *yotte kimashita* got into the condition of intoxication, or (without *daibu*), *yotte shimaimashita.*

c *Meshiagaru* is synonymous with *ageru*, but is a little more elegant.

d The subordinative with *wa* has a conditional sense and is usually followed by a negative verb or a verb with a negative significance. *Sō shite wa ikenai* (*Sō shicha ikenai*) [You] must not do so. "Must not" is usually to be rendered in this way.

e This saying refers to men who like *sake*, but wish to be coaxed to drink. While they refuse they drink three cups, and while they run away they drink five.

f A kind of pottery, the glazed surface of which is artistically cracked.

g *Nerareru* is the potential form of the verb *neru*. *Neraremasen* can't sleep.

h *Moraitai* is the desiderative of verb *morau* and means "should like to receive." *Koshiraete moraitai.* [I] desire to have made. This use of the subordinative with *moraitai* or (more politely) *itadakitai* is a very common idiom.

sot (*ōsakenomi*); he drinks a *shō* every day. Please have a whiff (*ippuku*) of tobacco! I have three pairs of boots; but one pair has become useless (*yaku ni tatanaku narimash'ita*). Won't you have a cup of *toso*? He is an extraordinary (*taihen na*) drinker; in just a little while (*chotto no ma ni*) he drank ten glasses of beer. He drinks two or three cups of coffee every morning.

## CHAPTER XXIX

Ordinals (*junjo-sūshi*) are formed by the prefix *dai* (c) "order" or by the suffixes *ban* (c) "number," *me* (p. 69b) or *banme*. Both *dai* and *ban* may be used with one and the same numeral, as in *dai hyaku ni jū go ban* the 125th. With the native numerals *me* only is used. With the numeral auxiliaries *me* is the most common.

*Dai ichi*<sup>a</sup> *kōtō-gakkō* The First Higher School.

*Ichī ban no kisha* (*ichibangisha*) the first train.

*Ni banme no kane* the second bell.

*Yo banme no ko* the fourth child.

*Shi kemme no uchi* the fourth house.

*Mittsume no tama* the third bullet.

*San dome* (*sambemme*) the third time.

But, as examples given in previous lessons show, the Japanese language in many cases where the English requires ordinals uses simple cardinals, or substitutes other expressions.

*Meiji ni jū nen* the 20th year of Meiji.

*Tokugawake san dai no shōgun* (*dai=yo* generation).

The third shōgun of the Tokugawa line.

*Ed'war'd' shichi sei* (*sei=yo* generation).

Edward the Seventh.

The student may recall that the first day of January is *gwan-jitsu*, from *gwan* origin. The first edition of a book (*dai ippan*) is called *sho-han*, from *sho* (c) beginning; the second

<sup>a</sup> In the colloquial *dai ichi* is used mostly to denote superiority, as in *se-kai dai ichi no sei-ji-ka* the foremost statesman in the world (*se kai* world).

edition *sai-han* from *sai* (c) = *futa tabi* a second time. In numbering a set of two volumes the words *jō* and *ge* or *ka* (p. 71a) are used. When there are three volumes they may be numbered *jō*, *chū*, *ge*.<sup>a</sup>

## Vocabulary

(o) <i>hina</i> ( <i>san</i> ) doll, puppet. <sup>b</sup>	<i>kei-satsu</i> police. <sup>f</sup>
<i>nobori</i> flag. <sup>c</sup>	<i>keisatsu-sho</i> police station.
<i>han</i> plate (for print.), edition.	<i>ki-soku</i> regulation, rule.
<i>sho-han</i> first edition.	<i>kun-shō</i> decoration, order.
<i>sai-han</i> second edition.	<i>sai-sho</i> beginning ( <i>saisho no</i> the first).
<i>shuppan</i> publication. <sup>d</sup>	<i>sek-ku</i> one of five holidays. <sup>g</sup>
<i>jō</i> (c) article, item.	<i>tai-seksu na</i> important.
<i>segare</i> son (polite I).	<i>ayamaru</i> , <i>ayamatte</i> } err. h
<i>chū-nan</i> oldest son.	<i>machigau</i> , <i>machigatte</i> }
<i>chū-jō</i> oldest daughter.	<i>ayamari</i> } error.
<i>sō-ryō</i> heir, oldest child.	<i>machigai</i> }
<i>yōshi</i> adopted child. <sup>e</sup>	<i>iwau</i> , <i>iwatte</i> celebrate.
<i>ban-chi</i> street number.	<i>iwai-bi</i> holiday.
<i>den-wa</i> telephone.	

a When volumes of a book are subdivided, the portions are designated thus : *ichi* (or *ni*) *no jō* first (or second) volume, first part, *ichi* (or *ni*) *no ge* first (or second) volume, second part.

b The general term for "dolls" is *nin-gyō*, from *nin* person and *kyō* form. The term *hina* or *hina-ningyō* denotes properly the dolls which are formally arranged and displayed at the girls' festival on the 3rd day of the 3rd month. But even ordinary playing with dolls is called *hina-asobi*, from *asobu* to play, while a puppet-show is called *ningyō-shibai*, from *shibai* drama.

c National flags and standards are called *hata* or *kok-ki*. *Nobori* are vertically long and are fastened both at the top and on one side. They may be seen at temples and theatres, and are also displayed at the boys' festival on the 5th day of the 5th month.

d *Shuppan suru* to publish. *Shuppan ni naru* to be published (of a book).

e To adopt is *yōshi ni suru* or *yōshi ni morau*. An adopted daughter may also be called *yō-jō*.

f Policemen or patrolmen are *jun-sa*; the police stations on the streets are *kō-ban* (*shō*).

g The *go-sekku* are : the New Year's festival on the 7th of the 1st month ; the girls' festival, on the 3rd of the 3rd ; the boys' festival, on the 5th of the 5th ; the star festival, on the 7th of the 7th ; and the chrysanthemum festival, on the 9th of the 9th. See p. 66 c.

h The latter is more common in the colloquial.

<i>okosu, okoshite</i>	raise, rouse,	<i>yame-ru</i>	stop (tr.), give up.
<i>waken</i>		<i>asu, ashita</i>	to-morrow.
<i>sumu, sunde</i>	} dwell, reside.	<i>ue</i>	above (— <i>no ue ni</i> on,
<i>sumau, sumatte</i>			upon.
<i>sumai</i>	residence.	<i>shita</i>	below (— <i>no shita ni</i>
<i>tsumoru, tsumotte</i>	estimate.		under).
<i>tsumori</i>	estimate, intention. <sup>a</sup>		

## Exercises

*Yoritomo wa<sup>b</sup> Foshitomo no sambanme no ko des'. Ano o ko san wa anata no go sōryō des' ka. Iie, are wa watakushi no ni banme no ko des'. Chotto o tazune ni shimas' ;<sup>c</sup> keisats-sho wa doko de gozaimas' ka. Sayō, koko kara san gemine des'. Kimi no wakaranai tokoro wa nammaime des' ka. Jū ni maime des'. Sore wa nan to iu hon des' ka. Kore wa Wakan-sansai-zue<sup>d</sup> des'. Sore wa nan satsune des' ka. Kore wa nijissatsune des'. Ano kata wa Nihon no santō kunsh wo sagete imasu'. Anata no o taku wa doko de gozaimas' ka. Ginza ni chōme no go jū ni banchi de gozaimas'.<sup>e</sup> Kiriya<sup>f</sup> to*

<sup>a</sup> This is often attached to verbs, as in *Asu Tōkyō ye iku tsumori desu*. It is [my] intention to go to Tōkyō to-morrow. But *tsumori* often denotes simply one's opinion of one's self: *Ano hito wa gakusha na tsumori de arimasu*. He thinks he is a scholar. Here *na* is a contraction of *naru* (originally *ni aru*) the literary equivalent of *de aru*. One may also say *gakusha no tsumori de oru*.

<sup>b</sup> Yoritomo of the Minamoto family (*Gen-ji*) conquered the Taira family (*Hei-ke*) about the end of the XII. Century, and was the first shōgun in whose family the office became hereditary.

<sup>c</sup> *Mōsu* means "to say," but often, as in this case, it is a mere auxiliary attached to the stem of a verb. It is used principally in the first person when the object of the verb is a person of higher rank or a stranger of the same rank as the speaker. The honorific *o* may not be omitted in this construction.

<sup>d</sup> The name of a celebrated encyclopedia: *wa* Japan, *kan* China, *san sai* three powers, i. e., heaven, earth and man, *su* drawing, *e* picture.

<sup>e</sup> *Chō*=*machi* means primarily a group of houses lining a thoroughfare. The same ideogram (𠄎) means also *60 ken*. In the above it means a section of a long street, often, but not necessarily, marked off by means of prominent cross-streets (*yoko-chō* or *yoko-machi*). These sections may have different names or may be distinguished as *itichōme, ni chōme*, etc. *Gin-za* (lit. silver seat, i. e., mint) is the name of a portion of the principal street of Tokyo.

<sup>f</sup> *Paalownia-house*. Names of mercantile firms are formed in this way by the use of *ya*. Merchants often take the name of the province from which they came; e.g., *Mikawa-ya, Omi-ya*.

*iu jurudōguya wa Ginza san chōme da. Napoleon issei wa sen happyaku ni jū ichi nen no go gwatsu its'ka ni o kakure ni narimash'ta. Iemits' kō wa Tokugawake san dai no shōgun des'. Anata wa ittō ni norimas' ka, nitō ni norimas' ka. Watakushi wa nitō ni noru tsumori des' keredomo, anata ga ittō ni o nori nasareba, watakushi mo go issko ni norimashō. Kono jibiki wa saikan desu ga, shohan no ayamari ga naosh'te arimasen.<sup>a</sup> Hajimete o me ni kakarimash'ta.<sup>b</sup> Kotoshi ni natte kara<sup>c</sup> Hirokōji no kwaji wa kore de sambemede des'. Anata no jibiki wo kash'te kudasai. Jō des' ka, chū des' ka. Chū wo kash'te kudasai. Nihon ni go sekku to iu iwaiibi ga arimas'; sono uchi (de) dai ni wa hina no sekku de, dai san wa nobori no sekku des'. Ash'ta no asa wa ichiban no kisha de Yokohama ye iku tsumori des' kara, hayaku okosh'te kudasai. Ano teibur' no<sup>d</sup> ue ni notte oru jibiki no go satsume wo motte oide. Shi'ta kara sambamme no ji wa machigatte imas'.*

Is this (*kono o ko wa*) your oldest child? No, [it] is [my] third child; [my] oldest son has gone to Europe. My oldest child is a girl (*onna*). I have adopted a friend's second child. The fifth house from here is a primary school. Our (*uchi no*) telephone is No. 249. That regulation is written (*kaite arimas'*) on the twentieth page (*mai*) of this book. Please lend me the twelfth volume of *Gyokuhen*. That gentleman has received a Japanese decoration of the fourth class. That photographer's residence is [on] Japan Bridge St., Third Section, No. 25. Keiki was the fifteenth *shōgun* of the Tokugawa line; after he gave up the office of *shōgun*<sup>e</sup> he lived (was living) in Shizuoka.

a See p. 44 e.

b This phrase is used when one is first introduced to a person. *Hajimemashite* would be still more polite than *hajimete*. *O me ni kakeru* is the most polite expression for "to meet," (lit. be hung on honorable eyes. Comp. p. 44a).

c Since the year began (lit. from becoming this year). With subordinatives of verbs *kara* means "after," "since." *Ii-ro-kōji* (broad lane) is the name of a street. Notice the peculiar use of *kore de* "with this."

d The word *tsukue* applies only to the low native tables.

e "After he gave up the office of *shōgun*" is rendered *shōgun-shoku wo yamete kara*. This *shoku* means "occupation," "office" (in *shoku-gyō*). But in the colloquial one may say simply *shōgun wo yamete kara*. *Shizuoka* is the principal city of the province of Suruga, on the Tōkyō and Ōsaka.

The second *shōgun* of the Tokugawa line is called (*to mōshimas'*) Hidetada. Jimmu Tennō was (is) the first Emperor of Japan. <sup>a</sup> Takauji is the first *shōgun* of the Ashikaga line. To-morrow I shall go to Yokohama by (*de*) the second train. Will you go first or second class (Is it first class, is it second class, by which do you go)? This book is about Japan (In this book Japan's affairs are written); the first volume [appeared] six years ago; the second volume was published two years ago. Among these regulations the third article is the most important. Wilhelm I. is the grandfather of the present (*ima no*) Emperor of Germany. What edition (*nanpan*) is this dictionary? It is the third edition.

---

<sup>a</sup> "The first Emperor" is *saisho* (or *hajimete*) *no tenshi* or *dai ichi dai no tenshi*.



## THE ADJECTIVE \*

### CHAPTER XXX

In classical Japanese genuine adjectives are inflected by means of the three terminations *ki*, *ku* and *shi*, as in the following example :

*Kono chiisaki ki wa hana mo utsukushiku mi mo amashi.*

The blossom of this little tree is beautiful and its fruit is sweet.

The attributive form ended in *ki* ; the predicative, in *shi*. In the colloquial both these terminations have been reduced to *i*. But *shi* still appears in *yoshi* "good," "all right!" and *nashi*<sup>b</sup> "there is none," while in formal speeches the ending *ki* is heard quite often. The form in *ku* is now commonly used as an adverb and is called the adverbial form. But in the example given above *utsukushiku* is evidently predicative and may properly be called the connective form as contrasted with *amashi*, which is conclusive, i.e., ends the sentence. Compare : *O no nagai saru mo ari*, *o no mijikai no mo aru* (p. 14d) where *ari* is connective and *aru* is conclusive. Such use of the form in *ku* would now sound oratorical. In ordinary conversation we should say : *Kono chiisai ki wa hana mo utsukushii shi mi mo amai*, or, *Kono chiisai ki wa hana mo utsukushikute mi mo amai*. The classical terminations occur with especial frequency in proverbs.

It has been remarked (pp. 4, 24) that a predicate adjective ending in *i* needs no copula in familiar discourse, if the sentence is affirmative and in the present tense ; and that *atta* and *arō* may be united with the adverbial form of the adjective in compounds like *yokatta*, *yokarō*. We now add a paradigm of these and similar inflections produced by combination with forms of *aru* to be :

---

a *Kei yō-shi*, from *kei-yō* figure (of speech), metaphor.

b Notice also the peculiar idiom *nashi ni* in : *Kane nashi ni wa nani mo dekinasen*. One can't do anything without money.

Present	<i>yoi</i> is good.
Past	<i>yokatta</i> was good.
Probable, or Future	<i>yokarō</i> probably is good, will be good.
Conditional	<i>yokereba</i> <sup>a</sup> if [it] is good, if [it] should be good.
Probable Past	<i>yokattarō</i> probably was (might have been) good.
Past Conditional	<i>yokattara(ba)</i> if [it] has (had) been good.
Alternative	<i>yokattari</i> being at times good.

*Yoi darō*, *yoi deshō* may be substituted for *yokarō*; *yoi nara (ba)*, for *yokereba*; *yokatta darō*, *yokatta deshō*, for *yokattarō*; *yokatta nara(ba)*, for *yokattara(ba)*.

A concessive form—*yokeredo(mo)* “though [it] is good”—might have been included in this list, but it is practically obsolete as far as the colloquial is concerned. It is now replaced by *yoi keredomō*, *ii kedo*, etc., adding *keredomo* (p. 8a), *keredo*, or *ke(n)do* to the simple present form.

The form *yokereba* is derived from *areba* (as also *yokeredo* from *aredo*). It may be further contracted to *yokereba*, *yokerya*.

*O tenki ga yokereba undōkwaï wa omoshirokarō.*

If the weather is fine, the sports (excursion) will likely be interesting.

*O tenki ga yokattara undōkwaï wa motto omoshirokattarō.*

If the weather had been fine, the sports might have been more interesting.

The past conditional is past only with reference to the verb of the apodosis. Often *yokattara* is practically synonymous with *yokereba*.

*Kagen ga yokattara kanarazū mairimashō.*

If [I] feel well, [I] will surely come.

Alternative forms are used most commonly in pairs, and often with *shite*, thus:

*O tenki wa yokattari warukattari ikkō sadamarināsen.*

The weather, being now favorable and again unfavorable, is not at all settled (lit. one direction is not determined).

<sup>a</sup> One may also say *yoku(m)ba*, but this inflection cannot be applied to other adjectives except *nai* and desideratives like *tabetai*.

*Ano hito wa kigen ga yokattari warukattari (shite) chōdo kodomo no yō desu.*

Sometimes he is in a good humor and sometimes not,— just like a child.

*Atsukattari samukattari shite komarimasu.*

There being so much variation of heat and cold, one does not know what to do (lit. is perplexed).

The word *nai* "not existent" is also inflected like an adjective.

*nai* is not (none).

*nakatta* was not (none).

*nakarō* probably is not (none), will not be, will be none.

*nakereba* <sup>a</sup> if it is not, if it should not be, etc.

*nakattarō* probably was not, might not have been.

*nakattara(ba)* if it has (had) not been.

*nakattari* at times not being.

By joining these with the adverbial form of an adjective a paradigm of negative inflections may be formed, thus: *yoku nai, yoku nakatta, yoku nakarō, yoku nakereba*, etc. In the same manner negative verbs may be inflected: *wakaranai* is not to be understood, *wakaranakatta, wakaranakarō, wakaranakereba*, etc. But *wakaranai darō* is more common than *wakaranakarō*. So also desideratives like *tabetai* "desire to eat" may be inflected. Details will be given under the head of "The Verb."

In polite discourse, especially at the end of a sentence or principal clause, instead of the plain forms given above, the contracted adverbial form with *gosaimasu* (p. 24) is required. In this case many adjectives take the honorific *o*:<sup>b</sup>

*O atsū gosaimasu.* It is warm.

*O isogashū gosaimashō.* You are probably busy.

Observe that *naku* is not contracted to *nō* except in certain dialects: it is customary to say not *nō gosaimasu* but *gosaimasen*. But *tabetai* becomes *tabetō gosaimasu*.

It has already been remarked (p. 24) that there is a tendency to say *ii desu, omoshiroi desu, yoku nai desu*, etc., thus avoiding

<sup>a</sup> Also *naku(m)ba*, as in *O iya de nakuba* If [you] do not dislike [it].

<sup>b</sup> The honorific *ō* may be prefixed to *yoroshikereba* also: *O yoroshikereba* if you like; likewise to *yokereba*; but, if one wishes to speak politely, in this connection *yoroshii* is better than *yoi*. *O yō gosaimasu nara(ba)* is perfectly polite.

the familiarity of the plain adjective on the one hand, and the stiff formality of *gosaimasu* on the other. But *ii deshita* is never heard. Yet *ii n' deshita* is not uncommon. Whatever may be said about the past and present tenses, expressions like *ii deshō* are indisputably correct. Thus :

*Mutsukashii deshō* is probably difficult.

*Yoku nai deshō* is probably not good.

As regards politeness these are intermediate between *mutsu-kashikarō* and *mutsu-kashū gozaimashō*, *yoku nakarō* and *yō gozaimasumai*.

The subordinative is obtained by adding *te* to the adverbial form ; e.g., *yasukute*, from *yasui*, *itakute*, from *itai*, *omoshirokute*, from *omoshiroi* ; so also *nakute*, *wakaranakute*, *tabetakute*. These are often pronounced *yasukutte*, *itakutte*, *omoshirokutte*, etc.

This form has several uses.

(1.) When one subject has two predicate adjectives the first is subordinated to the second.

*Washinton no machi wa hirokute kirei desu.*

The streets of Washington are broad and clean.

(2.) A clause with a predicate adjective may be subordinated to another clause. In this case the former describes a circumstance or condition, which is usually at the same time a cause.

*Ashi ga itakute deraremasen.*

As my feet hurt, I can't go out.

*Kurakute ashimoto ga miemasen.*

It is so dark that I cannot see where I am going (*ashimoto* that which is about the feet).

*Samukute shiyō ga nai.*

It is unbearably cold (lit. being cold, there is no way of doing).

To state the cause explicitly, one must say *itai kara*, etc. To state the result explicitly, *hodo* may be added: *Kurakute ashimoto ga mienai hodo desu.*

(3.) Of two clauses involving a contrast the first may be subordinated to the second.

*Shim-mai wa umakute ko-mai wa mazui.*

New rice is delicious, [but] old rice is unpalatable.

(4.) When *wa* is added to the subordinative it is made emphatic. In most cases it then has a conditional sense and is often followed by a negative word like *ikemasen* or *narimasen* or by a verb like *komarimasu* "[am] perplexed." The *te wa* is commonly contracted to *cha*.

*Omokucha ikemasen* It mustn't be heavy.

*Nakucha narimasen* [I] must have [it].

These forms may also be pronounced *omokutchā, nakutchā*.

(5.) The addition of *mo* to the subordinative gives it a concessive sense.

*yasukute mo* though it may be cheap.

*itakute mo* though it may hurt.

*ōkute mo* (*ōku to mo, ōku mo*) at the greatest.

*Sukunakute mo* (*sukunaku to mo, sukunaku mo*) at least.

## Vocabulary

<i>hima</i> leisure.	<i>ayashii</i> doubtful, suspicious.
<i>fokori</i> dust.	<i>himojii</i> hungry. <sup>a</sup>
<i>hoshi</i> star.	<i>hisashii</i> long continued ( <i>hisashiku</i> for a long time).
<i>kokoro</i> heart, mind.	
<i>moto</i> bottom, foot (— <i>no moto ni</i> under).	<i>isogashii</i> } busy.
<i>ashi-moto</i> what is under or about one's feet.	<i>sewashii</i> }
<i>ho-bune, ho-kake-bune</i> sail-boat.	<i>kurai</i> dark.
<i>furū-hon</i> second-hand book.	<i>nigai</i> bitter.
<i>bōzu</i> priest.	<i>okashii</i> ridiculous, funny.
<i>kesa</i> priest's scarf.	<i>otonashii</i> quiet, well-behaved.
<i>i</i> (c) stomach.	<i>semai</i> narrow.
<i>baku-rō</i> jockey, horse-dealer.	<i>suzushii</i> cool.
<i>bettō</i> groom, hostler.	<i>yakamashii</i> noisy, clamorous.
<i>kūki</i> air, atmosphere.	<i>yasui</i> cheap.
<i>za-shiki</i> apartment, room (in a hotel).	<i>kokoro-yasui</i> familiar, intimate.
	<i>hikae-ru</i> to be moderate.
	<i>komaru, komatte</i> be perplexed, embarrassed.
	<i>mie-ru</i> be visible, seen.

<sup>a</sup> The usual expression for "to be hungry" is *hara ga hella* (*herimashita*) from *heru* to diminish, or, especially among women and children, *o naka ga nita* (*sukimashita*), from *suku* to be empty, thinned out.

<i>negau, negatte</i> desire, request.	<i>jitsu</i> (c) <i>ni</i> } truly, really,
<i>tamaru</i> be able to endure.	<i>makoto ni</i> } indeed.
<i>yosu</i> stop (tr.), give up.	<i>kyū</i> (c) <i>ni</i> } suddenly.
<i>sam-po suru</i> take a walk.	<i>niwaka ni</i> }
<i>de-kake-ru</i> go out (from one's house).	<i>shi-jū</i> from beginning to end, constantly, always.
<i>sampo ni de-ru</i> ( <i>dekake-ru</i> ) go out for a walk.	<i>naze</i> why? (with <i>ka</i> at the end of the sentence).
<i>chitto</i> a little.	<i>dōka</i> in some way or other, please! (p. 47a).
<i>chitto mo</i> not in the least (with a negative word).	<i>dōmo</i> an expletive (p. 46a).
<i>oi-oi</i> ( <i>ni</i> ) gradually.	

### Exercises

*Kono hon wa wakariyas'kute omoshirō gozaimas'. Nodo ga itakute hanashi ga dekimasen. Kono ji wa mutsukash'kute oboenikū gozaimas'. Kono zash'ki ni wa hito ga ōi kara, kūki ga warui. Tōk'te mo arukimashō. Bimbō hima nashi.<sup>a</sup> Takak'te mo kaimashō. Okash'kute tamarimasen.<sup>b</sup> Watakushi wa nemukute tamarimasen. Yas'kute mo kaimasen. Dōmo, samukute tamarimasen. Ji ga yok'te mo bunshō ga warui. Kimi wa okash'ku nai ka. Iie, chitto mo okash'ku nai. Naze sonna ni yakamashii ka. Uchi no kodomo wa otomash'ku nakute mako'o ni komarimas'. Watakushi wa isogash'kute s'koshi mo hima ga gozaimasen. Dōmo, nomi ga ōkute komarimas'. Dōmo kurakute miemasen. Hoshi ga mienaku narimash'ta. Sensei no oshieta ji wa kazu ga ōkute komarimas'. Anata wa o kuni ye kaeritō gozaimasen ka. Iie, Tōkyō wa omoshiroi tokoro des' kara, kuni ye wa<sup>c</sup> kaeritō gozaimasen. Himojii toki no mazui mono nashi.<sup>d</sup> Hima no aru toki ni wa tabako ga nomitaku narimas'.<sup>e</sup> Ano kata wa michi ga chikak'te mo shijū basha ni norimas'. Itō basha ni norimashō ka, ni tō ni norimashō ka. Ni tō basha wa*

a The language of proverbs approaches the literary style, and particles are used sparingly. *Bimbō*=*bimbō-nin*.

b It is too funny: one can't help laughing.

c This *wa* marks the antithesis between *Tōkyō* and *kuni*.

d "Hunger is the best sauce." The words *mazui mono nashi*, expressing the idea of zest or relish, are treated here like a substantive.

e Note that here *ga* occurs, whereas we naturally expect *wa*. The latter also would be correct.

*kitanakute noremassen. Tōkyō no tōri wa semai tokōro ga ōi. Natsu no hi wa nagakute asa no koto wo* (what happened in the morning) *wasuremas'*. *Yas'kereba kaimashō; takakereba yoshimashō. Daibu o atsuku narimash'ta. Oioi o samuku narinash'ta. Hisash'ku o me ni kakarimassen deshi'ta.*<sup>a</sup> *Hajimete o me ni kakarimash'ta; dōka, o kokoroyas'ku negaimas'*.<sup>b</sup> *Yorosh'ku negaimas'*.<sup>c</sup> *Kono furuhon wa uru hito ga ōkute kau hito ga s'kunai kara, yasū gozaimas'*. *Bettō to bakurō wa hito no warui*<sup>d</sup> *mono ga ō gozaimas'*. *Ryō-yaku (=yoi kusuri) wa kuchi ni nigashi* (Proverb). *Ji ga nutsu-kash'kucha ikemassen. O kega ga nakutte yō gozaimash'ta.*<sup>e</sup> *Bōsu ga nikukerya kesa made nikui* (Proverb). *Yoku mo nakereba waruku mo nai.*<sup>f</sup> *Kotoba ōkereba shina s'kunashi* (Proverb).<sup>g</sup>

To-day it has become very cool; until (*made wa*) yesterday, there being no wind,<sup>h</sup> it was quite hot. It has suddenly

a This is the usual formula on meeting a friend after a long separation. Frequently only the first word of the sentence is used. For *hisashiku* we may substitute *shibaraku*.

b Here also we have a very common phrase. More fully expressed it would be *o kokoroyasuku o majiwari* (or *tsuki-ai*) *wo negaimasu*, or *o kokoroyasuku shite kudasaru yō ni negaimasu* (lit. I desire that you will please do familiarly) I hope we may become well acquainted. *Kudasaru* to condescend is the verb from which the imperative *kudasai* is derived (p. 37d). In *shite kudasaru yō ni negaimasu* we have a still higher degree of politeness than in *shite kudasai*.

c Fully expressed this would be something like *yoroshiku nasatte kudasaru yō ni negaimasu* (lit. I desire that you will do favorably) Please deal kindly with me. *Nasatte* or *nas'tte* is the subordinative of *nasaru*, the polite equivalent of *suru* to do, from which the imperative *nasai* is derived. In *Satō san ni yoroshiku negaimas* the word "to say" is understood: *Satō san ni yoroshiku itte kudasaru yō ni negaimasu* (lit. I desire that you will please speak favorably to Mr. Satō) Please remember me kindly to Mr. Satō. *Itte* is the subordinative of *iu* to say. One may say more briefly, *Satō san ni yoroshiku itte kudasai* or simply *Satō san ni yoroshiku*, or, if the circumstances make the meaning plain, *yoroshiku negaimasu*.

d *Hito* is often used as here in the sense of character.

e It was fortunate that you were not hurt.

f In this sentence the conditional inflection is used simply in lieu of a connective: It is neither good nor bad.

g Many words, little sense. The original meaning of *shina* (p. 19) is substance.

h This may be translated *kase ga nakute* or *kase ga arimassen deshita kara*. Best, perhaps, would be *kase ga nai no de*, which conveys the idea of cause more distinctly than the first and not so expressly as the second. The Japanese naturally prefer a hazy expression, and *kara* indicates the relation of cause and effect with a degree of precision not required in such a sentence.

become cold. The weather is doubtful to-day. The dust is so dreadful (*hidoi*) that [one] can't go out (*deraremasen*). The fishermen's boats are not out (*dete imasen*), because the wind was [too] strong. The sailboats do not go out, because there is no wind. The wind being strong, the dust is dreadful. As this beer is bitter, I cannot drink it (*nomemasen*). Even though the water (*yu*) is tepid, it's all right. This book is hard to understand and not interesting. As my throat is sore (*itai*), I cannot smoke. He smokes even though his throat is sore. In (*wa*) this room the air is good, because there are few persons [in it]. These characters are small and hard to read. These characters, though small, are easy to read. [I] eat (am eating) moderately (*hikaete*), because [my] stomach is bad. Really it is unendurably hot (being hot it is not endurable). As [I] have no time [I] cannot go out for a walk. Though it is dark, I can see where I am going (what is under the feet can be seen). It is so dark that the way has become indistinct (*wakaranai*). The characters which the master [has] taught [me] are hard to remember, even though the number is small (few). I wish to return to my own country (*kuni ye*). I have become thirsty for a glass of water.

## CHAPTER XXXI

In the classical language the attributive form of the adjective may be used as a noun, a word like *hito*, *mono*, *kata* or *hō* (c) being understood; e.g., *tadashiki* righteousness, from *tadashi* (coll. *tadashii*). Such a form in *ki* sometimes occurs in speeches, as in the phrase *hanahadashiki ni itatte wa* "in an extreme case" (lit. reaching to extreme). Compare *yoshi ashi*<sup>a</sup> good and evil, i.e., qualities, characteristics.

In the following instances adjectives in the colloquial form are used as substantive:

*Atsui samui* heat and cold.

---

<sup>a</sup> *Ashi* is contracted from *Ashishi*, the literary equivalent of *warui*. Excepting *ashishi*, adjectives whose stems end in *shi* are inflected thus: *yoroshiki*, *yorashiku*, *yorashi*. Notice that in Brinkley's Dictionary adjectives are arranged according to their conclusive forms, but not consistently.



*Amai mo karai mo shitte oru.*

He is a man of insight (lit. knows both sweet and bitter).

*Kane no aru nai mo shiranai de iru.*<sup>a</sup>

He doesn't know whether he has money or not.

The stem of an adjective may be used as a noun :

*taka* the amount, from *takai* high.

*ara* offal (of fish), from *arai* coarse.<sup>b</sup>

*shiro* the white, from *shiroi*.

*kuro* the black (of dogs or of the stones used in playing *go*, a game like checkers).

Notice the expression *omoshiro hambun* half in jest.

The stem may also occur in compounds.

(1.) It may be united with another adjective :

*furu-kusai* trite, antiquated, obsolete, from *furui* old and *kusai* (lit. malodorous).

*hosonagai* slim, from *hosoi* slender and *nagai* long.

*usu-gurai* dimly lighted, gloomy, from *usui* thin and *kurai* dark.

(2.) The stem may be combined with the verb *sugiru* to exceed : *taka-sugiru* it is too high (dear). It is usual pleonastically to prefix *amari*, thus :

*Amari atsusugimasu.* It is too hot.

(3.) The stem may enter into combination with a noun (Compare p. 15) :

*aka-nasu* tomato, from *akai* red and *nasu* egg-plant.

*kuro-shio* the Japan Current, from *kuroi* black, dark and *shio* salt, brine, tide, current.<sup>c</sup>

*shira-uwo* name of a small white fish, from *shira*=*shiro* and *uwo* fish.

*usu-cha* a drink made of a small quantity of very strong tea (in *cha-no-yu*).

The drink made by taking a larger quantity of weaker tea is *koi cha*, not *ko-cha*.

a One way of making the negative subordinative of a verb is to add *de* to a negative form. Thus *shiranai de iru* corresponds to the positive *shitte iru*.

b *Ara* also means "defect": *ara wo iu* to criticise. *Ara ga wakarimasen* No defect is perceptible.

c The character used in this connection is not the one commonly used for salt, but *ushio*, signifying the water of the ocean.

To this class belong compounds with *sō* "appearance:" \* *Tō-sō desu*. It seems far. Compare: *Toi sō desu*. It is said to be far. *Sō na* (or *da*) *sō desu* So it is said (For *na* compare p. 95a) From *yoi* and *nai* are derived the irregular forms *yosasō desu* it seems good and *nasasō desu* there seems to be none, or (with an adjective) it does not seem. Notice *kawai-sō desu* is pitiable or *kawai-sō na hito desu* is a pitiable case (person), from *kawaii* lovely.

### Vocabulary

*higashi* east.

*nishi* west.

*minami* south.

*kita* north. <sup>b</sup>

*akari* light.

*akari-tori* an opening in the wall or roof for lighting a room (*toru* to take).

*ame* rain.

*katawa* cripple.

*nasu, nasubi* egg-plant.

*aka-nasu* tomato.

*uri* melon.

*uwo* fish. <sup>c</sup>

*hitoe-mono* unlined garment (*hitoe* p. 64).

*awase* lined garment (*awaseru* to join).

*wata* cotton.

*wata-ire* padded garment.

*hō* direction, side, region.

*rō-ka* corridor.

*ryō-shin* (= *futa-oya*) parents.

*un-dō* movement, exercise.

*abunai* dangerous.

*hosoi* thin, narrow, fine.

*kashikoi* clever, shrewd.

*kusai* malodorous, offensive.

*usui* thin, rare, light (of color).

*kawaii* lovely, charming.

*kawaisō na* pitiable.

*furu-kusai* trite.

*hoso-nagai* slender.

*furu, futte* fall down from above.

*ame ga furu* it rains.

a The idea of "to seem" may also be expressed by *yō desu* with an attributive adjective or verb.

*Kōwaji wa tōi yō desu.* The fire seems distant.

*Chikai yō de taihen tōi yō desu.* It seems near, but is very far.

*Mō o mezame ni natta yō desu.* He seems now to be awake.

b The points of the compass are here given in the Japanese order. The four points are called collectively *tō-zai-nam-boku*, from *tō, sai, nam, hoku* (c).

c *Uwo* is the classical word. Etymologically *saka-na* means fish as food, but it is now applied also to living fish.

<i>naku-naru. nakunatte</i> dis-	<i>suberu, subette</i> slide.
appear ( <i>nakunatta</i> is lost,	<i>kōri</i> ice.
dead). <sup>a</sup>	<i>kōri-suberi</i> skating.
<i>sugi-ru</i> pass by, exceed.	<i>tsuke-ru</i> soak, pickle. <sup>b</sup>
<i>taku, taite</i> kindle, heat, cook.	<i>motto</i> more.

## Exercises

*Kono heya wa mado ga s'kunakute usugurai. Ano Igris'jin wa taihen hosonagai kata des'. Tenki wa yosasō des'. Kono hon wa amari omoshiroku nasasō des'. Kwaji wa tōi sō des'. Yu ga amari atsusugiru kara, misu wo ippai irete moraitai.<sup>c</sup> Kono ni san nichi wa hitoemono wo kite wa<sup>d</sup> suzushisugiru yō des'. Kono rōka wa akaritori ga nakute usugurai. Kyō wa amari suzushisugimas' kara, awase wo kimashō. Kotoshi no haru wa amari attakasugimas'. Kōrisuberi wa omoshirōsō des' keredomo, abunai ka to omoimas'.<sup>e</sup> Sore wa nak'te mo yosasō des'. Kono kimono wa yosugimas'. Kyō wa taihen samusō desu'. Shirouri wa misosuke ni suru to,<sup>f</sup> taisō umō gozaimas'. Shirauwo wa chiisai sakana no na des'; iro ga yuki no yō ni shiroi<sup>g</sup> kara shirauwo to iimas'. Ano katawa wa hitori de arukemasen<sup>h</sup> kara, kawaisō des'. Nihon de wa akanasu ga yoku dekimasen. Kono tsukemono wa umasō des'. Iie, shio ga karakute mazū gozaimas'. Sono hanashi wa suruk'sai. Kono hen wa kuroshio ga kuru kara, taihen attaka des'.<sup>i</sup> Higashi-kaze de amari attakasugiru kara, ame ga*

a Lit. become not existent. With *suru* a corresponding active verb may be formed: *Kyonen kodomo wo san nin nakushimashita*. Last year [I] lost three children.

b From the stem of this verb may be formed such nouns as *tsuke-mono* pickle, *shio-zuke* salt pickle, *kasu-zuke* (*kasu* the dregs of *sake*), *miso-zuke*, etc.

c See p. 92h.

d Here *kite wa* has a conditional sense. Compare *omokute wa*, etc. (p. 102).

e *Ka* simply helps to express doubt and is not to be translated.

f Translate: If you pickle white cucumbers in *miso* (lit. make into *miso* pickle).

g Translate: white as snow (lit. white after the manner of snow).

h *Hitori de arukemasen* cannot walk alone. From verbs of the first class described on page 10 the potential form may be derived by substituting *rare-ru* for *ru*, thus: *derare-ru*, from *deru*. In the case of a verb of the other class, substitute *e-ru* or *are-ru* for the *u* of the conclusive form, thus: *aruke-ru* or *arukare-ru*, from *aruku*.

i For *attaka desu* see Ch. XXXIII.

*juru ka mo shiremasen.*<sup>a</sup> *Mada wataire wo kiru ni wa hayō gozaimas'.* *Kono hon wa omoshiroku nai sō des'.*

That Chinaman is slender. It seems cold, but anyhow (*sore de mo*) [I] will go out for exercise. [That] was a dreadful storm last night, but to-day the weather seems fine (good). This book is interesting, it is said. Because the cold<sup>b</sup> at (of) Boston is too severe (strong), I will go south (*minami no hō ye*). Because the bath (*yu*) is too tepid, I wish you would heat it more.<sup>c</sup> Skating seems difficult. She is very clever, it is said. It does not seem cold to-day. That child, both parents being dead (*nakanatte*), is to be pitied (*kawaisō*). This *sai* is too dear at (*de wa*) one *yen*. The pupils will forget everything (all), because the summer vacation is too long.

## CHAPTER XXXII

An adjective may be derived from a noun by adding *rashii*. This usually means "having the appearance of," but frequently it denotes a real quality, like our suffixes "ish," "ly," etc.

<i>yakusha-rashii</i>	resembling an actor.
<i>shosei-rashii</i>	resembling a student.
<i>otona-rashii</i>	resembling an adult.
<i>hontō-rashii</i>	sounding like the truth, plausible.
<i>uso-rashii</i>	sounding like a lie.
<i>sō-rashii</i>	apparently so.
<i>baka-rashii</i>	foolish, looking like a fool.
<i>kodo.no-rashii</i>	childish, looking like a child.
<i>otoko-rashii</i>	manly.

This *rashii* may even be added to verbs; e.g., *kimatta-rashii* apparently decided, from *kimatta* it has been decided. It may be added to the stem of an adjective; e.g., *niku-rashii*, from *nikui* detestable, *kawai-rashii*, from *kawaii* charming,

<sup>a</sup> It may perhaps rain (lit. It may rain?—one cannot know). This *ka mo shiremasen*, like *ka to omoimasu*, is much used to round off sentences. In the former the *ka* is strongly accented.

<sup>b</sup> Use here *wa*, Grammatically "the cold" is, at least in English, in a dependent clause, but it is the logical subject.

<sup>c</sup> *Motto taitē moraitai.* With *taku*, *furo ni hi wo* is understood (*furo* bath). To heat the water-is *yu wo wakasu* (*wakasu* cause to boil). One may also say *furo wo wakasu* or *furo wo taitē-ru*.

beloved. If there is any difference in the sense, *kawai-rashii* is more objective than *kawaii*.

The suffix *gamashii* also denotes a resemblance, or a quality described by the word to which it is attached :

<i>tanin-gamashii</i>	behaving like a stranger, distant.
<i>katte-gamashii</i>	apparently inconsiderate, from <i>katte</i> one's own convenience.
<i>sashi-de-gamashii</i>	intruding, impertinent.
<i>shitte-iru-gamashii</i>	pretending to know.

These words are used in a bad sense. Thus *tanin-gamashii* is an epithet applied to one who really is a relative or was a friend, but acts as though he were not (for *ta-nin* see p. 50). The word *katte-gamashii* is a term applied apologetically to one's own conduct :

*Amari kattegamashii koto wo mōshigemasa ga.....*

Excuse the presumption, but.....

*Kisama sonna shitteirugamashii koto wo iu mon' ja nai.*

You have no business to be talking about things you don't understand.

An adjective may be a compound derived from a noun and an adjective :

*na-dakai* famous, from *na* name and *takai* high.

*shio-karai* salty, from *shio* salt and *karai* acrid.

*shinjin-bukai* pious, from *shin-jin* piety and *fukai* deep.

*aburakko* fatty, from *abura* fat and *koi* dense, thick.

*te-arai* violent, from *te* hand and *arai* rough.

Notice especially the frequent use in compounds of the adjective *kusai* malodorous, offensive. It indicates that the idea expressed by the word with which it is combined is distasteful or disgusting :

*mendō-kusai*, *mendokusai* vexatious, from *mendō* trouble.

*inaka-kusai* rustic, from *inaka* country.

*jijii-kusai*, from *jijii* old man.

*seiyō-kusai* (an epithet applied to unwelcome importations from western countries).

Attention has already been called (p. 40 e) to the formation of adjectives from the stem of a verb and *yasui* (*yoi*) or *nikui* (*katai*) :

*oboi-yasui (yoi)* easy to remember.  
*wakari-yasui (yoi)* easy to understand.  
*wakari-nikui* hard to understand.  
*kokoroe-gatai* hard to perceive, strange.

The following are similarly formed :

*machi-dōi* long in coming, from *matsu* to wait and *dōi* far.  
*mawari-dōi* circuitous, from *mawaru* to go around.  
*kiki-gurushii* disagreeable to hear.  
*mi-gurushii* ugly.

The verbal auxiliary *beki* (*beku*, *beshi*),<sup>a</sup> which occurs frequently in the literary language (e.g., *yuku beshi* may go, or, should go) is sometimes heard in the colloquial, especially before *hazu*. This noun *hazu* ("fitness") often follows a verb, meaning in such a connection "ought."

*Kore kara wa attaka ni naru hazu desu.*

It ought to grow warmer from this time on.

*Kodomo wa oya no iu koto wo kiku beki hazu da.*

Children ought to obey their parents (lit. hear what the parents say).

Notice that *beki* is suffixed to the conclusive form of verbs, not the stem. But in the case of verbs whose stem ends in *e* it may be attached either to the stem or to the conclusive form thus: *age-beki* or *ageru beki* (classical: *agu-beki*). •

## Vocabulary

*hazu* fitness (*hazu desu* ought).

*kugi* nail. 釘

*otona* adult.

(*o*) *tera* Buddhist temple.

*uso* lie.

*yatsu* fellow (contemptuous),

thing (p. 28a).

*kō-gi* lecture.

*men-dō* trouble.

*nin-gyō* doll (p. 94b).

*o-shō* Buddhist priest. <sup>b</sup>

*se-kai* world.

*shin-jin* piety.

*shū-ha*, *shū* sect.

*yaku-sha* actor.

<sup>a</sup> Compare the adverbial expression *naru beku* as much as possible, as in: *Naru beku hayaku koshiraete agemasu*. [I] will make it for you as soon as possible.

<sup>b</sup> This is the respectful term as compared with *dōau*, which now has a tinge of contempt.

<i>wa-gakusha</i> } one versed in	<i>tsuku, tsuite</i> strike, thrust,
<i>koku-gakusha</i> } native classi-	utter.
cal literature. <sup>a</sup>	<i>uso wo tsuku (iu)</i> lie.
<i>hon-tō no, honto no</i> true, real.	<i>shin-satsu suru</i> examine med-
<i>hon-tō ni</i> really.	ically.
<i>mawari-dōi</i> roundabout,	<i>asoko, asoko</i> there.
tedious.	<i>nochi ni</i> after, afterwards. <sup>c</sup>
<i>na-dakai</i> famous. <sup>b</sup>	<i>toki-doki</i> at times, now and
<i>niku-rashii</i> odious.	then.
<i>isogu, isoide</i> hurry.	<i>tabi-tabi</i> at times, often.
<i>kiku, kiite</i> hear, inquire.	<i>naru beku</i>
<i>matsu, matte</i> wait.	<i>naru take (dake)</i> } as—as
<i>machi-dōi</i> long delayed.	<i>dekiru dake</i> } possible. <sup>d</sup>

### Exercises

*Sonna bakarashii (baka na) koto wo iu na.* <sup>e</sup> *Ano hito wa shoseirashū gozaimas'.* *Sono hanashi wa hontōrashū gozaimash'ta ga, nochi ni kiitara,* <sup>f</sup> *uso de gozaimash'ta.* *Bis'mar'k' kō wa sekai ni nadakai hito des'.* *Sugawara no Michizane wa* <sup>g</sup> *taihen nadakai ga' sha desh'ta.* *Misozuke to iu mono wa taihen shiokarai.* *Watakushi wa hiru ni shiokarai mono wo tabemash'ta kara, taisō nodo ga kawaitte kimash'ta.* *As'ko ni iru no wa* <sup>h</sup> *kawairashii ii ko des'.* *Ano kwanri wa gaku-sharashii.* *Kono bunshō wa taisō mawaridōku kaite arimas'.* *O machidō sama desh'ta.* <sup>i</sup> *Okyaku ga sakki kara irasshatte*

a A contrast with *kan-gakusha* (Chinese scholars) is implied.

b Equivalent to this is *na no aru* or *yū-mei na* from the Chinese *yū=aru* and *mei=na*.

c Like *ato de* (p. 59) this may be used as a conjunction, but only after a past verb. When it is used as a conjunction, *ni* may be omitted. Both *ato de* and *nochi ni* are used also as adverbs. The former is rather more common in the colloquial than the latter.

d With adverbs these are synonymous. But standing alone *naru beku (wa)* or *naru dake* means "if at all possible," while *dekiru dake* means "as much as possible." *Naru beku (dake) mairimashō.* *Dekiru dake itashimashō.*

e Negative imperative from *iu* to say.

f Past conditional from *kiku* to hear, inquire.

g Died a thousand years ago (903). The *no* between the family-name and the given name may be omitted: it is the rule to omit it in all modern names.

h This *no* is equivalent to *mono*.

i A frequent apology: Pardon me for keeping you waiting.

*machidōku omotte irassharu deshō. Kono byōin de wa mainichi nadakai isha ga f'tari byōnin wo shinsatsu shimas'. Watakushi wa Ber'rin ni orimashi'ta jibun ni nadakai daigaku no sensei no<sup>a</sup> kōgi wo kikimashi'ta. Kanji wo narau no wa<sup>b</sup> mendōk'sai. Ano hito wa honōrashii uso wo ts'kimas'. Ano Seiyōjin no kao wa Nikonjinrashii. Ano f'tari no tomodachi wa taihen naka ga yō gozaimas' ka. Sōrashū gozaimas'. Monto-shū wa shinjinbukai hō des'.<sup>c</sup> Kono hako no naka ni kugi ga tak'san aru (beki) hazu des'. Ima no gakkō ni wa bōzuk'sai sensei wa naku narimashi'ta. Naru beku isoide koshiraete kudasai. Hontō ni nikurashii yatsu da yo.*

Motoōri was a famous Japanese scholar. That gentleman looks like an official. The story seemed false, but it was true. *Kōya san*<sup>d</sup> in (of) Kishū is a famous Buddhist temple. That old lady is pious and often goes (*mairu*) to the Buddhist temple. This is a lovely doll. How (*dō sh'te*) have you become so (*sonna ni*) thirsty? Because (*kara des'*) I have eaten some very salty herring. That old gentleman is childish. He says many (*yoku*) foolish things. That man looks like an actor. It is such a bother (vexatious 3) to write (*no wa 2*) letters (1). The Japanese do not eat very (*amari*) fatty foods. That girl is like an adult. *Kōbō Daishi* was a very famous Buddhist priest.

## CHAPTER XXXIII

A great many words that are really substantives are used as adjectives. In the attributive position they take suffix *na*, a contraction of *naru* (*ni aru = de aru*); in the predicative position they take *da*, *desu*, *de gozaimasu* (See p. 34c). The particles *ni* and *de* may also be affixed. The form with *ni* is

a Either: a famous university professor, or, a professor of a famous university.

b This *no* is equivalent to *koto*.

c The *Mon-to* (*mon* gate, i, e., school, *to* followers) sect is commonly called *Shin* (truth) sect. Like Protestant Christians, it emphasizes salvation by faith rather than by works. Its founder was Shinran Shōnin. See Murray's Handbook, List of Celebrated Personages. In this sentence *hō*, side, with *shinjinbukai* gives the sense of comparatively pious,—pious as compared with other sects.

d Founded by *Kōbō Daishi*, who spent his last days there.



adverbial ; that with *de* corresponds to the subordinative.

To this class belong many words ending in *ka*, such as :

*akiraka na* clear, evident.  
*nigiyaka na* thronged, bustling, lively.  
*shizuka na* quiet, calm, slow.

The stems of a few adjectives in *i* are combined with *na* (*ni, de, desu*) in the same manner :

*attaka na* warm *attakai*.  
*komaka na* fine, minute, from *komakai*.  
*yawaraka na* soft, tender, from *yawarakai*.  
*makka na* deep red, from *makkai* (*ma* real, *akai* red).  
*ōki na* great, from *ōkii*.  
*chiisa na* small, from *chiisai*.  
*okashi na* ridiculous, from *okashii*.

But it is to be observed that the last three are not combined with *ni, de, desu*, except in the case of the adverb *ōki ni* greatly, very. The regular inflections of the forms in *i* are used instead.

Other words of native origin are likewise made to serve as adjectives :

*baka na* foolish.  
*iya na* disagreeable.  
*sakan na* flourishing, prosperous.  
*suki na* agreeable, favorite.  
*mono-zuki na* curious, meddling.

Most of the adjectives of this class are compounds derived from the Chinese :

*chō-kō na* convenient, useful, valuable.  
*kek-kō na* grand, splendid, capital.  
*nyū-wa na* gentle, amiable.  
*ri-kō na* clever, smart.  
*shikkei na* disrespectful, rude.  
*shin-setsu na* kind, careful.  
*sh-jiki na* honest, artless.  
*fu-sh-jiki na* dishonest.  
*taijō na* large, magnificent. <sup>a</sup>  
*taku-san na* many.  
*zan-nen na* regrettable.

<sup>a</sup> It would not be in order to say *thisō desu*.

Simple Chinese words may also be used in this way:

*hen na* strange, peculiar, dubious.

*myō na* strange, wonderful, admirable.

To the same class belong *yō na* (Compare *kayō na*, etc., p. 39):

*Anata no yō na hito* a person like you.

Instead of *no yō na* one may say *mita yō na* (*mi-ru* see), often contracted to *mitai na*:

*Bōzu (wo) mita yō na hito* a man looking like a priest.

*Kuma (wo) mitai na otoko* a fellow looking like a bear.

Observe also *sō na*, which is added to the stems of adjectives and verbs:

*Kashiko-sō na (rikō-sō na) hito* a clever-looking person.

*Ame ga furi-sō desu.* It seems to be raining.

*Ame ga furi-sō na mon' desu.* We shall likely have rain.

*Deki-sō na mon' desu.* It seems practicable.

The effect of adding *mon'* in the last two sentences is to bring out the subjective aspect of the idea, suggesting the hope that it will rain or that the plan may be accomplished.

## Vocabulary

(Include the adjectives given above)

*aji* taste,

*fuji* wistaria.

*ishi* stone.

(*o*) *kayu* gruel made of rice.

*kaze* wind.

*sora* sky.

*soroban* abacus.

*takara* treasure, wealth.

*zeni* coins, cash, change. <sup>a</sup>

*juru-mai* behavior.

*shiru-ko* a dish made of *mochi*,  
*an* and sugar.

*te-mugui* towel (*nugui* wipe).

*den-shin* telegraph. <sup>b</sup>

*ge-nan* } manservant "boy." <sup>c</sup>

*shimobe* }  
*gi-ji-dō* legislative assembly  
hall.

*hen-ji* reply.

*ke-shiki*, *kei-shoku* scenery.

<sup>a</sup> *Zeni* originally denoted various kinds of coins which in feudal times were made of iron or bronze and had a hole in the center.

<sup>b</sup> *Den-shin* may also mean a telegraphic dispatch, but a telegram is more commonly called *den-pō*.

<sup>c</sup> With *ge-nan* compare *ge-ja*. *Shimo-be* (as also *shimo-ue*), from *shim* = *ge* (c) or *shita*, is rather a classical word.

<i>ken-chiku</i> building (— <i>suru</i>	<i>odoru</i> dance.
to build).	<i>suwaru</i> sit. <sup>b</sup>
<i>kok-kwai</i> diet, parliament,	<i>youtu</i> send, give, do. <sup>c</sup>
congress.	<i>hima wo yaru</i> discharge, dis-
<i>nin-ki</i> temper of the people.	miss (with <i>ni</i> ).
<i>hazukashii</i> ashamed, shame-	<i>tabi (wo) suru</i> journey.
ful. <sup>a</sup>	<i>yoru</i> approach (— <i>ni yoru</i> call
<i>karui</i> light (of weight).	upon).
<i>oshii</i> prized, regrettable.	<i>toku, toite</i> loose, disentangle,
<i>owaru</i> end, finish.	explain.
<i>owari no</i> {	<i>toki-akasu</i> explain.
<i>shimai no</i> } last, concluding.	<i>bō-saki wo kiru</i> take a per-
<i>atsumaru</i> assemble (intr.).	centage. <sup>d</sup>
<i>kuzusu</i> tear down (a house),	<i>sugu (ni)</i> } immediately.
change (money).	<i>jiki (ni)</i> }
<i>nagame-ru</i> gaze at.	<i>zan-ji</i> a little while.
<i>nage-ru</i> throw, fling.	<i>to</i> with.

## Exercises

*Kyō wa shizuka na hi des' ; kaze mo nani mo arimasen. e Oi-oi attaka ni narimas'. Konnichi wa attaka des' kara, awase wo kimashō. Shōgwatsu wa nigiyaka des'. Asak'sa no Kwannon wa f nigiyaka na tokoro des' ; muinichi tak'san na hito ga*

a Like our English word "fearful," *hazukashii* may be either objective (dreadful, shameful) or subjective (afraid, ashamed). But, while in English the context makes it plain which sense is intended, the Japanese seem to be hardly aware of the distinction.

b This properly means sitting in Japanese fashion. "To sit on a chair" is *isu ni koshi wo kake-ru* (p. 58). To unbend the limbs and stretch them out on the floor as foreigners generally do is *hiza wo kuzusu* (*hiza* knee).

c The polite word for "to give" is *age-ru*; but *youtu* is the more suitable word to use toward one's servants or children. In the sense of "to do": *Anata wa tadaima nani wo yatte oide nasaimasu ka*. What are you doing now? See also example on p. 61.

d From *bō* a pole used by coolies, or the bar of a balance, and *saki* tip. The peculiar expression "to cut the tip of the stick" is used of a chief coolie taking a percentage of the wages of those whom he employs, or of a servant who slyly takes a commission on purchases that he makes for his master, or, what amounts to the same thing, accepts a bribe from a tradesman.

e There is no wind nor any thing [to disturb the tranquility of the day].

f A famous temple of the Buddhist divinity Kwannon.

demas'. *Taisō kekko na tokei de gozaimas'. Shōjiki de rikō na shinobe wa ie no takara des'.<sup>a</sup> Ano kata wa rikō na hito des' keredomo, fushōjiki des'. Bettō wa taitei fushōjiki na mono des'. Denshin ya denwa to iu mono wa chōhō na mono des'; zanjī no aida ni tōi tokoro ni iru hito to (nī) mo hanashi wo suru koto ga dekinas'. Anata no genan wa shōjiki des' ka. Sayō, taihen shōjiki de chitto mo bōsaki wo kirimasen. Shōjiki na bakurō wa s'kunai; shōjiki na bettō mo s'kunai. Ano kyōshi wa taihen ni shinsetsu de, mata oshieru no mo jōzu des'.<sup>b</sup> Ano hito wa kōgi ga saisho heta desh'ta ga, konogoro wa jōzu ni narimash'ta. Sonna baka na koto wo suru na.<sup>c</sup> Sakura no hana wa nakanaka kirei des' keredomo, oshii koto ni wa<sup>d</sup> jiki ni chitte shimaimas'. Watakushi wa zannen na koto wo itashimash'ta. Ano onna wa nyūwa de rikō des'. Sore wa hyak'shō no yō na furumai des'. Ano hito wa iya na kao wo sh'te imas'. Anata wa odori ga o s'ki des' ka. Dai s'ki des' keredomo, heta des'.<sup>e</sup> O shiruko wa onna no s'ki na mono des'. Tetsudō wa hayaku tabi ga dekite chōhō na mon' des'. Satō wa shikkei na hito des'. Nase des' ka. Watakushi ga tegami wo yarimash'te mo<sup>f</sup> henji wo yokoshi'te kuremasen. Kono bunshō no imi wa akiraka ni narimash'ta ka. Sayō, sensei ga shinsetsu ni toki akash'te kuremash'ta kara, yoku wakarimash'ta. Sake ni yotte kao ga makka ni natta. Ōsaka wa taisō sakan na tokoro des'. Kono f'tari no ko wa uri wo f'tatsu ni watta yō des'.<sup>g</sup> Yawaraka nu tenugui wo motte koi, kore de wa ikenai kara.<sup>h</sup> Kono gakkō ni wa soroban no taisō*

<sup>a</sup> In this semi-proverbial expression one may substitute for *shinobe* its Chinese equivalent *bōku*.

<sup>b</sup> The idiom is ordinarily *kōgi ga jōzu desu, oshieru no ga jōzu desu*, or *kōgi ga heta desu, oshieru no ga heta desu*.

<sup>c</sup> Negative imperative from *suru* to do.

<sup>d</sup> *Oshii koto* standing alone would mean "How affecting!" With *ni wa* this ejaculation becomes an adverbial phrase.

<sup>e</sup> *Dai suki* very fond, from *dai* (e) great (p. 55b). The opposite is *dai kirai* (p. 91e).

<sup>f</sup> *Yarimashite mo* though (one) sends. Compare *yasukute mo*, etc. (p. 102).

<sup>g</sup> Compare the German "They resemble each other as one egg is like another," or the English "They are as like as two peas." In such sentences *yō* is to be translated "as if," "as though:" *watta yō desu* as though one divided.

<sup>h</sup> Compare *kore de wa ikenai* with *omokute wa ikenai* (p. 102). Compare also *Sore de ii* 'that will do. *Futatsu de takusan desu*. Two are enough.

*jōzu na sensei ga arimas'*. *Kokkwaigijidō no kenchiku wa taisō na mon des'*. *Kore wa umasō na mikan da. Kyō wa samusō na tenki des'*. *Dō ka shiyō ga arisō na mon des'*.<sup>a</sup> *Kono hon wa furui yō des'*. *Tōkyō no hito wa monozuki des'*; *tada kawa ni ishi wo nageta bakari de mo sugu ni hito ga tak'san yotte kimas'*: *kochira no ninki mo sō des'*; *tada dare ka sora wo nagameta bakari de mo hito ga sugu ni atsumatte kimas'*. *O Kiyo san wa hasukashisō ni suwatte irasshaimas'*. *Anata no o ko san wa o rikō des' kara, gakumon ga yoku o deki nasaimashō.*<sup>b</sup>

This poem seems difficult. The shrines of Nikkō are very grand; the scenery also is grand. Kaga was a great *daimyō*.<sup>c</sup> Sick persons for the most part (*yoku*) eat gruel or soft rice. In (*wa*) spring there are many calm days. To-day, since the weather seems fine (good), we will go to Kameido<sup>d</sup> to see the wistaria blossoms (*fuji wo mi ni*). From this time on it will grow (grows) gradually warmer (warm). Cut that up fine (*komaka ni*). This salt pickle has a peculiar taste (*myō na aji ga shimas'*). Have you [any] small change? Yes (*hai*), I have. Then please change this large bill. Having received from you (*itadakimashite*) recently a valuable gift (thing), I thank you very much (*ōki ni*). The teacher explained *toki-akashite kuremashita* this carefully, but I do not yet understand [it]. The last day of the festival of the dead (See p. 76b) is very lively. Since it is a warm day there are many who go to Mukōjima to see the blossoms. Why (*dō iu wake de*) did you dismiss your boy? Because he was a dishonest fellow. Skilful tailors are dear. Don't say such foolish things. What kind of wood is the wood of the *kiri* (tree)? It is light and soft. This dictionary seems bad. Those vases seem to be expensive (high). He seems to be a clever person.<sup>e</sup> He has a face like a monkey's.

a There ought to be a way of managing it somehow (*dō ka*).

b Notice the polite form of *dekimashō*. One may even hear *o aru nasaru* for *aru*.

c The *daimyō* of Kaga, a province on the coast of the Sea of Japan, held a fief which yielded annually an income of more than a million *koku* of rice.

d *Kame-ido* "tortoise-well" is the site of a famous shrine in honour of Sugawara Michizane near Tōkyō.

e Translate *rikō na yō desu* or *rikōsō desu*. *Sō* in the sense of "appearance" is immediately affixed to adjectives of the class described in the chapter; *rikō na (da) sō desu* would mean: "He is said to be clever."

## CHAPTER XXXIV

Many adjectives are formed by means of the particle *no* :

*hidari no* the left.  
*migi no* the right.  
*ue no* the upper.  
*shita no* the lower.  
*tsugi no* the next (*kono tsugi no* next to this).  
*makoto no* true.  
*moto no* original.  
*mukashi no* ancient.  
*nama no* raw, uncooked.  
*nami no* common, ordinary.  
*atari-mae no* usual, ordinary.

Adjectival expressions denoting time, place or material, formed by adding *no* to substantives, are especially numerous :

*konogoro no* recent.  
*asoko no* yonder.  
*Nihon no* Japanese.  
*Amerika no* American. <sup>a</sup>  
*ki no* wooden.  
*kane no* metallic.

The stems of common adjectives are occasionally used with the postposition *no* :

*Aka no meshi* (*go zen*) rice cooked with red beans.  
*Shiro no kinu-ito* white silk thread.

The stems of verbs may be turned into adjectives in the same way. Notice especially compounds with *tate*. <sup>b</sup>

*owari no, shinai no* the last.  
*kane-mochi no* rich.  
*ki-tate no* just arrived, from *kuru* to come.  
*kumi-tate no* fresh (of water), from *kumu* to draw (water).  
*taki-tate no* fresh (of cooked rice) from *taku* to cook (rice).  
*umi-tate no* fresh (of eggs), from *umu* to lay.

<sup>a</sup> In some connections the *no* may be omitted, as in *Nihon seifu* the Japanese Government, *Doitsu tei* the German Emperor (but *Doitsu no tenshi*).

<sup>b</sup> Observe also *mizu shirazu no tanin* a stranger whom I never saw and don't know.

Technical adjectives like "scientific," "botanical," etc., are formed by the addition of *jō* (c)=*ue* above, i. e., concerning (compare the German *über*). For example, *gakumon-jō* means what pertains to learning:

*gakumonjō kara iu naraba* to speak scientifically.

*gakumonjō no* scientific.

*shoku-butsu-gaku-jō no* botanical *shoku = ue-ru, butsu* thing).

*dō-butsu-gaku-jō no* zoölogical.

*i-gaku-jō no* medical.

Most of the words which with *no* form adjectives, as described above, may be used as nouns:

*Watakushi wa niku no nama wo konomimasen.*<sup>a</sup>

I do not like raw meat.

*Kanemochi wa shiwai.* The rich are stingy.

The adverbial form, the subordinative and the predicative form are derived by adding *ni*, *de* and *da* (*desu*), respectively.

With some words either *no* or *na* may be used:

*hadaka no* or *hadaka na* naked.

*kanemochi no* or *kanemochi na* rich.

*wazuka no* or *wazuka na* little, trifling.

## Vocabulary

(Include the adjectives given above)

*hashi* bridge.

*kane* money.

*shiro* castle.

*eri* collar.

*kara* collar (European).

*mono-goto* affairs.

*kagami* mirror (*kage* reflection, *mi-ru* see).

*kara-kane* bronze (*kara* China).

*sanada-mushi* tape-worm.

*shachi-hoko* grampus.<sup>b</sup>

*e* picture.

*kin* gold.<sup>c</sup>

*gin* silver.

*sō* statue.

<sup>a</sup> Colloquially the word *nama* is much used in the sense of "hard cash," being equivalent to *gen-kin* ready money.

<sup>b</sup> The term *shachihoko* also denotes an architectural ornament, a conventionalized grampus, placed on the end of the ridge of a roof.

<sup>c</sup> *Kin* is the Chinese equivalent of *kane* metal or money. In the sense of "money" or "metal" *kin* is used only in composition. On the other hand, *kane* is never used in the sense of "gold."

<i>dai-butsu</i> large statue of Buddha.	<i>mimi ga kikoenai</i> be quite deaf.
<i>en-zetsu</i> address, oration.	<i>mimi ga ōi</i> be somewhat deaf.
<i>fu-zoku</i> manners and customs.	<i>kumu, kunde</i> draw (water).
<i>gyū-niku</i> beef (com. p. 90e).	<i>sasu</i> stick, thrust, wear (in the hair, girdle, etc.).
<i>shin-dai</i> property.	<i>sashi-tsukae ga aru</i> there is a hindrance, [I] have an engagement.
<i>erai</i> great, eminent.	<i>sewa</i> assistance (comp. <i>sewa-shii</i> ).
<i>ji-yū na</i> free.	— <i>no sewa wo suru</i> assist, take care of.
<i>fu-jiyu na</i> restricted. <sup>a</sup>	
<i>kennon na</i> dangerous, risky. <sup>b</sup>	
<i>agaru, agatte</i> go up. <sup>c</sup>	
<i>arau, aratte</i> wash. <sup>d</sup>	
<i>dasu</i> put forth, bring out.	
<i>kikoe-ru</i> can hear, can be heard, sound.	

### Exercises

*Atarashii kara wo dashimashō ka. Iie, kinō no kara de ii.* <sup>e</sup>  
*Ano hito wa kanemochi des' ka. Iie, atarimae no shindai des'.*  
*Ano shosei wa kash'koi des' ka. Iie, atarimae des'. Nama no niku wo taberu to, yoku sanadamushi ga dekimas'.* *Kodomo wa oya no<sup>1</sup> sewa wo suru no ga atarimae da. Nihonjin wa yoku nama no sakana wo tabemas'.* <sup>g</sup> *Izanagi to iu kami sama ga<sup>h</sup> umi de o kao wo o arai nasatta toki ni hidari no o me kara Amaterasu to iu hi no kami sama ga o de nasatte migi no o me kara Tsukiyomi to iu tsuki no kami sama ga o de*

a *Fujiyū* is commonly pronounced *fujū*. The word *jiyū* in the Japanese mind generally signifies the possession of ample means, and *fujiyū*, accordii gly, means the lack of facilities or conveniences.

b Probably a corruption of *ken-nan*, from *ken* peril and *nan* distress.

c This is the polite word to use in speaking of going to or entering into a person's house.

d Notice that verbs whose stems end in *ri* or *i* preceded by a vowel do not add *ru* in the conclusive form but substitute *u* for *i* (p. 10), like *agaru* and *arau*, have subordinates in *ite*.

e One may also say *kinō no de ii*.

f This is the objective genitive.

g *Namasakana* is fresh fish as contrasted with salted or dried fish.

h The language used in speaking of the gods is extremely polite. *Izanagi* and *Izanami* are the two deities who, according to Japanese mythology, created Japan and its people. *Amaterasu* is derived from *ame* heaven and *terasu* to illumine; *Tsukiyomi*, from *tsuki* moon, *yo* night and *mi-ru* to see.



*nasatta. Nama no tamago wo mittsu motte kite kudasai. Kore wa umitate no tamago des' ka. Sayō, umitate de gozaimas'. Igrīs'jin no tame ni koshiraeta Eiwa-jisho ga nakute makoto ni fujiyū des'.<sup>a</sup> Nihon no onna wa yoku gin no kansashi wo sashimas'. Ano hito wa kwazoku des' ka. Iie, nami no hito des'. Takitate no gozen de nakereba oish'ku arimasen. O miya no uchi ni wa kane no kagami ga tatete arimas'. Ano kata wa ikura kane wo motte imas' ka. Hyaku man yen motte iru sō des'. Erai kanemochi des' ne! Y.roppa de wa kiri no ki wo shokubutsugakujō no na de "Paulownia imperialis" to imas'. Kono e wa mukashi no fuzoku ga kaite arimas'. Uchi no gejo wa kitate ni wa monogoto ga yoku wakarimasen desh'ta. Kurunaya wa machi no naka wo hadaka de aruite wa ikemasen.<sup>b</sup> Kore wa kumitate no mizu des' ka. Sayō, tadaina kunda bakari des'. Wazuka na koto de kenkwa wo shi'ta. Ano shosei wa kanemochi na isha no tokoro ye yōshi ni ikimash'ta.*

I do not know the medical name (*wa*) of this disease (*byōki*). I am very fond of (*dai s'ki des'*) raw beef. The earthquake (of) last evening was dreadful. The address (of) just now was very interesting. The *Daibutsu* of Kamakura<sup>c</sup> is a bronze statue; its height is about fifty feet. On the tower (*ten-shū*) of the castle of Nagoya there are two golden *shachihoko*. Do you know the zoological name of this fish? The original name of Kyūshū was (called) Tsukushi. That happened long ago (is an ancient affair). Shall I bring to-day's newspaper? No, please bring yesterday's. Does your left hand hurt, [or] is it the right hand? His right ear is deaf. Fresh eggs are delicious. The Japanese government hires many (*yoku*)

a *Ei-wa* English-Japanese. The chief nations of the world are designated by single ideograms, thus:

<i>Nichi</i> or <i>Wa</i> Japan	<i>Ei</i> England	<i>Doku</i> Germany
<i>Shin, Kan</i> or <i>ʔō</i> China	<i>Bei</i> America	<i>Futsu</i> France
<i>Kau</i> Korea	<i>Kan</i> Holland	<i>Ro</i> Russia

Of these *Shin, Kan* (Corea), *Ei, Bei, Futsu* and *Ro* are combined with *koku*: *Shinkoku, Ei-koku*, etc. *Wa kan-sansai-sue* p. 95d). *Nis-shin sen-sō* the war between Japan and China. *Doku-futsu sen-sō* the Franco-German war *Nichi-ei dō-mei* the Anglo-Japanese alliance, *Ro-shin gin-kō* the Russo-Chinese Bank.

b. *Aruite* is a subordinative from *aruku* to walk. Notice that this verb may take an object. For *aruite wa ikemasen* see p. 117h.

c Kamakura is near Yokohama. Yoritomo made it his capital in 1192.

foreigners. In (*ni wa*) Japan there are many wooden bridges (*wa*), but stone bridges are still scarce. Next Saturday (*ni wa*) I have an engagement; so I will come to your house on Friday.<sup>a</sup> The last day of the year is called *ō-misaka*. It is risky to eat (*taberu no wa*) raw meat. Is that the botanical name?

## CHAPTER XXXV

As has been intimated previously (pp. 6, 13), the functions of an adjective may be performed by short clauses, such as *yama ga ōi* mountainous, *kuchi ga warui* sarcastic, etc., which in the attributive position become *yama no ōi*, *kuchi no warui*, etc. Such expressions are very common in Japanese:

- ishi no ōi* stony.  
*machigai no ōi* inaccurate (opp. *nai*).  
*jin-kō no ōi* populous (opp. *sukunai*).  
*otoko-buri no ii* handsome (of a man — opp. *warui*).  
*kao (ki-ryō) no ii* beautiful (of a woman—  
*shiwase no ii* (or *shiwase na*) fortunate  
*un no ii* lucky  
*ben, benzetsu no ii* eloquent  
*ben-ri no ii* (or *benri na*) convenient, useful  
*tsu-gō no ii* convenient, suitable  
*yō-jin no ii* cautious  
*kon-jō no ii* good-natured  
*i-ji no warui* ill-natured, obstinate  
*gen-ki no ii* (or *genki na*) vigorous (opp. *nai*).  
*ashi no hayai* swift (of an animal).  
*nagare no hayai* swift (of a river).  
*ki no hayai* impulsive, not considering the consequences.  
*ki no noroi* phlegmatic (*noroi* sluggish).  
*ki no nagai* patient.  
*ki no mijikai* irritable.  
*ki no tsuyoi* determined to win, courageous.  
*ki no yowai* easily yielding, cowardly (*yowai* weak).

<sup>a</sup> The polite term to be used here is *agaru*. But if a common word is used, it must be *iku*, not *kuwu*. Foreigners often puzzle the Japanese by using *kuwu* in such cases,

*ki no ôkii* bold, enterprising, magnanimous.  
*ki no chiisai* cautious, circumspect, pusillanimous.  
*sei no takai* tall (opp. *kikui*).  
*kiri no fukai* foggy (*kiri* fog).  
*yoku no fukai* avaricious (opp. *nai*).  
*me no chikai* near-sighted.  
*mimi no tōi* deaf.

So also instead of *na-dakai* (p. 110), one may say *na no takai*; instead of *shinjin-bukai*, *shinjin no fukai*.

The opposites of some of the expressions given above may be formed by means of *fu* (*bu*) or *mu*—negative prefixes derived from the Chinese:

*fu-shiawase na* unfortunate.  
*fu-un na* unlucky.  
*fu-benri na* inconvenient. <sup>a</sup>  
*fu-tsugō na* inconvenient, improper, wrong.  
*bu-kiryō* (*fu-kiryō*) *na* homely.  
*bu-yōjin* (*fu-yōjin*) *na* careless, unsafe.  
*mu-yoku na* unselfish

Compare *fu-shōjiki na* dishonest (p. 114), *fu-shinsetsu na* unkind, *bu-rei na* impolite (p. 33c), *mu-byō na* healthy. <sup>b</sup>

## Vocabulary

(Include the list given above)

*funa* a fish resembling a carp. *hatake* a plot of cultivated  
*hakama* loose trousers, divided ground, field, garden. <sup>d</sup>  
 ed skirt. <sup>c</sup> *iwa* rock.

<sup>a</sup> "Inconvenient" is more commonly *fuben na*. But *fu-ben na* (different character) might also mean "not eloquent," though the more common word is *totsuben na* from *totsu* (c) to stammer.

<sup>b</sup> From *yō* need (in *iri-yō*) is derived *fu-yō* or *mu-yō* unnecessary. The latter also serves as a sort of negative imperative, as in the notice posted up in the Hongwanji Temple in Tōkyō: *Iiru-ne muyō*. Midday naps forbidden! Another negative prefix, *mi*, means "not yet:" *mi-juku* not yet ripe. Compare *fu-skinja* unbeliever and *mi-shinja* one not yet a believer.

<sup>c</sup> Worn by gentleman in full dress. There are special names for certain varieties, such as *uma-nori-bakama* used formerly by *samurai* when riding on horseback, *naga-bakama* the trailing kind used at court, etc. The *hakama* in vogue among school girl are simply plaited skirts.

<sup>d</sup> A plot kept under water for the cultivation of rice, etc., is called *to*.

<i>se shoal.</i>	<i>aku, aite</i> open (intr.).
<i>haya-se</i> rapids.	<i>ana</i> hole.
<i>sode</i> sleeve.	<i>anu ga aku</i> a hole is made.
<i>soko</i> bottom.	<i>haku, haite</i> wear (shoes, trousers, etc.).
<i>sumi</i> charcoal.	<i>hataraku, hataraitte</i> work. <sup>a</sup>
<i>to</i> door.	<i>nagare-ru</i> flow, be carried along by a current.
<i>mawari</i> surroundings (— <i>no mawari ni</i> around).	<i>shime-ru</i> shut.
<i>sato</i> exterior (— <i>no soto ni</i> outside of).	<i>shirase-ru</i> inform.
<i>ka-gaki</i> postal card.	<i>tanomu, tanonde</i> ask, engage, rely upon. <sup>b</sup>
<i>mizu-umi</i> } lake.	<i>ii-tsuke-ru</i> command.
<i>ko-sui</i> (c) }	<i>osu</i> push, press.
( <i>o</i> ) <i>tera-mairi</i> visiting a (Buddhist) temple.	<i>oshi-age-ru</i> push up.
<i>toshi-yori</i> aged person (— <i>no</i> aged).	<i>sei-batsu suru</i> punish (rebels), make war upon.
<i>kai-gan</i> sea-shore, bund.	<i>sen-kwai suru</i> fully recover (from sickness).
<i>yō-fuku</i> European clothes.	<i>hi</i> ( <i>kwa-ji</i> ) <i>wo dasu</i> start a conflagration.
<i>sei-ji</i> political affairs.	<i>koto ni</i> especially.
<i>seiji-ka</i> politician, statesman.	<i>hi-jō ni</i> extraordinarily.
<i>tō-dai, tō-myō-dai</i> lighthouse.	
<i>Chō-sen</i> Corea.	

## Exercises

*Hida wa yama no ōi kuni da kara, jinkō ga s'kunai. Nihon no kawa wa taigai nagare ga hayai kara, ōki na ishi ga nagarete kimas'. Anata no go tsugō no yoi toki ni mairimashō. <sup>c</sup> Dōso go tsugō no yoi toki wo shirasete kudasai. Nihon no mawari no umi wa hijō ni sakana ga ōi. Sutō san wa ki no mijikai hito des' kara, tomodachi ga s'kunō gozaimas'. Shinjin no f'kai hito wa yoku teramairi wo shimas'.*

a This word is also used like *make-ru*, to be defeated, in the sense of "to come down on the price," but without an object: *Ni jissen makete agemasu*. I will deduct twenty *sen*. *Hachi jissen made hataraitte agemasu*. I will make (sell) it for the low price of eighty *sen*.

b The idiom is: *hito ni koto wo tanomu* to call upon a person for assistance, to ask a favor of one. *O tanomi mōshimasu*. Please do me the favor. This phrase may be used by a caller to attract the attention of some one in the house.

c Lit. at your convenient time, i. e., whenever it suits you.

*Anata no o ani san wa go zenkwai nasaimash'ta ka. Iie, s'koshi yoku natte kara,*<sup>a</sup> *yōjin ga warukute hayaku soto ye demash'ta kara, mata waruku narimash'ta. Sh'ka to iu mono wa*<sup>b</sup> *taihen ashi no hayai mon' des'. Ano kata wa toshigori des' heredomo, genki ga yō gozaimas'. Nihon no kaigan wa iwa ga ōi kara, seifu de*<sup>c</sup> *tōmyōdai wo tak'san tatemash'ta. Senchō wa yōjin no ii hito des' kara, shizuka ni fune wo yare to*<sup>d</sup> *iits'kemash'ta heredomo, kiri ga f'kakute tōmyōdai no akari ga miemasen desh'ta*<sup>e</sup> *kara, fune wo iwa ni oshiagemash'ta; shikashi fune no soko ni ana ga akimassen desh'ta no wa shiwase no ii koto deshita. Nihon wa ki no ōi kuni des' kara, yoku sumi wo ts'kaimas'. Ki no s'kunai kuni wa mizu ga s'kunaī. Taikō wa ki no ōkii hito des'ta kara, Ch sen made mo*<sup>f</sup> *seibatsu shimash'ta. Yōf'ku wa sode ga mijikakute hakama wo hakesasen kara, hataraku tame ni*<sup>g</sup> *benri no ii mon' des' (hataraku ni benri des'). Itō hō wa daiseijika de benzetsu mo ii. To wo skāmenaide nete wa buyōjin des'.*

The bed (*soko*) of this river is stony. Postal cards are convenient things. The French are impulsive, but the Germans are phlegmatic. Both Yamato and Kishū are mountainous countries. Mountainous places are sparsely populated (population is scarce). As the Fuji River is swift, there are many rapids. The Lake of Ōmi (*wa* or *ni wa*) is full of fish; large carp and (*ya*) *funas* (2), are especially (1) numerous (many) (3).<sup>h</sup> He is obstinate and doesn't do what one asks of him

a Translate: after recovering somewhat (p. 96c).

b The idiom *to iu mono wa* corresponds to our article "the" (p. 1).

c We should say: "the government has erected." The Japanese idiom is: "on the part of the government [they] have erected." When speaking of what is done societies, corporations, etc., this is the usual construction.

d Imperative from *yaru* to send: *funo wo yaru* to move a ship forward. In Japanese, quotations are usually given in the form of direct discourse, the dependence of the phrase on the principal verb being denoted simply by the particle *to*. In the case of imperatives a phrase may be changed into indirect discourse by the use of *yō ni*: *shizuka ni fune wo yaru yō ni iits'kemashita* (comp. p. 104bc). A polite command quoted by the person to whom it was addressed is commonly changed into the impolite form: *Dete koi to mōshimashita* He said I should come out.

e See p. 85a.

f See p. 53a.

g Translate: "for working." When the postposition *tame* is added to verbs, *no* is not required.

h *Ōmi no kōsu* or *Biwa-ko*, from *biwa* the name of a musical instrument which it resembles in form and *ko*=*misuumi*, is the largest body of fresh water in Japan. It is situated near Kyōto.

*tanonda koto*). These sentences are so inaccurate that correction is impossible (mistakes being many [one] can not mend). The maidservant through carelessness (being careless) started a conflagration. She is homely, but her character is good (*hito ga ii*). The Bridge of Seta is a very famous bridge. <sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER XXXVI

In the chapter on relative pronouns (p. 53) it has been observed that in Japanese a verb may modify a noun like an adjective. It follows that many English adjectives are represented in Japanese by verbal expressions:

*deki-ru* possible, feasible (opp. *dekinai*). <sup>b</sup>  
*namake-ru*, *namakete iru* lazy.  
*wakaru* intelligent.  
*ben-kyō suru* (*shite iru*) diligent (opp. *fu-benkyō na*).

Expressions like *gaku-mon ga aru* may perform the office of an attributive adjective by changing the *ga* to *no* <sup>c</sup> (Compare the previous chapter):

*kagiri no aru* limited, from *kagiri* limit.  
*tsumi no aru* guilty, from *tsumi* crime, sin.  
*sai no aru* talented, from *sai* ability.  
*jūn-bō no aru* popular, from *jūn-bō* popularity.

These may be turned into their opposites by substituting *nai* for *aru*.

Observe also the following combinations:

*kusuri ni naru* curative, nutritious.  
*tame ni naru* beneficial, advantageous.  
*doku ni naru* poisonous, noxious, from *doku* (c) poison.  
*gai ni naru* injurious, from *gai* injury.

<sup>a</sup> A bridge over the Lake of Ūmi at the point where it empties its waters into the river called (at the lower end of its course) Yodogawa.

<sup>b</sup> With the adverb *yoku*, *dekiru* also means "capable": *yoku dekiru hito* an able man, *ongaku no yoku dekiru hito* a man well versed in music, a capable musician. But *yoku dekite iru* means "well made" (of a thing).

<sup>c</sup> The *no* is omitted in some cases, thus: *tai-nō aru hito* an ambitious person, *sumibetsu aru hito* a discreet person, *gi-ri aru kyōdai* a step-brother or brother in law, from *gi-ri* right, obligation.

*me ni tatsu (medatsu)* conspicuous.  
*yaku ni tatsu* useful.

Most of the verbs that serve as adjectives, if denoting a condition, are used in the past tense when attributive, and in the form of the subordinative with *i-ru* or *oru* when predicative (p. 89b):

*aita* vacant, from *aku* open (intr.).  
*hiraketa* civilized, from *hirake-ru* be opened.  
*jutotta* fleshy, stout, from *futoru* become stout.  
*yaseta* lean, emaciated, from *yase-ru* become lean.  
*ikita* live, alive, from *iki-ru* survive.  
*shinda* dead, from *shinu* die.<sup>a</sup>  
*kawatta* different, from *kawaru* be changed.  
*kumotta* cloudy, from *kumoru* be clouded.  
*shareta* stylish, witty, from *share-ru* be elegant.  
*sorotta* complete, from *sorou* be uniform.  
*yogoreta* dirty, from *yogore-ru* be soiled.  
*iki-sugita* conceited, from *iku* go and *sugi-ru* exceed.  
*komi-itta* complicated, from *komu* be crowded, and *iru* enter.  
*iri-kunda* complicated, from *iru* enter and *kumu* knit together.<sup>b</sup>  
*ochi-tsuita* calm, composed, sane, from *ochi-ru* fall and *tsuku* arrive.  
*wakari-kitta* obvious, from *wakaru* and *kiru* cut, finish.  
*ippai haitta* full, from *ippai* (p. 90c) and *hairu* enter.  
*ki no kiita* smart, from *ki* spirit and *kiku* be efficacious.<sup>c</sup>  
*nen no itta* thoughtful, painstaking, from *nen* thought, attention and *iru* enter.  
*assari shita* plain, simple.  
*hakkiri shita* clear, distinct.  
*shikkari shita* substantial, trustworthy.<sup>d</sup>  
*sube-sube shita* smooth, slippery, from *suberu* slide.

<sup>a</sup> *Shinde iru* may be used only of persons or animals which are in the presence of the speaker. In other cases "he is dead" must be translated *shinimashita*.

<sup>b</sup> *Komiitta* is rather more common than *irikunda*.

<sup>c</sup> Compare: *Kusuri ga sugu kikumashita*. The medicine acted immediately. *Kono pompu wa kikanaku narimashita*. This pump doesn't work any more.

<sup>d</sup> The beginner may be puzzled by the similarity between *hakkiri to* distinctly, *shikkari to* substantially, *shikiri ni* persistently, *sukkari* entirely, *shakkuri* hiccup, etc.

The predicative forms are *aite iru (oru)*, *ki ga kiite iru (oru)*, etc. But some expressions of this class cannot be used predicatively:

*tai shita* great, important, serious.

*tonda* surprising, extraordinary, great, from *tobu*, fly spring.

## Vocabulary

(Include the adjectival expressions given above)

*kabe* plastered wall. <sup>a</sup>

*kaki* fence, enclosure.

*ishi-gaki* stone wall.

*kemuri* smoke.

*botan* peony (shrub).

*mochi* a pasty food made by pounding a special kind of rice (*mochi-gome*) in a mortar.

*botamochi* a ball of rice which has been boiled and then brayed in a mortar.

*ki-chigai* lunatic (*ki* spirit, *chigai* differ).

*ko-zukai* errand-boy, servant (*ko* small, *tsukau* use).

*shi-goto* work, task.

(*o*)*rei* bow, thanks, present.

*an-shin* peace of mind.

*ju-anshin* uneasiness.

*mei-waku* annoyance.

*shoku-motsu* (= *tabe-mono*) food, victuals.

*teishu*, *tei-shi* master of a house, landlord (of a hotel), husband.

*mu-ri na* unreasonable, absurd.

*hare-ru* clear off (of the sky).

*katsugu*, *katsuide* carry on the shoulder.

*go-hei* sticks holding cut paper used in Shintō shrines as symbols of divinity.

*gohei-katsugi* a superstitious person.

*konare-ru*

*shō-kwa suru* } be digested.

*tsuzuku*, *tsuzuite* continue, hold out (intr.).

— *ni ki wo tsuke-ru* pay attention to, take care of.

*nige-dasu* escape.

*batsu* (c), *bachi* punishment.

*bassuru* punish.

*basserare-ru* *bassare-ru* be punished.

*shi-kata* (*shiyō*) *ga nai* can't be helped (p. 16a).

*i-zen* previously. <sup>b</sup>

*i-go* afterwards.

*betsu ni* specially.

*chika-goro* lately.

*ima-sara* no longer, no more (with a negative word).

a *Kabe* means properly a wall of a house. A wall around a garden is *kei* (c), or *do-bei*, from *do* (c) earth. A high board fence is *ita-bei*, from *ita* board. A fence is *kaki* or *kaki-ne*; a hedge, *ike-gaki*.

b *Zen=mae*; *go=nochi*. Compare *i-jō* and *i-ka* p. 71. The *i* indicates comparison.



## Exercises

*Kore wa assari sh'ta e des'.* Nihon no tabemono wa assari sh'ta mono ga ō gozaimas'.<sup>a</sup> Yaseta hito wa hayaku aruke-mas'. Ano yadoya no teishu wa taihen f'totta hito des'. Ano kosukai wa ki no kiita otoko des'. Ano hito wa tsunami ga aru ka nai ka mada hakkiri sh'te imasen. Goheikatsugi wa taigai kyōiku no nai hito des'. Ano kata wa taihen nen no itta hito des'; hito no uchi ni yobaremas' to,<sup>b</sup> ato de sugu ni rei ni ikimas'. Are wa taihen nen no itta hito des' kara, sō machi-gatta koto wa arimas'mai.<sup>c</sup> Kido wa taisō jimbō ga arimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Nihon ni wa ima jimbō no aru daijin ga s'kunai. Bis'mar'k' kō wa izen jimbō ga nakatta. Kono mushi wa kaiko no gai ni narimas'. Sake wa karada no doku ni narimas'. Hiraketa kuni de wa yoku kodomo no kyōiku ni ki wo ts'kemas'. Aita kuchi ni botamochi.<sup>e</sup> Chichi wa kusuri ni narimas'. Aita heya ga arimas' ka. Chikagoro wa ikaga de gozaimas' ka. Arigatō, betsu ni kawatta koto mo gozaimasen.<sup>f</sup> Sore wa nen no itta shigoto des'. Yogoreta kuts' wo haite imas' kara, agarimasen. Chūgakkō no Eigo-kyōshi ni wa yoku dekiru hito ga s'kunakute komarimas'. Kagiri no aru karada des' kara, sō wa tsuzukimasen. Amari medatsu kimono wo kite wa narimasen.<sup>g</sup> Kō iu komiitta koto wa gwaikokugo de wa hanashinikui. Sono hito wa sakunen kichigai ni natta ga, tadama de wa ochitsuite oru sō des'. Wakaru ningen naraba sonna muri na koto wo iwanai<sup>h</sup> hazu da. Imasara sonna wakarikitta koto wo iwanak'te mo yoroshii. Tonda

a By *assari sh'ta e* is understood a sketch, not highly colored. By *assari sh'ta tabemono* is understood the opposite of rich food.

b *Yobareru* is the passive of *yobu* to call or invite. (O) *rei ni iku* to go to offer thanks; in this case, to make a party call. See p. 33c.

c Negative probable form of *arimasu*.

d Kido was a *samurai* of Chōshū who distinguished himself in connection with the Restoration of 1868.

e The meaning is; an unexpected piece of luck, a windfall.

f Translate: there has been no special change. One may also say *kawari mo gozaimasen*. It is polite to inquire: *O kawari mo gozaimasen ka*. Are you in good health?

g Equivalent to *kite wa idemasen* (p. 122b).

h *Iwanai* is the familiar negative form of *iu* to say. For *wakaru*, *wakatta* or *mono no wakatta* might be substituted.

*meiwaku wo itashimash'ta. Anna ikisugita yats' wa shikata ga nai.*

The physician says it is not (there is not) a serious matter. Now (*ima wa*) it is cloudy, but later (*nochi ni wa*) it may clear off. Is this novel complete? [I] loaned just (*dake*) one volume to a friend. Is that bottle empty? No, its full. The walls of the castle are very substantial. Since the door of the cage is open, the birds may escape. Wrestlers are usually fleshy. This duck is very lean. Simple foods are easy to digest. Have you any room (Is there still a vacant room)?<sup>a</sup> Yes, all are vacant. That student is talented, but he is a lazy fellow (*namake-mono*). Eels are slippery fish. A guilty man is always uneasy. He is a very trustworthy person.<sup>b</sup> Though (*no ni*) innocent, he was punished. Smoke is injurious to the eyes. Unlearned people don't use this word. He is diligent (*benkyō wa shimasu*), but he is not talented. This food is poisonous, it is said. Our (*uchi no*) maidservant is smart, but dishonest. The fish dealer was selling live sardines. A distinct answer is not yet possible. Mrs. Nakamura is very stylish.

## CHAPTER XXXVII

A substantive may be formed from any adjective or adjectival expression by adding the particle *no* :

*Chiisai no ga nakereba ōkii no wo kaimashō.*

If you have no small one, I will buy a large one, or,

If you have no small ones, I will buy large ones.

To such substantival forms the particles *wa*, *ga*, *mo*, *no*, *ni*, *wo de*, etc., may be added. An adjective formed by means of *no*, like *hidari no* (p. 119), may without an additional *no* take these particles and be treated as a substantive. Thus: *yoroshii no wa*, *suki na no wa*, *machigai no ōi no wa*, *doku ni naru no wa*, but *nama no wa*. *No wa* may be contracted to *nā*. *No*

<sup>a</sup> Instead of *aiwa heya*, one may also say *aki-ma*.

<sup>b</sup> The common expression, *Are wa nakanaka shikkari-mono desu*, has a rather slangy flavor.

*no* occurs in *Chiisai no no koto desu* I mean the small one.

These substantival forms may denote a concrete object, the *no* being equivalent to *mono*, especially before *da*, *desu*, etc.

*Taihen takai no desu.* It is a very expensive article.

When a contrast is involved, *hō* side is substituted for *no* :

*Kore wa takai hō desu.* This is the more expensive.

Before *da*, *desu*, etc., *no* is usually contracted :

*Taihen takai n' desu.* It's a very expensive one.

*Takai n' ja (=de wa) nai n' desu.* It's not an expensive one.

*Taisō rippa na n' desu.* It's a very fine one.

Often there is no difference in the sense between a simple predicate adjective and the adjective followed by *n'da* (*n'desu*), which simply serves to round off the sentence. Thus there is no appreciable difference between *Mō ii* and *Mō ii n' da* (*desu*) That'll do (polite : *Mō yoroshū gosaimasu*).

In many cases the substantival forms are to be translated by means of abstract nouns :

*Samui no wa ii ga, atsui no ni wa komarimasu.*

[I] don't mind the cold, but find the heat oppressive.

The particle *ni* following a substantivized adjective gives it a concessive sense, unless the particle is directly dependent on the verb :

*Samui no ni itsuno no tōri sampo shite imasu.*

In spite of the cold, he is taking a walk, as usual.

*Kodomo no rikō na no ni odorokimashita.*

[I] was astonished at the cleverness of the child. <sup>a</sup>

The *no* may be omitted ; *samui ni, rikō na ni*.

The particle *de* following a substantivized adjective may indicate a cause or reason (p. 104h).

*Kyō wa amari samui no de sampo ni dekakemasen.*

Since it is too cold to-day, I shall not go out for a walk.

By saying *samui to iu no de* the speaker may avoid asserting explicitly that it is really too cold to take a walk. Compare :

*Samui kara to itte sampo ni dekakemasen.*

Pleading that it is too cold, he does not go out for a walk.

---

<sup>a</sup> The *ni* in *rikō na no ni odorokimashita* and in *atsui no ni komarimasu* is probably related to the *ni* used to denote the agent with a passive verb, as in *Sensei ni* (or *kara*) *shikarareta* was scolded by the teacher (*shikaru* to scold).

The *de* does not indicate a cause in a sentence like :

*Yasui no de yoroshii.* A cheap one will do (p. 117h).

The following idiom must be accepted without explanation :

*Atsui no atsuku nai no 'tte (=to ille) yakesō deshita.*  
Talk about heat! It seemed as if I were burning.

*Itai no itaku nai no 'tte shinu ka to omotta.*  
I was in such pain—I thought I was dying.

## Vocabulary

*ase* perspiration. <sup>a</sup>

*gomi* dirt, dust, rubbish.

*gomi (hokori) ga tatsu* dust rises.

*hashi* chopsticks.

*itoma = hima* leisure.

*oki* the open sea.

*sugata* form, figure.

*urushi* lacquer.

*ushiro* rear (—*no ushiro ni* behind).

*kado* gate (in *mi-kado*).

*kado-matsu* two pine trees placed one on each side of the gate at New Year's.

*kokoro-atari* clew.

*kokoro-atari ga aru* [1] happen to know.

*momo* thigh.

*momo-hiki* [Japanese] close-fitting trousers.

*zubon* [European] trousers.

*zubon-shita* drawers.

*shibai* theater, drama. <sup>b</sup>

*ue-ki-bachi* flower-pot

*sai-ku* artificers' work. <sup>c</sup>

*zas-shi* magazine, journal.

*kan-dan-kei* thermometer (lit. cold-warmth-measure).

*shabon* soap (French *savon*).

*atsui* thick.

*omoi* heavy, grave.

*marui* round.

*shi kaku na* square.

*haru* stretch, extend (intr.).

*kōri ga haru* ice forms.

*itaru* reach (*ni itaru* extend to).

*itatte* very.

*nuru* paint.

*nuri-mono* lacquered ware.

*odoroku, odoroi*: be astonished.

*toke-ru* be loosed, be solved, melted, thawed.

*yowaru* be weak, debilitated.

a "To perspire," the subject being understood, is *ase ga deru*; with a subject, *ase wo dasu* or *ase wo kaku*.

b Form *shiba* grass and *ir-u* to sit. Theatrical performances used to be held in the open air and actors were called *kawara-kojiki*, from *kawara* (*kawa, hara*) dry river bed and *kojiki* beggar.

c From this are derived such words as *gin-saiku* (*shirokane-saiku*) silver-ware, *zōge-saiku* ivory-ware, *urushi saiku* lacquered ware, etc.

## Exercises

*Kandankei wa chūhō na mon' des ; sugu ni atsui no to samui no ga wakarimas'.* Kono kadomats' wa chiisai ; ōki na no wa nai ka. Atarashii zubon wo molte kite o kure ; furui no wa kurumaya ni yatte yoroshii. Kono shinamono wa warui ; ii no wa nai ka. Gozaimas' keredomo,<sup>a</sup> itatte takō gozaimas'. Tōkei ni wa (p. 30b) shimbun ga tak'san arimas' keredomo yoi no wa s'kuno (s'kenō) gozaimas'. Hashi (no uchi) ni wa marui no mo arimasu shi, shikaku no mo<sup>b</sup> arimas'. Kore to onaji yō na no wa gozaimasen ka. Gozaimas'. Kō atsui no ni, anata wa ase ga chitto mo demasen ka. Anata wa jōzu na isha wo go zōji de gozaimasen ka. Sō des' ne, heta na no wo ikutari mo sh'itte imas' keredomō, jōzu na no wa hitori mo shirimasen. Miya no uchi ni wa ōki na no mo arimasu shi, chiisa na no mo arimas'. Ano onna wa ushiro kara miru to, sugata ga taisō yoi keredomo ; mae kara miru to, kao no warui no ni wa odorokimas'.<sup>c</sup> Michi ga tōi no ni komarimas'. Kono byōki wa omoku nai no ni, ano isha wa omoi yō ni iimas'.<sup>d</sup> Ano shibai wa omoshiroku nai no ni, ano hito wa omoshiroi yō ni iimas'. Omoshiroi no ni, omoshiroku nai yō ni iimas'. Kō samui no ni, yoku oide nasaimash'ta.<sup>e</sup> Samui no de kōri ga harimash'ta. Tenki ga ii no de kōri ga tokemash'ta. Oki no kurai no (kurai hī) ni shiraho ga mieru ; are wa Kishū no nikambune.<sup>f</sup> Tabetōi no ni, tabetaku nai yō ni iu. Akai hō ni nasaimas' ka, aoi hō ni nasaimas' ka.<sup>g</sup> Oi! shabon ga nakunatta kara, hitots' katte kite moraitai. Akai no wo katte mairimash' ka, shiroi no wo katte mairimashō

a In a reply the verb of a question is repeated: *O wakari deshita ka. Wakarimashita.* Did you understand? Yes. Expressions like *hei, hai, sayō, sayō de gozaimasu, sō desu ne*, etc., may precede the reply, but are really noncommittal (p. 17h). But *sō desu* implies very definite assent.

b Notice that *na* is omitted as if the adjective belonged to the same class as *hidari no*.

c The *ni* here, as also in the following sentence, is dependent on the verb.

d Translate: "talks as if it were a grave case."

e *Yoku oide nasaimashita* or *yoku irasshaimashita* (lit. you have well come) is a common expression used in welcoming a visitor.

f See p. 38b. *Shira ho* white sail.

g The idiom *ni suru* (*itasu, nasaru*) often means "to decide upon."

*ka. Atarashii kuts' wo o haki nasaimas' ka, furui no wo o haki nasaimas' ka. Tenki ga yokereba, atarashii no wo hakō.*<sup>a</sup>

Shall I bring the old garment (*kimono*) or shall it be (*ni itashimashō*) the new one? Bring the new one. The paper that I bought lately was too light (thin); haven't you any heavier?<sup>b</sup> Among magazines there are both good ones and bad ones. It being so hot, everybody is debilitated. How much are these fish? The large ones are (*de*) one *yen*; the small ones (are) fifty *sen*. The wind being strong, dust rises. Among lacquered wares there are cheap articles and also expensive ones. As our (*uchi no*) manservant is dishonest I dismissed him; don't you happen to know (*o kokoroatari wa gozaimas'mai ka*) some honest fellow? Just now I don't happen to know any. Really (*dōmo*) honest ones are scarce. The one sitting on the left side of Mr. Itō is (*de*) Mr. Tsuzuki; [the one on] the right side is Mr. Furuya. As for the flower-pots, shall I buy large ones, or shall they be small ones? Small ones will do (*de yoroshii*). How about a cup of tea? Do you like it (*o s'ki des' ka*) strong or weak?<sup>c</sup>

## CHAPTER XXXVIII

There are no inflections corresponding to our degrees of comparison.

The comparative degree<sup>d</sup> may be expressed by means of such words as *motto*, *mō sukoshi*, *mō chitto*, *mō is-sō* (*sō* layer), *nao*, *nao sara*, etc.

*Motto yoroshii no wa gozaimasen ka.*

Have you no better ones?

*Sore mo ii ga, are wa nao ii.*

This will do, but that is still better.

<sup>a</sup> The word *hakō* is the plain or familiar future of *haku*. It is not polite, being used in speaking to a servant.

<sup>b</sup> *Motto atsui*. For the comparative degree see the following chapter.

<sup>c</sup> In this case we have a contrast, not of predicates, but of subjects and must, accordingly, use *ga*, not *wa*. If willing to accept the tea, one may say: *Ippai chōdai itashimasu*; if not, *Dōzo, o kamai kudasaru na*.

<sup>d</sup> *Hikaku-kyū*, from *hi-kaku* comparison and *kyū* degree. The superlative is *saijō-kyū* (*sai=mottomo, jō=ue*).

Sometimes the word *hō* side conveys the idea of comparison :

*Dochira ga o ki ni irimasu ka ; nagai hō desuka, mijikai hō desu ka.*

Which do you like better, the longer or the shorter ?

*Ikusa no nai hō ga ii.* It is better not to have war.

If the object which serves as the standard of comparison is stated, as when we use "than," the adjective does not require any modifier to indicate the comparative degree. "Than" is to be rendered by *yorī*, *yorī mo*, or *yorī wa*. This *yorī* is the literary equivalent of *kara* "from" (Compare the Latin ablative as used with comparatives) :

*Chōsen wa Itaria yorī ōkii (hiroī).*

Korea is larger than Italy.

*Watakushi no zaisan wa ano hito no yorī mo sukunai.*

My property is less than his.

*Anata wa ano kata yorī mo kanji wo yokei go zōnji de gozaimasu.* You know more characters than he.

In the last example *yo-kei* is an adverb meaning "in excess." Notice : *Nani yorī ii.* [It] is better than any [other]. Nothing could be better (for *nani* see p. 47). One may also say : *Sore wa nani yorī desu.*

When there is a choice between two evils, *mashi*, from *masu* to increase, may be used :

*Kono sake wa warui keredomo, mizu yorī wa mashi desu.*

This sake is bad, but still preferable to water.

*Isso (no koto) shinda hō ga mashi desu.*

It were better to die.

No sign of the comparative is required in such sentences as :

*Dandan (oioi, masumasu) ōkiku narimasu.*

[It] is gradually growing larger.

*Dochira ga yō gozaimasu ka.* Which is better ?

"The more the better" and similar expressions may be translated by the use of *hodo* following the adjective or verb :

*Ōi hodo yoroshii.* The more the better.

*Ano musume wa mireba, miru hodo kirei desu.*

The more I look at that girl, the prettier she seems. (lit.

If I look at that girl, to the degree that I look she is pretty).

The superlative is expressed by means of *ichi-ban* or *mottomo*

before the adjective. Notice also other idioms :

*Himaraya-san wa sekai-jū de* <sup>a</sup> *ichiban takai yama desu.*

The Himalayas are the highest mountains in the world.

*Nihon-ichi no kosui* the largest lake in Japan.

*Tōkyō-jū de no bijin* the most beautiful woman in Tōkyō.

*Kwantō-kitte no* <sup>b</sup> *kanemochi* the richest man in Kwantō.

“Most,” “mostly” is to be rendered by the adverbs *tai-gai*, *tai-tei*, *ō-kata*, *ōku wa*, or by the adjectival expressions *taigai no*, *taitei no*.

## Vocabulary

<i>mugi</i> cereals like barley and wheat (p. 15).	<i>ina-zuma</i> , <i>ina-bikari</i> lightning. <sup>c</sup>
<i>nakaba</i> middle.	<i>mon</i> = <i>rin</i> . <sup>d</sup>
<i>nashi</i> pear.	<i>ba-ai</i> occasion, case. <sup>e</sup>
<i>ni</i> , <i>ni-motsu</i> baggage, freight.	<i>dan-go</i> [Japanese] dumpling.
<i>ringo</i> apple.	<i>gi-ron</i> , <i>ron</i> debate, argument.
<i>sara</i> plate, saucer.	<i>hantai</i> opposition, the reverse.
<i>taki</i> waterfall.	<i>kwōgō</i> ( <i>sama</i> ) Empress.
<i>uji</i> lineage, family-name.	<i>riku-gun</i> army.
<i>utsuwa</i> vessel, utensil.	<i>sek-kyō</i> } sermon. <sup>i</sup>
<i>washi</i> eagle.	<i>sep-pō</i> }
<i>yamai</i> disease.	<i>shō-ko</i> evidence, proof.
<i>ine</i> rice plants.	<i>shippō-yaki</i> cloisonne. <sup>g</sup>
<i>tsuma</i> consort, wife.	<i>Butsu</i> Buddha.

a *jū=chū=uchi*. Compare *kono uchi de* among these things. As a suffix *jū* is emphatic, so that *sekai-jū* means not simply “in the world,” but “in the whole world.”

b *Kwan=seki* (p. 77d); *tō=higashi*. The provinces along the coast east of the barrier at Hakone, including Tōkyō and Yokohama and extending to Shirakawa, are called *Kwantō*. *Kitte* is the subordinative of *kiru* to cut, finish (comp. *wakari-kitta* p. 128). For *no* with the subordinative compare *hajimete no* (p. 97a).

c Lighting occurs most frequently when the rice is earing. It was formerly supposed to have the effect of fertilizing the rice-plants.

d The *mon* was formerly one tenth of a *rin*, being a perforated coin made of iron while the *rin* was made of copper.

e Pronounced by some *bayai* or *barwai*.

f *Sep-pō*, from *setsu=toku* explain and *hō* law, is a Buddhistic term. As slang *seppō suru* is also used in the sense of “to scold,” “read a lecture.”

g From *shippō* (*shichi hō*) a Buddhistic word meaning “seven jewels” and *yaku* to burn. Compare *yaki-n.oue*.



<i>Buk-kyō, Butsu-dō, Buppō</i>	<i>masu</i> increase (tr. and intr.).
Buddhism.	<i>mashi desu</i> is better.
<i>Bukkyō-to</i> a Buddhist.	<i>nozomu, nozonde</i> hope for,
<i>Kirisuto-kyō-to</i> a Christian. <sup>a</sup>	wish for.
<i>haba</i> breadth.	<i>oku, oite</i> put, place, employ
<i>hiroi</i> broad, spacious.	(a servant).
<i>haba ga hiroi</i> is wide (opp.	<i>motsu, motte</i> last, endure.
<i>semai</i> ).	<i>sodatsu, sodatte</i> grow up, he
<i>kanashii</i> sad.	reared.
<i>kowai</i> fearful, terrible.	<i>ko'oro-mochi ga yoi</i>
<i>tattoi</i> highly prized, honor-	<i>koko-chi ga yoi</i>
able, precious.	<i>ki-mochi ga yoi</i>
<i>urusai</i> annoying.	<i>ki-bun ga yoi</i>
<i>jō-bu na</i> strong, robust,	<i>myō-chō</i>
healthy. b	<i>myō-asa</i>
<i>yo-kei na</i> excessive.	<i>asu no asa</i>
<i>yo-kei ni</i> in excess, too much,	<i>ashita no asa</i>
more.	

} feel well.

} to morrow  
morning  
(p. 66a).

## Exercises

*Ka wa hai yori mo urusai des'. Kane no utsuwa wa ki no utsuwa yori mo nagaku mochimas'. Anata wa Nihonryōri yori mo Seiyōryōri ga o s'ki deshō. Nihonjin wa Seiyōjin yori mo sei ga hikū gozaimas'. Bukkyō wa Yasokyō yori mo furū gozaimas'. Kono baai ni wa wo to iu ji wo ts'keru hō ga tsūrei des'. Motto shizuka ni (slowly) yonde kudasai. Iwashī wa ichiban hayai tori des'. Karigi yori araiji (Proverb).<sup>c</sup> Hana yori dango (Proverb). Sakura wa Nihonjin no ichiban s'ki na hana des'. Ron yori shōko (Proverb). Kojiki wa Nihon no ichiban furui rek'shi des'. Nihon no kwōgō sama wa tenshi sama yori f'tats' toshi ga o ue de gozaimas'.<sup>d</sup> Fuji*

a The word *Yaso-kyō*, from *Yaso*, which is the Japanese sound of the ideograms that stand for "Jesus" in the Chinese, was once universally current as a designation of Christianity. But the Christians themselves now say *Yesu*, not *Yaso*. The latter has an indelible tinge of contempt and is becoming more and more a vulgarism.

b *Dai-jōbu (desu)*. It's all right; without fail.

c From *ki* clothing (in *ki-mono*), *kari-ru* to borrow and *arau* to wash.

d "Older" may also be expressed by the idiom *toshi ga ōi*; "younger," by *toshi ga sukunai*.

*no yama wa Nihon no ichiban takai yama des' keredomo, S'wittsur' no ichiban takai yama yori wa hikui. Kono jisho wa warui keredomo, nai yori wa mashi des'. Baka yori kowai mono nashi* (Proverb). *Chichi no yamai wa yoku narimashō to isha ga mōshimashita keredo, dandan waruku narimas'.* *Ido wa f'kai hodo mizu ga ii. Myōasa wa mō chitto hayaku okoshi'le o kure. Kono shippōyaki no suru ga mō s'koshi yas'kereba, kaimashō. Inu wa neko yori mo yaku ni tachimas'.* *Kono uma no uchi de dochira ga yō gozaimas' ka. Sayō de gozaimas', kono hō wa wakakute hayō gozaimasu shi, ano hō wa ōkikute jōbu de gozaimas' ga, dochira mo yō gozaimas'.* *Yuki ga furu hodo mugi ga yoku dekimas'.* *Kō iu baai ni wa ga no hō ga tsūrei des'.* *Sampo wa yoru yori niru no hō ga yoroshū gozaimas'.* *Tegami wo yaru yori atte hanashi'ta hō ga yō gozaimashō.*<sup>a</sup> *Jū ni gwatsu no ni jū ichi nichi wa ichinenjū de ichiban hi ga mijikai. Sore wa nani yori kanashū gozaimas'.* *Kueba kuu hodo umaku naru. Tōkyō no nigiyaku na ko o wa Nihon ichi des'.* *Ontake-san wa Nihon de Nibanme no (takai) yama des'.*<sup>b</sup> *Uji yori sodachi* (Proverb). *Omoite: yori mutsukashii. Undō sureba, suru hodo kokochi ga ii.*

Please speak a little louder (with a little greater voice). Mount Ontake is lower than Mount Fuji. Kyōto is older than Tōkyō. There are more Buddhists than Christians in Japan. I wish to employ (*okitai*) a manservant. Do you desire (*o no:omi des' ka*) a married (*kanai no aru*) one, or (is it) an unmarried one? A married one would be better (is good). Japanese horses are smaller than American horses. Which is more extensive, Washington or Tōkyō (as for Washington and Tōkyō, which of the two is broader)? (The side of) Tōkyō is more extensive. It is said that the waterfall of Nachi is the highest (waterfall) in Japan (*Nihon-jū de*).<sup>c</sup> This riksha is poor (bad), but better than none. In Japan the hot season

<sup>a</sup> Notice that *yori* may be attached to a verb immediately. *Atte* is the subordinative of *au* to meet. For *hanashita* the present tense might be substituted. Compare: *Kōku yori hayaku kake-dashimashita*. Scarcely had he heard it when he ran out (lit. he ran out sooner than he heard it).

<sup>b</sup> Mount Ontake lies between the provinces of Hida and Shinano.

<sup>c</sup> Nachi is in the province of Kishū. The largest cataract is several hundred feet high: the Japanese estimate it at from 800 to 1000 feet.

extends (it is hottest) from the middle of July to (*made ga*) the middle of August. The *tai* is the most highly prized fish in Japan. The Lake of Ōmi is Japan's largest lake; [its] length [is] eighteen *ri*; its width at (*de*) the broadest place is seven *ri*, and (*mata*) its depth at the deepest place is about three hundred feet (thirty *jō*). There is nothing swifter than lightning. In Japan the number of men is greater than [that of the] women, but in Germany it is the reverse. The population of Kyōto is less than [that of] Ōsaka. In travelling (*tabi wo suru ni wa*) the less baggage the better. I can not give (*yararemasen*) even a *mon* more (*yokei wa*) than this. Won't you have (*agaru*) a little more? The shorter the sermon the better. Japan is larger than England. It is said that Germany has the best army (as for the army, Germany is best). The deepest place in (of) the ocean is over (*ijō mo aru*) 8,000 meters. Which is the stronger of these cigars? This one (side) is the stronger. I like pears better than apples. This grammar is poor, but better than none. *Sake* is stronger than beer.

# THE VERB •

## CHAPTER XXXIX

1. The Japanese verb differs in many respects from the English.

(1.) There are no inflections to distinguish number or person. Both must be determined from the context. Ordinarily pronouns are used only when perspicuity requires them (p. 27). But in polite conversation the first and second persons are often plainly indicated by the nature of the verb or auxiliary used, a humble verb like *itasu* being used only in the first (or third) person, while the corresponding honorific verb *nasaru* is used only in the second (or third) person.

(2.) The Japanese language having no negative adverb corresponding to "not," negation is expressed by special inflections.

(3.) Peculiar to the Japanese verb are the subordinative form <sup>b</sup> ending in *te* (negative *zu*), the alternative form <sup>c</sup> in *tari* (*dari*), and the desiderative form in *tai*.

(4.) The use of the passive is much more limited than in English. It may not be used except when the subject is a living thing.

(5.) By means of certain terminations derivative verbs may be formed. There are potential forms indicating ability or possibility, and also causative forms.

(6.) There is nothing corresponding to our infinitive, which is variously rendered. "To eat" is *taberu koto wa* or *taberu no wa*. "Go to see" is *mi ni iku*. Verbs are named by their present form.

---

a *Dō-shi*, from *dō* (c) to move, act.

b This may be a clumsy word, but its meaning is plain. The other terms proposed, "participle" (Aston) and "gerund" (Chamberlain), are not calculated to enlighten a beginner. The subordinative is not an adjective like a participle; much less is it a "past" participle, for it may also indicate an act simultaneous with that of the principal verb. The subordinative is not a noun like a gerund. Moreover the Latin gerund never indicates an act completed with reference to the principal verb, while the subordinative is never future with reference to the principal word of the sentence.

c Called also "frequentative" in other grammars.

2. There are two classes of verbs. In the first the stem remains unchanged; in the second the final vowel of the stem (p. 10) undergoes changes in conjugation. There are also a few irregular verbs.

Stems of verbs of the first class end in *e* or *i*; those of the second class end always in *i*, which in conjugation may be changed to *a*, *e* or *u*.

To derive the stem from the present form in the case of verbs ending in *e-ru* or *i-ru*, like *tabe-ru* eat, *mi-ru* see, drop *ru*. In the case of verbs of the second class, like *kau* buy, substitute *i* for *u*: *kai*.<sup>a</sup> One must be careful not to mistake the verbs described in Ch. XLVIII., which, ending in *eru* and *iru*, apparently belong to the first class, but really belong to the second, like *shaberu* chatter, *hairu* enter, whose stems are *shaberi*, *hairi*. A few verbs have forms of both classes; like *aki-ru* or *aku* be surfeited, *kari-ru* or *karu* borrow, *tari-ru* or *taru* be enough. Distinguish further:

<i>kae-ru</i> change.	<i>kaeru</i> ( <i>kaeri</i> ) return.
<i>i-ru</i> be, dwell.	<i>iru</i> ( <i>iri</i> ) enter, be needed.
<i>he-ru</i> pass through.	<i>heru</i> ( <i>heri</i> ) decrease (intr.).
<i>ne-ru</i> sleep.	<i>neru</i> ( <i>neri</i> ) soften, train.

3. Stems of verbs may be used as substantives (Ch. LXV.).

It must be remembered that in polite conversation with one's equals or superiors<sup>b</sup> the plain forms of the conjugations now to be studied are not used when the verb occupies an important position (pp. 10, 55d). Ordinarily politeness requires that *masu* be added to the stem. In the second (or third) person the honorific *o* may be prefixed and *nasaru* (*nasaimasu*) or *ni naru* (*narimasu*) added: *o kaki nasaimashita* (*ni narimashita*) you (or he) wrote. Similarly *itasu* or *mōsu* may be used with the stem to denote the first person when the act effects other

<sup>a</sup> In the cases of verbs ending in *su* and *tsu* the stems end respectively in *shi* and *chi*, thus: *machi*, from *matsu* wait; *hanashi*, from *hanasu* speak.

<sup>b</sup> Servants in the house of a friend, clerks in a store, employees in a hotel, etc., are to be addressed politely. Even in speaking to one's own servants, riksha-men, coolies, etc., the tendency is to soften the forms of speech. The plain forms seem destined, like the German *du*, to become characteristic of conversation among intimates.

persons: *o susume itashimashita* I exhorted, *o ai mōshimashita* I met. <sup>a</sup>

But in speaking to intimate friends or to inferiors these embellishments may be dispensed with. Men are more free in this respect than women. In monologues, proverbs, etc., the plain forms only are used (See also p. 126d).

4. The tenses of verbs of the first class are inflected thus :

Present	<i>tabe-ru</i> eat <sup>b</sup>	<i>mi-ru</i> see
Past	<i>tabe-ta</i> ate, have eaten	<i>mi-ta</i> saw, have seen
Future or Probable	} <i>tabe-yō</i> , will eat	<i>mi-yō</i> will see
Probable Past		

5. A few explanations concerning the uses of these tenses may be helpful.

(1.) The present (*gen-zai*) is used (a) in general statements, in which case it may be rendered "is wont to," etc.; (b) instead of the future when one means to speak of an event as certain to occur; (c) instead of the past in narratives (the historical present) and in dependent clauses (p. 88e).

(2.) The past (*kwa-ko*) is to be translated as a pluperfect in such phrases as *meshi wo tabeta ato de (nochi ni)* after he had eaten. It sometimes stands for our present: *arimashita* there it is (when one has been looking for a thing), *kimashita* there he comes. This is especially the case when the present denotes a process :

*Sugu ni dekimasu.* It will soon be done.

*Mō dekimashita.* It is now done.

(3.) *Taberu darō (deshō)* and *tabeta darō (deshō)* are common periphrastic forms, used chiefly in the third person. *Tabeyō* is future rather than probable, and is used only in the first person, except in questions or dependent clauses :

<sup>a</sup> What is here said about the use of *itasu* with the stems of verbs does not apply necessarily to its more common use with Chinese compounds: *ben-kyō itashimashita* I (or he) studied.

<sup>b</sup> For brevity's sake the first person only is given in the translation. The verb *taberu* is properly transitive and requires an object. In the first (or third) person it is a polite word; but in the second (or third) *agaru* or *meshi-agaru* is better.

*Ano Seiyōjin wa sashimi wo tabeyō ka.*

[Do you think] that European would eat *sashimi*?

To the future or probable forms such adverbs as *ō-kata* or *ta-bun* "probably" may be added. Often *to omou* is added:

*Kane wo ginkō ye azukeyō to omoimasu.*

I will deposit my money in the bank.

Notice that in dependent clauses the plain forms without such auxiliaries as *masu*, etc., may be used even in polite conversation if the principal verb is polite.

6. In classical Japanese the attributive termination of verbs which in colloquial end in *e-ru*, or *i-ru* (except *mi-ru*, *ni-ru*) is *uru*, and the conclusive is *u*, thus: *akuru*, *aku* from *ake-ru* to open. Forms in *uru* are heard not infrequently:

*Akuru hi gakkō wo yasumimashita.*

The next day (lit. opening day) I stayed away from school.

Similarly the classical past ending *tari* (attributive *taru*) and the future *n* occur sporadically in the colloquial (p. 180).

## Vocabulary

*dorobō* robber.

*kame*, *kame no ko* tortoise, turtle.

*kō* (c) shell, armor.

*kame no kō* } tortoise-shell. <sup>a</sup>

*bek-kō* }

*kushi* comb.

*me*, *ko-no-me* (= *ki no me*) bud.

*tana* shelf.

*hon-dana* bookshelf.

*hon-bako* bookcase (closed box with shelves).

*toko*, *ne-doko* bed.

*asa-meshi* } breakfast

*asa-han* }

*hai* ashes.

*hai-fuki* spittoon (made usually of a section of bamboo).

*hi-moto* origin of conflagration.

*naru* to sound (intr.).

*kami-nari* thunder (*kami* god).

*kami-nari ga ochi-ru* lightning strikes.

*kara* shell, hull.

*kaki-gara* oyster-shell.

*oshi-ire* closet. <sup>b</sup>

*samisen*, *shamisen* three-stringed musical instrument.

*bachi* plectrum, drumstick.

<sup>a</sup> The term *kame no kō* denotes the shell on the back of a tortoise or turtle; *bekkō* is the material obtained from the shell of a species of turtle called *tai-mai*.

<sup>b</sup> A closet with shelves, a cupboard, is *to dana* (door-shelf).

<i>ja</i> (c) serpent (large).	<i>hoi-ru</i> bark, howl.
<i>hebi</i> snake.	<i>sue-ru</i> set, place.
<i>nō</i> dramatic performance with chorus, lyric drama.	<i>kyū wo sue-ru</i> apply the moxa. <sup>a</sup>
<i>fu-ton</i> wadded bedquilt, comforter, cushion.	<i>tame-ru</i> accumulate, save (money, etc.).
<i>ya-gu</i> bedding.	<i>kata-zuke-ru</i> lay aside, put in order, dispose of.
<i>gin-kō</i> bank.	<i>saku. saite</i> bloom.
<i>shō-kin</i> specie.	<i>omoi-dasu, omoidashite</i> call to mind, recall.
<i>yaku-sho</i> office.	<i>hana wo ike-ru</i> keep a flower alive, put a flower into a vase.
<i>zō-ge</i> ivory.	<i>ō-kata</i> } for the most part,
<i>yūbin-sen, yū-sen</i> mail-ship.	<i>ta bun</i> } probably.
<i>ake-ru</i> open (tr.).	<i>sendatte</i> recently.
<i>yo=yoru</i> night.	
<i>yo ga ake-ru</i> day dawns.	
<i>azuke-ru</i> entrust, deposit.	
<i>kutabire-ru</i> } be fatigued.	
<i>tsukare-ru</i> }	

## Exercises

*Washi wa kutabireta kara, sugu ni neyō.*<sup>b</sup> *Omae wa kesa nandoki ni okita ka. Hon wa tansu ye ireru mon' ja (=de wa) nai; hombako ye ireru mon' da. Kurumahiki wa mō meshi wo tabetarō. Soko no teibur' no ue ni aru mono wo doko ye katazukeyō ka. F'ton wo oshiire ni ireyō. Kimi wa tameta kane wo doko no ginkō ye azuketa ka. Sayō, Yokohama Shōkin Ginkō ye azuketa. Danna wa mō yak'sho ye deta ka. Shikkari (certainly) shiranai (p. 130h) keredomo, ōkata detarō. Anata wa ika to iu sakana wo mita koto ga arimas' ka. Sayō, mita bakari de wa naku tabeta koto mo*

<sup>a</sup> The English word "moxa" derived from the Japanese *mogusa*, which designates a preparation of the dried and pulverized leaves of the *yomogi*, a species of *Artemisia*. Physicians of the old school (*kam-pō-i* Chinese-method-physician) apply small portions of *mogusa* to the skin and then set fire to it. This sort of cautery is called *kyū*.

<sup>b</sup> It may be necessary to remind the student once more that the use of a verb in its simple form as a final predicate is permissible only in conversation between those who are on terms of intimacy. But in the following exercises it may be well to use the plain forms for the sake of practice.



gozaimas'.<sup>a</sup> *Naze kono ki ga kareta ka. Uekata ga warui kara, karetarō. Kyō wa nani wo kiyō ka; awase wo kiyō ka, hitoemono wo kiyō ka. Mō shichi ji da kara, okiyō. Mō hachi ji sugi da kara, danna ga okitarō. Anata wa Nihonryōri wo tabeta koto ga arimas' ka. Sayō, ni san do tabeta koto ga arimas' keredomo, umaku wa gozaimasen desh'ta. Kinō taisō kutabireta kara, asa kara ban made ichi nichu neta. Tana kara botamochi ga ochiru yō na koto wa metta ni arimaisen.*<sup>b</sup> *Haif'ki kara ja ga deta.*<sup>c</sup> *Uso kara deta makoto* (Proverb). *Kameido no ike no uchi ni wa koi mo kame no ko mo tak'san iru. Mō attaka ni naru kara, konome ga jiki ni deru darō. Nihonjin wa taigai hayaku okiru. Kono kushi wa bekkō de dekite iru.*<sup>d</sup> *Ki de dekita kushi mo aru deshō. Mō meshi ga dekita ka. Ōkata dekitarō. Kinō no keiko ye gak'sei ga ikutari deta ka. Shikkari oboenai ga, ōkata roku nin gurai wa detarō. Amerika no yūbinsen ga mō sakkī minato wo deta.*<sup>b</sup> *Konaida atsuraetu kutsu ga dekita ka. Sayō kutsuya ga sakkī snotte kimash'ta. Nani yō ga dekita ka.*<sup>i</sup> *Inu ga hoeta kara, dorobō ga nigeta. Nō wo mita koto ga arimas' ka. Sayō, ni san do mita koto ga gozaimas'. Ume no hana no hanashi wo suru to, sugu ni uguis' wo omoidas'.<sup>e</sup> Uguis' wa ume no hana no saku koto ni naki-hajimeru. Kami sama ni wa maiasa akari wo ageru. Konaida tonari no niwa no ki ni kaminari ga ochita ga' shikashi kega wa nakatta.*<sup>h</sup> *Yo ga i'zeru to, karas' ga nakimas'. Kotoshi wa samui kara, ki no me no deru no ga osoi.*<sup>i</sup>

a For *mita bakari de wa naku* one may substitute *mita no wa mochiron no koto* (*mochi-ron* without dispute, of course). The latter is somewhat supercilious. *bakari de wa nakumo*—not only—but also—.

b May be said to one who does not work, hoping to get rich through some lucky accident.

c A proverb apropos when one has been treated to an exaggerated story. For *ja, uma* may be substituted.

d *Dekite iru* or *dekita* (in the next sentence) corresponds to the English "is made of." For *de* one may substitute *kara*. In *dekite iru* the second *i* is almost silent: *dekite-ri*.

e The difference between *wo deru* and *kara deru* (*dete kuru*) is slight, as between the English "leave" and "come out of."

f Said when one has been called: What is it?

g The *uguisu* is usually associated with plum-blossoms in art and poetry.

h No one was hurt. Comp. *kega (wo) suru* to hurt one's self, *kega-nin* an injured person.

i Or, *de-yō ga osoi* (p. 16a).

The riksha-man appearing (*miete*) to be very tired (that he was very tired), went to bed early. Why did you get up so late? To-morrow (*wa*) I will get up early, as I am going on a journey (*tabi ni deru*). Who put this into the bookcase? This is not to be put into the bookcase; it is to be put up (*agete oku*) on the bookshelf. I will put the bedding<sup>a</sup> into the closet presently. The foreigners living (*iru*) in Japan now number about (*hodo da*) 10,000, it is said. In this cage there were three birds until recently (*konaida made*). Recently 2,000 houses were burned in Tōkyō, it is said. Where did the fire originate (was the origin of the fire)? It started (*deta*) from Oyster Shell Street (*Kakigarachi*), it is said. That (*sono*) region, is often (*yoku*) burned, isn't it (*ne*)? Have you ever seen a Japanese monkey? Yes, I have seen two or three. The flowers which you put [into the vase] immediately spoiled (*ikenaku natta*). The Japanese usually go to bed early. This is made of tortoise-shell. Breakfast is probably ready. The maidservant went out (*soto ye*) some time ago (*sakki*). He is a very forgetful person (a person who forgets things well).<sup>b</sup> Japanese often apply the moxa. To whom did you (*kimi*) entrust the money? On New Year's Eve (*Ōmisoka no yoru*) in (of) 1874 I saw the burning (*yake-ru no wo*) of the temple called Zōjōji.<sup>c</sup> The plectrum of a *samisen* is usually made of ivory.

## CHAPTER XL

Conditional	<i>tabe-reba</i> if [I] eat, if [I] should eat	<i>mi-reba</i> if [I] see, if [I] should see
Past "	<i>tabe-tara(ba)</i> if [I] have (had) eaten	<i>mi-tara(ba)</i> if [I] have (had) seen
Imperative	<i>tabe</i> eat! <i>tabe-ro</i> ( <i>o</i> ) <i>tabe na</i> <i>o tabe yo</i>	<i>mi</i> see! <i>mi-ro</i> ( <i>o</i> ) <i>mi na</i> <i>o mi yo</i>

<sup>a</sup> Either *ya-gu* or *toko*.

<sup>b</sup> This may be translated *yoku mono-wasure wo suru hito*. If the sense is that he forgets not facts, but things, such as a umbrellas, etc., (*wasure-mono*), it must be *wasure-mono wo suru hito*. Compare *mono-morai* and *morai-mono*, etc., p. 16.

<sup>c</sup> A temple of the Jōdo sect, with mausolea of some of the shoguns, in Shiba, Tōkyō.

1. In ordinary conversation periphrastic conditional forms like *taberu nara (ba)* are rather more common than *tabereba* etc.<sup>a</sup> But *tabetara (ba)* is not so often displaced by *tabeta naraba*. Another substitute for these forms is *taberu to*. Notice that *to* is used only with the present tense. *Moshi* or *moshi mo* also may be prefixed to a conditional clause.

(1.) For the use of the conditional (*ka-tei-hō*) forms compare p. 99. It is sometimes a matter of indifference whether *tabereba* or *tabetara (ba)* be used. In some cases the past conditional occurs where we should expect the other form :

*Watakuski wa yoru yokei tabereba (tabetara), neraremasen.*

If I eat too much in the evening, I cannot sleep.

*Taikutsu shitara, hon wo yomimashō.*

If time hangs heavy (lit. tedium have done), we shall read.

*O ai nas'ttara, sō itte oite kudasai.*

If you meet him, please tell him so.

*Go sen ga dekītara, sugu ni tabemashō.*

In dinner is ready, I will eat at once.

In the last sentence *dekīreba* would mean : " if it is possible " (to prepare a dinner).

(2.) A conditional inflection may be used in lieu of a connective, especially when the principal verb is in a past tense :

*Nochi ni kiitara, uso de gozaimashita.*

I inquired afterwards and it proved to be (was) a lie.

*Kesa no yasu de wa ame ga furu ka to omottara sukkan haremashita.*

By the looks [of the sky] this morning I judged that it would rain, but it cleared off entirely.

Observe the peculiar use of the conditional in :

*Uketamawareba go byōki de atta sō desu.*

I hear that you have been sick.

(lit. If I hear, you were sick, it is said.)

*Tōkyō mo kawaraba kawaru mon' da.*

How Tōkyō has changed!

(lit. Tōkyō, too, if it changes, changes.)

<sup>a</sup> The conditional clause may be made somewhat indefinite by using the probable form : *Sono kwashi wo tabeyō mon' nara, okka san ni shikararemasu yo.* You will be scolded by your mother, if you eat that cake (to a child).

*Akunin mo areba zennin mo aru.*

There are good men as well as bad men (comp. p. 104f).

It is a peculiarity of the Japanese language that a conditional clause may include an interrogative word :

*Dō oshiemashitara yarashū gozaimashō.*

How shall I explain it to them?

(lit. if how I have taught, will it be well?)

(3). In a sentence containing a conditional clause, *ga*, *no ni*, or *mono wo* may be added to the principal verb or adjective. These have an adversative or concessive sense and, if the ellipsis were filled out, would introduce a statement of a contrary fact, a declaration of doubt concerning the possibility of fulfilling the condition, or an expression of regret :

*Tabako wo yamereba ii ga.*

It would be well for him to give up tobacco.

(lit. if he should give up tobacco good, but...)

The expression *no ni* suggests more strongly the idea of the hopelessness of the situation. Accordingly *no ni* is rarely used with the first person. The *no* in *no ni* may be dispensed with after *ii* and *yokatta*, and is usually omitted after the probable forms *yokarō* and *yokattarō*.

*Mō sukoshi hayaku dekaketara yokatta (yokattarō) ni.*

He ought to have started a little earlier.

In this sentence by substituting *yokarō* we get the sense, "he ought now to be on the way," (but has not yet started).

By means of *ga* or *mono wo (mono ni)*<sup>a</sup> following *ii* or *yokatta* one may render optative expressions beginning with "If only", "Would that," "I wish that," etc. :

*Mō sukoshi yoku koshiraereba ii ga.*

If only he would make [it] a little better!

*Ame ga harereba ii ga.* If only it would clear off!

*Togamereba ii ga.* If he would only warn [him]!

*Togametara yokatta ga.* If he had only warned [him]!

*Mō sukoshi hayaku dekaketara yokatta ga.*

If we had only started a little earlier!

*Shineba yokatta monq wo.* Would that [I] had died!

The last is rather a classical expression.

<sup>a</sup> Compare also the use of *mono wo* with a verb in the past tense: *Yurushite yatta mono wo.* Would that I had forgiven him!

2. In the case of verbs of the first class the plain imperative (*mei-rei-hō*) is identical with the stem. The honorific *o* may be prefixed; e.g., *o kure* (p. 37d). There is a tendency to make the final vowel long: *tabei, mii*. Imperatives like *tabere* and *miye*, formed after the analogy of verbs of the second class, also occur. When *ro* is added the honorific is inadmissible. The particles *yo* and *na* are not pronounced like regular suffixes, the stem of the verb being strongly emphasized, while the particle comes in after a very slight pause as a distinct but unaccented word. The forms *o ta-be na* and *o tabe yo* are used mostly by women. Occasionally men may be heard to say *tabe na*.<sup>a</sup>

But in general the plain imperative forms characterize the speech of the lower classes, or of men who have lost their temper, or of those who choose to speak to their inferiors peremptorily. What has been said in the previous chapter about the use of plain forms of speech among intimate friends does not apply to the imperatives. They are used in quotations concerning one's self (p. 126d) and in military commands: *Ki wo tsuke*. Attention! The forms in *ro*, especially, have an angry or intentionally gruff tone. A father may say to a child who has through disobedience met with a calamity: *Sore miro*. The form in *ro* occurs also in proverbs:

*Narau yori narero* (or *nare*). Practice rather than study.

Among comrades *tamae*, from *tamau*, an honorific auxiliary, is added to the stem:

*To wo shime tamae*. Shut the door!

The form (*o*) *shime nasai* is scarcely more polite than (*o*) *shime na*, assuming that the act is to be done for the benefit of another. But the case is different when the request is made in the interest of the person addressed: *O kake nasai*. Take a seat! But *o shime nas'tte kudasai* is under any circumstances sufficiently polite.

As in English, a request or suggestion may be expressed in the form of a question: *To wo shimenai ka; shimeru n' ja nai ka*. Note also: *To wo shimeru ga ii; shimetau hō ga ii;*

<sup>a</sup> Observe that *kure na* is vulgarly contracted to *kunna*. Compare *sonnara*, from *sore nara*.

*shimereba ii*; <sup>a</sup> *shimetara yokarō*; *shimetara dō desu ka*. Such expressions are rude or familiar. *To wo o shime nas'tara yō gozaimashō* is quite elegant.

The subordinative enters into a great variety of imperative expressions. We add a partial list, placing the least polite first:

<i>shimete ii</i>	<i>shimete mo ii</i>
<i>shimete kure</i> <sup>b</sup>	<i>shimete kurenu ka</i>
<i>shimete moraitai</i>	
<i>shimete o kunnasai</i> (o <i>kure nasai</i> )	
<i>shimete kudasai</i>	<i>shimete kudasaimasen ka</i>
<i>shimete itadakitai</i>	<i>shimete chō-dai</i>
<i>shimete itadakitai mon' desu ne</i>	
<i>shimete itadakimashō</i>	
<i>shimete itadakaremashō ka</i>	
<i>shimete itadakitō gozaimasu</i>	

The subordinative alone may also be used elliptically as a substitute for the imperative; e.g., *Katazukete*. Take that away!

### Vocabulary

<i>kinu</i> silk.	<i>tsuri-ranpu</i> hanging lamp.
<i>kuse</i> habit, propensity.	<i>gaku</i> hanging tablet, framed picture.
<i>omocha</i> toy.	
<i>sh.ba</i> turf, lawn.	<i>am-bai</i> disposition, temper, manner, state of health.
<i>yoso</i> another place, abroad.	<i>gwai-tō</i> overcoat.
<i>amado</i> wooden sliding doors on the outside of a house, closed at night or in time of rain ( <i>ame</i> ).	<i>kon-do</i> this time, next time.
<i>mi-hon</i> sample.	<i>nen-gen</i> term of years (lit. year-limit).
<i>mizu-ire</i> a small vessel holding water for use in writing.	<i>seki-tan</i> coal ( <i>seki</i> = <i>ishi</i> , <i>tan</i> = <i>sumi</i> ).
<i>ō-mizu</i> flood.	<i>shō-ji</i> sliding doors or sashes covered with paper.

<sup>a</sup> *To wo shimereba ii* and *To wo shimeru nara ii* differ slightly. The former means: "You may shut the door;" the latter cannot be used as a substitute for the imperative.

<sup>b</sup> Women say *o kure*.

*shi-taku* preparations.  
*tai-kutsu* tedium, ennui.  
*y-shoku* western food.  
*hoshii* desiring.<sup>a</sup>  
*sosokkashii* hasty, heedless.  
*jū-bun na* sufficient.  
*mushimushi atsui* sultry.  
*kae-ru* change, exchange  
 (with *to* or *ni*).  
*kie-ru* be extinguished, van-  
 ish.  
*mase-ru* mix (tr.).  
*nare-ru* become accustomed  
 (with *ni*), become tame.

*nobi-ru* become long, grow, be  
 extended, be postponed.  
*ume-ru* bury, fill in (*yu ni*  
*mizu wo*).  
*kube-ru* put into (a fire)  
*hi ga kure-ru* the sun sets, the  
 day closes.  
*akari wo tsuke-ru* light a  
 lamp.  
 —*ni mizu wo kake-ru* water.  
*o meshi nasaru* (polite 2, 3)  
 use, eat, wear, ride (*uma*  
*ni*).

### Exercises

*Oi, Chōkichi! sono shiba ni mizu wo kakero (kakete kure).*  
*Yu ga atsusugiru kara, mizu wo ippai umero (umete kure).*  
*Hi ga kurelara, akari wo o ts'ke yo (ts'kete o kure).* *Ima*  
*sugu ni amado wo o shime yo (shimete o kure).* *Zashi'ki no*  
*uchi ga<sup>b</sup> mushimushi atsui kara, shōji wo akete kurero (kure).*  
*Kodomo ga yoso ye detara, omocha wo o katazuke (katasukete*  
*o kure).* *Kondo kara (kore kara) motto ki wo o ts'ke yo (ts'kete*  
*o kure).* *Sh'ta ni iro (ore).<sup>c</sup> Kimi wa ash'ta no asa nan ji*  
*ni okiru ka. Yo ga aketaro, okiyō. Okitara, sugu ni gozen*  
*wo tabeyō. Gozen ga dekitaraba, sugu ni motte koi. Kuruma*  
*no sh'taku ga dekitara, dekakeyō. Kuruma no sh'taku ga*  
*hayaku dekireba ii ga. Mochi wo hitotsu o kure. Omae motto*  
*ki wo ts'ketara yokatta ni; amari sosokkashii koto wo sh'ta.*  
*Mō s'koshi makete o kure. Mō chitto maketara dō darō.*  
*Motto hayaku gwaikokugo no keiko wo hajimetara yokatta ni.*

<sup>a</sup> *Kodomo wa omocha ga hoshikute nante inasu.* The child cries for (desiring) the toy. The particle *wo* is also used with *hoshii*, but less commonly, except with the derivative verb *hoshigaru*: *omocha wo hoshigatte.*

<sup>b</sup> Lit. the interior of the room.

<sup>c</sup> From *iru* or *oru*. "Down with you!" was the cry of those who in feudal times had charge of the train of a *daimyō* or other person of high rank. The people on the street were then expected to prostrate themselves to the ground as the procession went by.

*Kore wa dō iu ambai ni oshietara yō gozaimashō. Kōmban tsuki ga dereba ii ga. Konna ni samui no nara, motto atsui kimono wo kitara yokatta ni. Kono tsuriramp' ga ochitara taihen des'.*<sup>a</sup> *Yuki ga toketara, ōmizu ga deru ka mo shirenai.*<sup>b</sup> *Hayaku gozen wo o koshirae (koshiraete o kure). Taikutsu da kara, kisha ga hayaku dereba ii ga.*<sup>c</sup> *Kutabiretara, yamemashō. Ano hito ga<sup>d</sup> buntē wo koshiraereba (koshiraetara) yō gozaimashō. Michi wo tazunetara yokatta ni. Gwaikokujin ga Nihon no shokumotsu ni naretara yō gozaimashō. Kono tori ga naretara omoshirokarō. S'koshi narereba (naretara), sugu ni dekimas'. Kyōshi wa shosei wo nagaku oshiereba, oshieru hodo jōsu ni narimas'.*<sup>e</sup> *Kono tegami wo yūbinbako ye irete kudasai. Kinu no mihon wo misete chōdai. Kane ga dekireba, dekiru hodo hoshi'ku naru.*

I wish he would give up tobacco. How (*dō sh'te*) shall I get rid of this habit (if how I have stopped this habit, will it be good)? Put a little water into this *misuire*. This *sake* is too strong: mix [it with] a little water. This book is defective (bad): exchange it for a good one. As it is very cold, you might put on a little more coal (if you have put on a little more coal, it will be well). Shut the door tight (*shikkari to*). If (*moshi*) you go out, put on [your] overcoat. To-morrow when the day dawns (if the day has dawned) I will start on a journey (*tabi ni deru*). Get up earlier to-morrow than [you did] this morning. When you get up, open the *amado* at once. If only we had started out earlier!<sup>f</sup> It will be well to inquire (if we have inquired) the way. I wish breakfast would be served (*dekiru*) soon. Put (*tsukeru*) this baggage upon the horse. It will be well to begin the study of English as early as possible. If only (they) had put (*ireru*) this sick person into

a *Taihen desu* it will be terrible (*tai-hen* great change). This phrase is often used as an expression of consternation.

b *Ōmizu ga deru* there is (will be) a flood. By *ka mo shirenai* (see p. 190a) one may often render the English "may," "likely."

c *Taikutsu da (desu)* it is wearisome, [I] am tired.

d Notice that the particle is *ga*, not *wa* (comp. p. 190b): He would be the man to write a grammar.

e Compare p. 136.

f Instead of the past conditional, one may also use the past tense with *hō* (p. 136).



the hospital! If that picture falls (past), it will be a terrible smash (*taihen*). Hang the picture on the wall. I wish I could become accustomed to foreign food. When you awake (p. 91g —past), get up at once. It will probably be sufficient if you sleep (past) from ten p.m. (*yoru*) to six a. m. (*asa*). I wish the term of years were longer (became long).

## CHAPTER XLI

The negative indicative forms are :

Present	<i>tabe-nai</i>	<i>mi-nai</i>
	<i>tabe-nu, tabe-n</i> do not eat	<i>mi-nu, mi-n</i> do not see
Past	<i>tabe-nakatta</i>	<i>mi-nakatta</i>
	<i>tabe-nanda</i> did not eat	<i>mi-nanda</i> did not see
	have not eaten	have not seen
Future or	<i>tabe-mai</i>	<i>mi-mai</i>
Probable	<i>tabe-nakarō</i> will hardly eat	<i>mi-nakarō</i> will hardly see
	Probable	<i>tabe-nakattarō</i>
Past	<i>tabe-nandarō</i> probably did not eat	<i>mi-nandarō</i> probably did not see
	might not have eaten	might not have seen

The form *tabenai* is more common than *tabenu*. As has been observed before (p. 100), the form ending in *nai* may be inflected, the adverbial form in *naku* being used with especial frequency before *naru* to become ; e.g., *miénaku naru* to become invisible. Compare *nakunaru*, p. 108a.

In some provinces *tabenanda* is more common than *tabenakatta*, but the latter is the usual form in most parts of the country.

For the future or probable tense *taberumai* also occurs. *Tabenakarō* and such periphrastic forms as *tabenai darō*, *tabenakatta darō*, etc., like the corresponding positive forms, are used chiefly in the third person and denote a mere conjecture. The form in *mai* differs from the corresponding positive form in *yō* in that it is not so strongly predictive and may be used

in the third person. Thus in reply to the question *Ano Seiyō-jin wa sashimi wo tabeyō ka* one may say, *Tabemai*; but if the reply were positive, it would be, *Taberu darō*, not, *Tabeyō*.<sup>a</sup>

The present is often used as a substitute for the past :

*Neta ka nenai ka wakarimasen.*

I don't know whether I slept or not.

*Kesa no shimbun wa mada mimasen.*

I have not yet seen this morning's newspaper.

Notice the use of negative verbs with *mae*, *uchi* and *kagiri* :

*Shimbun wo minai mae ni shitte imashita.*

I knew it before I saw the newspapers.

*Minai uchi wa wakarimasen.* I can't judge until I see it.

*Minai kagiri wa shinjiraremasen.*

I can't believe that unless I see it.

Observe further that with *mae* and *uchi* when a fact is stated, *ni* is used; but when the predicate is negative, *wa* is the correct particle. *Kagiri* always refers to a future or supposed event.

The classical negative ending *zu* (attributive, *nu* or *saru*) :

*Chū-shin ni (ji) kun ni tsukaezu.*

A loyal subject serves not two lords.

## Vocabulary

*o shiroi* face-powder.

*ko-no-ha=ki no ha* leaf.

*fuda* card, label, placard.

*shō-fuda* price-mark, from

*shō* (c) right, true, real.

*ya-kwai* evening party.

*yō-kō* travelling abroad. <sup>b</sup>

*ryō-kō* travelling.

*ryōkō-ken* passport.

*hageshi* violent.

*gebi-ru* be vulgar.

*hae-ru* sprout, grow.

*same-ru* become cool.

*yamu, yande* cease (intr.).

*amado wo tate-ru* shut up

the house, "put up the

shutters."

*makase-ru* commit, entrust,

leave. <sup>c</sup>

*kokoro ni makase-ru* not act-

ing as one wishes, contrary

to one's preferences (of

things).

—*wo tabi suru* travel through.

*shuppan suru* sail (*shutsu=*

*de-ru, han=ho*).

<sup>a</sup> But *tabeyō (ka) to omoimasu* or *tabenashō* may be used of the third person.

<sup>b</sup> Compare *yō fuku, yō-shoku*, etc. *Yō* means ocean; *Sei-yō*, western ocean. *kō=yuku* to go. In the next word *ryō=tabi suru*.

<sup>c</sup> *O makase mōshimasu.* I give you *carte blanche*.

## Exercises

*Nihon de wa amari ningen no sō wo koshiraete taenai.<sup>a</sup> Kouna koto wa mutsukashikute dekinai. Sono kotoba wo mochiinai koto wa nai keredomo, metta ni mochiinai. Ni-motsu ga uma kara ochinai yō ni ki wo tsukero. Kono hon wa go satsu ni naru hasu da ga, mada issatsu sh'ka denai.<sup>b</sup> Tak'san maketa kara, mō makemai. S'koshi mo maken ka. Kesa no shimbun wo mita ka. Iie, mada minai. Sakujitsu wa kaze ga hageshikute june ga denakatta keredomo, konnichi wa kaze ga yanda kara, mina detarō. Yūbinsen ga sakujitsu shuppan sh'ita ka. Kaze ga tsuyokatta kara, denakattarō. Hibachi no hi ga kienai yō ni ki wo ts'kete o kure. Watakushi wa mainichi sampo ni deru ga, sakujitsu wa amari tenki ga warui no de denakatta. Douts'jin wa F'rans' no ik'sa de wa ichi do mo makenakatta. Kono byōnin wa mada okinai hō ga ii to isha ga mōshimash'ita. Nihon ni wa chitto mo niku wo taben hito ga arimas'. Kurakute nani mo mienai. Kippu no nai hito wa irenai (admit) sō des'. Sono hito wa Tōkei ni wa mō imai. Mutsukashii mono, dekinai hasu da. Hito no kuchi ni to wo tateru koto ga dekinai.<sup>c</sup> Uri no tane ni nasubi wa haenu (Proverb.) Izen wa yoku Nihongo de hanashi ga dekita keredomo, mina wasureta kara, mō hanashi ga dekinai. Dekinai koto wa nai keredomo, mutsukashikarō. Mō kisha ga deta ka. Mada demai.<sup>d</sup> Atsuraeta yōf'ku ga mada dekinai. Nihon de wa ni jū san shi wo sugita onna wa amari o shiroi wo ts'kenai. Samui no ni naze hibachi ni hi wo<sup>e</sup> irenai ka. Sakurazumi wa<sup>f</sup> takai kara, katō no hito wa mochiiru koto ga dekinai. Kane ga tak'san nakereba yōkō ga (yōkō suru koto ga) dekinai. Kokoro ni makasen' mono wa kodakara.<sup>g</sup>*

<sup>a</sup> When the subordinative is closely connected with a negative verb the negative termination affects it also.

<sup>b</sup> To be translated by means of the perfect tense.

<sup>c</sup> The usual form of the proverb is: *Hito no kuchi ni to wa taterarenai* (p. 108b).

<sup>d</sup> To be translated as if it were a probable past.

<sup>e</sup> Here *hi* means live coals.

<sup>f</sup> Originally charcoal from the town of Sakura east of Tokyo. The term has come to mean "first class charcoal."

<sup>g</sup> This expression fits into the mouth of a childless person. Children (*ko*) are treasures (*takara*) which cannot be obtained by every one who wants them.

That will hardly be feasible, as it is too difficult. This character (*wa*) is seldom used (one seldom uses). The leaves of the trees have not yet fallen (pr.). Of (*wa*) this dictionary but (*sh'ka*) five volumes have as yet been issued (pr.); altogether (*mina de*) there are to be twenty volumes. As the price-mark is attached (*tsuite iru*), he will hardly deduct [anything]. Take care that the bath (*yu*) does not become cool. He is still sleeping, not yet having become sober.<sup>a</sup> In (*de wa*) a quarrel he is seldom beaten by any one (*hito ni*). Until I see it, I cannot judge whether it is good or bad. There are (not being is not) wolves in (*ni mo*) Japan, but (*ga*) there are not many (*tak'san wa inai*). Before (*izen ni wa*) the 32nd year of Meij Europeans could not dwell (*sakkyo suru*) in the interior. At that time (*jibun*) also they could not travel through the interior without (*nak'te wa*) a passport. In the interior of Japan there are places (*tokoro mo aru*) where [the people] seldom eat fish. As he did not live in Japan a long time (*nagaku*), he probably cannot speak Japanese.<sup>b</sup> Why haven't you shut up the house (pr.)? It seems that of (*wa*) this dictionary just one volume is lacking (is not enough). I have not seen (pr.) this play (*shibai*), but they say its very interesting. Of this camellia as yet not one blossom has fallen (pr.). It is his intention (*tsumori de iru* p. 95a) to give up *sake*, but he will hardly be able [to do so]. This word has gone out of use (become not used), because it is too vulgar (*gebite iru*). The ship is already out of sight (has become invisible.) Is Siam (*Shan*) a civilized or an uncivilized country? The snow has not yet thawed (pr.). Having gone (*deru*) to an evening party last night, I was up (did not sleep) the whole night. The leaves of the bamboo do not fall even in winter (*fuyu ni natte mo*).

<sup>a</sup> See pp. 81g and 104h.

<sup>b</sup> One may say simply: *Nippongo wa dekimai*. If the person spoken of is still living in Japan, use the present tense: *mai* has not been living.

## CHAPTER XLII

Negative	<i>tabe-nakereba</i>	<i>mi-nakereba</i>
Conditional	<i>tabe n'kereba</i>	<i>mi-n'kereba</i>
	<i>tabe-nakerya</i>	<i>mi-nakerya</i>
	<i>tabe neba</i>	<i>mi-neba</i>
	if [I] do not eat	if [I] do not see
	if [I] should not eat	if [I] should not see
Negative Past	<i>tabe-nakattara (ba)</i>	<i>mi-nakattara (ba)</i>
Conditional	<i>tabe-nandara (ba)</i>	<i>mi-nandara (ba)</i>
	if [I] have not eaten	if [I] have not seen
	if [I] had not eaten	if [I] had not seen
Negative	<i>tabe-ru na</i>	<i>mi-ru na</i>
Imperative	<i>o tabe de nai yo</i>	<i>o mi de nai yo</i>
	don't eat!	don't look!

*Tabenai nara (ba)*<sup>a</sup> may be substituted for *tabenakereba*; *tabenakatta nara (ba)* for *tabenakattara*. Instead of the conditional forms *tabenai to* may be used.

By means of the conditional with *naranai (narimasen)* or *ikenai (ikemasen)*<sup>b</sup> the English "ought" or "must" may be rendered:

*Minakereba narimasen.* [I] must see it.

There is scarcely any difference between *naranai* and *ikenai*. The former conveys the sense of obligation, while the latter rather suggests the inconvenient consequences that will follow in case the condition is not fulfilled.

*Taberu na* corresponds to the positive *tabero*; *o tabe de nai yo*, to *o tube yo*. But a student may say to another, *To wo shimeru na* (or *shime tamau na*), though he would hardly say *shimero*. Other phrastic forms are:

a The negative probable form is occasionally found in this position: *tabe-nakarō mon' nara* (Comp. p. 148a).

b For *ikenai* see p. 29b. *Naranai* it does not become. *Dō mo narana* I can't manage it in any way. Compare: *Fushigi de naranai*. It is too strange (lit. being marvelous, it does not become). From what is said above it appears that there is really no equivalent for "ought" or "must" in Japanese. Compare also the use of *beki* and *hasu* (p. 111).

*To wo shimeru mon' ja nai shimete kudasaru na*  
*(o) shime nasaru na shimenakute mo ii*  
*shimenai (hō) ga ii shimenaide (o) kure*  
*shimete kureru na shimenaide kudasai*  
*shimenaide moritai shimete kudasaimasu na, etc.*

For *shimenaide* see p. 106a. A distinction may be drawn between *(o) shime nasaru na* and *shimete kureru na*. The former implies that the speaker makes the request in behalf of the person addressed or of others; the latter, that the speaker himself is the one for whose benefit the act is to be done. Compare what is said about *o shime nasai* (p. 150).

### Vocabulary

<i>kisu</i> wound, scar. <sup>a</sup>	<i>kuwashii</i> minute, detailed,
<i>nae</i> young plant, seedling	well versed.
rice, etc.).	<i>awase-ru</i> cause to meet, join,
<i>ya-ne</i> roof.	adjust.
<i>yane-ya</i> roofer.	<i>ki-ne-ru</i> } fix, decide. <sup>b</sup>
<i>ki-no-ko</i> mushroom.	<i>sadame-ru</i> }
<i>ku</i> district, ward.	<i>okure-ru</i> be late.
<i>yaku, hon-yaku</i> translation.	<i>shirabe-ru</i> inquire, investi-
<i>do-sō</i> storehouse, "godown"	gate.
(do earth, sō = kura).	<i>todoke-ru</i> deliver (p. 59a),
<i>ji-kan</i> period of time, time,	report officially.
hour ( <i>ji</i> = <i>toki</i> , <i>kan</i> = <i>aida</i> ).	<i>yashinai</i> nourish, support.
<i>jo-chū</i> maidservant (more	<i>yashinai ni naru</i> nutritious.
polite than <i>ge-jo</i> ).	<i>hiki-komoru</i> stay at home
<i>ki-chu</i> mourning.	(on account of mourning or
<i>kō-yaku</i> medicinal plaster.	sickness).
<i>matsuri-bi</i> } festival day,	<i>ue-tsuke-ru</i> plant.
<i>sai-jitsu</i> (c) } holyday.	<i>moshi, moshi mo</i> if (with
<i>shō-sho</i> certificate.	conditional form, <i>to</i> or <i>toki</i>
<i>akarui</i> light, clear.	<i>wa</i> ).

<sup>a</sup> *kisu* is more concrete than *kega*. Thus one may say: *Te ni kisu ga aru*, out not *Te ni kega ga aru*. To wound a person is *kisu wo tsuke-ru*; to be wounded, *kega (wo) suru*.

<sup>b</sup> *kimeru* is more common in the colloquial than *sadameru*.

*kesshite* positively, never *se-hi (ni)* by all means, necessarily, <sup>a</sup> (with a negative word).  
*maru de* entirely.

## Exercises

*Kono hana wa mizu wo kakenakereba karemashō. Kono kinoko wa doku da kara, kesshite o tabe de nai yo. Kono byōnin wa yashinai ni naru mono wo tabenakereba yowarimashō. Omae hayaku yasumu kara, hayaku okinakereba ikenai. Watakushi no tokei wa okureta kara, awasenakereba narimasen.<sup>b</sup> Mada akarui kara, amado wo shimete kureru na. Nikkō wo minakereba, kekkō to iu na.<sup>c</sup> Jibiki de minakereba<sup>d</sup> wakarimasen. Kono ji wa shijū sono imi de mochiinakereba narimasen ka. Iie shijū sono imi de mochiinakereba naranai to iu koto wa arimasen.<sup>e</sup> Kono sh sho wa yaku wo ts'kenakereba, gwaikokujin ni wa wakarimasen.<sup>f</sup> Ningen wa zehi niku wo tabenakereba naranai koto wa nai. Tabako wa dōku des' kara, yamenakereba narimasen. Kono sakana wo shio ni o ts'ke de nai yo.<sup>g</sup> Moshi hayaku dozō no to wo shimenakattara, maru de yaketa deshō. Yaneya ga ano toki ni ki wo ts'kenakattara, ochita deshō. Moshi mado wo akenakattara, tori ga nigenakattarō. Konnichi wa saijitsu des' kara, ii kimono wo kinakereba narimasen. Kore wo motto kuwash'ku shirabenakereba narimasen. Samui kara, mado wo akete*

a From *se* (c) good and its opposite *hi*. One may say also: *sehi tomo* (tomo together).

b Compare: *Tokei ga susunde imasu*. The clock is fast (*susumu* advance). *Tokei ga atte imasu*. The clock is just right (*au* meet). To set the clock is *tokei wo awase-ru*,—*awaseru* being the causative of *au*.

c *Nikkō*, from *nichi* sun and *kyō* light, is famous all over Japan not only for its beautiful scenery, but also for its magnificent temples. *Kekkō to iu na* don't say "splendid." You have no right to use the word *kekkō* until the temples and gates of *Nikkō* have taught you its meaning.

d *Jibiki de miru* look up in a dictionary. *Jibiki wo hiite miru* (p. 88c) is the usual idiom.

e Here *to iu* before *koto* may be omitted. The accumulation of many negative words in one sentence is more common than in English.

f Observe that *wakaru* and *dekiru* are really impersonal (pp. 17d, 34d) verbs and that the subject of the English sentence accordingly takes the postposition *ni*.

g Distinguish —*shio ni tsukeru* to pickle in salt (p. 108b) and —*ni shio wo tsuke-ru* to put salt on.

*kururu na. Kono kuse wo yamenai to ikenai. Kodomo ga umareru to, ku-yak'sho ni todokenakereba narimasen. Kichū des' kara, hikikomotte inakereba narimasen.*

Don't open this bottle. Don't eat too much (*yokei*). You must water this flower (*ni* or *ni wa*), every day. If you don't water this camellia (*wa* or *ni wa*) every day, the flowers will fall off (*ochi-ru*). If [we] don't eat that (*sore wa*), it will spoil (become bad). If I don't inquire<sup>a</sup> of some one (*hito ni*), I shall not understand. If I had not put a plaster on the wound (*wa*), it might have become worse (bad) As I get up early, I must go to bed early. Don't go out (*soto ye*) while I am absent (in the time of my absence). The maidservant must go out to buy things (p. 52d).<sup>b</sup> The farmers must now (*kore kara*) plant their [rice] seedlings. Since somebody has come, I must get up. If the window is not shut (one does not shut the window), the dust will enter (*haitte kuru*). At nine o'clock<sup>c</sup> I must go to the district-office. It will be (pr.) inconvenient (*futsugō*), if the clothes are not done by New Year's.<sup>d</sup> If [they] had not stopped the train at that time, there might have been considerable (*suibun*) loss of life. When (from when) must I begin my studies (*keiko*)? Must [I] fix the hours of study at once (*mō jiki ni*)? I hope there are no mosquitoes.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The most common expression for "inquire." in the colloquial is *kiite mi-ru*.

<sup>b</sup> In sentences like this and the one following, *wa* must be used with the subject, because logically it is the subject of the whole sentence, and not merely of the conditional clause.

<sup>c</sup> The precise equivalent of "at nine o'clock" is *ku ji ni*. Of a performance which begins at nine we may say *ku ji kara. Kisha ga ku ji ni tō-chaku shimasu*. The train arrives at nine o'clock. *Ku ji kara ensetsu-kwai wo hirakimasu*. We will open the lecture-meeting at nine o'clock.

<sup>d</sup> "By New Year's" is to be rendered: *shinnen made ni*. Distinguish: *Ban made hon wo yomimasu*. I will read the book [continuously] until this evening. *Ban made ni hon wo yomimasu*. I shall have read the book by this evening.

<sup>e</sup> This is to be translated like the examples in Ch. XL: If there are no mosquitoes, good, but... Sentences beginning with "I hope" "I fear," etc., must always be paraphrased in some such manner: *O kega de mo nakereba ii (ga)*, I hope you are not hurt. *Wakatta tsumori desu*. I hope I understand. *Hayaku naoshitai mono desu*. I hope I shall soon be well. *Fume ni yowanakereba ii (ga)*, I fear I shall be seasick. *Kimi wa kondo no shiken ni rakudai suru ka mo shirenai*. I fear you will fail in the examination. Sometimes the simple probable or future form of the verb suffices: *Dekimashō (to onomimasu)*. I hope it may be accomplished. *Dekimasumai (to onomimasu)*. I fear it may not be accomplished.



## CHAPTER XLIII

The positive subordinative of the verb, as of the adjective, ends in *te*; e. g., *tabe-te*, *mi-te*.<sup>a</sup>

1. It is a peculiarity of the Japanese colloquial that of two sentences which in English would naturally be coördinate one is subordinated to the other by means of *te*:<sup>b</sup>

*Mado wo shimete kimashō ka.*

Shall I go and shut the window? (p. 88g).

*Tokiwa wa<sup>c</sup> kodomo wo san nin tsurete nigemashita.*

Tokiwa took the three children and fled.

The second sentence may also be translated: Tokiwa fled with the three children.

2. Subordinatives are frequently to be translated by means of adverbs or adverbial expressions; e. g., *nen wo irete* carefully, *hajimete* for the first time, *sore ni hiki-kaete* on the contrary.

3. Often in cases where the English employs a simple verb the Japanese combines the verb in the form of the subordinative with another verb.

*tsurete kuru* bring (a person or domestic animal).

*tsurete yuku* take (a person or domestic animal).

*dete kuru* come out (making one's exit come).

*kurabete miru* compare (comparing see).

*tamete oku* save (saving put).

*karete shimau* die (withering finish—of a plant).

*oshiete ageru* inform (a superior).

*oshiete kureru* (*kudasaru*) instruct (an inferior).

*oshiete yaru* teach (brusque).

*Sansan shikatte yarimashita.* [I] scolded [him] severely.

4. The subordinative with *iru* or *oru* denotes continued or unfinished action, especially action that is in progress at some definite time:

a This *te* combined with *ni*, *mi*, *bi* of stems of verbs of the second class becomes *nde*; *shinde*, from *shinu*, die; *yonde*, from *yomu* read; *yonde*, from *yobu* call.

b In the classical language the stem performs the same function as the subordinative in the colloquial. This usage appears in the speech of the learned, in orations and in long stories.

c Tokiwa was a famous beauty, concubine of Yoshitomo and mother of Yoshitsune.

*Gozen wo tabete orimasu.* He is (now) eating.

*Gozen wo tabete imashita.* He was eating (at the time).

In this construction *iru* or *oru* is a mere auxiliary and may be used also of inanimate things (p. 63c).<sup>a</sup> Notice contractions like *kiiteru* or *kiitoru* am listening, or inquiring, *yonderu* or *yondoru* am reading, or calling. In *kiite iru* the *i* is elided; in *kiite oru*, the *e*.

5. The subordinative with *iru* or *oru* may denote a condition that is the result of an action and may in some cases be translated by means of the perfect tense.

*Ochite iru.* It is down (having fallen).

*Kite iru.* He is here (having come).

*Dete iru.* He is out (having gone out).

*Yōfuku wo kite imasu.*

He is wearing foreign clothes (having put them on).

*Megane wo kakete imasu.*

He is wearing glasses (having put them on).

*Shin ja ni natte orimasu.*

He is a believer (having become one).

But in the case of transitive verbs *aru* is more commonly used with the subordinative to express a condition, the completed act rather than the agent being the object of attention.

*Irete aru.* They are inside (= *haitte iru*).

*Tomete aru.* I have a note of it (*tome-ru* make a note of).

*Kaite aru.* It stands written.

*Isu wa koshiraete arimasu.*

The chairs are finished. I have made the chairs.

*Daidokoro ni mizu ga (wo) hiite aru.*

Water is brought (in pipes) to the kitchen.

6. If *ii* or *yoroshii* follows a subordinative, the idea of permission or acquiescence is conveyed:

*Kyō asobi ni dete ii.*

You may take a vacation to-day (go out to play).

<sup>a</sup> Students of the English language have revived an obsolete idiom in order to translate progressive forms like "I am going," etc., using *tsutsu aru* with the stem of the verb: *iki tsutsu aru* is going. This construction is not infrequently heard in speeches, etc. The subordinative of an intransitive verb may be progressive or perfect, as explained above; but *iki tsutsu aru* is free from ambiguity.

7. The postposition *kara* may follow the subordinative (p. 96c), giving the clause a temporal meaning. In the following sentence *kara* may also be omitted:

*Konna koto wa umarete kara hajimete da.*

It is the first time since I was born that I have seen such a thing.

8. The subordinative may be used elliptically:

*Yoku ki wo tsukete.* Take good care!

*Cha wo irete.* Make the tea!

*Yume bakkari mite (yoku yasumimasen).*

I did nothing but dream.

Notice also *shitte no tōri* as you know.

### Vocabulary

*fuchi* rim, border.

*kata* shoulder.

*saka* slope, ascent.

*su* vinegar.

*tako* kite.

*tako wo age-ru* fly a kite.

*ato* track, trace.

*ashi-ato* foot-print.

*hiru-meshi* } noonday meal,

*hiru-han* } luncheon, tiffin.

*kami*=*ue* above.

*shimo*=*shita* below.

*kane-ire*, *zeni-ire* purse.

*zoku* outlaw, rebel, robber.

*dai*, *dai-ka* price. <sup>a</sup>

*dai-kon* large radish (lit. great root).

*hyō-tan* gourd (used mostly for carrying small quantities of *sake* when traveling), flask.

*sa-tō* sugar.

*toku-i* customer.

*kei-hō* criminal law, criminal code.

*zai-nin* (= *tsumi-bito*) criminal.

*kō-chō* head of a school. <sup>b</sup>

*sha-rei* honorarium, fee.

*sho-motsu* book. <sup>c</sup>

*rem-pei* military drill.

*ryō-sen* fishing boat.

*kan-goku*, *kangoku-sho* prison.

*gwai-mu-shō* Department of Foreign Affairs.

*nai-mu-shō* Department of the Interior, Home Office.

*shi-hō-shō* Department of Justice.

*sen no* former.

*sen ni* formerly.

*kesu* extinguish, erase.

a *Dai* substitute, *ka* value. *Dai* is more concrete than *nedan*.

b From *kō* school (in *gakkō*) and *chō* senior. *Chō* enters into a great many compounds; e g., *in-chō* superintendent of a hospital (*byō-in*), *shi-chō* mayor of a city, *son-chō* head of a village, *chō-chō* burgess, *sen-chō* captain of a ship, etc.

c From *sho*=*kaku* write and *motsu*=*mono* thing. But *kaki-mono*, meaning document, is not synonymous with *sho-motsu*

*hi-keshi* } fireman.  
*shō-bō-fu* }

*kosu* cross (a mountain or river).

*moe-ru* burn (intr.).

*seme-ru* attack, assault.

*tome-ru* make a note of.

*wake-ru* divide.

—*ni tsutomeru* be diligent.

—*ni tsutomeru* be employed in.

*ki-kae-ru* change (clothes).

*osore-ru* fear.

*osore-iru* [am] very much obliged (lit. am in dread).

*yuru* swing, shake (tr.).

*ji-shin ga yuru* (or *suru*) there is an earthquake.

*me-gane wo kake-ru* put on spectacles.

*te-gami wo fūzuru* seal a letter.  
*yatto* with difficulty, at last.

### Exercises

*S'koshi wakete kure. Kore wa hambun wakete agemashō* (p. 84f). *Hara ga warui kara, (mono wo) hikaete tabenakereba narimasen to isha ga iimash'ta. O me ni kakemashō ka* (p. 44a). *Dōzo misete kudasai. Ima wa kōgi no jikan dake himete oite<sup>a</sup> ato de sharei no koto wo kimemashō. Odawara no shiro wa<sup>b</sup> Hideyoshi ga shichikagetsu hodo semete yatto ochimash'ta. Ano hito wa itsu mo rasha no kimono wo kite imas'. Mō o kyaku ga mina kite orimas' ka. Hitori ka f'tari sh'ka kite imasen. Kono gakkō no kyōshi wa kōchō wo irete (including) shichi nin des'. Sakuban gozen wo tabete ita toki ni jishin ga yurimash'ta kara, sugu ni to wo akete soto ye nigemash'ta. Sōketsu to iu Shinajin wa tori no ashiato wo mite hajimete ji wo koshiraeta to iu hanashi ga arimas'. Kono shimbun wo mite kara (mitara) sampo ni demashō. Keihō wo shirabete minakereba sono bats' wa wakarimasen. Kōhii ni satō wo irete agemashō ka. Iie, satō wa itadakimasen. Akete misete kure. Danna wa doko ni imas' ka. Ima o yu kara dete kimono wo kikaete irasshaimas'. Tegami wa dekite imas', shikashi mada fūjite arimasen. Naporeon issei wa Rosha de makete kara ni san nin no tomo wo tsurete F'rans' ye nigete kintash'ta. Soko ni ochite iru shomots' wo katasukete kure.*

a The subordinative of *oku*, used here as an auxiliary (Ch. LV.). *Dake* is often equivalent to "only" (p. 48b).

b Odawara, on the *Tō-kai-dō* (east-sea-road) between Tōkyō and Hakone, was in the XVI. Century the castle-town of the Hōjō family. *Ochiru* may be used, like the English "fall," of the surrender of a castle or fort.

*Nihonjin wa kaki wo (oysters) su to shōyu ni ts'kete tabemas'. Ano zainin wa kangok'sho wo dete kara ii hito ni narimash'ta. Hyōtan wo kata ni kakete hanami ni ikimash'ta. Ano sensei ni Doitsugo wo oshiete moraimash'ta. O tokui sama des' kara, chitto makete agemashō. Kaneire wo wasurete kite komarimas'. Chiisai kodomo ni wa e wo misete oshiemas'. Ano kata wa doko no yak'sho ni ts'tomete irasshaimas' ka. Sen ni wa naimushō ni ts'tomete imash'ta ga ima wa gwaimushō ni ts'tomete imas'. Kimbuchi no (gold-rimmed) megane wo kakete imas'. Mukashi wa kami-shimo wo<sup>a</sup> kite nō wo mimash'ta. Dōzo, ichido tazunete mite kudasai. Dokka ni tomete arimas'. Ichiban o shimai no shōgun wa konogoro made ikite irasshaimash'ta; ima mo ikite irassharu ka dō ka zonzimasen. Go jū no saka wo kosh'te imas'.<sup>b</sup> Osore-irimash'te gozaimas'.<sup>c</sup>*

The Japanese eat a great deal of (*yoku*) *daikon*, pickling it in salt (p. 160g). Shall I give you half? The fishing boats are all out at sea. After this I will eat moderately. He wears poor (bad) clothes when he is at work (*shigoto wo suru*). Are the pupils all here? [There] are five who (*no ga*) have not yet come. To (*ni wa*) publish the book *yen* 500 are required (*kakaru*),<sup>d</sup> including the cost of the paper (*kami-dai*). The master has eaten lunch and is resting (*yasunde irasshaimas'*). Shall I open the door for you? Please open [it]. In Japan tea is drunk with milk and sugar (do they drink tea putting into [it] milk and sugar)? After the rebel army (*so-tu-gun*) was defeated in Ōshū, it fled (fleeing went) to Yezo. Is the gardener here? Yes, he is watering the flowers in the garden. That official is employed at the Department of Justice. He is not like his older brother. Taikō's face resembled a monkey's, it is said. The soldiers are all out for drill. The children (of

a *Kami-shimo*, composed of *kata-ginu* (shoulder-garment) and *hakama*, was formerly gentlemen's full dress.

b Is past fifty years of age (lit. has crossed the summit of fifty).

c This is the extremely polite form of *osoreirimashita*. I am quite embarrassed by your kindness.

d Observe that *kakaru* is used in stating the amount of time, labor or expense required for an undertaking. But in simply stating the price of a thing one says, *Go hyaku yen shimasu*.

the house) are now flying kites. Bring the camellia blossoms lying (having fallen) there. Is the fire still burning? The firemen came after the fire was extinguished. It is (written) in (*ni wa*) the newspaper, but it is false (*uso*).

## CHAPTER XLIV

The subordinative followed by *wa* generally <sup>a</sup> has a conditional sense (p. 102):

*Keiko wo yamete wa dō desu.*

How would it be if we gave up the study?

If then a negative word like *naranai* or *ikenai*<sup>b</sup> is added, the whole phrase is to be translated by means of "must not" (pp. 92d, 130g):

*Ima keiko wo yamete wa narimasen.*

You must not give up the study now.

*Akete mite wa ikemasen.* You must not open it.

As in the case of adjectives, *te wa* may be contracted to *cha*; but such contractions are avoided in polite or formal discourse.

Followed by *mo* the subordinative has a concessive sense and must be translated by means of "even though," "even if" (p. 117f). If *yoroshii* or a similar expression follows, the sentence has a permissive sense like the English "may." Such a sentence is often a polite command.

*Sō nas'tte mo yoroshū gozaimasu.*

There is no objection to your doing so.

*Nete mo yoroshū gozaimasu ka.* May I go to bed?

For the subordinative with *mo* the past tense with '*tte* (*to itte, tote*) may be substituted:

*Dare ni kikasete 'tte hontō to omoi wa shinai.*

No matter to whom you tell it, no one will think it true.

*Kikase-ru* is the causative of *kiku* to hear. *Kikasete 'tte* is equivalent to *kikasete mo*. *Omoi wa shinai*, often pronounced *omoya shinai*, is a very emphatic way of saying *omowanai*.

<sup>a</sup> The rule does not apply to sentences like the following: *Kimatte wa imasen*. It is not decided. There is no rule to that effect. *Kōmban watakushi no uchi ye tomatte wa kuremai ka*. Would he (you) not stay at my house to-night?

<sup>b</sup> When reference is made to one's relations with other persons, *sumanai* is inexcusable, from *sumu* to be ended, settled, composed, may be used: *Omae sonna ni namakete ite wa o tolttan ni sumanai so*. It is unfilial to your father to be so idle.

## Vocabulary

Classical concessive forms, like *mi-redo* (*mo*) though he sees, *mi-taredo* (*mo*) though he saw, occur now and then.

*kabura* turnip.

*nishiki* brocade.

*tsuzure* rags.

*sumi* India ink.

*kara-kasa* [Japanese] umbrella. <sup>a</sup>

*kōmori* bat.

*kōmori-gasa* [European] umbrella.

*ri* reason, principle, right.

*nik-ki* diary.

*nikki ni tsuke-ru* note in a diary.

*taku-an, takuan-zuke* pickled daikon. <sup>b</sup>

*yaku-soku* agreement, covenant.

*tagae-ru* alter.

*yakusoku wo tagae-ru* break a promise.

*Rōma-ji* Roman characters.

*suppai* sour (of taste).

*tsumaranai* worthless, foolish.

*nuda na* vain, of no use.

*fu-yō na* not needed, useless.

*asobu, asonde* play, amuse one's self.

*asobi ni de-ru* go out for recreation.

*hashiru, hase-ru* go fast, run. <sup>c</sup>

*kamau* heed, mind.

*katsu, katte* win a victory (—*ni katsu* defeat).

*nose-ru* place on top (—*n* —*wo noseru*).

*nure-ru* get wet.

*bisshori nure-ru* get wet to the skin.

*ori-ru* descent, alight.

*sage-ru* opp. *age-ru*.

*tamaeru* be accumulated (of money).

*ude-ru* cook by boiling in water. <sup>d</sup>

—*wo abi-ru* bathe in.

—*no ma ni au* be in time for. <sup>e</sup>

a *Kara*=*Tō* (p. 122a) is prefixed to the names of articles formerly imported from abroad; e. g., *kara-kane* bronze, *kara-kami* wall paper, or screens made of the same.

b From *Taku-an* the name of a priest who is said to have invented this now indispensable article of diet. Pickles in general are called (o) *kō-kō*, from *kō* (c) fragrant.

c Synonymous with *hashiru* is *kake-ru*, but the latter is used of animals or men only.

d To cook in *shōyu* is *ni-ru*; e. g., *sakana wo niru*. To cook rice is *meshi wo taku*; to boil water is *yu wo wakasu*. *Wakasu* is the causative of *waku*: *Yu ga waite imasu*. The water is boiling.

e Lit. meet the time. *Aīsha no ma ni au* catch the train. The expression is also used in the more general sense of "to be sufficient": *Kore de ma ni aimashō*. This will probably be sufficient; causative: *Kore de ma ni awase-mashō*. We will make this do.

## Exercises

*Kono kabura wa udete mo yawaraka ni narimas'mai. Sonna tsumaranai koto wo nikki ni ts'kete wa (ts'kecha) ikemasen. Omae kyō wa kutabiretara, sugu ni nete mo ii. Fuyō na mono wa s'tete mo yō gozaimas' ; iriyō na mono wa s'tete wa (s'techa) narimasen.<sup>a</sup> Sonna muda na koto wa wasurete mo yō gozaimas'. Mō uchi ni yō ga nai kara, omae kaimono ni dete mo ii. Kimono wa ima sugu ni atsuraete mo shōgwatsu made ni wa dekimas'mai (shōgwatsu no ma ni wa aimas'mai). Kore wa itsu tabete mo umai des'.<sup>b</sup> Mō kodomo ga itsutsu ni narimash'ta kara, tenarai no keiko wo hajimete wa dō de gozaimas' ka. Omae ni jikan ka san jikan wa asobi ni dete mo ii. Shokuji no sh'taku ga dekitara, sugu ni tabete mō yō gozaimas'. Soko ni aru mono wo tansu no hikidashi ni irete mo tana ni nosete mo ii. Seiyōryōri wo tabete wa (tabecha) ikaga des'. Mō (mo) chitto makete wa (makecha) dō des'. Kowarete mo kamaimasen.<sup>c</sup> Ron ni makete mo ri ni katsu (Proverb).<sup>d</sup> Mukashi samurai wa shibai wo mite wa (miru koto wa) narimasen desh'ta ; shikashi nō wa mite mo yō gozaimash'ta. Kyō wa atswi kara, kawa no mizu wo abite wa (abicha) dō des'. Tetsudōbasha no hashitte iru uchi ni orite wa (oricha) abunai des'. Kono heya no kuki ga warui kara, mado wo akete mo yō gozaimas' ka. Sayō, akete mo yoroshii. Kono gaku wa s'koshi sagete mo agete mo dochira de mo yoroshii.<sup>e</sup> Sono uchi no mono wo mite mo ii ka. Sayō, mite mo yō gozaimas'. Tsuzure wo kite mo kokoro wa nish'ki (Proverb). Sensei ga nani wo oshiete mo shosei ni wa omoshiroku nai des'. Dare ga oshiete mo kamaimasen. Kore wa nete mo okite mo (samele mo) wasureraremasen.*

a By means of this negative expression one may translate the English "keep" or "preserve."

b *Itsu tabete mo* every time I eat it. Similar constructions occur frequently : *nani wo tabete mo* no matter what I eat, *dare ga kite mo* no matter who comes, *dō kangae* *te mo* thinking it over in every possible way. Compare the last two sentences in the exercises, also p. 45b.

c The verb *kamau* generally occurs in the negative form. *Kamaimasen* I don't mind ; it makes no difference. *Kamawanai hō ga yokatta*. It might have been better not to pay any attention to it. *Dōzo o kamai naku*. Please do not trouble yourself.

d With *katsu*, *ni* is ordinarily used to denote the object : *teki-gun ni katsu* to defeat the enemy. But here it is exactly equivalent to the English "in."

e *Sageru* to hang lower ; *ageru* to hang higher.



How would it be if we made (*koshiraeru*) an English-Japanese dictionary in (of) *Rōmaji*? Even if we made such a dictionary (*wa i*), there would probably be few buyers (people who buy would be few). As it has become late, may I go to bed? Since these pickles have become sour, you may throw them away (*s'teru*). Since I still need that (*wa i*), you must not throw it away. One must not break a promise. As there is nothing more to do (*yō ga nai*), you may go to bed. Even if he gives up *sake*, he will hardly save anything (money will hardly accumulate). As it has become too late, it will be (is) of no use even if it is finished (*dekite kuru*). How would it be if we put [him] into (*ireru*) the hospital? May I stay (*iru*) here or shall I go elsewhere (*hoka ye deru*)? He will (does) not give up tobacco, though he knows (*shitte iru*) that it injures him (*doku ni naru koto*). How would it be if we changed rikshas here? If dinner is not yet ready, we may eat afterwards (*nochi ni*). How would it be to go out for recreation? This plate will hardly break even though it falls. *Sumi* is useful even if it is broken. I will take an umbrella: it is unpleasant (*komaru*) to get (if one get) wet through and through.<sup>a</sup> As the weather is doubtful, you must not forget [your] umbrella. Though I sleep well at night, when I awake I feel as if I had not slept (*nenai yō na kimochi ga shimas'*).

## CHAPTER XLV

Negative Subor-	<i>tabe-zu (shite)</i>	<i>mi-zu (shite)</i>
dinative	<i>tabe-zu ni</i>	<i>mi-zu ni</i>
	<i>tabe-naide (-nde)</i>	<i>mi-naide (-nde)</i>
	<i>tabe-nakute</i>	<i>mi-nakute</i>

For the uses of these forms compare the preceding chapters.

1. In the literary language *zu* is the termination of the negative conclusive, as well as of the connective or inconclusive, form of verbs:

*Atarazu to iedomo wōkarazu (tōku, arazu).*

Though it did not hit [the mark], it is not far [from it].

<sup>a</sup> When one has actually been wet, one may say: *nurete komaru*. But *wa* added to *nurete* indicates a general supposition.

This use occurs in proverbs and other sentences adopted from the classical language. But in the colloquial the last predicative verb in a series of coordinate negative clauses must take one of the endings given in Ch. XLI, or, if itself subordinated, *naide*.

*Chikagoro wa hima ga nakute hito wo mimau koto mo dekisu sampo suru koto mo dekinaide komatte imasu.*

I have had a hard time of it lately because for lack of time I can neither visit people nor go out for a walk.

In formal addresses *shite* may be added to the form in *zu*.<sup>a</sup> But in general the use of this smacks of the literary style. In the colloquial the forms in *zu ni* and *naide* are more commonly used to indicate the subordination of a clause.

2. The form in *zu (ni)* may be used adverbially :

*nokorazu* all, none being left (p. 50).

*tarazu* closely, from *taru* be enough.

*mono mo iwazu* silently, from *iu* to say.

*omowazu shirazu* unintentionally, unawares, from *omou* think, *shiru* know.

*mukō mizu ni* blindly, from *mukō* what is in front of one.

Compare *shirazu shirazu no aida* before [I] knew it.

3. As in the case of the positive subordinate, *iru* or *oru* may be added to denote continuance or a condition. Only the forms in *zu ni* and *naide* may be so used :

*Tabezu ni oru* } have eaten nothing, or,

*Tabenaide oru* } continue to eat nothing.

*Suki na mono d'atte mo tabenaide orimas'.*

He refrains from eating even things of which he is fond.

4. By the addition of *wa* the negative subordinate acquires a conditional sense :

*Tabezu ni wa oraremasen.* [I] cannot exist without eating.

Such words as *naranai* and *ikenai* (p. 158) may follow only the forms in *naide wa* and *nakute wa*.<sup>b</sup> In Tōkyō the latter is preferred :

*Tabete minakute wa wakarimasen.* I must first taste it.

<sup>a</sup> Compare the use of *shite* with *kara*: *soreda kara shite* since that is the case.

<sup>b</sup> May be contracted to *nakuha* (*nakutcha*), as also *naide wa* to *naija*. In the next example also *otte wa* may be contracted to *otcha*; *ite wa* to *icha*.

While *naranai*, etc., cannot follow *tabezu ni wa* immediately, one may say :

*Mono wo tabezu ni ote (ite) wa narimasen.*

[You] must not continue to fast.

(lit. must not be without eating something).

5. The particle *mo* gives the negative subordinative a concessive sense. The idiom is *tabezu to mo*, not *tabezu ni mo*.<sup>a</sup> One may also say, *tabenaide mo*, *tabenakute mo* :

*Minakute, mo ii.* It is not necessary to see it.

(lit. it is good though [I] do not see.)

*Sore wa iwazu to mo shireta<sup>b</sup> koto desu.*

It is unnecessary to speak of it.

(lit. though none says it, it is a thing that one could know.)

*Mono mo iwazu mata tabe mo shinaide mo (shinai no ni) nodo ga itō gozaimasu.*

My throat hurts even when I neither speak nor eat.

*Shinaide* is the negative subordinative from *suru* to do. For the sake of emphasis *suru* is often used with the stem of a verb, as here.

## Vocabulary

*oto* sound, noise.

*oto ga suru* there is a sound.

*oto wo saseru* make a sound.

*tatami* a thick mat (3 ft. × 6

made of straw and covered with finer matting.

*yome* bride, young wife.

*yome wo toru (morau)* marry.

*yoroi* armor.

*te-hon* model, pattern, copy.

*yū-meshi* } supper, evening

*yū-han* } meal.

*kun* (c) = *kimi* master, lord.<sup>c</sup>

*bun-seki* analysis (chemical).

*chi-ri* geography.

*reki-shi* history.

<sup>a</sup> Idioms like *tabezu ni de mo* are sometimes heard. *Tabezu ni mo* may occur in such a sentence as: *Masaka tabezu ni mo oraremasen kara, konna tsumaranai mono de mo tabete imasu.* Because it is quite impossible to exist without eating at all, I eat even such wretched stuff as this. The word *masaka* is used commonly before suppositions which are absurd or not likely to be fulfilled.

<sup>b</sup> Compare p. 55e and the list p. 128.

<sup>c</sup> *Kun* may be added, like *san*, to the surname of a man, when the speaker is on terms of good fellowship with him.

<i>jū-ken</i> affair, case.	<i>shilatame-ru</i> write (a letter or document).
<i>kai-sho</i> square script. <sup>a</sup>	<i>ullue-ru</i> accuse (— <i>wo saiban-sho ni</i> ).
<i>sō-sho</i> cursive style.	— <i>ni wabi-ru</i> make an apology to.
<i>ke-rai</i> a retainer (of a noble), a <i>samurai</i> (in relation to his lord).	<i>sankei suru</i> go for worship (to a shrine or temple).
<i>kū-fuku</i> hunger.	<i>kokoro-mi-ru</i> try, tempt.
<i>kūfuku ni naru</i> get hungry.	<i>tori-shirabe-ru</i> investigate.
<i>kyū-byō</i> sudden illness.	<i>karuta wo toru</i> play cards.
<i>yaku-shu</i> drug.	<i>kane (zeni) wo kake-ru</i> stake money.
<i>yō-ji</i> bu iness.	<i>mekata wo kakeru</i> determine the weight.
<i>an-nai</i> guidance, knowledge. <sup>b</sup>	— <i>ni sawaru</i> come into conflict with.
<i>annai-ja (annai-sha)</i> guide.	— <i>no ki ni sawaru</i> offend.
<i>embi-fuku</i> swallow-tailed coat. <sup>c</sup>	<i>ai-kawarazu</i> without changing, as always.
<i>sai-ban</i> judgment (at a court of justice).	<i>koe-ru</i> pass over, cross (= <i>kosu</i> ). <i>kitchiri (to)</i> exactly, precisely.
<i>saidan-sho</i> courthouse.	
<i>kyū na</i> sudden, urgent.	
<i>kake-ru</i> run (p. 168c).	
<i>koe-ru</i> pass over, cross (= <i>kosu</i> ).	

### Exercises

*Michi wa wakarimas'kara, annaija wo tsuresu ni iku tsumori des'.* Ramp' ni hi wo ts'kenaide oke. <sup>d</sup> *Omae kore kara yoku ki wo ts'kenak'te wa (ts'kenakucha) ikenai. Omae maiasa roku ji ni okinak'te wa (okinakucha) naranai. Wata-kushi wa ku ji s'koshi mae ni denak'te wa narimasen. Kimi wa Tanaka kun no ki ni sawaru koto wo itta* (past from *iu*)

a The *kai-sho*, from *kai* model and *sho*=*kaku*, is the unabridged form of the character. *Sō-sho* is derived from *sō* grass. An intermediate style is called *gyō sho*.

b *Go annai itashimashō* I will show you the way. *Go annai de gozaimashō*. You probably know. *Go annai no tōri* as you know.

c A literal translation: *en* swallow, *bi* tail, *fuku* garment. A frock coat is called by its English name *f'rok'kōto*; a common sack coat is *se-biro* (*se* back, *hiro* broad).

d *Oku* with the negative subordinative may be translated by means of "leave" and a passive participle: *tsukenaide oku* to leave unlighted. In this connection the form in *zu ni* may also be used.

*kara, wabinaide wa ikemasen. Sonna ni kakezu to mo ii; kishu no deru toki made ni wa mada yohodo<sup>a</sup> aida ga arimas'. Kesa gozen wo tabezu ni demash'ta kara, dōmo, kūf'ku ni natte tamarimassen. Kokorominaide wa (kokorominaija)<sup>b</sup> wakarimassen. Sonna warui koto wa sensei ni todokenak'te wa narimassen. Todokete mo todokenak'te mo dō de mo kamaimassen. Yome wo toru to, kuyak'sho ye todokenak'te wa narimassen. Sono hako no mekata wa kakete minak'te mo wakarimas'. Sonna koto wo saibansho ye uttaezu to mo yokatta ni. Ima wa kimenak'te mo yō gosaimas'. Kono tegami wa kyū na yōji de wa nai kara, ima sh'tatamezu to mo ii n' des'. Kono yak'shu wa nan' des' ka. Sayō, bunseki sh'te minak'te wa wakarimassen. Kono bawai ni wa, wa to in'ji wo ts'kezu to mo ii n' des'.<sup>c</sup> Tehon wo mizu ni o kaki nasai. Kaisho to sōsho ryōhō tomo oboenak'te wa narimassen. Kichū no aida wa chitto mo soto ye desu, niku mo sakana mo tabezu, mata ie no uchi de takai (loud) oto wo saseru koto mo dekimasen. Dōzo aikawarimasezu.<sup>d</sup> Tabe mo shinaide tabeta yō na koto wo iimas'.*

One must take care that (*yō ni*) the fire of the pipe (tobacco) does not fall on (*ni*) the mats. Within (*uchi ni*) one year I must learn at the least about (*hodo*) a thousand Chinese characters. As I went to bed last night without supper, I am faint with hunger (becoming hungry cannot endure) this morning. As I must go out at five o'clock, we will begin our lesson (*keiko*) precisely at four. When (*to*) [a man] adopts a person (receives an adopted son), he must report to the district-office. Must I wear a swallowtail to go there? You need not wear a swallowtail. I cannot teach history without teaching geog-

a The *yo* in *yohodo* is not derived from *yoi*, but is the Chinese equivalent of *amari*.

b Instead of *kokoromiru* one may also say: *yatte miru* from *yaru* to do (p. 116c).

c Translate: In this case *wa* is not needed. For *bawai* see p. 137e.

d Some such phrase as *go kon-i ni negaimasu* I desire [that you will treat me] in a friendly manner, is understood. The phrase is used on various occasions. In offering New Year's congratulations it is used in the form: *Dōzo, konnen mo aikawarimasezu*. I hope we shall be good friends this year also. The *ai* politely prefixed to verbs in formal speech has lost its original meaning of "mutually." Compare *ai-narubeku wa* if possible (p. 112d).

raphy. That Japanese intended to investigate our police system (the matter of the police of this place) for two years, but on account of (*de*) the sudden illness of his father he returned to [his] country without investigating [it]. This case must be brought before (*uttaeru*) the court. As the hot water has become tepid, you need not put in (*umeru*) any cold water. Without seeing the copy I cannot write. Sanetomo, disregarding (*kikasu ni*) what his retainer said, went for worship to the [temple of] Hachiman of Kamakura without wearing armor under his garments; consequently he was murdered (*korosare ru*).<sup>a</sup> Please leave the window unopened as dust is rising outside (*soto ni*) just now. Without crossing the mountain, we will go this way (*kochira no michi wo yuku*). We left it undecided. We played cards without staking [any] money.

## CHAPTER XLVI

Desiderative	<i>tabe-tai</i>	<i>mi-tai</i>
	wish to eat	wish to see
Negative "	<i>tabe-taku nai</i>	<i>mi-taku nai</i>
	do not wish to eat	do not wish to see
Alternative	<i>tabe-tari</i>	<i>mi-tari</i>
	at times eating	at times seeing
Negative "	<i>tabe-nakattari</i>	<i>mi-nakattari</i>
	<i>tabe-nandari</i>	<i>mi-nandari</i>
	<i>tabe-naidari</i>	<i>mi-naidari</i>
	at times not eating	at times not seeing

1. As has been observed before (p. 100), the desiderative is an adjective and may be inflected as such:

*Tabetaku narimashita.* I have become desirous to eat. <sup>b</sup>

*Tabetakute komarimasu.* I am very anxious to eat.

*Tabetakereba, tabete mo ii.* You may eat, if you wish.

The adverbial ending *taku* becomes *tō* before *gozaimasu* (p.

<sup>a</sup> Sanetomo, son of Yoritomo, was appointed shōgun in 1203, and in 1219 was murdered by his nephew Kugyō. Hachiman is the name of the god of war. For Kamakura see p. 122c.

<sup>b</sup> The word "hungry" is hardly a correct translation for *tabetai*. "I have become hungry," literally translated into Japanese is, *Himojiku narimashita*, or, *Kūfuku ni narimashita*. The idea of "hungry" and the idea of *tabetai* usually coincide, but not always. See the last of the English sentences.

100). To the form in *tai* may be added *mono desu, no desu*, or simply *desu*. By adding *to omoimasu (to omotte inasu)* the speaker may avoid expressing his wish too bluntly or committing himself too definitely.

It is to be noted carefully that the desiderative cannot be used of the third person except (a) when *to iu* or *no desu* is added; (b) when a derivative verb is formed by adding *garu* to the desiderative stem (comp. *hoshigaru* p. 152a); or (c) when one speaks in behalf of another and in his presence:

*Mairitai to itte orimasu.* He says he wants to go.

*Kono kodomo wa Amerika ye ikitai no desu.*

This boy wants to go to America.

*Watakushi no otōto wa Amerika ye ikitagatte iru ga; isurete itte kudasaru koto wa dekimasumai ka.*

My younger brother is desirous to go to America; could you not take him with you?

The word which is the object in the English sentence may take *ga* in Japanese (p. 103e): *Gozen ga tabetai mon desu*. In this case the personal subject takes *wa*. Desideratives may also be used attributively with the nouns which are their objects.

2. The alternative is used when acts or states occur by turns (comp. p. 99):

*Heya wo haitari fuitari shite orimashita.*

[I] was sweeping and wiping [the floors of] the rooms.

Alternatives may be translated by means of "at times—at times," "now—again," or, in some cases, simply by "and."

They cannot be inflected and ordinarily are not used except with forms of *suru* to do. Notice the following elliptical construction.

*Sore wa negattari kanattari desu.*

It is just what I want (lit. desiring, obtaining).

## Vocabulary

*oboe* memory.  
*yume* dream.

*hatsu-yume* first dream of the year.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This *hatsu* is the equivalent of *sho*, in *sho-han* (p. 93), much used as a prefix in the sense of "first." It must not be confused with the Chinese *hatsu* to start, originate.

<i>kake-mono</i> a picture or writing in the form of a roll which may be opened and hung on a wall.	<i>seiyō-zukuri no</i> built in European style.
<i>gu-ai</i> adjustment, condition.	<i>atsume-ru</i> gather, assemble, collect.
<i>hen-kwa</i> change, grammatical inflection.	<i>koto-zuke-ru</i> use an opportunity to despatch anything, send word.
<i>dō-shi no hen-kwa</i> conjugation.	<i>sashi-age ru</i> lift up, give (more formal than <i>ageru</i> ).
<i>jū-dai</i> age, epoch.	<i>heru, hette</i> decrease; <i>hara ga</i> — become hungry.
<i>jū-dai no aru</i> antique.	<i>heru, hette</i> decrease; <i>hara ga</i> — become hungry.
<i>kwa-dan</i> flower-bed.	<i>goku</i> (c) very.
<i>mim-pō</i> civil law, civil code.	<i>saki-kodo</i> a little while ago.
<i>nado, nazo, nanzo</i> et cetera. <sup>b</sup>	<i>totemo</i> by no means (with a negative word). <sup>c</sup>
<i>tsukuru</i> make, build (a house), raise (a crop).	

### Exercises

*Watakushi wa Nihon no mono wo s'koshi atsumetō gozaimas'.* Donna mono des' ka. Sayō, jidai no aru kakemono nazo ga yō gozaimas'. Matsubara san ni kotozuketai koto ga arimas'. Anata wa issko ni oide nasaru o hima ga gozaimasen ka. Tadaima tegami wo sh'tatametō gozaimas' kara, o ato kara<sup>d</sup> mairimashō. Watakushi wa P'roska no mim-pō no koto ga torishirabetō gozaimas' ga, ii hon wo go sonji de arimasen ka. Nihongo wa sonna ni keiko wo yametari hajimetari sh'te wa oboeremasen (p. 108h). Kyō wa o tenki des' kara, asobi ni detaku narimash'ta. Mizu wo abiru to, mono wo tabetaku narimas'.<sup>e</sup> Dōka, Nihon ye itte mitai mon' des'.<sup>f</sup> Shōji wo

a *Amado wa guai ga warui.* The sliding doors do not fit well into their grooves. *Watakushi wa konogoro guai ga warui.* I have been under the weather lately.

b These words are attached to a noun immediately, and precede such particles as *wa, ga,* etc.

c *Kesshite* is used of a firm resolution or of a statement for which the speaker makes himself personally responsible: *Kesshite sonna koto wa arimasen.* I assure you there will be nothing of the kind. *Totemo* is not so positive and indicates merely that there are serious difficulties in the way: *Totemo tasukarimasumai.* There is almost no chance of his recovery.

d *O ato kara* afterwards, after you.

e *Mono* is indefinite (p. 47). *Mono wo tabetaku naru* become hungry.

f *Dōka* (lit. somehow or other) here serves to express the fervor of the desire and may be translated "very much." *Itte mitai* wish to visit (lit. go and see).



*sonna ni shijū aketari shimetari sh'te iru to, guai ga waruku narimas'. Atsui to, mizu ga, abitaku narimas'. Kyō wa s'koshi kibun ga warukute sampo ni detaku wa arimasen. Sakihodo kimash'tu shosei wa anata ni go hon wo o kari mōshitai to itte imash'ta Anata no yō ni kanji no kakiyō wo oboetai mono des' heredomo, totemo oboeru koto wa dekimas'mai. Are wa netari okitari sh'te imas'. Hito wo sonna ni agetari sagetari sh'te wa ikemasen.<sup>a</sup> Kōmban no hatsuyume ni wa Fuji no yama no yume de mo mitai mon' des'.<sup>b</sup> Niwa no sakura ga sakimash'ta kara, oide wo negatte<sup>c</sup> ippai sashiagetai mon' des'. Anata ni sashiagetai mono ga arimas'. Kwadan ni botan wo ippon utai mon' des'. Dōmo, bunshō wo kaite mitak'te mo, ii kangae ga demasen kara, yoshimash'. Dōmo, shibai ga mitakute tamarimasen.*

Often when (*to*) I hear [of] the beauty (*ji koto*) of Japanese scenery I become desirous to go and see [it]. The room will become (becomes) very cold, if you continue (*suru*) opening and shutting the door. I wish to show you [some] Japanese photographs. I wish to learn to write (*kaku koto wo*) Chinese characters; don't you know [of] a good teacher? I wish to borrow (*o kari masu*) a little money; will you please loan me [some]? I should like to learn the conjugation of Japanese verbs. As I have [some] leisure to-day, I wish to out for a little recreation (*chotto asobi ni*). [Our] neighbor wishes to build a house in European style, but probably [his] money does not yet suffice for that (*sore ni wa*). I should like to eat Japanese food (cooking) once. He wants to learn Chinese characters, but his memory is bad and he immediately forgets (forgetting finishes) the characters he has learned (*osowatta*). Look! yonder a ship is at times visible and at times out of

a Here *ageru* and *sageru* have the derived senses of "extol" and "disparage".

b It is considered a sign of good luck to dream of Mount Fuji on the night of the second of January.—*no yume wo miru* to dream of (lit. see a dream of). *Ita ga nuketa yume no mimashita*. I dreamed that I lost a tooth (a tooth was extracted). Notice that *de mo* may be added to nouns as well as pronouns (Ch. XVII.), making the sense indefinite: a dream of Fuji or a dream of that kind. Compare the sentence p. 172a. The hawk (*taka*) and the egg-plant (*nasubi*) are also favorable omens in a *hatsuyume*. Hence the proverb: *Ichi, Fuji; ni, taka; san, nasubi*.

c *Oide wo negaimasu*. Please come to see me (lit. I beg your presence). *Saite wo* is understood with *ipai*.

sight (hidden). As I wish to get off (descend), stop (*tomeru*)! <sup>a</sup> He wants to visit Germany. He wants to borrow a grammar of (*ni*) you. I should like to study and learn Japanese, but I haven't much (*amari*) leisure. The children want to fly kites. As I have become hungry (stomach has decreased), I want to eat (p. 143b).

## CHAPTER XLVII

Verbs of the second class (p. 142) may be divided into groups, according to the consonants which precede the *u* of the present tense. To the first group belong verbs in *ru*.

1. Paradigm of *toru* (stem *.ori*) to take :

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>toru</i>	<i>toranai, toran (u)</i>
Past	<i>totta</i>	<i>toranakatta, —nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>torō</i>	<i>torumai</i> <sup>b</sup>
Probable Past	<i>toru darō</i>	<i>toranai darō, toran darō</i>
	<i>tottarō</i>	<i>toranakattarō, —nandarō</i>
	<i>totta darō</i>	<i>toranakatta darō</i>
Conditional	<i>toraba (toraba)</i> <sup>c</sup>	<i>toranakereba</i> <sup>d</sup> ( <i>toranakuba</i> )
	<i>toru nara (ba)</i>	<i>toraneba</i>
		<i>toranai nara (ba)</i>
Past „	<i>tottara (ba)</i>	<i>toranakattara, —nandara (ba)</i>
	<i>totta nara (ba)</i>	<i>toranakatta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>tore</i>	<i>toru na</i>
	<i>(o) tori na</i>	<i>o tori de nai yo</i>
	<i>o tori (yo)</i>	
Subordinative	<i>totte</i>	<i>torazu (shite), torazu ni</i>
		<i>toranaide, torande</i>
		<i>torinakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>toritai</i>	<i>toritaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>tottari</i>	<i>toranakattari, —nandari</i>
		<i>toranaidari</i>

<sup>a</sup> If the *kurumahiki* is standing with the shafts in his hands, one may say: *orashite kure, from orosu* to let down.

<sup>b</sup> Forms like *toranakarō* (comp. *tabenakarō* p. 154) are sometimes heard, but the propriety of including them in a paradigm is disputed.

<sup>c</sup> *Toraba*, as also the negative *toranakuba*, is a classical form.

<sup>d</sup> Forms like *toranakereba* are variously contracted: *toranakerēba, toranākerya* (emphatic: *toranakeryū, torankya toranya*).

2. The characteristic vowels are *i*, *a*, *e* and *u*.

**I** The forms *totte*, *tottari*, *totta* are derived by elision and assimilation from the stem *tori* and *te*, *tari*, *ta*. The ending *ta* is a contraction of the classical *taru* (attributive) or *tari* (conclusive). Such uncontracted forms as *torite* and *toritaru* (in the attributive position) are sometimes heard in speeches and occur in proverbs. Observe that the *i* of the stem does not suffer elision in the desiderative.

**A** The form *torō* is a contraction of *toram* (*u*), which in the classical language becomes *toran*.<sup>a</sup> Such forms as *toran* creep into speeches, especially with *to suru*: *shinan to suru hito* a man about to die. Observe that the vowel of the stem in changed to *a* in the positive future and in all the negative forms except the future and the imperative. The classical negative forms *torasu*, *toranu* (attributive), and *toraji* (future) would also come under this head.

**E** In the positive imperative and conditional the vowel of the stem is changed to *e*: *toze*, *tozeba*. Here would belong the classical concessive *toredomo*, which, however, rarely occurs in the colloquial.

**U** In the negative imperative and future, as in the positive present, the vowel becomes *u*: *toru na*, *torunai*.

3. The verbs *aru* to be and *naru* to become<sup>c</sup> are included in this group.

There are many verbs ending in *aru* which are passive or intransitive (*ji-dōshi*) and correspond to transitive verbs (*ta-dōshi*) in *e-ru*, both being in most cases represented by the same ideogram.<sup>b</sup>

<i>agaru</i> go up, take (food, etc.).	<i>ageru</i> lift up, give.
<i>ataru</i> strike, meet (p. 71c).	<i>ateru</i> apply, hit, guess.
<i>atsumaru</i> assemble.	<i>atsumeru</i> gather.
<i>azukaru</i> take charge of (p. 184b).	<i>azukeru</i> entrust.
<i>hajimaru</i> begin (intr.).	<i>hajimeru</i> begin (tr.).
<i>kakaru</i> be hung.	<i>kakeru</i> hang.

<sup>a</sup> From verbs of the first class similar forms may be derived: *taben*, *min*.

<sup>b</sup> But it must not be supposed that this is a general rule or that the list here given is complete. See interesting tables in Imbrie's *Etymology* p. 27ff.

<sup>c</sup> This *naru* must be distinguished from the *naru* derived from *ni aru* (Ch. XXXIII; e. g., *jibun no kerai naru chūshin* a true liegeman, being his own retainer).

<i>magaru</i> be bent, turn.	<i>mageru</i> bend.
<i>masaru</i> be mixed.	<i>maseru</i> mix.
<i>osamaru</i> be governed, pacified.	<i>osameru</i> govern, pacify.
<i>osamaru</i> be paid (of taxes).	<i>osameru</i> pay (taxes).
<i>sagaru</i> descend, return.	<i>sageru</i> take down, suspend.
<i>shisumaruru</i> become calm.	<i>shizumeru</i> tranquillize. <sup>a</sup>
<i>tamaru</i> be accumulated.	<i>tameru</i> accumulate.
<i>tasukaru</i> be saved, recover.	<i>tasukeru</i> save, help.
<i>tomaru</i> stop, be entertained.	<i>tomeru</i> stop, entertain.
<i>wakaru</i> be divided, understood.	<i>wakeru</i> divide.
<i>kawaru</i> be changed, vary.	<i>kaeru</i> change.
<i>suwaru</i> sit (in native manner).	<i>sueru</i> set.

In some cases forms in *aru* are contractions of potential or honorific forms (see also Ch. XLIX.).

*makaru* be able to come down on the price, from *make-rareru*.

*nasaru* do, from *nasareru*.

*kudasaru* bestow, from *kudasareru*.

*irassharu* be, come, go, from *iraserareru*.

*ossharu* say, from *ōserareru*.

## Vocabulary

(Include the verbs given above.)

<i>haka</i> grave.	<i>saku</i> produce, yield, crop.
<i>ita</i> board.	<i>shi</i> poem. <sup>b</sup>
<i>mi</i> body, self (p. 58).	<i>shi wo tsukuru</i> compose a poem.
<i>namida</i> tears.	<i>rei</i> politeness.
<i>shita</i> tongue.	<i>bu-rei</i> rudeness.
<i>bō</i> pole, club, beam.	<i>sen-dō</i> sailor, boatman.
<i>riku</i> land (opp. sea).	<i>tei-haku</i> anchoring.
<i>riku ni agaru</i> t.) land.	

<sup>a</sup> These verbs should not be confused with *shiumu* sink, be immersed, and the corresponding transitive *shiume-ru*.

<sup>b</sup> The term *shi* is now general and is applied to all foreign and to modern Japanese poetry, but in old Japan *shi* was understood to mean Chinese verses. In the sense of poetry the word *uta* is limited to verses written in the old native style, but in the sense of song it is universally applicable.

- yu-dan* negligence, inattention. *tsumoru* be piled up, accumu-  
*tei-sha-ba* = *suteishon* station. late.  
*sho* (c) many, several (p. 1). *yoru* twist.  
*amaru* be in excess. *ko-yori* (*kami, yori*) paper  
*damaru* be silent. twisted into a string.  
*horu* dig, carve. *hone* bone.  
*kusaru* decay, be malodorous. *hone wo oru* exert one's self  
*naoru* be repaired, cured (lit. break bones).  
 (comp. *naosu*). *hone-ori* effort.  
*ni-ru* boil, cook (p. 168d). *deki-agaru* be finished.  
 — *ni noboru* ascend. *tsuki-ataru* come up against,  
*okoru* arise, break out, get go straight toward.  
 angry. *hashi wo kake-ru* build a  
*sawagu, sawaide* be noisy, bridge.  
 agitated. — *wake ni (wa) ikanai* may  
*shikaru* scold. not.  
*taru* = *tari-ru* be enough (p. *kare-kore* about (p. 28b).  
 142). *san-san (ni)* recklessly, harsh-  
*tomu* be rich. ly, severely.  
*tomi* riches, lottery. *sek-katu* with special pains,  
*tomi ni ataru* win in a lottery. kindly.  
*wataru* cross. *to-chū de* on the way.

### Exercises

*Damatte iru hito wa yudan ga dekinai.*<sup>a</sup> *Bunshō wo ts'kuru ni wa imi ga wakaranaku naranaide narudake mijikaku iu yō ni ki wo ts'kenakereba narimasen. Kono kin wa gin ga mazatte imas' kara, shiromi-gakatte imas'.*<sup>b</sup> *Taisō yowatta. Watakushi wa ik'sa ga okoreba (okottara), sugu ni kuni ye kaeranakereba narimasen. Ano hito wa naze okorimash'ta ka. Dōmo, komarimas' ; ki ni iran koto ga areba, sugu ni okorimas'. Anata sugu (ni) o kaeri ni narimas' ka. Iie,*

a More fully expressed: *Yudan suru koto ga dekinai*. One must be wary in dealing with a taciturn man. Many sentences of this kind end in the negative imperative *yudan suru na*.

b Has a white tinge, from *shiromi* (p. 21) and *kakaru*. One may also say: *shir'omi ga katte imasu* the white tinge prevails, from *katsu* to conquer.

*s'koshi mawatte kaerimas'*. *Jibun no mi no osamaran hito ga tak'san arimas'*. *Tōkyō no mono wa san gwatsu no jū go nichī ni ame ga furu to, Umewaka no namida da to iimas'*,<sup>a</sup> *Mukashi wa tabi wo suru hito ga "ren-dai" to iu ita ni bō wo ni hon ts'keta mono ni notte Ōigawa wo<sup>b</sup> walatta ga, konogoro wa hashi ga kakatte imas'*. *Nihon ni wa hashi no kakatte oran kawa ga tak'san arimas'*. *Watakushi no tomodachi wa tochū de kane ga nakunatta kara, komatta tegami wo yokoshimash'ta. Tadamima wa Shimabashi kara Ueno made tetsudō ga kakatte orimas'*. *Ikura hone wo otte yatte mo, hayaku dekiagarimasen. En no Shōkaku to iu hito wa<sup>c</sup> ashi ga jōbu de shokoku wo mawatta s' des'*; *sore da kara sh'te, ima de mo yoku shokoku wo mawaru hito ga waraji wo sono hito no sō ni kakemas'*. *Fuji san ni nobotta koto ga arimas' ka. Sayō, nobotta koto ga arimas'*. *Nobori wa nan jikan kakarimash'ta ka. Sayō, karekore hachi jikan kakarimash'ta. Kono sakana wa doku da kara, o agari de nai yo. Ni san nichī no aidu Nihongo wo hanasanai to, sh'ta ga mawaranaku narimas'*. *Watakushi ga kuni ye kaeru toki, Honkon ni fune ga teihaku shimash'ta kara, riku ni agatte hito ban yadoya ni tomarimash'ta; shikashi hidoku atsui no de, yodōshi nemasen desh'ta. Mukashi wa Tenryugawa wo fune de walatta ga, ima wa hashi ga dekite orimas'*. *Ame ga futtari yuki ga futtari sh'te komarimas'*. *Koyori wa kami wo yotte koshiraeta mono des'*. *K'satte mo tai* (Proverb). *Kono taki wa ura no hō ni mawatte miru koto ga dekinas' kara, Uramigataki to mōshimas'*.<sup>d</sup> *Tomi ni atatte kanemochi ni naritai mon' des'*. *Wakatta ka wakaranai ka wakarimasen. Mina wa wakarimasen.*<sup>e</sup> *Wakatte mo wakaranai kao wo sh'te imash'ta.*

a Umewaka is the name of a child who was kidnapped from a noble family in Kyōto and died at Mukōjima in Tōkyō. At a little temple erected there in its honor a memorial service is held on the 15th of March every year.

b This river, which forms the boundary between the provinces of Suruga and Tōtōmi, must be crossed by travellers on the Tōkaidō, the highway between Kyōtō and Tōkyō.

c A hermit and priest of the seventh century, round whose name many legends cluster.

d A waterfall in the neighborhood of Nikkō.

e I do not understand ALL, i. e., there are parts that I do not understand. *Mina wakarimasen.* It is all dark to me.

*S'teru kami ga areba tas'keru kami mo aru.*<sup>a</sup> *Sore ja kono shinamono wo o azukari itash'te okimashō.*<sup>b</sup> *Seikkaku des' kara, go chisō ni azukarimashō (narimashō).* *Ano kichigai wa anna ni sawaide oru keredomo, jiki ni shizumaru yo. Teishaba ye mairimasuru ni wa*<sup>c</sup> *dō itara yoroshū gozaimashō (ka).* *Sayō, soko wo tsukiatatte hidari no hō ye magareba, machigai naku s'teishon ye oide nasaru koto ga dekimas'.* *Kakari no hito wa mō sagarimashi'ta.*<sup>d</sup>

Names of things vary according to (depending on) locality (place). Be silent!<sup>e</sup> In (*ni wa*) Nikkō (1) there is (8) also the grave (7) of the horse (6) on which Ieyasu (2) rode (5) at (*ni*) the battle (4) of Sekigahara (3). The teacher got angry and scolded the pupils severely. Please hand (*tori*) me that dictionary. Did you (*kimi* 2) compose (3) this Chinese poem (*wa* 1)? The daimyōs' mansions which were in Tōkyō for the most part have been changed (being changed have finished) to offices. Please help (*tas'kete yaru*) him.<sup>f</sup> If you go (*irassharu*—past cond.) to Ikao, g your malady (*go byōki*) may (p. 109a) be cured. If there were no (are not) unsavory things, the flavor (*umami mo*) of delicious things would hardly be appreciated (understood). In Japan crops are poor (bad) if rain does not fall abundantly (*tak'san*) from May to (*ni*

a This proverb fits into the mouth of one who wishes to comfort himself or another in time of distress.

b Notice that *azukaru* in the sense of "to take charge of" takes *wo*. In the next sentence it means "to participate in" and takes *ni*. In the latter sense *azukaru* is not used so much in the colloquial, and smacks of the epistolary style.

c For euphony's sake the ending *masu* here becomes *masuru*, but *masu* also would be correct.

d The man in charge has left the office. Here we have another very common use of *kakaru* in the form of its stem. *Kakari no hito* may also mean all the officials in a department. As a suffix *kakari* forms many compounds; e. g., *kwaikei-kakari* treasurer, from *kwai-kei* finance. The verb *sagaru* is used of men leaving an office at the close of the day's work or of pupils returning home from school, the office or school being regarded as an exalted place.

e The imperative of *damaru* is of course not polite. To be polite one must say: *Chotto kiite kudasai*.

f The verb *tasukeru* is used in a case of peril, distress or poverty. To help one to do a task is *tetsudau*, *tetsudatte*.

g A famous summer resort, with hot springs, in the province of Kōzuke near Maebashi.

*kakete*) June. When you went to Shinshū recently did you ascend Mount Asama? <sup>a</sup> I wished to make the ascent (ascend), but, as it was raining constantly, I returned without making the ascent. Though [we] dug never so (*ikura*) deep, we struck no water (water did not come forth). Since this (i) is not mine, [I] may not (*wake ni wa ikimasen*) give it to another (*hito*). This meat is not sufficiently cooked (*ni-kata* is not sufficient). Too many sailors run the ship aground (The sailors being numerous, the ship ascends the mountain.) <sup>b</sup> Excessive politeness (politeness being in excess) becomes rudeness (Proverb). Dust accumulating becomes a mountain (Proverb). This horse is not worth (does not become even) a *mon*. Can you not deduct (*makaru*) even a little? Yes, I will deduct two *sen* (*wa*). What did you say?

## CHAPTER XLVIII

There are a few verbs which, ending in *eru* or *iru*, are often mistaken for verbs of the first class. A partial list of them is here given <sup>c</sup> with the recommendation that the student as he goes over it pronounce the subordinative distinctly, thus; *asette*, *chitte*, etc.

<i>aseru</i> hurry.	<i>kajiru</i> gnaw.
<i>chiru</i> scatter (p. 62a).	<i>keru</i> kick.
— <i>ni fukeru</i> be addicted to.	<i>kiru</i> cut, divide.
<i>fuseru</i> go to bed.	<i>mairu</i> = <i>iku</i> , <i>kuru</i> (polite 1, 3),
<i>hairu</i> enter.	<i>majiru</i> = <i>mazaru</i> be mixed.
<i>hashiru</i> go fast, run.	<i>nejiru</i> twist, screw.
<i>heru</i> decrease.	<i>neru</i> knead, soften, train.
<i>hineru</i> twist.	<i>nigiru</i> grasp.
<i>ijiru</i> meddle with, tease.	<i>shaberu</i> chatter.
<i>iru</i> enter, be needed, set (of heavenly bodies).	<i>shikujiru</i> fail, forfeit.
<i>iru</i> parch, roast.	<i>shimeru</i> be damp.
<i>kaeru</i> return.	<i>shiru</i> know.
<i>kagiru</i> limit, be limited.	<i>suberu</i> slide, slip.
	<i>teru</i> shine (of the sun).

a An active volcano near Karuizawa.

b Compare the English: "Many cooks spoil the broth."

c Assuming that this list is mastered, we will discontinue the use of the hyphen in verbs of the first class.



## Vocabulary

(Include the verbs given above)

<i>futa</i> cover, lid.	<i>yashiro</i> Shito shrine.
<i>hayashi</i> } forest. <sup>a</sup>	<i>setsu</i> opinion.
<i>mori</i> } forest. <sup>a</sup>	<i>kwan</i> government office (in
<i>kataki</i> foe.	<i>kwan-ri</i> ).
<i>kire</i> slice, piece.	<i>chijō</i> } summit.
<i>kubi</i> neck. <sup>b</sup>	<i>itadaki</i> } summit.
( <i>o</i> ) <i>musubi</i> ball of rice used	<i>gi-shi</i> loyal <i>samurai</i> .
for lunch ( <i>musubu</i> make	<i>raku-dai</i> failure in examina-
into a ball with the hands).	tion.
<i>niji</i> rainbow.	<i>sep-puku</i> suicide by cutting
<i>niji ga tatsu</i> ( <i>deru</i> ) a rain-	the abdomen. <sup>f</sup>
bow appears.	<i>shu-jin</i> master.
<i>nori</i> paste made of starch,	<i>ken-so na</i> precipitous.
mucilage.	<i>shin-chiku no</i> newly built.
<i>saki</i> tip, point.	<i>abareru</i> become fractious.
<i>sue</i> end.	<i>kaku</i> scratch.
<i>tokkuri</i> a <i>sake</i> bottle.	<i>nusumu</i> steal.
<i>harusame</i> ( <i>haru, ame</i> ) spring	<i>okotaru</i> be lazy, neglect.
rain.	<i>oshimu</i> prize, deplore, be-
<i>mame</i> bean.	grudge.
<i>nankin-mame</i> peanuts. <sup>c</sup>	<i>hameru</i> insert, fit.
<i>kana</i> Japanese syllabic char-	<i>ate-hameru</i> assign, adjust,
acters. <sup>d</sup>	apply.
<i>kaya</i> mosquito net. <sup>e</sup>	<i>ate-hamaru</i> be suited, appli-
<i>oshaberi</i> ( <i>o-shaberi</i> ) chatterbox.	cable.

a A *mori* is smaller and denser than a *hayashi*. The term *mori* is specially applied to the grove surrounding a temple or shrine.

b Not to be confused with the classical *kōbe* head.

c From the name of a Chinese city. Comp. *nankin-nusumi* (p. 2a)

d From *karu* borrow, *na* name. The syllabary is derived from certain Chinese characters. The *hira-gana*, from *hira* level, plain, are extremely simplified forms of the characters as written cursively. The less familiar *kata-kana*, from *kata* side, are fragments of the characters as written squarely.

e Made like a square tent and suspended by strings attached to the corners (and sides) of the top.

f From *setsu*=*kiru*, *fuku*=*hara*. The word "harikari" found in some English dictionaries is a corruption of *hara-kiri*. Some say *kaf-puku* (*katsu*=*waru*).

<i>sonaeru</i> provide, furnish, offer.	<i>chōdo</i> exactly, just.
<i>tatoeru</i> compare by way of illustration.	<i>muyami ni</i> recklessly.
<i>tatoeba</i> for example. <sup>a</sup>	<i>sukkari (to)</i> entirely. <sup>b</sup>
<i>ne-giru</i> beat down the price ( <i>ne</i> price, <i>kiru</i> cut).	<i>perapera</i> rapidly (of talk).
<i>seme-iru</i> enter forcibly.	<i>kō-bi</i> several directions, everywhere.
<i>ho wo kakeru</i> spread the sails.	<i>tō-tei</i> by no means, at all (with a negative verb).
<i>sō-ba wo yaru</i> engage in speculation.	<i>sō-sa naku</i> without trouble, easily.

### Exercises

*Kono jibiki ni wa iranai ji ga tak'san arimas'*; *tatoeba Manyōshū no<sup>c</sup> kotoba nazo wa kessh'te irimasen. Nihon no bunshō wa kanji ni kana ga majitte orimas'. Shi jū shichi nin no gishi ga Kira Kōzukenos'ke no yash'ki ni semeiri, kataki no kubi wo kittle Sengakuji ye matte kite shujin no haka ye sonae, sore kara mina seppuku sh'te shinimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Kono shigoto wa ikura asette yatte mo kongetsu no sue no ma ni wa aimas'mai. Mada hirugozen wo tabezu ni orimas' kara, taisō kara ga hette mairimash'ta. Konya wa hayaku fusette myōchō hayaku okimashō. Kono daigaku no shosei no kazu ga oioi hette kite machi no mono ga komarimas'. Yoku shaberu hito wa oshaberi to mōshimas'. Hoka ye<sup>e</sup> itte uchi*

<sup>a</sup> The verb *tatoeru* appears in the phrase, *tatoete mireba*. The regular conditional form in the colloquial would be *tatoereba*. The form *tatoeba* is borrowed from the classical language. "An example" is *tatoe* or *rei*. To "give an example" is *rei wo toru*, *hiku* or *ageru*. *Sore wa ii rei de wa arimasen*, or, *Sono rei wa yoku atehamarimasen*. That is not a good illustration.

<sup>b</sup> *Sappari* is often synonymous with *sukkari*, but *sappari* may also have the sense of "clearly." See also p. 128d.

<sup>c</sup> The name of the oldest anthology: *man* 10,000 or many, *yō* leaf, *shū* collection.

<sup>d</sup> This is the plot of the celebrated drama *Chūshingura* (*chū shin* loyal subject), better known by the title "The Forty-seven *Rōnin*." A *yō-nin* is a *samurai* without a master (*yō* wave, vagrant, *nin* man). The Forty-seven are called also *Akō no gishi*. At *Sen-gaku-ji* (fountain-mountain-temple) in *Shiba*, *Tōkyō*, was the grave of the *daimyō* of *Akō* the lord of the Forty-seven. *Kōsuke-no-uke* was originally an official title which later came into use as a given name. Compare *Kura-no suke*, *Wakasa-no-suke*, etc. In this sentence the stem is used for the subordinative, as is often the case in narratives (p. 162b).

<sup>e</sup> *Hoka ye* to others, outsiders. *Itte* is from *iku* to go.

no koto wo shabette wa (shabetcha) warui yo. Ano chiisai mus' me wa perapera shabette imas'. Fujisan no chōjō ni wa ōki na ana ga aite imas' ; soko ni kenso na tokoro ga atte Oya Shirazu Ko Shirazu to mōshimas' ; (nase naraba)<sup>a</sup> mashi hito ga ayamatte soko ni suberiochiru to, oya wa ko wo s'te ko wa oya wo s'tete okanakereba narimasen kara, sō iu na ga deki-mash'ta. Hi ga tettari ame ga juttari sh'te tenki ga yoku kawatte komarimas'. Sakura no chiru no wo oshimanu hito wa arimasen. Harusame wa sakurabana no chiru no wo oshimu hito no namida ka mo shirenai (namida de mo arimashō ka),<sup>b</sup> Ueno no hana wa chitte shimaimash'ta ka. Iie, ima chōdo sakari des'. Kono tokkuri ni wa go gō hairanaï. O me ga akaku narimash'ta no wa dō iu wake des' ka. Mushi ga haitte komarimash'ta. Wadoku no jibiki no motte mairitai to oimomash'te hōbō tazunemash'ta keredomo, gozaimasen. Kono ie wa shinchiku des' kara, heya ga shimette orimas'. Yoshitsune wa Koromogawa no tataikai ni makete hara wo kitta to iu setsu mo ari, mata Eso ye nigeta to iu setsu mo aru.<sup>c</sup> Mutsukash'kute atama ni hairimasen. Kono sakana wo ikutsu ni kittle agemashō ka. Sayō, mi kire ni sh'te kudasai. Ano gakusei wa asobi ni fukette benkyō wo okotatte imas' kara, rakudai suru deshō. Nihonjin wa kangaeru toki ni kubi wo hinerimas' ga,<sup>d</sup> Seiyōjin wa atama wo kaku sō des'. Gozen de nori wo nette kure. Baka to hi wa ijiru hodo okoru (Proverb). Irimame to iu mono wa mame wo itte satō ka shōyu wo ts'keta mono de, mameiri to mo iimas'. O musubi wo nigitte o kure.<sup>e</sup> Kono futa wa hidari no hō ni nejireba zōsa naku toremas'.<sup>f</sup> Kodomo ga yoku fusette orimas'.

a *Nase naraba* is elliptical for *Nase ka to naraba* if [you ask] "why." An explanation is frequently introduced by this phrase or *nase to iu ni*. The expression *Oya Shirazu Ko Shirazu* often occurs as a designation of a dangerous place. The most noted place that bears this name is a rough part of the coast of Echigo.

b A paraphrase of a poem in the anthology *Kō-kin-wa ka-shū* (*ko=furui, kin=ima, wa=Japan, ka=uta*). *Namida ka* is elliptical for *namida da (desu) ka*.

c The Koromo is a small river in the north emptying into the Kitakami River near Ichinoseki. Yoshitsune was a famous hero of the XII. century (p. 162c).

d "To twist the neck" here means simply to incline the head to one side.

e The balls of rice which so often serve as a simple lunch are also called *nigirimeshi*.

f Translate: one can take it off (p. 103h)

When the winter is extraordinarily cold (in an extraordinarily cold time of winter) there is skating (skating is possible) even at (*de mo*) Yokohama. If (*to*) the sun shines while (*uchi ni*) it is raining (rains) a rainbow appears. You must not beat down the price so. He stole public funds (*kwan-kin*) and forfeited [his] office. He pretended not to know (was making a face that knows not). What (*koto*) I have just now said, not being limited to this word, is applicable to other words also. The *gokei*<sup>a</sup> being (a thing) limited to [Shinto] shrines, is not [found] in [Buddhist] temples. Among these wares is there none that you like (entered your spirit)? All are satisfactory (good), but as they are dear I will give them up. I do not yet quite understand (it does not yet entirely enter my head), What is in those godowns? In those godowns there are clothes, books, money and so forth<sup>b</sup>—various things. Shall I cut the tip of [your] cigar? Please do so (I request). The horse became fractious and kicked the groom. The cherry [blossoms] of Mukōjima too have probably fallen (falling finished) already. One must not cut [down] a forest recklessly. The ship runs about 15 *kai-ri*<sup>c</sup> an (one) hour if one spreads the sails. Last night one mosquito got into (*naka ni hairu*) the net and I couldn't sleep at all. The longer he is in (*haite oru*) the school, the more indolent (*fu-benkyō*) does he become. Rats have gnawed the bookcase. He engaged in speculation and failed. Are these peanuts fresh roasted? (p. 119 bottom).

## CHAPTER XLIX

1. The polite verbs *nasaru*, *kudasaru*, and *irassharu* are used in the second (or third) person both independently and as auxiliaries. Usually *masu* is added, and *ari* in *nasarimasu*, *kudasarimasu*, *irassharimasu* is added, and *ai*.<sup>d</sup> So also *are*

a The *gokei* (see Vocabulary p. 129), made of white paper or metal, is the characteristic decoration of a Shintō shrine. Its significance is not clearly known: some say that it is a symbol of divinity or purity.

b In such a list conjunctions may be dispensed with. See p. 2, middle.

c A *kai-ri* (*kai*=*umi* sea) is a knot—about 1.15 miles.

d In the same manner *ossharimasu* and *gosarimasu* are contracted.

in the imperatives *nasare*, *kudasare*, and *irasshare* is contracted to *ai*. The imperative of *masu* is *mase* or *mashi*. Thus the imperatives of these verbs are *nasai* or *nasaimashi*, *kudasai* or *kudasaimashi*, *irasshai* or *irasshaimashi*. The *a* before *tta*, *tte*, *ttari*, etc., is commonly elided: *nas'tta*, *nas'tte*, *nas'ttari*; *kudas'tta*, *kudas'tte*, etc.; *irassh'tta*, etc.

(1.) *Nasaru* is used independently. It is also used with Chinese compounds or with the stems of verbs as the polite equivalent of *suru*:

*Go katte ni nasai.*

Consult your own convenience.

*Nani wo go keibunatsu nasaru o tsumori desu ka.*

What do you intend to see?

*Sukoshi o make nasai.* Make the price a little lower.

*Oide<sup>a</sup> nasaimashita.* You (he) went, came, were.

(2.) *Kudasaru* as an independent verb means "grant condescending'y." As an auxiliary it is used with either the stem or the subordinative of a verb (but generally with the latter), and may be literally translated "condescend to", "deign to":

*Kono shashin wo kudasaimasen ka.*

Will you not be so good as to give me this photograph?

*Go men kudasai.* Please excuse me. I beg your pardon.

*O yomi* (or *yonde*) *kudasai.* Kindly read it.

*Shinsetsu ni oshiete kudasaimashita.*

He was good enough to explain [it] carefully.

*Go ran nas'tte kudasai.* Condescend to look at it.

Constructions like *o yomi nas'tte kudasai* are formal and polite. Familiarly one may substitute *kureru* for *kudasaru*, but only with the simple subordinative, not with the stem: *oshiete kuremashita*.

(3.) *Irassharu* means "go", "come", "be". *Irassharu* and *oide nasaru* are practically synonymous. In speaking of persons *de irassharu* = *de aru* (p. 78b). As an auxiliary *irassharu* is used with the subordinative of a verb and is the polite equivalent of *iru* or *oru*:

<sup>a</sup> From the honorific *o* and the stem of the classical *isu*, the older form of *deru* (p. 144, 6). Notice that the honorific *o* or *go* is required in the above examples (p. 72f).

*Kyō sampo ni irasshaimasu ka.*

Will you go for a walk to-day?

*Kochira no hō ye irasshai.* Come this way, please. <sup>a</sup>

*Go buji de irasshaimasu ka.* Are you well?

*Danna sama wa go zaitaku de irasshaimasu ka.*

Is the master at home?

*Tōkyō ni sumatte irasshaimasu.* He resides in Tōkyō.

*Itte irasshai* is the polite equivalent of *itte koi* (lit. go and come) Go! Good bye!

2. Negative forms of *aru*, such as *aranai*, etc., are not used, being replaced by forms of *nai* (p. 100). The only exception is the future or probable *arumai*, which is used along with *nakarō*, *nai darō*. In the classical language *arazu* = *nai*, *ni arazu* = *de nai*.

For *de aru*, *de atta*, *de arō* the contractions *da*, *datta*, *darō* are usually employed; for *de arimasu*, etc., *desu*, *deshita*, *deshō*. The uncontracted *de aru* is heard only in speeches. The use of *ja* as a contraction of *de aru* survives in Buddhist sermons and in some dialects. <sup>b</sup>

The very formal equivalent of *aru* is *gozarimasu*, usually pronounced *gozaimasu*. The simple *gozaru* <sup>c</sup> (negative: *gozaranu*) is rarely used in conversation, but may be heard in theaters.

It should also be noted that such expressions as *ni natte oru* (p. 163, 5) are often used where we should expect *aru*.

## Vocabulary

*kane* bell.

*kat-te* one's own convenience. <sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The simple imperative *irasshai* has been somewhat vulgarized by doorkeepers of places of amusement, etc.

<sup>b</sup> The particles *de wa* are also contracted to *ja* which occurs with special frequency in, *ja nai ka*: *Chotto mi ni ikō ja nai ka.* Shan't we go to see it? *Sō oshatta ja arimasen ka.* You said so, did you not?

<sup>c</sup> This word is derived from the honorific *go* and *sa* (c) seat. It is of course unusual to form verbs by adding *ru* to Chinese elements, but there are analogous instances (Introduction, Xb) The native equivalent of *gozaru* is *owasu* or *owashimasu*, an honorific verb used like *oide nasaru* or *irassharu*. Another form of the same verb, *omasu*, is still used in the Kyōto dialect as an equivalent of *aru*: *sō de omasu* or *so dosu* = *so desu*. If this is not the explanation of the origin of *gozaru*, it is at least an instructive analogy.

<sup>d</sup> Comp. *kattegamashii* p. 110. The adjective *katte na* means selfish, inconsiderate. In speaking to a person, *go* may be prefixed to *katte*.

<i>do-yō</i> the dog days.	<i>hai-ken suru</i> look at (polite 1).
<i>jō-go</i> one who is fond of <i>sake</i> , sot.	<i>sha-shin wo toru</i> take (or sit for) a photograph.
<i>ge-ko</i> one who prefers sweets to <i>sake</i> , teetotaler.	<i>dai-ji ni suru</i> take good care of (p. 33a).
<i>hai-byō</i> consumption, phthisis.	<i>kangaeru</i> think, reflect.
<i>kem-butsu</i> sight seeing.	— <i>no kangae wo kiku</i> seek the advice of.
<i>kō-shi</i> minister, ambassador.	<i>hanahada</i> very, very much.
<i>shitsu-rei</i> discourtesy, im- politeness.	<i>kaette</i> on the contrary, rather.
<i>sō-shiki</i> funeral.	<i>moto</i> originally.
<i>shū-bu</i> = <i>ayame</i> . <sup>a</sup>	<i>yukkuri</i> (to), <i>jururi</i> (to) lei- surely (p 33e).
<i>haku-butsu-kwan</i> museum.	<i>ikigake ni</i> on the way (going).
<i>on-sem-ba</i> } hot spring	<i>kaerigake ni</i> on the way back.
<i>tō-ji-ba</i> } sanitarium.	<i>machigai naku</i> without fail, surely.
<i>watasu</i> take across, hand over (comp. <i>wataru</i> ).	

## Exercises

*Doits' tei no go sōsh'ki wo go ran nas'tta ka. Sayō mimash'ta. Go ran nas'ttara, watakushi ni watasht'te kudasai. O sashits'kae ga arimasen nara, dōso oide nas'tte kudasai. O kaerigake ni watakushi no uchi ni o yori nas'tte kudasai.*<sup>b</sup> *Nihon ni irassh'tta toki ni nan no o shirabemono wo nasaimash'ta ka.*<sup>c</sup> *Watakushi no shashin wo totte kudasai. Sono kane ga nakunnattara, dō nasaimas' ka. Mō s'koshi hayaku oide nas'ttara, o ma ni aimash'tarō ni. Horikiri no*<sup>d</sup> *hanashōbu wo mi ni oide nararan ka. Ueno no hakubuts'kwan wo go kembutsu ni oide nasaimasen ka. Dō o kangae nasaimas' ka. Hitotsu o kangae nas'tte kudasai. Moto Ber'rin ni oide nas'tta Nihon no kōshi*

<sup>a</sup> *Ayame* is rather the classical word. Usage has, however, differentiated *ayame* and *shōbu*, so that it is not strictly correct to call them synonymous. But the usage is not consistent. The *ayame* or *shōbu* of the proverb (p. 66c) is the sweet flag or calamus, whose blossom is inconspicuous. Varieties of the iris family which have showy flowers are called *hana-shōbu* or *hana-ayame*.

<sup>b</sup> *Hito no uchi (tokoro) ni (ye) yoru* to call upon a person.

<sup>c</sup> *Shirabemono wo suru* to make an investigation. Comp. *wasuremono wo suru* p. 147b.

<sup>d</sup> A garden in the vicinity of Tōkyō renowned for its exhibitions of irises.

*wa kuni ni o kaeri nasatte, ima wa tōjiba ni irasshaimas'.* *Mō kane ga natta de wa arimasen ka.* *Mukō no kuni no kotoba ga o wakari nasaimasen kara* (p. 118b), *tochū de o komari nas'tta deskō.* *Konaida oide no toki ni o yak'soku ni narimash'ta hon wo motte kite kudasaimash'ta ka.*<sup>a</sup> *Ano o kata wa geko de irassharu kara, o kwashi de mo sashiagemashō.*<sup>b</sup> *Anata wa kitchiri roku ji ni o oki nasaimas'ka.* *Sayō, tokei ga naru to, sugu ni okimas'.* *Anata Nihon ye oide nasaru toki doko no fune ni notte irasshaimash'ta ka ; Frans' no fune des' ka, Igiris' no des' ka.* *Iie, Doits' no fune ni norimashita.*<sup>c</sup> *Anata wa Kyōto ye irash'tta koto ga arimas'ka.* *Iie, mada arimasen ; kondo no doiyōyasuni ni kembutsu ni mairu tsumori des'.* *Sekkaku o tazune kudasaimash'te hanahada osoreirimash'ta.*<sup>d</sup> *Sekkaku o daiji ni (nasaimashu).* *Asak'sa no Kwannon sama wa e yoku negaigoto wo o kiki nasaimas'.* *Ippuku meshiagari nasaimasen ka.* *Sekkaku Seiyō ye irassh'ta no ni,*<sup>e</sup> *sugu ni haibyō ni natte o shini nasaimash'ta.* *Oide kudasaimas' no wa jitsu ni arigatō gozaimas' keredomo, sore de wa kaette osoreirimas'.*<sup>g</sup> *Go katte na koto wo ii nasaru na.*

Have you heard that (*no wo*) the temple of *Kōya san* was burned at the beginning of last year? You must not consult your own convenience too much (*amari*). It may be well to seek the advice of the teacher. Were you at home at the time of the earthquake, or were you out? Where was the master

a *Oide no toki ni* at the time of your presence, i. e., when you were. Stems of verbs or nouns are often used when we should expect an indicative verb, thus: *go sonji desu, go sonji no hito, go sonji no hasu desu.* Compare: *o tanomi no hon* the book for which you asked me, *sankei no hito* the people who visit the temple.

b By substituting *de mo* for *wo* the expression is made indefinite, it being implied that one might offer something else perhaps.

c *Iie* in this sentence means "neither."

d The adverb *sekkaku* indicates that there are difficulties (expenditure of time, money, etc.) connected with the act. It may be variously translated, according to the context; sometimes it is untranslatable. In this sentence it may be rendered, "you have taken the trouble;" in the following sentence, "specially." Notice that *osoreirimashita* is used for the present tense (p. 143, 5, 2).

e A well known Buddhist divinity.

f The *no ni* means "although." Comp. p. 132.

g Here *osoreirimasu* means "I am distressed to have you do so." In a case of real loss or suffering one may say *itami-irimasu*, from *itamu* ache.



(*go shujin*) when the fire broke out (*deru* or *hajimaru*)? If you were in my place (*anata nara*), what would (do) you do in this case (*toki*)? Indeed (*honto ni*) you must have been embarrassed. Did you go to the Museum yesterday? Just (*chotto*) see whether what I have written is erroneous (*machi-gatte imas' ka dō des' ka*). When you have written [it] I will look [at it]. If you don't understand, please say (*ossharu*) so. Come for a little chat (*chitto o hanashi ni*). Where are you going next? I am going to see (*haiken ni*) the newly built Imperial Residence. I beg (p. 104b) that you will all (I) come without fail. Please give me (I beg) your reply when you have decided. Please rest leisurely. I am very sorry that I was away from home (I was indeed impolite, being away from home—*rusu de*), though (*no ni*) you took the trouble to come [to see me].

## CHAPTER L

To the second group belong verbs in *tsu*. The *u* of the present tense is hardly audible.

Paradigm of *matsu* (stem : *machi*) to wait, await :

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>matsu</i>	<i>matanai, matan (u)</i>
Past	<i>matta</i>	<i>matanakatta,—nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>matō</i>	<i>matsumai</i>
Probable	<i>matsu darō</i>	<i>matanai darō, matan darō</i>
Past Probable	<i>mattarō</i>	<i>matanakattarō,—nandaro</i>
Past Conditional	<i>matta darō</i>	<i>matanakatta darō</i>
Conditional	<i>mateba (mataba)</i> <i>matsu nara (ba)</i>	<i>matanakereba (matanakuba)</i> <i>mataneba</i> <i>matanai nara (ba)</i>
Past Conditional	<i>mattara (ba)</i> <i>matta nara (ba)</i>	<i>matanakattara,—nandara (ba)</i> <i>matanakatta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>mate</i> <i>(o) machi na</i> <i>o machi (yo)</i>	<i>matsu na</i> <i>o machi de nai yo</i>

Subordina- tive	<i>matte</i>	<i>matazu (shite), matazu ni matanaide, mataude matanakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>machitai</i>	<i>machitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>mattari</i>	<i>matanakattari,—nandari matanaidari</i>

The fact that the Japanese modify the sound of *t* before *i* and *u*, saying not *ti*, *tu*, but *chi*, *tsu*, must be remembered in conjugating verbs of this class. With *te*, *tari*, *ta*, etc., the *chi* of the stem naturally unites to form *tte*, *ttari*, *tta*.

The verbs belonging to this class are not numerous. Besides *matsu* we have :

*katsu* win a victory (—*ni katsu* defeat).

*kobotsu* break, destroy, demolish.

*motsu* hold in the hand, have.

*motsu* last, endure.

*sodatsu* grow up, be reared.

*tatsu* stand, rise (from a seat), rise (of dust, waves, etc.),  
pass (of time), leave (a place).

*tatsu* cut (paper, cloth, etc.), sunder, have nothing more to  
to do with.

*utsu* strike, clap (hands), shoot,<sup>a</sup> play (a game of chance).

*butsu* (vulgar)=*utsu*.

The verbs *wakatsu* divide, distinguish, *hanatsu* separate, let loose, shoot, *tamotsu* have, defend, and *ayamatsu* err, belong properly to the written language. Their colloquial equivalents are *wakeru*, *hanasu*, *motsu* and *machiganu*.

## Vocabulary

(Include the verbs given above)

*chi* blood.

*hibari* skylark.

*hototogisu* cuckoo.<sup>b</sup>

(o) *miyage*, *miyage-mono* a  
present brought by the giver  
in person (p. 84d).

<sup>a</sup> "To shoot with a gun" is *teppō de—wo utsu*. "To fire a gun" is *teppō wo utsu*.

<sup>b</sup> The cuckoo's cry impresses the Chinese and Japanese as being very pathetic.

- tono* (*sama*) a respectful term designating a nobleman (as a former *daimyō*).
- hi-uchi-gane* steel for striking fire.
- hi-uchi-ishi* flint for striking fire.
- kane* bell.
- sute-gane* a signal of three strokes preparatory to striking the hour.
- te-ma* time spent on a task.
- ken* a game played with the hands. <sup>a</sup>
- on* (c) kindness, benefits.
- baku-chi* gambling. <sup>b</sup>
- ban-ji* (lit. 10,000 things) all things, in every respect.
- kō-kwai* repentance.
- kwan-gun* Government army.
- zoku-gun* rebel army.
- sen-sō* battle, war.
- sho-go* noon.
- tai-kō* cannon.
- (*o*) *tō-miyō* a light offered to a god.
- zai-san* property.
- kō-ri, kori* a traveller's trunk made of wickerware, a pair of baskets one of which telescopes into the other.
- yanagi* willow.
- yanagi-gōri* a *kōri* made of willow.
- yūbin-kyoku* post office.
- fu-nare na* inexpert. <sup>c</sup>
- uchi-jū no* all in the house (p. 137a).
- dai-jōbu na* secure, all right (p. 138b).
- kinsuru, kinjite* prohibit.
- ogamu* worship.
- oyobu* reach.
- *ni oyobanai* it is not necessary to. <sup>d</sup>
- naku-suru* lose (p. 108a).

<sup>a</sup> From this Chinese word for "first." In the variety called *ishi-ken* or *fan-ken* three things are represented: *ishi* stone, *kami* paper and *hasami* shears. A stone may be wrapped in paper, paper may be cut by shears, and shears must yield to stones. The players extend their hands simultaneously, each representing one of these three things. For instance, if A makes the sign of the stone, he wins in case B makes the sign of the shear, but has to yield to the paper. Another variety is *mushi ken*, in which the characters are *hebi* snake, *kaeru* frog and *namekuji* slug. It seems that the snake fears the slug. Still another *kitsune-ken*, or *fōhachi-ken*, in which appear *shō-ya* (old word for *son-chō* head of a village), *teppō* gun and *kitsune* fox. The fox is regarded as having power to bewitch a man. "To play *ken*" is *ken wo utsu*.

<sup>b</sup> From the Chinese *baku* a board used for games and *uchi*, the stem of *utsu* "To gamble" is *bakuchi wo utsu* (*butsu*). A gambler is *bakuchi-uchi*.

<sup>c</sup> From the negative *fu* (p. 124) and the stem of *nareru* become accustomed. There are other instances of the combination of *fu* with stems of native verbs: e. g., *fu-soroi* not uniform, *fu-tsuri-ai* not balanced, out of proportion.

<sup>d</sup> Notice the very common phrase: *Go shimpai ni wa oyobimasen*. You need not feel any concern about it.

<i>hori-mono wo suru</i> carve, engrave. <sup>a</sup>	<i>tsuide</i> convenience, opportunity.
<i>hō-tō suru</i> be profligate.	<i>tsuide ni</i> on occasion, by the way, incidentally.
<i>shūt-tatsu suru</i> set out on a journey, start. <sup>b</sup>	<i>yōyaku, yōyō, yōyatto, yatto</i> finally, with difficulty, barely.
<i>hatsu</i> numerative for discharges of a gun.	<i>sas-soku</i> very soon.
<i>ippatsu utsu</i> to fire once.	<i>shō-shō</i> a little.
<i>hajime</i> ( <i>ni</i> or <i>wa</i> or <i>ni wa</i> ) at first.	<i>nagara</i> at the same time, while, though. <sup>c</sup>

### Exercises

*Mateba, nagai.* <sup>d</sup> *Kami sama no o tōmyō wa hiuchiishi de utte agemas'.* *Kōkwai saki ni tatazu.* <sup>e</sup> *Dōmo, ha ga itakute tatte mo suwatte ite mo iravemasen.* <sup>f</sup> *Konaida o tanomi no meshitsukai wo tsurete mairimash'ta ga, inaka no mon' des' kara, shōjiki des' keredomo, banji junare de o yaku ni wa tachimas'mai.* <sup>g</sup> *Seinan no ik'sa de wa* <sup>h</sup> *kwangun ga hajime tabitabi maketa ga, nochi ni yōyaku kachimash'ta. Nihonjin wa yoku ken wo uchimas'; sono ken ni iroiro arimash'te ishiken ya mushiken ya kitsuneken ya tak'san shurui ga arimas'. Nihon de wa bakuchi wo uts' koto wo kinjite arimas'. Nihonjin wa kamisama wo ogamu toki ni wa san do te wo uchimas'. Chi no deru hodo kodomo wo butte wa ikemasen.* <sup>i</sup> *Toki no*

<sup>a</sup> *Hori-mono* also has the sense of tattooing in its more elaborate forms, including figures of men and animals. Simple tattooing, such as that in vogue among Ainu women, is called *ire-sumi*.

<sup>b</sup> This is a curious compound of the Chinese *shutsu*=*deru* and the native verb *tatsu* to set out.

<sup>c</sup> *Nagara* is used with stems of verbs or with Chinese compounds.

<sup>d</sup> One may also say: *Matte iru to nagai mono desu. Matsu mi wa tsurai* (*tsurai* afflicted, suffering). It is hard to wait (often of lovers).

<sup>e</sup> Proverbs, as has been remarked before (p. 103a), are expressed in classical forms. For *tatazu* see p. 171, top. The meaning is: Repentance unfortunately does not come soon enough to prevent the wrong.

<sup>f</sup> See p. 108h. *Oravemasen* may be substituted for *iravemasen*.

<sup>g</sup> Here *de* stands for *de atte*. For *o tanomi no* see p. 193a.

<sup>h</sup> *Sei=sai* west; *nan* south (p. 107b). *Seinan no ikusa* designates the Satsuma rebellion of the year 1877.

<sup>i</sup> Translate *hodo* "so that." Compare p. 101 (2).

*kane wa saki ni mittsu s'tegane wo utte sore kara kazu dake uchimas'*<sup>a</sup> *Nihon de wa ōki na kane wa bō de (motte) uchimas'*. *Chotto o machi nasai. Shōshō o machi kudasai. Koko de s'koshi mate. O tema ga toremasen nara, machimashō.*<sup>b</sup> *Kore wo o mochi nas'tte kudasai.*<sup>c</sup> *S'koshi matte kure, sugu ni kaeru kara. Matazu ni uchi ye kaeru hō ga yokarō. Tatsu (go away) mae ni zehi anata no o taku ni agarimashō. Itsu o tachi ni narimas' ka. Nimotsu no sh'taku ga dekitara, sassoku tachimas'. Kono yanagigōri wa madu mochimashō ka. Sayō, daijōbu des'. Konaida o yak'soku no shashin wa motte mairimash'ta. Chichi ga uchijū no mono ni miyage wo motte kaerimash'ta. Tsuide ni kono tegami wo yūbinkyoku ye motte oide (nasai). Hidari Jingorō wa<sup>d</sup> hidari no ie de (motte) jōzu ni horimono wo sh'ta sō des'. Hototogis' wa tobi nagara nakimas' ga, hibari wa tachi nagara nakimas'. Oide no jibun ni chōdo yo ji wo utte imash'ta. Ko wo motte shiru, oya no on (Proverb).<sup>e</sup> *Moto wa ie wo motanai mono wa ichi nin mae no hito de nai to mōshimash'ta.*<sup>f</sup> *Ko wa sodachigatash'* (Proverb).*

In ancient times (*wa*) [people] kindled fire with steel and flint. I have brought the book which you asked for (*o tanomi no*), but [I fear] it will not be of any use. The Government army won at the battle of Ueno and the rebel army fled to Ōshū. & Do you often play *ken*? Through profligacy and gambling<sup>h</sup> he lost all (*sukkari*) his property. He struck him

a After the subordinative such expressions as *sore kara* and *sō shite* often occur. They add nothing to the sense. In the following sentence *motte*, which often follows *de*, is likewise pleonastic.

b *Tema ga toreru*. It takes time. To show respect, the speaker, a rikshaman, add *o*.

c Translate: Please take this along. "Please hold this" would be: *Kore wo motte ite kudasai*.

d A famous carver in wood (died 1634). The critics say that the story of his having been left-handed is a myth based on the fact that he came from the province of *Hida*.

e For the sake of emphasis the order is inverted. *Oya no on* is the object of *shiru*.

f *Ie* means not "house," but "household." For *ichi nin mae* compare *hitori-mae*, p. 95a.

g *Ōshū* designates the provinces at the northern end of the main island. Some think it is hardly fair to call the opponents of the Government at that time rebels. Historians use the term *tō-gun* (tō east), "Battle" is *tatakai*, *kassen*, or *sensō*.

h Use alternatives with *shite*.

that blood flowed (comes out). In Tōkyō at noon a gun is fired (they fire the gun once). Japanese eat (things) with chopsticks. The lord of Owari held a fief yielding (of) 550,000 *kokū*. Has it struck eight o'clock? Not yet, <sup>a</sup> but it will soon strike. [We] have been waiting a half-hour (*mo*), but he has (does) not yet come (pres.). I will wait here until you return. It is not necessary to wait. He seems (*yō des'*) to have money. Please hold this a moment. I have brought the photographs for which you asked recently. He brings the children gifts every time he comes. When will he leave for home (*kuni ye*)? He wanted to leave at the end of this year, but as (*no de*) he has been taken (*kakatta* or *natta*) with consumption, he must return at once, it is said. Europeans living in Japan take plenty of food along when they travel (go) into the interior. May I take this along? Shrewd people win by yielding (*makete*). When will you go into the country? I intend to start after (*tatte*) two or three days. It will be a serious matter (*taihen des'*) if you break this plate.

## CHAPTER LI

To the third group belong verbs in *su*. As in the case of verbs in *tsu*, the *u* is hardly audible.

Paradigm of *hanasu* (stem *hanashi*) to speak, or, to separate :

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>hanasu</i>	<i>hanasanai, hanasan (u)</i>
Past	<i>hanashita</i>	<i>hanasanakatta,—nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>hanasō</i> <i>hanasu darō</i>	<i>hanasumai</i> <i>hanasainai darō</i> <i>hanasan darō</i>
Probable	<i>hanashitarō</i>	<i>hanasanakattarō,—nandarō</i>
Past	<i>hanashita daro</i>	<i>hanasanakatta darō</i>
Condi- tional	<i>hanaseba</i> ( <i>hanasaba</i> ) <i>hanasu nara (ba)</i>	<i>hanasanakereba</i> ( <i>hanasanakuba</i> ) <i>hanasaneba</i> <i>hanasanai nara (ba)</i>

<sup>a</sup> Instead of repeating the verb (negative present) with *mada*, one may say simply *mada desu*.

Past Con- ditional	<i>hanashitara (ba)</i> <i>hanashitara nara (ba)</i>	<i>hanasanakattara (ba)</i> <i>hanasanandara (ba)</i> <i>hanasanakatta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>hanase</i> (o) <i>hanashi na</i> <i>o hanashi (yo)</i>	<i>hanasu na</i> <i>o hanashi de nai yo</i>
Subordina- tive	<i>hanashite</i>	<i>hanasazu (shite), hanasazu ni</i> <i>hanasanaide, hanasande</i> <i>hanasanakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>hanashitai</i>	<i>hanashitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>hanashitari</i>	<i>hanasanakattari,—nandari</i> <i>hanasanaidari</i>

Verbs of this group are very numerous. They are generally transitive.<sup>a</sup> In most cases the corresponding intransitives are derived from the same root.<sup>b</sup>

Many are synonymous with regular causatives :

*awasu* = *awaseru* cause to meet, introduce, join, from *au* meet.

*kawakasu* = *kawakeru* dry, desiccate, from *kawaku*.

*narasu* = *naraseru* sound, ring, from *naru* resound.

The transitive derived from *waku* boil is *wakasu*, never *wakeru*. The form in *su* often differs in sense from that in *seru*. Thus *chirasu* means scatter, from *chiru*, while *chiraseru* means to see—fall down (poetically used of leaves and blossoms). So *korobasu*, from *korobu* tumble, means roll, while *korobaseru* means cause to tumble. From *meguru* = *mawaru* go round, we have two verbs, *megurasu* revolve in the mind, used in the semi-classical compound *omoimegurasu* reflect, and *meguraseru* cause to go round.

In some cases *su* is simply substituted for the *ru* of an intransitive verb :

*amasu* leave over.

*amaru* be in excess.

a One exception is *masu* increase, which may be transitive or intransitive. Its conjugation is regular, while that of the auxiliary *masu* (see the next chapter) is somewhat irregular. The *mashi* of *mashi desu* (p. 136, middle) is the stem of this verb.

b The following lists are by no means exhaustive. The words given are selected simply with a view to prepare the student for further observation. For the regular causatives see Ch. LXI.

<i>hesu</i> ( <i>herasu</i> ) decrease.	<i>heru</i> decrease.
<i>hitasu</i> immerse, soak.	<i>hitaru</i> be immersed.
<i>kaesu</i> ( <i>kayasu</i> ) send back, repay.	<i>kaeru</i> come or go back.
<i>kasu</i> lend, rent.	<i>karu</i> ( <i>kariru</i> ) borrow.
<i>kawasu</i> exchange.	<i>kawaru</i> change (intr.).
<i>kudasu</i> cause to descend.	<i>kudaru</i> descend.
<i>mawasu</i> turn round, pass round.	<i>mawaru</i> go round.
<i>modosu</i> send back, vomit.	<i>modoru</i> come or go back.
<i>naosu</i> mend, heal.	<i>naoru</i> be mended, healed.
<i>nosu</i> ( <i>noseru</i> ) place on, record.	<i>noru</i> be on, ride.
<i>okosu</i> raise, start, begin.	<i>okoru</i> arise, break out.
<i>tōsu</i> cause or allow to pass.	<i>tōru</i> pass through or by.
<i>watasu</i> take across, hand over.	<i>wataru</i> cross.

The *eru* or *iru* of verbs of the first class may become *asu*; *iru* often becomes *osu*:

<i>chirakasu</i> scatter about.	<i>chirakeru</i> be scattered about.
<i>dasu</i> put out, give.	<i>deru</i> issue forth.
<i>fuyasu</i> augment, multiply.	<i>fueru</i> increase.
<i>kogasu</i> scorch, burn.	<i>kogeru</i> be scorched.
<i>makasu</i> defeat, beat down.	<i>makeru</i> yield, come down.
<i>narasu</i> train, tame. <sup>a</sup>	<i>nareru</i> become accustomed.
<i>nigasu</i> allow to escape.	<i>nigeru</i> escape.
<i>nurasu</i> wet.	<i>nureru</i> get wet.
<i>samasu</i> cool.	<i>sameru</i> become cool.
<i>samasu</i> waken, recover from.	<i>sameru</i> become awake, sober.
<i>tokasu</i> dissolve, melt.	<i>tokeru</i> be dissolved, melted.
<i>tsuiyasu</i> spend, waste.	<i>tsuieru</i> be spoiled, spent.
<i>nobasu</i> extend, postpone.	<i>nobiru</i> be extended, postponed.
<i>horobosu</i> overthrow.	<i>horobiru</i> be overthrown.
<i>hosu</i> dry, ventilate.	<i>hiru</i> dry, ebb.
<i>okosu</i> waken.	<i>okiru</i> get up.
<i>orosu</i> let down.	<i>oriru</i> descend, alight.
<i>otosu</i> drop, lose, omit, take.	<i>ochiru</i> fall (p. 165b).

To some transitives in *su* correspond intransitives in *eru*.

<i>hanasu</i> separate.	<i>hanareru</i> be separated.
<i>hasusu</i> displace, miss, avoid.	<i>hasureru</i> be displaced, fail.

<sup>a</sup> Besides *narasu* tame and *narasu* ring, we have also *narasu* from *narui* become or be produced (of fruit) and *narasu* level or grade (land).



<i>kakusu</i> hide.	<i>kakureru</i> be hidden.
<i>kobosu</i> pour, spill.	<i>koboreru</i> overflow.
<i>konasu</i> pulverize, digest.	<i>konareru</i> be digested.
<i>kowasu</i> break, destroy.	<i>kowareru</i> be broken.
<i>kuzusu</i> tear down (p. 116b).	<i>kuzureru</i> go to pieces.
<i>nagasu</i> let flow, forfeit.	<i>nagareru</i> flow.
<i>taosu</i> prostrate, kill.	<i>taoreru</i> fall over (of tall things).
<i>tsubusu</i> crush, rub off, destroy.	<i>tsubureru</i> be broken, crushed.

Finally it is to be noted that some transitives are formed by means of the termination *kasu*, which is often interchangeable with *su* or *seru* :

<i>hiyaku</i> , <sup>a</sup> <i>hiyasu</i> cool, <i>hieru</i> become cool.
<i>jiraku</i> , <i>jirasu</i> tease, tantalize, from <i>jireru</i> be irritated.
<i>magiraku</i> , <i>magirasu</i> confuse, bamboozle, from <i>magireru</i> ( <i>magiru</i> ) be mixed up.
<i>nekasu</i> , <i>neseru</i> put to sleep, from <i>neru</i> sleep.

## Vocabulary

(Include the lists given above)

<i>juki</i> name of an edible plant,	<i>katsuo</i> bonito.
<i>Petasites japonicus</i> .	<i>fushi</i> knot, knob (as on a tree).
<i>furi</i> air, appearance.	<i>katsuo-bushi</i> dried bonito. <sup>b</sup>
<i>kabi</i> mold.	<i>tsuki-hi</i> months and days,
<i>kabiru</i>	times.
<i>kabi ga haeru</i> } to mold.	<i>kompeitō</i> (from the Spanish
<i>okori</i> origin, etymology.	<i>confeito</i> ) confection, candy.
<i>taka</i> amount (usually a suffix	<i>fuku</i> (c) luck, felicity.
in the form <i>daka</i> ).	<i>jū</i> (c) gun, rifle, arms.
<i>tsutsuji</i> azalea.	<i>shiki</i> (c) rite, ceremony.
<i>hinata</i> sunny place, sunshine.	<i>za</i> (c) seat.
<i>fu-moto</i> ( <i>fumu</i> walk on, <i>moto</i>	<i>gu-chi</i> silliness, twaddle.
bottom) foot (of a hill or	<i>guchi wo kobosu</i> grumble.
mountain).	<i>seisō</i> manufacture.
<i>kami-ire</i> pocket-book.	<i>shin-ja</i> believer. <sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Hiyaku* has also the meaning of "to make a fool of" and is used especially of those who examine and price things exposed for sale when they have no intention of buying.

<sup>b</sup> Various contracted to *katsubushi*, *katsuo* or *fushi*.

<sup>c</sup> Buddhist believers are usually called *shin-to*.

<i>sui-kwa</i> watermelon.	<i>yurusu</i> set at liberty, pardon,
<i>sō-kin</i> cloth for mopping floors.	permit.
<i>zoku-go</i> colloquial, vulgarism.	<i>utsusu</i> copy.
<i>tanoshii</i> delightful, happy.	<i>hik-kosu</i> remove (residence). <sup>a</sup>
<i>hiyayaka na</i> cool.	<i>kiki-awaseru</i> gather informa- tion, inquire about.
<i>tas-sha na</i> vigorous, profi- cient.	<i>toshi-yoru</i> become aged.
<i>inoru</i> pray (— <i>wo inoru</i> pray for).	<i>hanashite kikaseru</i> tell (lit. speaking cause to hear).
<i>okuru</i> pass (time), lead (a life).	<i>kasa wo sasu</i> hold up an um- brella.
<i>damakasu, damasu</i> deceive, impose upon.	<i>hi-bana wo chirasu</i> make the sparks fly.
<i>sasu</i> propagate by means of cuttings ( <i>sashi-ki wo suru</i> ).	<i>o itoma mōsu</i> take one's leave. <i>saiwai (ni)</i> happily.

### Exercises

*Hito no furi mite waga furi naose* (Proverb).<sup>b</sup> *Watakushi ga solo ye detaru, ramp' wo keshi'te kure. Moto wa Edo ye iku koto wo kudaru to mōshi'te Kyōto ye iku koto wo noboru to mōshimashi'ta. Dōzo, kuruma wo iōshi'te kudasai.*<sup>c</sup> *Hikeshi wa kase ga tsuyokute hayaku hi wo kes' koto ga dekinakatta kara, kinjo no ie wo kowashi'ta. Katsuobushi to iu mono wa katsuo no hoshi'ta n' des'.*<sup>d</sup> *Nihon ni wa yama no fumoto ni yoku "umagaeshi" to iu tokoro ga arimas' ; kono na no okori wa kore kara saki wa michi ga kenso de Urenai* (p. 108h) *kara, uma wa kaes' to iu koto des'. Fuki no ha wo hoshi'te tabako ni mazete nomu hito mo arimas'. Soko ni wa hashi ga nai kara, fune de hito wo watashimas'. Kimi ga Doits'go wo tassha ni hanashi'te mo sonna mutsukashii koto wo jibun hitori de (alone) kikiawas' koto wa dekinas'mai. Watakushi ga waru gozaimashi'ta kara, o yurushi kudasai. Sono ue no gaku*

<sup>a</sup> The verb *kosu* cross is transitive, but this compound, like *omoi-megurasu*, is intransitive.

<sup>b</sup> *Waga* (comp. p. 27c) is, of course, not used in ordinary colloquial. *Furi* denotes matters of etiquette, clothes, etc.

<sup>c</sup> When people stand in the way, one may say politely: *Go men nasai*—Excuse me! Beg pardon!

<sup>d</sup> The *n'* stands for *no* and is equivalent to *mono*. The *no* after *katsuo* is explicative.

*wo orosh'te misete kudasai. Kango'b'sho yor. mo gakkō na kane wo tsuiyas' hō ga yō gozaimas'. Fuku no kami ni inoru yori kuchi wo herase (Proverb)<sup>a</sup> Kasa wo sash'te kite mo bisshori nuremash'ta. Kariru toki no Jizōgao, kaes' toki no Emmagao (Proverb)<sup>b</sup> Tsutsuji no eda wa sash'te mo<sup>c</sup> ts'ki-mas'. Soko ni aru ishi wa omoi kara korobasu yori hoka sh'kata ga nai. Ano ōkii ki wo kiri-taosu no wa oshii koto des'. Omoimeguraseba ni jū go nen no mukashi Doits' de tanoshii tsukiki wo okutte orimash'ta. Hiyamizu wa ikenai; wakash'te nome. Tenrikyō no hō de wa kompeitō ni nani ka myō na kusuri wo irete shinja wo damakash'te otta sō des'.<sup>d</sup> Suikwa wa mizu ni hiyash'te taberu to, o:shū gozaimas'. Karita kane wo komban made ni modosanak'te wa narimasen. Sono koto wa kesa no shimbun ni nosele arimas'. Omai pan wo sonna ni kogash'te dō sh'ta no da. Amari yakamash'ku suru to sekkaku nekash'ta kodomo ga me wo samashimas'. Kūki ga warui kara, shōji wo hazush'tara yokarō. Toshiyoriu to, guchi wo koboshimas'. Amari kodomo wo jirash't ewa iji ga waruku narimas'. Fune ni you to, tabeta mono wo modoshimas'. Orose, jū!<sup>e</sup>*

I will now (*mō* or *kore de*) take leave for (*wa*) this evening (1). When you have finished copying this, please show [it to me]. This child at once breaks its toys. The French two hundred years ago took the castle at (of) Heidelberg. Take care that (*yō ni*) you do not break these teacups. In the mountaineous regions (*yamaguni*) of Japan [people] eat a great deal of dried fish. Dried fish is called *himono*. Among the teachers of the Medical School there are many who speak Germ n freely. That old gentleman has often told me of old times (*mukashi no koto*). This bird, even though you set it free (*hanash'te yaru*), comes back again (returning comes).

a The word "mouths" means the number of children, servants, etc., belonging to one's house. There are seven *fuku no kami*. They are often called *shichi fuku-jin* (*shin=kami*).

b *Jizō* is a gracious buddha and has a kindly face. *Enma (sama)*, the prince of hell, has a fearful face.

c *Mo* here has the sense of "though only." With *tsukimasu* is understood *ne ga*.

d *Ten-ri-kyō* (heaven-reason doctrine) a new religious sect very popular among the lower classes. It makes much of faith healing. Some newspapers have charged the priests with slyly administering morphine to the believers.

e A military command. The *e* is pronounced very long: *orosei*.

In (*de wa*) the ceremony of *koicha* they pass round the teacup. We will go to tease (*hiyakashi ni*) the shopkeepers (shops). Put the shoes out into the sunshine in order that (*yō ni*) they may not mold. *Kashihonyū* means (*to iu koto des'*) a shop that loans books. These trees are multiplied (one multiplies) by means of cuttings. Will you wear (*mesu*)<sup>a</sup> the new garments or (shall it be) the old ones? It seems to me that (*yō ni omou*) I dropped my pocket-book somewhere on the way (*michi de*). He has three houses and rents (renting puts) two of them to others. You remove often. Please translate it (*naosu*) into the colloquial. Will it do to erase this character? Correct that character without erasing it. Happily, as there was no wind, they extinguished the fire at once. In Japan they have what they call (*to mōsh'te*) *doyō-boshi*; when the dog-days come (*ni naru*) people air their clothes. He has often told us of Japan. It is said that there are seventy million people that speak German. In Japan there has been a great increase in the manufacture of beer (*biir' no seizōdaka* increasing has come). In order to avoid (avoiding) conversation he left his seat. They wet their sleeves with tears (Letting flow tears they wet their sleeves). Don't spend all the money, but save (not spending all the money leave over) some. Soak this *sōkin* in hot water. We are annoyed (*komaru*) by the children scattering things about. They fought until the sparks flew (scattering sparks). You must not confuse your words so. Alexander overthrew the Persian Empire. As it is so hot that I can't drink it, please cool it.

## CHAPTER LII

1. The auxiliary *masu* (*masuru*) is in some respects irregular:

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>masu, masuru</i>	<i>masen (u)</i>
Past	<i>maskita</i>	<i>masen deshita</i> <i>masen (a) katta, --nanda</i>

<sup>a</sup> The verb *mesu* has a wide range of meanings. The riksha-man says to his passenger: (*Jinrikisha ni*) *o meshi nasaimashi*. Please seat yourself in the riksha. Notice the use of *mesu* in compounds: *meshi ageru* eat or drink, *oboshi-mesu* think.

Future or	<i>mashō</i>	<i>masumai</i>
Probable	<i>masu deshō</i>	<i>masen deshō</i>
Probable	<i>mashitarō</i>	<i>masen deshitarō</i>
Past	<i>mashita deshō</i>	<i>masen (a) kattarō, —nandarō</i>
		<i>masen (a) katta deshō</i>
Conditional	<i>masureba</i>	<i>masen nara (ba)</i>
	<i>masurya</i>	<i>masen (a) kereba</i>
	<i>masu (ru) nara (ba)</i>	<i>masenkerya</i>
		<i>maseneba</i>
Past Con-	<i>mashitara (ba)</i>	<i>masen deshitara (ba)</i>
ditional	<i>mashita nara (ba)</i>	<i>masen (a) kattara (ba)</i>
		<i>masenandara (ba)</i>
		<i>masen (a) katta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>mase</i>	<i>masu na, masuru na</i>
	<i>mashi, mashi na</i>	
Subordina-	<i>mashite</i>	<i>masezu (shite), masezu ni</i>
tive		<i>masende</i>
Desiderative	—	—
Alternative	<i>mashitari</i>	<i>masen (a) kattari, —nandari</i>

The conditional *masureba*, etc., and the negative imperative *masuru na* are derived from the longer form *masuru*, which often occurs also in the present tense, especially in formal speech.

In the negative forms the characteristic vowel is *e*, not *a*. In the present tense the form in *nai* is wanting.

The desiderative is wanting; in its stead the desiderative of the plain verb with *gozaimasu* or *omoimasu* is used:—not *hanashimashitar*, but *hanashitō gozaimasu* or *hanashitai to omoimasu*.

2. This *masu* is used only as an auxiliary attached to the stems of other verbs. It indicates that the speaker wishes to be courteous. See p. 142, 3. It is quite proper to use *masu* in speaking to inferiors. But many foreigners make their speech too monotonous by using *masu* with all verbs indiscriminately. For variety's sake verbs in inconspicuous positions should ordinarily be plain. Further *masu* may be more readily omitted with verbs that are in themselves honorific than with common verbs. One must be more careful to add *masu* to verbs in the first person than in the third. The use of *masu* is

apt to be incongruous: (a) in a monologue or in repeating something previously said to the speaker; (b) in a conversation where the speaker is *boku* and his hearer *kimi*; (c) in clauses dependent on a verb which is plain. When moved with indignation or in the heat of debate the natural tendency is to use curt forms.

3. In formal speech one uses as auxiliaries special verbs such as *nasaru*, *kudasaru* and *irassharu* (Ch. XLIX.). The verb *mōsu*<sup>a</sup> is also used as an auxiliary, chiefly in the first person, when the hearer is the direct or indirect object of the action. It follows the stem of a verb, the honorific *o* being prefixed:

*O negai mōshitai koto ga gozaimasu.*

I wish to ask a favor.

*O tanomi mōsu.* I request your assistance (p. 125b).<sup>b</sup>

*Masu* may be added to honorific verbs: *nasaimasu*, *kudasaimasu*, *irasshaimasu*, *o negai mōshimasu*, etc.

## Vocabulary

*kaki-tome* registration (postal). *ban* checker-board, chess-naka-ma company, associates. board (numeration for games  
*cha-no-yu* ceremonial tea. <sup>c</sup> of checkers or chess).  
(*o*) *itoma-goi* leave-taking. *koma* chessman.  
*itomagoi ni deru* come for a *setsu* (c) season, period, time.  
parting call. *en-ryō* reserve (*enryō suru* feel  
*go* a game likê checkers. diffident).  
*go wo utsu* play checkers. (*go*) *enryō naku* without re-  
*shō-gi* chess. serve, frankly.  
*shōgi wo sasu* play chess. *fujin* lady.

<sup>a</sup> *Mōsu* used as a principal verb means "say." As it implies respect for the person addressed, it cannot ordinarily be used in the second person. But a judge speaking as a representative of the Sovereign may say: *Sono hō no mōsu tokoro wa (mōshi-tateru tokoro wa, or mōshi-tate wa) tatanai.* What you say will not hold. A master may speak similarly to a servant. One may say to a friend: *Satō san ni yoroshiku mōshita to osshatte kudasai.* Please say to Mr. Sato that I wished to be remembered. Elliptically one may say: *yoroshiku mōshite kudasai.*

<sup>b</sup> At the door of a house or at a telephone one may say simply *moshi!* *moshi!* to attract attention. The answer is *hai* or *ai*. In former times the reply to such a call was *dore*.

<sup>c</sup> The *yu* is now written with the character for "hot water," but originally it was probably a variant of *e*, one reading of the character *awai* assembly.

<i>kyū-gen</i> comedy, drama, play.	<i>sagasu</i> search, inquire for.
<i>kyō-jū</i> professor. <sup>a</sup>	<i>sumu</i> come to an end, be finished.
<i>kyūka</i> holidays, vacation, leave of absence.	<i>sugosu</i> (intrans. <i>sugiru</i> ) pass (time).
<i>sai-soku</i> urging the fulfilment of an obligation, dun.	<i>toki (hima) wo tsubusu</i> waste time.
<i>shak-kin</i> borrowing money, debt.	<i>ukagau</i> peep, spy, inquire, pay a call.
<i>sō-dan</i> consultation.	<i>kashikomaru</i> respectfully acquiesce. <sup>c</sup>
<i>yak-kai</i> trouble, care (for another), assistance.	<i>ukeru</i> receive, accept.
— <i>no yakkai ni naru</i> be aided by, be dependent on. <sup>b</sup>	<i>uke-au</i> assure, guarantee.
<i>yō-su</i> circumstances, condition, appearance, gestures.	<i>shinzuru, shinjite</i> believe.
<i>kaburu, kamuru</i> wear on the head.	<i>shin-po suru</i> make progress, advance.
<i>kōmuru</i> receive from a superior.	<i>mattaku</i> entirely, truly.
<i>go men</i> your permission (polite 2).	<i>mo-haya</i> already, soon, no more (with a negative verb).
<i>go men wo kōmurimashite</i> by your kind permission.	<i>nani-bun</i> by all means, please! <sup>d</sup>
	<i>nochi-gata</i> after a little while.
	<i>waza to (ni), wazawaza</i> purposely, specially.

a The general term for teacher is *kyōshi* or *kyō-in*. The terms *kyō-yu* and *kyō-ju* are official titles, the former being applied to those who are duly qualified to teach in ordinary Middle Schools, Normal Schools, etc., while the latter are of a higher grade. Those who have simply graduated from a university and have not taken the post-graduate studies necessary to secure the degree of *haku-shi* or *haka-se* are called *gaku-shi*; e. g., *i-gakushi* graduate in medicine, in *ri-gakushi* graduate in natural sciences. The American A. B. is rendered *Beikoku bun-gakushi* (*bun* letters). The degree of *hakushi* being given only by the Government, our "doctor" cannot be translated *hakushi* without qualification. The German Ph. D. is *Doitsu tetsugaku-hakushi*. Foreigners employed as teachers by the Government are *o yatoi kyōshi*. Missionaries are *sen-kyōshi* or *den-kyōshi* (*sen* proclaim, *den* transmit).

b *Go yakkai ni narimashita* I am under obligations to you. A quaint expression is: *keisatsu no yakkai ni naru* to be accommodated by the police (said of a criminal).

c This verb is used chiefly in the form *kashikomarinashita*, signifying that the speaker will do as he has been told. It may be rendered "at your service" or "with pleasure."

d For *nani bun ni mo* in every part (Ch. XVII.).

*tōri* just as, just like. <sup>a</sup>  
*go* (c) = *nachi* alter.

*zannen nagara* it is too bad,  
 but...(comp. p. 197c).

## Exercises

*Tabitabi shakkin no saisoku wo ukete komarimas'.* *Nani wo shi'te toki wo sugoshimashō ka.* *Anata wa shōgi wo sashimas' ka.* *Sayō, Seiyō no shōgi nara dekinas' ga, Nihon no wa sashi'ta koto ga arimasen.* *Sore nara oshiete agemashō.* *Seiyō no shōgi to chigaimas' ka.* *Sayō, s'koshi chigaimas' ; koma mo yokei (ni) arimas'.* *Anata Nihon ni oide nasaimashi'ta toki ni go wo uchimasen deshi'ta ka.* *Metta ni uchimasen deshi'ta kara, taitei wasuremashi'ta.* *Dōzo, go wo oshiete kudasaimashi.* *Yoroshū gozaimas' ; sono kawari (ni) kar'ta wo oshiete kudasaimasen ka.* *Yō gozaimas' ; shikashi go no keiko wa amari hima ga kakarimas' nara, yoshimashō.* *Zannen nagara, koko de o wakare mōshimashō.* *Yūbinkyoku ye itte kono tegami wo kakitome ni shi'te dashi'te kudasaimasen ka.* *Hei, sassoku itashimashō.* *Tadaima irasshi'ta o kyaku wo koko ye o tsure mōshimashō ka.* <sup>b</sup> *Sayō, koko ye o tsure mōshi'te kure Myōnichi wa inaka ye tachimas' kara, o itomagoi ni demashi'ta.* *Kore wo utsushi'te kudasaimasen ka.* *Hanahada osoreirimas' ga, sō o hanashi nas'tte kudasaimashi.* *Kono shinanonono wa daijōbu des' ka.* *Sayō, o ukeai mōshimas'.* *Sore wo houtō to omoimas' (ni nasaimas') ka.* *Iie, mattaku shinjimasen.* *Senjitsu o hanashi nasaimashi'ta tōri des' ka.* *Sayō, o hanashi mōshimashi'ta tōri de gozaimas'.* *O kaeri ni naru made koko de o machi mōshite imashō.* *O nakama-iri wo itashimashi'ta kara, nanibun yoroshi'ku negaimas'.* *Nihon no yōs' wo mwasureba, go isshin go wa nanigoto de mo (nan de mo) yohodo shimpō shi'te orimas'.* *Sakunenjū wa iroiro go yakka'i ni narimashi'te ; konnen mo aikawarimasezu.* <sup>c</sup> *Watabuski wa chanoyu wo naraitō gozaimas' ga, yoi sensei wo sagashi'te kudasaimasen ka.* *Kashi'komarimashi'ta ; kokoro-*

a Sono tōri like that. *Itsu mo no tōri* as always. *Osshaimashita tōri* (or *ōse no tōri*) as you said.

b Said by a servant. Instead of *o tsure mōsu* one may say also *o tsūshi mōsu*.

c Both expressions are elliptical. Such phrases are apropos in offering New Year's congratulations. The *iroiro* is adverbial: in various ways. With *aikawarimasezu* is understood *go kan-i ni* (intimately) *uegaimasu*, *o setsu sama ni narimasu* or similar words (p. 174d).



*atari ga gozaimas' kara, tsuide ni kiite mimashō. Ano kata wa mohaya ni jū nen mo Nihon ni irasshaimas' kara, kotoba wa maru de Nihonjin no yō de gozaimashō. Go men wo kōmurimash' te o saki ye mairimashō. Sono uchi ni mata irasshaimashi. Wazawaza<sup>a</sup> o tazune kudasaimash' te jitsu ni, dōmo, arigatō gozaimas'. Kondo mata o negai mōshimashō.<sup>b</sup> Omae nani wo sh' te hima wo tsubush' ta ka. Osoreirimash' ta ; dōmo, michi ga warukute sh' kata ga gozaimasen desh' ta.*

If you don't like (*o kirai nara*) it, please say [so] frankly. Shall we play a game of checkers? I have never played; please teach me. If a person does not play often, he cannot (does not) become expert. I will call soon again. Having a [matter for] consultation I visited him (visiting went), but, as he was sick (*byōki de*), I returned without meeting him (*awazu ni*). Japanese ladies go out (*soto wo aruku*) without wearing anything on [their] heads. What shall I offer (give) you? As they say that a new play begins (from) to-day, I want to go to see it (*kembutsu ni*). When my work is done, I will go with you. If I am hindered (there is a hindrance) to-day, I will go to-morrow (*asu ni itasu*). If you send (*dasu*) a letter to Mr. Ōkubo, please remember me to him. As I am going to that neighbourhood later, I will call (calling go) there. This gentleman<sup>c</sup> having come in your absence (*o rusu ni*) for a parting call, returned asking to be remembered (saying *yoro-sh'ku*). He was in Japan a year, but he doesn't know a bit of Japanese (Japanese is not even a little possible). As I have brought various samples, please look [at them]. If you understand (past cond.) that (*to iu koto*) *sake* (*wa* I) is injurious, why don't you give it up? As the holidays are coming to a close (*shimai ni naru*), the professors of the university have probably returned. Since at present (*kono setsu wa*) I have not very much (*amari*) business, I will come for study (*keiko ni agaru*) every day. At what time shall I come?

<sup>a</sup> *Wazawaza* denotes that the call was not made incidentally, but that the visitor had come specially for the purpose of making this particular call. Translate: took the trouble to. *Dōmo* is an interjection.

<sup>b</sup> Said by a merchant to his customer, as when goods asked for are not in stock. An American would say: "Call again!"

<sup>c</sup> Said by a servant presenting a visitor's card.

## CHAPTER LIII

1. The verb *suru* (stem *shi*) is also irregular :

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>suru</i>	<i>senai, sen (u), shinai</i>
Past	<i>shita</i>	<i>sen (a) katta, senanda, shinakatta</i>
Future or Probable	<i>shiyō, shō</i>	<i>semai, shimai, sumai</i>
Probable	<i>suru darō</i>	<i>senai darō, sen (u) darō, etc.</i>
Past	<i>shitārō</i>	<i>sen (a) kattārō, senandarō</i>
Past	<i>shita darō</i>	<i>shinakattārō</i>
Conditional	<i>sureba, surya seba</i>	<i>sen (a) kereba, shinakereba seneba (sezuba)</i>
Past Con- ditional	<i>suru nara (ba) shitara (ba) shita nara (ba)</i>	<i>senai nara (ba), etc. sen (a) kattara (ba) senandara (ba) shinakattara (ba) senakatta nara (ba), etc.</i>
Imperative	<i>shiro se (yo), sei (o) shi na o shi (yo)</i>	<i>suru na o shi de nai yo</i>
Subordina- tive	<i>shite</i>	<i>sezu (shite) sezu ni, shizu ni senaide, sende, shinaide senakute, shinakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>shitari</i>	<i>shitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>shitari</i>	<i>sen (a) kattari, senandari shinakattari</i>

The briefer form *su* appears in the literary language and in the adjectives *su-beki* that ought to be done (p. III), *su-bekarazu* that ought not to be done (conclusive, *su-bekarazu*).

The only forms derived from *suru* are the conditional *sureba* and the negative imperative *suru na*.

In the negative conjugation the characteristic vowel is *e*, as in the case of *masu*; but *suru* differs from *masu* in having a

form in *nai*. In compounds *sanaï* also occurs: *Nakusanai* does not lose; *jukusanai* is not ripe, *tekisanai* does not suit. *Senai* is irregular. *Sumai* is rarely heard: *Sō sumai so*. Don't do so! (You wouldn't do so.)

2. Sometimes *suru* is to be rendered "make," as, for example, with the adverbial forms of adjectives: *yoku suru* make good, correct; *waruku suru* make bad, spoil. <sup>a</sup>

3. Notice also the following idioms:

*Dō shimashō ka.* What shall I do?

*Dō shite sono sara wo kōwashita ka.*

How did you break that plate? <sup>b</sup>

*Dō shite mo dekinasen.* It is utterly impossible.

*Dō shita n' da.* What have you done?

*Dōshita hito desu.* What kind of a man is he?

*Dō shita mon' darō.* What shall I (we) do?

*Sō shite* (p. 198a), *sō suru to*, *sō shitara (ba)* and *so shita tokoro ga* <sup>c</sup> may mark a transition in a narrative, like our "then," "so," "and," etc. *Sō shite*, or *so shite* is often used pleonastically after a subordinative. See also p. 171a.

4. The following are examples of the use of *suru* taking an object with *wo*.

*Hen na kao wo shite imasu.* He makes a peculiar face.

*Shosei wo shite iru aida kane ga nakatta.*

While I was a student I had no money.

Similarly many verbal expressions are derived from substantives. The *wo* may be omitted:

*ikusa wo suru* make war      *kushami wo suru (ga deru)*

*tabi wo suru* make a journey.      sneeze.

*shitaku wo suru* make prep-      *shigoto wo suru* work.

arations.

*kega wo suru* be wounded

*akemi wo suru (ga deru)* yawn. (p. 159a).

a "To make" in the ordinary sense is *koshiraeru* or *tsukuru*. Distinguish *yoku suru* and *jōan ni koshiraeru* construct well, *waruku suru* and *heta ni koshiraeru* construct poorly.

b When *dō shite* is strongly emphasized it means rather "why."

c The expression *tokoro ga* here has the same sense as the conjunction *ga*. It sometimes means "when."

Verbal stems are used in the same way, alone or in combination :

*kake wo suru* wager, from *kakeru* (p. 173, Voc.).

*seki wo suru* cough, from *seku*.

*tsuri wo suru* fish with hook and line.

*nui wo suru* embroider. *nui-mono wo suru* sew.

*shirabe-mono wo suru* make an investigation.

*mi-nage wo suru* drown one's self (p. 58).

*te-narai wo suru* practice penmanship.

5. It is by the use of *suru* that numerous Chinese compounds are made to serve as verbs. With these *wo* is more commonly omitted than with the expressions given above :

*an-nai suru* guide, invite.

*an-shō suru* memorize.

*ben-kyō suru* study, be diligent.

*chō-dai suru* = *itadaku*.<sup>a</sup>

*i-jū suru* emigrate.

*jō-dan suru* jest.

*ken-chiku suru* build.

*ken-yaku suru* economize.

*kō-gyō suru* perform (theatrical plays, etc.).

— *to kō-sai suru* associate with.

— *ni kwan-kei suru* have relation with.

*man-zoku suru* be satisfied.

*san-jō suru* make a call (*san* = *mairu*, *jō* = *agaru*).

*shim-bō suru* persevere.

*shitsu-mon suru* ask a question.

*shitsu-rei suru* be impolite.

*shō-bi suru* praise.

*shō-chi suru* be aware, consent.

*shū-sen suru* repair.

*sō-ji suru* clean.

*soitsu-gyō suru* graduate (from a school).

*yō-jin suru* take precautions.

Almost all compounds of this kind are used also as substantives : *go shōchi no tōri* as you know ; *benkyō desu* is diligent, etc. To some of them negative prefixes may be attached (p. 124). In this case *suru* may not be used : *fu-benkyō desu* ; *fu-manzoku desu* ; *bu-yōjin desu*, etc.

6. In some cases an object with *no* is made to limit the substantive :

— *no hanashi wo suru* speak of.

— *no uwasa wo suru* gossip about.

<sup>a</sup> Both *chōdai suru* and *itadaku* have the sense to receive from a superior or from a person considered as such and are used of gifts, refreshments offered to a guest, etc. For a fuller discussion see Ch. LV.

- *no jama wo suru* be in the way of.
- *no samatage wo suru* hinder, from *samatageru*.
- *no mane wo suru* imitate, from *maneru*.
- *no sewa wo suru* assist, take care of.
- *no tomo wo suru* accompany.

But in most cases the substantive unites with *suru* to form a true verbal expression, which may then take a direct object with *wo* (or indirect with *ni*):

- gwaikoku wo tabi.suru* travel in foreign countries.
- yome wo sewa suru* secure a wife (for another).
- te wo kega suru (te ni kega wo suru)* get a wound in the hand.
- hashi wo shū-zen suru* repair a bridge.
- gakkō wo sotsu-gyō suru* graduate from a school.
- benshi ni shitsumon suru* ask the speaker a question.

In some cases either construction is allowed. One may say *shakkin no saisoku wo suru* or *shakkin wo saisoku suru*; but in the former case *wo* must not be omitted after *saisoku*, while in the latter it must not be used.

7. With some monosyllabic words derived from the Chinese *suru* coalesces:

- bassuru* punish, from *batsu*.
- kessuru* decide, resolve upon, settle, from *ketsu*.<sup>a</sup>
- sassuru* conjecture, sympathize with (sentiments, etc.).

After *n*, or a long vowel, by *nigori su* becomes *zu* and *shi*, *ji*:

- ansuru* be anxious, be concerned about.<sup>b</sup>
- kenzuru* offer as a gift.<sup>c</sup>
- kinzuru* prohibit, forbid.
- sonzuru* be injured (p. 85a).
- tenzuru* change (tr. and intr.), remove (intr.).
- zonzuru* think, know (polite 1).

<sup>a</sup> In *ketsu-gi*, which denotes a resolution of a public assembly. From *kessuru* is derived the adverbial *kesshite* positively (p. 177c).

<sup>b</sup> *Ansuru*, like *sassuru*, may not take a personal object: *Watakushi no kokoro wo sashite kudasai*. Sympathize with me. *Oya wa shijū kodomo no koto wo anjite iru*. Parents are always anxious about their children.

<sup>c</sup> *Ikkon kenjimashō*. Have a cup! (of sake). *Kon*, the numerative for cups of sake, is really a variant reading of *ken* in *kenzuru*.

*fūsuru* seal (a letter).  
*meizuru* command, order.

Since the stems of these verbs are *anji*, *kenji kinji*, etc., they are in the colloquial frequently inflected as though they belonged to the first class: *anjiru*, *anjireba*. etc.

Observe also the euphonic changes in the following verbs. These are, however, more common in the literary style than in true colloquial:

*omonzuru* esteem, from *omoku suru* (*omoi* heavy, important).

*karonzuru* despise, from *karoku suru* (*karu*: light, insignificant—classical *karoshi*).

8. Many intransitive verbs are formed by adding *suru* to adverbs. Most of the adverbs so used end in *ri* or belong to the duplicatives, largely onomatopoeic, in which the language abounds (comp. p. 128, bottom and Ch. LXXIV.):

*bikkuri suru* be astonished, frightened.

*bonyari (to) suru* be vague, distracted, stupid.

*sappari (to) suru* become clear (p. 187b).

*bishibishi (mishimishi, gishigishi) suru* creak (of timbers).

*chirachira suru* flicker, flutter, become dim (of eyes).

*ukauka (to) suru* be heedless, lazy.

9. In some expressions *suru* is used just like *aru*:

— *no aji ga suru* there is a taste of, taste like.

— *no nioi ga suru* there is a smell of, smell like.

— *no oto (koe) ga suru* there is a sound of, sound like.

*inabikari ga suru* it lightens.

— *yō na kokoromochi (kimochi) ga suru* feel as if.

*nagamochi ga suru* last a long time.

*ji-shin ga suru (yuru)* there is an earthquake.

*zu-tsū ga suru* have a headache.

10. The expression *ni suru* may mean "determine upon" (p. 134g). The same idiom may also correspond to the English "make — of —".

*Kono bunshō wo hon ni shite dashimashō.*

I will issue these essays in the form of a book.

— *wo yōshi ni suru* make an adopted son of, adopt.

— *wo yome ni suru* make a wife of, take to wife.

— *wo ki ni suru* take to heart, be concerned about.

*Kono go konna koto wo shinai yō ni shimashō.*

I will see to it that he does nothing of the kind hereafter.

With a verb in the future tense *to suru* means "be about to," "intend to" (p. 180, 2A). In other cases *to suru* means "regard as"; *to sureba* may be translated "taking it to be," "assuming that," "if":

*Amerika ye ikō to shite Yokohama made mairimashita.*

Intending to go America, I went to Yokohama.

*Kimi ga iku mono to sureba, kō iu bairi ni dō suru ka.*

If you were going, what would you do in such a case.

The idioms *ni shite (wa)* and *to shite (wa)* are equivalent to the English "for" and "as" in some of their uses:

*Kodomo ni shite wa yoku kaite arimasu.*

It is well written for a child.

*Anata wa daihyō sha to shite o hanashi ni narimasu ka.*

Do you speak as a representative?

11. The formal, polite equivalents of *suru* are *itasu* in the first (less frequently the third) person and *nasaru* in the second (less frequently the third) person. Accordingly *dō itashimashō ka* is more formal and polite than *dō shimashō ka*; *dō nasaimashita ka*.

12. It has been stated (pp. 142, 3 and 190a) that the honorific should be prefixed to the stem of a verb with *itasu* or *nasaru*. The honorifics are naturally prefixed to any substantive that denotes the action of a person for whom respect is shown. Even in the case of the first person honorifics are in order when the act concerns a person for whom one wishes to show respect.

<i>o tomo</i>	<i>wo suru (itasu)</i>	go along.
<i>o jama</i>	" "	disturb.
<i>o sewa</i>	" "	render assistance.
<i>o ji-gi</i>	" "	make a bow.
<i>go an-nai</i>	" "	show the way.
<i>go chi-sō</i>	" "	furnish entertainment.
<i>go hō-mōn</i>	" "	pay a call.
<i>go shi-kai</i>	" "	introduce.
<i>go shō-tai</i>	" "	invite.

When the personal object is stated it may take *ni* (or *no*).

But *shōkai suru* and *shu yai suru* take a direct object with *wo*.  
 Observe also :

(*Anata wo*) *Itō san ni shōkai itashimashō ka.*

May I introduce you to Mr. Itō?

(*Anata to*) *go issho itashimashō.* I will go with you.

## Vocabulary

(Include the verbs in the above lists)

<i>koto-gara</i> nature of the thing, matter, circumstances. <sup>a</sup>	<i>shū-kan</i> week. <sup>d</sup>
<i>tori-i</i> the characteristic portal of a Shintō shrine.	<i>iri ga aru (ōi)</i> attendance is large (at theaters, etc.)
<i>uri-zane-gao</i> oval face. <sup>b</sup>	<i>kaneru</i> do at the same time (two things), be unable to do. <sup>e</sup>
<i>kō</i> (c) fragrance, incense.	<i>nokoru</i> be left over (tr. <i>no- kosu.</i> )
<i>ben-shi</i> speaker, orator.	<i>tataku</i> strike, beat, knock.
<i>bu-joku</i> insult, contempt.	<i>kaze wo hiku</i> take cold.
<i>kan-shō</i> fire-bell, fire alarm.	— <i>ni mukau, no hō ye mukau</i> face.
<i>hō-tei</i> court (of justice).	— <i>ni tori-kakaru</i> commence work on.
<i>ki-kwai</i> opportunity.	<i>achi-kochi</i> here and there.
<i>kyō-in</i> teacher.	<i>chikai uchi (ni)</i> within a short short time, soon.
<i>mei-sho</i> noted place, place worth seeing.	<i>kitto</i> surely.
<i>ō-rai</i> going and coming, thoroughfare.	
<i>ōrai-dome</i> closing a thor- oughfare ( <i>toimeru</i> stop). <sup>c</sup>	

a The suffix *gara* denotes "kind," "quality," as in *gara no ii shina* stuff of good quality, cloth of a good pattern, *ie-gara no yoi hito* a person of good family, a person of quality. With *ji-setsu* season *gara* forms an elliptical expression: *jisetsu gara o daiji ni nasai*. It being such a season, take good care of your health. The following example illustrates the use of *kotogara*: *Kotoba wa wakarimasu ga, kotogara wa wakarimaisen*. I understand tame words, but don't know what it is all about.

b See p. 15. The word *sane* denotes only such seeds as those of the melon or peach. The general colloquial word for "seed" is *tane*.

c A common notice on the streets: "Closed!" "No thoroughfare!"

d The week was used even in old times as a measure of time: *hito mawari futa mawari*, etc. See Ch. XXIV.

e In the second sense *kaneru* is added as a suffix to the stems of verbs: *mairikanemasu* cannot go (or come).



- shikiri ni* persistently. *i-rai* since (following a noun or a verb in the subordinate form).  
*tsui (ni)* at last, finally. *oya* exclamation of surprise.  
*sen-jitsu* the other day.

## Exercises

*Dō shiyō ka, Dō shimashō ka. Dō itashimashō ka. Kō itashi'tara yoroshū gozaimashō. Kono kō wa sugu ni tori-kakaru koto ni itashimashō. Kō sh'te mimashō. Nihonjin wa Matsushima no keshi'ki wo taihen shōbi shimas'.<sup>a</sup> Shizuka ni shiro.<sup>b</sup> Shimbō sh'te kenyaku wo sureba, kitto kane ga nokorimas'. Benshi! shitsumon sh'tai koto ga aru. Omae shimbō sh'te ts'tomero. Shiyō to omou koto wa sugu ni suru ga ii. O jiggi wo o shi yo.<sup>c</sup> Mada wakarimasen kara, sensei ni shitsumon itashimashō. O tomo (wo) itashimashō. Dō itashimashi'te.<sup>d</sup> Kake wo itashimashō ka. Sakujitsu wa taihen na arashi de gozaimashi'ta ga, konnichi wa sappari itashimashi'ta (sappari to haremashi'ta). Makoto ni o jama (wo) itashimashi'ta.<sup>e</sup> O jama wo itashimas' ka mo shiremasen. Senjitsu wa shitsurei itashimashi'ta.<sup>f</sup> Dare ka to wo tataku oto ga suru; dare ga kita ka akete mite kure. O saki ni chōdai itashimas'.<sup>g</sup> Sakujits' kara hajimemashi'ta kyōgen wa ikka bakari kōgyō shimas' ka. Sayō sa, ni shūkan gurai itas' sō des'; shikashi iri ga okereba, f'ta ts'ki mo itashimashō. Yasumichū (ni)<sup>h</sup> achikochi tabi shimashi'ta. Kono saki no*

a A group of numerous islets covered with pines, in a corner of the Bay of Sendai.

b Here *shiro* is to be translated "bc." *Shizuka ni* is to be parsed as an adverb. Politely one might say: *O shizuka ni nasaimashi*.

c This may be said by a woman to her own child.

d Often: *Dō itashimashite; sore ni wa oyobimasen*. Why? Don't mention it. *Dō itashimashite* is the usual response when pardon is asked, thanks are expressed, etc. The phrase is elliptical for something like: *Dō shite sō in o kotoba wo ukeru neuchi ga arimashō ka*.

e Pardon the interruption. Notice that *o*, not *go*, is used with *ja-ma*, a word probably of Chinese-Buddhistic origin (*ja* evil, *ma* hindrance, spirit).

f This expression is used when one meets a friend. The allusion is to a previous meeting. No honorific is required with *shitsurei* (p. 33). The whole expression may be abbreviated to *Senjitsu wa*.

g In this manner a man may excuse himself for beginning to eat before another.

h For *chū* compare p. 137a. Translate: during vacation.

hashi wa shūzen sh'te imas' kara,<sup>a</sup> ōraidomé des'; s'kosku mawatte ikimashō. Nani wo go anshō nas'tte irasshaimas' ka. Kono sakana wa myō na aji ga shimas'. Konaida ano kata ni michi de aimash'ta ga, minu furi wo sh'te ikimash'ta.<sup>b</sup> Kono bunshō wa bonyari sh'te imas'. Sugawara no Michizane wa dō sh'ta hito des' ka. Sore kara tenjite sō iu imi ni narimash'ta.<sup>c</sup> Nikon de wa urisanegao wo (p. 15) ichiban ii to sh'te arimas'. O tenki ni sh'tai mon' des'.<sup>d</sup> Omae naze zash'ki wo sōji shinai ka (zash'ki no sōji wo shinai ka). Konna ni kitanaku sh'te dō sh'ta n' (mon') des'. Anata ga Tōkyō ye oide ni narimash'tara, hōbō no meisō ye (wo) go annai itashimashō. Anata no ossharu koto wa hontō to wa omowaremasen ;<sup>e</sup> shikashi moshi hontō to sureba taihen des'. Omae sō shinakereba shōchi shinai zo. Jishin ga suru (yuru) to, ie ga bishibishi suru (iu). Kozukai ga ukauka sh'te ite komarimas'. Kono baai ni wa dō sh'te mo wa to iu ji wo ts'kenakereba narimassen (p. 174c). Shinajin ni sh'te wa yoku Eigo ga dekimas'. Tōkyō ni sh'te wa hidoi ōyuki de wa arimassen ka. Go jōdan nas'tte kudasaru na. Go yōjin nasai. Taihen bikkuri itashimash'ta. Gakkō no kyōin wa seiji ni kwankei subekarazaru hazu da. Tanaka Shōzō san wa hōtei de akubi wo sh'ta tame ni kwanri-bujoku no tsumi de basse-raremasht'a. Dare ka watashi no uwasa wo sh'te iru to miete kushami ga dete naranai.<sup>f</sup> Chiisa na koto de mo karonjite wa naranai.<sup>g</sup> Kayō na kotogara wa hito no mina omonzuru tokoro des'. Sekkaku go shōtai kudasaimash'ta ga, shōsh' sashi's'kae ga goraimas' kara, zannen nagara sanjō itashi-

a Translate; the bridge ahead of us. Compare: *kore kara saki no michi* the way we are going. Notice that *shūzen suru* can be construed either transitively or intransitively: They are repairing the bridge ahead of us, or, the bridge ahead of us is a-repairing.

b With a preceding verb *furi wo shita* may be translated: "pretended that," "acted as though."

c In philology *zensuru* is often used of changes in the meanings of words.

d Lit. I should like to make good weather of=I hope the weather will be fine. Compare the peculiar expression: *Ashita wa furasetaku nai*. I hope it won't rain to-morrow (lit. I don't want to make it rain).

e I cannot think,—*omowareru* being the potential of *omou*.

f For *naranai* compare: *Fushigi de naranai* (p. 158b). The Japanese have a notion that when a man sneezes it is a sign that some one is talking about him.

g Compare the Chinese saying: *Issun no hōjū in karonzube karazu* (issun a little bit, *hōjū-in* light and shade, time).

*kanemas'*. *Watakushi no kokoro mo s'koshi wa sassh'ite kudasai.*<sup>a</sup> *Ikkon kenjitai mon' des'*. *Gakko wo sotsugyō shinai uchi wa amari uchi (my family) no sewa wo suru koto ga dekimasen.* *Oya, kono zash'iki wa kidoku tabako no nioi ga shimas' koto!* *Ano hito wa shiri mo shinaide sh'ita kao wo sh'ite imas'.* *Jibun hitori no kangae de sh'ita koto de mo arimas'mai.*

What I ought to do I don't know. What ought I to do? I intended to ask the speaker various questions, but refrained (*hikaeru*). The number of Germans that have emigrated to America since the year 1820 is said to be four million. I will do it day after to-morrow, because to-morrow I have no time. Since my son cannot study (*gakumon ga dekinai*), I will make a farmer of him. Please do so. Europeans do not praise the scenery of Matsushima so much as (*yō ni wa*) the Japanese. It seems as if (*yō des'*) the fire alarm were sounding. Ascend the roof and see where (*doko ga*) the fire is. In my neighborhood they have built a primary school. As my eyes are dim I can't see anything. Since he associates a great deal with Japanese, he speaks (*dekiru*) the (Japanese) language well (*umaku*). The interior of a [Buddhist] temple smells of incense. That child appears to have taken a cold and is constantly sneezing, is it not (*ja nai ka*)? One must not cough in the face of (facing) a person. It is said that a woman drowned herself last night. No matter how (*ikura—mo*) well it is done, he is not satisfied. If I have time, I will visit [him] soon. Shall I introduce Mr. Gotō to you? If [you] fail to (do not) decide things (*monogoto*) quickly and miss the opportunity, it will finally become forever impossible. In regard to this matter be not at all (*kessh'ite*) anxious. In Japan it is forbidden to take (*ireru*) horses and vehicles within (*naka ye*) the portal of a shrine. I am troubled with (doing) headache this morning.

---

<sup>a</sup> The sense is: Try to put yourself in my place. *Watakushi no kokoro mo—*don't look at the matter entirely from your own point of view; *sukoshi wa—*it is not reasonable to expect that you should enter into my feelings entirely.

## CHAPTER LIV

To the fourth group belong verbs in *ku*.

1. Paradigm of *kiku* (stem *kiki*) to hear, or, to be efficacious (p. 128c):

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>kiku</i>	<i>kikanai, kikan (u)</i>
Past	<i>kiita</i>	<i>kikanakatta, — nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>kikō</i>	<i>kikumai</i>
Probable	<i>kiku darō</i>	<i>kikanai darō, kikan darō</i>
Past	<i>kiitarō</i>	<i>kikanakattarō, — nandarō</i>
Conditional	<i>kikeba (kikaba)</i> <i>kiku nara (ba)</i>	<i>kikanakereba (kikanakuba)</i> <i>kikaneba</i> <i>kikanai nara (ba)</i>
Past Condi- tional	<i>kiitara (ba)</i> <i>kiita nara (ba)</i>	<i>kikanakattara, —nandara (ba)</i> <i>kikanakatta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>kike</i> <i>(o) kiki na</i> <i>o kiki (yo)</i>	<i>kiku na</i> <i>o kiki de nai yo</i>
Subordinative	<i>kiite</i>	<i>kikazu (shite), kikazu ni</i> <i>kikanaide, kikande</i> <i>kikanakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>kikitai</i>	<i>kikitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>kiitari</i>	<i>kikanakattari, —nandari</i> <i>kikanaidari</i>

The double *i* in *kiite*, etc., arises from the elision of the *k* in *kikite*. Compare the following: *kaku, kakite, kaite; tsuku, tsukite tsuite; maneku, manekite, maneite; oku, okite, oite*.

2. The verb *yuku* or *iku*, to go, is somewhat irregular. Such forms as *yuite, yuita*, etc., are not in use. From *iku* are derived, not *iite, iita*, but *itte, itta*, etc.<sup>a</sup>

3. Some intransitive verbs of this group correspond to transitive verbs in *keru*. Thus the expression *hi ga tsuku* fire kindles corresponds to *hi wo tsukeru*; *ki ga tsuku* be attentive, to *ki wo tsukeru*; *akai iro ga tsuite iru* have a red color, to

<sup>a</sup> These must be carefully distinguished from the corresponding forms of *iru* to enter, or to parch (p. 185). Also *iu* to say and *yu* to dress (the hair) take the same inflections ordinarily, though *ida, ida*, etc., are also current.

*akai iro wo tsukeru* to color red; *ki ga ochi-tsuite iru* the mind is composed, to *ki wo ochitsukeru*. Observe also:

<i>kuttsuku</i> adhere firmly.	<i>kuttukeru</i> attach firmly.
<i>aku</i> open (intr.).	<i>akeru</i> open (tr.).
<i>muku</i> face.	<i>mukeru</i> turn.
<i>katamuku</i> incline, lean.	<i>katamukeru</i> incline, bend.
<i>todoku</i> reach, arrive.	<i>todokeru</i> deliver, report.
<i>tsuzuku</i> continue, hold out.	<i>tsuzukeru</i> continue, keep up.

But quite as often the relation is just the reverse, the verb in *keru* being a passive or intransitive form derived from the verb in *ku*:

<i>hiraku</i> open, begin, clear. <sup>a</sup>	<i>hirakeru</i> become civilized.
<i>kudaku</i> break, crush.	<i>kudakeru</i> be broken, crushed.
<i>muku</i> peel, skin.	<i>mukeru</i> peel (intr.).
<i>muku</i> draw, extract.	<i>mukeru</i> be extracted, escape.
<i>saku</i> tear, rip.	<i>sakeru</i> be torn, ripped.
<i>toku</i> melt, dissolve.	<i>tokeru</i> be melted, thawed.
<i>toku</i> loose, explain.	<i>tokeru</i> be loosed, solved.
<i>yaku</i> burn, roast, bake.	<i>yakeru</i> be burned, baked.

4. The suffix-verb *meku* to resemble, appear, usually in the form *meite iru (oru)*, deserves passing notice in this connection: *kodomomeite iru* is childish, *harumeite oru* is spring-like, etc.

## Vocabulary

(Include the verbs given above)

<i>don</i> the noon signal given by firing a cannon. <sup>b</sup>	<i>kire</i> cloth.
<i>fue</i> flute, pipe.	<i>kurumi</i> walnut, butternut.
<i>fue wo fuku</i> play the flute.	<i>namekuji</i> slug.
<i>koto</i> a large stringed musical instrument, harp.	<i>ta</i> rice field.
<i>koto wo hiku</i> play the <i>koto</i> .	<i>tane</i> seed.
<i>kuji</i> lot.	<i>waki</i> side, side of the chest (including armpit).
<i>kuji wo hiku</i> draw lots.	<i>asa-gao</i> morning-glory.
	<i>hi-nawari</i> sunflower.

<sup>a</sup> The verb *hiraku* is used intransitively of the opening of a door, the blooming of a flower, etc.

<sup>b</sup> The more elegant term is *go-hō* (*go* noon, *hō* cannon).

<i>ki-nezumi</i> } squirrel	<i>ko-dai no</i> of ancient times,
<i>risu</i> }	ancient.
<i>kotowaza</i> proverb, maxim.	<i>ko-ban</i> ancient gold coin, el-
<i>ryō-gae-ya</i> money changer.	liptical in shape. <sup>b</sup>
<i>bō</i> } line (in writing).	<i>kata</i> form, pattern, mold.
<i>sen</i> }	<i>nari</i> form, shape, appearance.
<i>kawa</i> side (in <i>soto-gawa</i> ).	<i>koban-nari no</i> } elliptical.
<i>en, en-gawa</i> veranda.	<i>koban-gata no</i> }
<i>am-ma</i> shampooer, blind	<i>daku</i> hold in the arms, em-
person. <sup>a</sup>	brace.
<i>sa-tō</i> blind minstrel, blind	<i>fuku</i> blow (tr. and intr.); <i>kaze</i>
person.	<i>ga</i> — a wind blows.
<i>chū-bu</i> paralysis.	<i>fuku</i> wipe.
<i>do-dai</i> foundation.	<i>hibiku</i> resound, sound.
<i>go-gaku</i> linguistics, language	<i>kamu</i> chew, bite.
study.	<i>maku</i> sow, scatter, sprinkle.
<i>ji-kō</i> climate, weather.	<i>maneku</i> invite.
<i>sei-kō</i> success.	<i>mayou</i> go astray. <sup>c</sup>
<i>setsu-bun</i> the transition from	<i>mayoi-go, mai-go</i> lost child.
one season to another, es-	<i>okonau</i> do, perform, practice.
pecially the night when	<i>okonai</i> conduct, behavior.
winter changes to spring,	<i>shiku</i> spread (mats, etc.), lay
according to the old calen-	(a railroad).
dar (lit. season dividing).	<i>ugoku</i> move, be influenced (tr.
<i>tai-yō</i> the sun.	<i>ugokasu</i> ).
<i>shō-kai-jō</i> letter of introduc-	<i>uzuku</i> ache (like a tooth).
tion.	<i>mi-otosu</i> overlook.
<i>kayui, kiai</i> itchy.	— <i>ni moto-zuku</i> take as a
<i>itayasui</i> easy to accomplish.	basis, be based on.

a From *an* grasp, *ma* rub. To shampoo or perform massage is *amma* *wo suru* or *momu* (rub). Professional shampooers are usually blind men or women. A shampooer who is not blind is called *me-aki no amma*. The *amma* piping shrilly in the streets to advertise his presence, especially at night, is a characteristic feature of Japanese life. In the Tokugawa era the Government organized the blind into guilds. Officially recognized blind minstrels or shampooers were called *sa-tō* (lit. seat-head, i. e. head minstrel). "Blind person" is more exactly *mōjin*; colloquial *me-kura*; classical *me shii*.

b The *ō-ban* (p. 15) was a larger coin equal to ten *koban*.

c To lose the way is *nichi ni mayou*, rarely *nichi wo mayou*. One may also say : *nichi wo machigaeru*.

<i>itazura wo suru</i> act to no purpose, be in mischief.	<i>tsune ni</i> always.
<i>nedan wo hiku</i> reduce the price.	<i>sorosoro</i> slowly, softly, gradually.
<i>jibiki wo hiku</i> consult a dictionary.	<i>kin-jitsu</i> in a few days ( <i>kin</i> = <i>chikai</i> ).
	<i>isso</i> (no <i>koto</i> ) rather.

### Exercises

*Watakushi wa kinjitsu Igiris' ye tachimas' kara, shōkaijō wo kaite kudasaimasen ka. Yoroshū gozaimas' ; ni san tsū (ni sōbon) kaite agemashō. Sanui kara, s'tōbu ni<sup>a</sup> hi wo taite kure. Hei, tadaima sugu ni takimas'. Ha ga usuku kara, isha ni nuite moraimashō. Mushiken wo uts' toki ni, hebi to namekuji ga deru to, namekuji ga kachimas' ; naze naraba namekuji ga hebi ni kutisuku to, hebi ga tokete shimau kara da sō des'.<sup>b</sup> Taihōritsurei to iu shomots' wa Nihon no keihō wo kaita ichiban furui hon des'. Makanu tane wa haenu (Proverb). Ano fue wa nan deshō ; amma san ga fue wo fuite iru ja nai ka. Owari no Seto to iu mura ni yakimono wo suru ie ga hachi jikken hodo aru sō des'.<sup>c</sup> Anata no sensei wa watakushi ni mo oshiete kudasaru hima ga arimashō ka. Dō sh'te kono takigi wa hi ga ts'kanai ka shira (= shiran). Kawaitte oru kara, tsuku hasu da ga, ne. Kaii tokoro ni te no todokanai yō da.<sup>d</sup> Kono ie wa dodai ga warukute jishin ga yuru to, taisō ugokimas'. Kono kyōgen wa nani ni motosuite ts'kutta no des' ka. Kodai no rek'shi ni motosuite ts'kutta mon' des'. Maigofuda wa banchi to namae wo kaite kodomo ni ts'kete aru kobannari no juda des' ; sore da kara kodomo ga*

a Notice carefully the use of the postposition *ni* in this connection. The stove is, as it were, the indirect object. One may say also *sutōbu wo taku*. *Kāi wo taku* burn, wood; hence *taki-gi* firewood.

b Compare p. 188a. When an explanation begins with *naze naraba* or *sore wa*, it ends in *kara desu*. But when *sore wa* introduces an explanation of a word, idiom or proverb, the sentence may end with *to iu koto desu*.

c *Seto* in the province of Owari is famous for its manufacture of porcelain. Hence the general term for porcelain is *seto-mono*.

d A proverb derived from the Chinese: *Kaku kawa sō yō* (lit. through shoe scratch itch). The reference is to annoying difficulty. Of an agreeable experience or, of a clever person one may also say: *Kaii tokoro ni te ga todoku yō da*.

*michi ni mayotte mo sugu ni sono uchi ga wakarimas'. Nihon no kotowaza ni jibun no ta ye misu wo Riku to iu koto ga gasaimas' (p. 27c). Ano hito wa chūdu ni kakatte imas' kara, ta ashi ga<sup>a</sup> kikanuku narimash'ta. Nihon no heya ni wa tatami wo shiite arimas'. Kuruma ni noru jori wa isso aruwa hō ga yō gozaimas'. Jikō ga sorosoro harumeite mairimash'ta. Kono ringo wa taisei yoku iro ga tsuite imas'. Gogaku no keiko wa shijū tsuzukenakereba totemo seikō shimasen. Nihon no ie wa taigai minami-muki des'. Ris' wa katai kurumi no kara wo tayas'ku kami-kudakimas'. Michi ni kiite michi ni toku.<sup>b</sup> Kaita mono ga shōko da.*

These matches won't burn (fire does not kindle, because they are damp. Is the bath ready (has the hot water boiled)? Yes, it has been boiling (is boiling) for some time (since a little while ago). I will reduce the price as much as possible. You will hardly understand it if you do not consult (consulting see) a dictionary. *Ebisu*<sup>c</sup> holds a *tai* under his arm (*waki*). Go to the money changer and inquire the rate of exchange (market price of the dollar). Please explain the reason for that (*sono*). Shall I peel the melon for you? When you go (travel) to Europe, I will write you a letter of introduction. As it is raining to-day, the noon signal sounded louder (*hidoku*) than usual. On the evening of *setsubun* the master of the house scatters roasted beans in every direction (*hōbō ni*) and says: "Luck (*wa*) in (*uchi*), demons out." This is what a girl ten years of age wrote; indeed it is well done (p. 127b). The shampoos walk [through] the streets at night blowing (*fuki nagara*) [their] flutes. You must wipe the veranda every day. On the paper slides of tobacco shops there is usually painted (written) a tobacco leaf. This picture is one that Kano Motonobu<sup>d</sup> painted (wrote). In Japan recently [they] have

<sup>a</sup> For *te to ashi ga*. With words that are often paired in common usage the conjunction may be omitted: *oya ko* parent and child, *ase ban* morning and evening, *kami hotoke* gods and buddha, *nami kaze* waves and winds, *sake sakawa* viands, *kō fu-kō* happiness and unhappiness, *suru koto nasu koto* everything one does (*nasu* being the classical equivalent of *suru*).

<sup>b</sup> The Japanese rendering of a Chinese proverb. The reference is to a display of ill-digested learning.

<sup>c</sup> One of the seven gods of luck (*shichi-fukujin*).

<sup>d</sup> The most famous of the Kano family of painters (XVI. Century).



built (laid) railroads in every direction. As there is now a railroad (laid) from Tōkyō to Sendai, more people will be going to Matsushima (people that go to M. will be more) than before (*maye yori*). Please draw one of these lots. That blind minstrel plays the *koto* well. I have taken a cold and have a headache. The water of the Tama River is brought (p. 163, 5) to Tōkyō. Shall we walk or (shall we) ride? We will walk, for if we go by *kuruma* we shall overlook many (*yoku*) things. In Berlin they sprinkle water on the streets twice a day. Please under-score (draw a line under) that. That man's behavior is childish. This cloth will be beautiful if you color it red. That house has leaned over very much (*hidoku*) on account of (*de*) last night's earthquake. The (flower of the) sunflower always faces in the direction of the sun. Please deliver this book to Mr. Satō. The morning-glory opens early every morning. The children have been in mischief and torn the book. I shall invite [some] friends tomorrow; for it is my birth day.

## CHAPTER LV

The verbs *oku* and *itadaku* are often used in combination with the subordinatives of other verbs.

*Oku* to set, put, place, with a subordinative means "leave in that condition":

*irete oku* put it in (intending to leave it in).

*kane wo tainete oku* lay money by (*tameru* accumulate).

*azukete oku* deposit (*azukeru* entrust).

*utchatte oku* let it alone (*utcharu* throw away).

*Sono mama ni shite okimashō.* I shall let it be as it is.

*Sono mama sutete okimashita.*

I let it be as it was (*suteru* cast away).

*Shitaku shite okimashō.*

I will (make my preparations and) be ready.

*Rusui ni kahi wo oite ikimashō.*<sup>a</sup>

We will put the maidservant in charge of the house.

<sup>a</sup> *Oite oku* is occasionally heard in the sense of "to employ," but *tsukatte oku*, *yatotte oku*, *tanonde oku*, etc., are more natural in this connection.

*Itte oku (ittoku) koto ga aru.* I have something to tell you.

When *oku* follows a negative subordinative, it may be rendered by means of "leave" with a passive participle preceded by the negative prefix "un-" (p. 173d).

*Itadaku* (or *chōdai suru*) "to receive from above" with a subordinative indicates that the act denoted by the subordinated verb is for the benefit of the speaker. It may be rendered in some cases by means of "have" with the infinitive. But to bring out the deference expressed by *itadaku* a paraphrase is usually necessary:

*Anata ni sore wo oshiete itadakitō gozaimasu.*

Please teach me that (I wish to have you teach me that).

The verb *morau* (p. 92h, Ch. LX.) is used in the same way, but *itadaku* is more respectful. For the use of these verbs in preferring requests compare also p. 151.

## Vocabulary

<i>mama</i> original condition, natural preference. <sup>a</sup>	<i>shibui</i> astringent, austere.
<i>shiru</i> juice, soup. <sup>b</sup>	<i>shibu</i> the juice of unripe persimmons. <sup>c</sup>
<i>taru</i> keg, barrel.	<i>shibu-kaki</i> unmellowed persimmons.
<i>fuyu-gi</i> [Japanese] winter clothing.	<i>ko-gai</i> buying in small quantities.
<i>fuyu-fuku</i> [European] winter clothing (comp. <i>yō-fuku</i> ).	<i>uri-kai</i> mercantile transactions, trade.
<i>hachi-ue</i> potted plants.	<i>gwa</i> (c) picture, drawing.
<i>maku</i> to roll up.	<i>ka-hi</i> = <i>ge-jo</i> maidservant.
<i>maki-mono</i> roll (picture or writing).	<i>kan-seki</i> Chinese books. <sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Shake ya masu wo nama no mama (de) taberu no wa kennon desu.* It is risky to eat salmon or *masu* raw. *Nan no kangae mo naku kiita mama (ni) hanashimashita.* Unthinkingly I said just what I had heard. *Yo no naka no koto wa wareware no omou mama ni wa naranu.* The things of the world do not go according to our liking. These three sentences illustrate the most common uses of *mama*.

<sup>b</sup> The honorific *o* is usually prefixed when *shiru* is used in the sense of "soup." Women say also (*o mi*) *o isuke* (p. 32).

<sup>c</sup> This is much used as a stain for wood or paper (*shibu-kami*). *Shibu* also denotes the astringent rind of a chestnut.

<sup>d</sup> Compare *sho-seki* books, also pronounced *shojaku*.

<i>ki-gen</i> fixed period. <sup>a</sup>	— <i>no kubi wo sarasu</i> , — <i>wo sarashikubi ni suru</i> expose the head of (a criminal).
<i>dai-fuku-chō</i> day-book. <sup>b</sup>	<i>sasu</i> pour into, drop upon.
<i>jū-zai-nin</i> one guilty of heinous crime, felon ( <i>jū</i> = <i>omoi</i> ).	<i>ake-banasu</i> ( <i>akeppanasu</i> ), <i>ake-banashi</i> ( <i>akeppanashi</i> ) <i>ni suru</i> leave open.
<i>amai</i> sweet.	<i>saru</i> leave, depart from, get rid of.
<i>shio ga amai</i> not salty enough.	<i>okizari ni suru</i> abandon.
<i>ki-bishii</i> strict, severe.	<i>uke-tamawaru</i> receive (a command), hear (polite 1).
<i>yasashii</i> gentle, easy.	<i>utcharu</i> ( <i>uchi-yaru</i> ) throw away, reject, let alone.
( <i>o</i> ) <i>ki-no-doku na</i> regrettable. <sup>c</sup>	<i>tō kara</i> long since.
<i>kama-majiri no kana</i> (of compositions written in ideograms). <sup>d</sup>	<i>tō ni</i> a long time ago.
<i>hōru</i> , <i>hōru</i> throw.	<i>ichi nichi oki ni</i> } every other
<i>hotte oku</i> , <i>hottoku</i> let alone, be indifferent.	<i>kaku-jitsu</i> (c) <i>ni</i> } day.
<i>kan-shō suru</i> interfere.	— <i>ni oite</i> at, in regard to.
<i>sarasu</i> expose, bleach.	

## Exercises

*To wo akeppanash'te* (*akeppanashi ni sh'te*) *oke*. *Mado wo akezu ni okimashō ka*. *Kono kane wa kuni ye haeru made wa iranai kara*, *Yokohama no ginkō ye azukete okō*. *Kono sakana wa yaku mae ni ni jikan ka san jikan no aida shōyu ni ts'kete oku to*, *taihen umaku narimas'*. *Mō jūbun ni kanji wo naraimash'ta kara*, *nani ka yasashii hon ga yomitai to omoimas'*; *dōzo*, *kanamajiri no hon wo sagash'te itadakemasen ka*. *Kore wa arukōr' ni ts'kete oku to*, *k'sarimasen*. *Kore made*

<sup>a</sup> Distinguish the three homonyms *ki-gen* temper, state health (p. 33b), *kigen* era, as in *kigen-sen* B. C. and *kigen-go*, or simply *kigen*, A. D., and the above.

<sup>b</sup> From *dai* great, *fuku* luck, wealth, and *chō* notebook (in *chō-men*). Another word is *de-iri-chō* or *shutsu-nyū-chō*. The technical term is *sui-tō-bo* (*sui*=*shutsu*=*dasu*, *tō* or *nō*=*osameru* or *ireru*, *bo* book). A ledger is *dai-chō* (*dai* foundation).

<sup>c</sup> Lit. poison of spirit. The phrase *o kinodoku desu* is often used as an expression of sympathy or as an apology.

<sup>d</sup> The classical equivalent of *maseru* is *majū* (*majiu*), which sometimes appears in the colloquial in the form *majieru*. The intransitive verb, corresponding to *masaru*, is *majiru* (Ch. XLVIII.)

shōyu wo kogai (ni) sh'te orimash'ta ga, kore kara wa taru de totte okimashō. Kono mae (at the previous lesson) sensei ni (kara) osovatta koto wa wakarimassen kara, mō ichi do tokiakashi'te itadakimashō. Seifu ga kore wo sono mama ni kotte oite wa ikemasen. Sono mama ni sh'te oke. Kigen wo sadamete kane wo ginkō ye azukete oku to, risoku ga takaku ts'kimas'. Myōnichi tabi ni demas' kara, koimban o itoma wo mōsh'te okimashō. Danna sama ga o rusu nara, kakinokoshi'te okitai koto ga arimas' kara, dōzo pen to kami wo kashi'te kudasai. Hai, tadaima sugu ni dash'te sashiagemas'. Watakushi wa Fukiage no o niwa wo<sup>a</sup> haiken itashi'tō gozaimas' kara, dōka go tsugō no yoi toki ni tsurete itte itadukaremas' marika. Yō gozaimas' ; mō ni san nichitatsu to, haiken ni mairu yō ni tomodachi to mo yak'soku sh'te okinashi'ta kara, sono toki<sup>b</sup> go issho ni mairimashō (go issho i'ashimashō). Kono nochi sonna koto wo shinai yō ni kodomo ni kibishi'ku its'kete okimashō. Uekiya san, kono niwa no dōgu wo katazukete o kure ; sonna ni chirakash'te oite wa (oicha) komarimas'. Sakujitsu sensei ni oshiete itadakimash'ta bakari des' kara,<sup>c</sup> kitto oboete imashō. O kinodoku des' ga, itadaite okimashō. Kono o mi o is'te wa chitto shio ga amai kara, s'koshi shōyu wo sashi'te chōdai. Kō iu baai ni (oite) wa seifu ga kanshō shinakereba naranai. Kono heya wo sōji (mo) shinaide itsu made mo uchatte oite wa ikenai. Soko made ni itashi'te okimashō.<sup>d</sup>

Because you left the door of the cage open, the bird has escaped (escaping finished). You must not leave the window open. Go to the storehouse and bring the box in which are the rolls ; then, (sō sh'te) when you have come out, shut it (shutting put) well. German fishermen, when they catch herring, at once pickle them in salt. *Daikon* if pickled too

a The name of a park in the old castle grounds, the present *kyōkyō*, in Tōkyō. *Haiken suru* (hai=ogamu, ken=miru) is used for *miru*, especially in the first person, of objects belonging to the one addressed or to an exalted personage. In the latter case it may be used in the second or third person also.

b The postposition *ni* is understood. Compare *aru hi* one day, for *aru hi ni*, *kono nochi* hereafter, for *kono nochi ni*.

c Compare *tadaima kunda bakari desu* (p. 122, middle). After a past verb *bakari de*, *bakari desu*, may be translated "just."

d The usual formula at the end of a lesson or lecture.

long in salt becomes [too] salty. I wish you would change the hour for recitation (*keiko no*). I wish to learn Japanese drawing (*Nihongwa*); please inquire for a good teacher. Shall I cut the branches of this pine tree a little? No, leave it as it is. The account book in which shopkeepers record (*ts'keru*) their transactions (*urikaidaka*) is called *dai Fukuchō*. I wish you would take me to the theater once. Abandoning wife and children, he went (going finished) to America. In Japan [they] formerly exposed the heads of felons. Put these potted plants out into the garden. I have made an agreement with a friend to (*yō ni*) read Chinese books together every other day. Command the maidservant that she do nothing like that hereafter (*kono go*). You must not leave the books scattered about like that. I have heard that you are good at checkers (*go ga o jōsu*); please teach me a little (*hitotsu*). I ordered winter clothing long since, but it is not finished yet. I will come down to ten *yen* (p. 125a). Even though one makes an agreement, difficulties (*sashits'kae*) often occur (*dekimas'*). If you put un-mellowed persimmons into rice, they become sweet.\*

## CHAPTER LVI

1. The verb *kuru* (stem *ki*) is irregular :

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>kuru</i>	<i>konai, kon (u), kinai</i>
Past	<i>kita</i>	<i>kon (a) katta, konanda, kinakatta</i>
Future or	<i>koyō, kiyō</i>	<i>komai</i>
Probable	<i>kuru darō</i>	<i>konai darō, kon darō</i>
Probable	<i>kitarō</i>	<i>kon (a) kattarō, konandarō</i>
Past	<i>kita darō</i>	<i>kon dattarō, konakatta darō</i>
Conditional	<i>kureba</i>	<i>konakereba (konakuba)</i>
	<i>kuru nara (ba)</i>	<i>koneba</i>
		<i>konai nara (ba), kon nara (ba)</i>
Past Con-	<i>kitara (ba)</i>	<i>konakattara (ba), konandara (ba)</i>
ditional	<i>kita nara (ba)</i>	<i>konakatta nara (ba)</i>

\* One may also say : *shibu ga nukemasu*.

Imperative	<i>koi</i>	<i>kuru na</i>
	<i>ki na</i>	<i>kuru (n') de nai (yo)</i> <sup>a</sup>
Subordina- tive	<i>kite</i>	<i>kosu (shite), kosu ni</i> <i>konaide, konde</i> <i>konakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>kitai</i>	<i>kitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>kitari</i>	<i>konakattari, koyandari</i> <i>kinakattari, kinandari</i>

The briefer form *ku* appears in *kubeki* (compare *su-beki*). From *kuru* are derived the conditional *kureba* and the negative imperative *kuru na*.

The *ko* in *koyō*, *koi* (from *koyo*) and the negative forms is irregular.

2. The imperative *koi* (pp. 34e, 37d, 48c) is peremptory. Familiarly one may say *oide*, *oide na*, *oide yo*; politely, *oide nasai*, *irasshai*.

3. Polite equivalents of *kimasu* are: for the first (or third) person, *mairu* (*mairimasu*) or *agaru*; for the second (or third) person, *irassharu* (*irasshaimasu*), *oide nasaru*, *oide ni naru*.

4. *Kuru* often follows the subordinatives of other verbs:

- dete kuru* come out
- haitte kuru* come in
- kaette kuru* come back
- nagarete kuru* come floating
- hette kuru* decrease
- mashite kuru* increase

Sometimes *kuru* with a subordinative may be translated "begin" (p. 92):

*Ame ga futte kimashita.* It has begun to rain.

*Samuku natte kimashita.* It begins to be cold.

For such expression as "Shall I go and shut the window?" "Go and buy it," *kuru* with the subordinative is used (p. 88g): *Mado wo shimete kimashō ka. Sore wo katte kite kure.* Notice the frequent idiom: *motte (tsurete) kuru* (*mairu*, etc. bring).

<sup>a</sup> Notice that the stem of the verb may not be used here as in other paradigms.

<sup>b</sup> A polite expression is *ji-san suru* (*ji=motsu, san=mairu*): *Jisan itashi-mashita.* I brought. *Go jisan nasaimashita.* You brought.

## Vocabulary

<i>kiri</i> limit. <sup>a</sup>	<i>yūbin-kitte, yūbin-gitte</i> postage stamp.
<i>tsuchi</i> earth.	<i>kure-gata</i> evening, twilight. <sup>d</sup>
<i>mono</i> peach.	<i>take-no-ko</i> bamboo sprouts (an article of food).
<i>tsubame, tsubakura</i> (from the classical <i>tsubakurame</i> ) chimney swallow.	<i>gan</i> (c) wild goose.
<i>akambō</i> baby, infant. <sup>b</sup>	<i>dempō</i> telegram (p. 115b).
<i>boichan, (o) bō san</i> boy (polite).	<i>dempō wo utsu</i> (or <i>kakeru</i> or <i>dasu</i> ) send a telegram.
<i>(o) jō san, jō chan</i> girl (polite).	<i>gwan-jitsu</i> the first day of the year.
<i>o kachin</i> ( <i>katsu</i> pound, <i>ii</i> boiled rice) = <i>mochi</i> .	<i>ji-setsu</i> season.
<i>kami wo yuu</i> ( <i>iu</i> ) dress the hair.	<i>kwai-jō</i> circular letter.
<i>kami yui, kamii</i> hair dresser. <sup>c</sup>	<i>sen-taku</i> washing, laundry (— <i>suru</i> wash).
<i>mage</i> cue, coiffure.	<i>hai-tatsu</i> distribution, delivery.
<i>toko-ya</i> barber-shop, barber.	<i>yūbin haitatsu</i> } postman. <sup>e</sup>
<i>yabu</i> grove, thicket.	<i>yūbin-kubari</i> }
<i>taka-yabu</i> bamboo grove.	<i>sen ryū</i> brief witty poem.
<i>kitte</i> stamp, check.	<i>han-kiri</i> , letter paper. <sup>f</sup>
	<i>doro</i> mud.

<sup>a</sup> From *kiru* cut. *Kiri* may limit another word, following it like *gura*, *bakari*, *dake* or *hodo* (pp. 22b, 48b). It is more emphatic than any of them and often occurs in the expression *Kore kiri shika nai* (lit. this only—besides not).

<sup>b</sup> Also *aka san*, or *aka chan*, *chan* being the children's equivalent of *san*. A baby may be called politely *o chiūtai no*. The term *bō* is a designation common to priests, blind men and boys (p. 15a) and as a suffix means "fellow": *kurombō* negro, *kechimbō* miser, *asanebō* a late sleeper.

<sup>c</sup> Men do not now require the services of a *kamiyui*, since the custom of wearing the cue has been abandoned. A barber shop is called also *ri-hatsu-ten* (dress-hair-shop) or *sam patsu-ya* (*san* cut).

<sup>d</sup> Also *hi-gure*, from *kureru* set (of the sun). The sunset itself is *nicht-botsu*; sunrise, *nishutsu* or *hi-no-de*. *Ban-gata* and *yū gata* are synonymous with *kure gata*.

<sup>e</sup> In the post office the technical term is *shū-hai-nin* (*shū*=atsumeru, *hai*=kubaru).

<sup>f</sup> The long narrow sheets called *hankiri* (or *hankire*) are usually pasted together to form a continuous roll called *maki-gami*.

<i>doro-darake</i> no muddy. <sup>a</sup>	— <i>wo nosoku</i> <i>wo hoka</i> except-
<i>ma-jika</i> no very near.	ing.
<i>harau</i> clear away, sweep,	<i>chigai</i> difference, mistake.
brush.	— <i>ni (wa) chigai (ga) nai</i>
<i>kōmuru</i> bury.	there is no doubt that,
<i>shimau</i> put away.	certainly.
<i>ato wo katazakeru, ato kata-</i>	<i>aratameru</i> change, renew, re-
<i>suke (wo) suru, ato-jimai</i>	view.
<i>(wo) suru</i> clear away	<i>urataniete</i> again.
things (as after a meal). <sup>b</sup>	<i>sappari</i> clearly, wholly, at all
<i>ine wo karu</i> harvest the rice.	(with a negative verb).
<i>dai-shō wo sasu</i> wear the	<i>tsui</i> unconsciously.
two swords ( <i>dai</i> great,	<i>ik-kō</i> entirely, at all (with a
<i>shō</i> small).	negative verb—comp. p. 99,
<i>nosoku</i> remove, except.	bottom).

### Exercises

*Yūbin:aitatsu ga hitaru, sō itte kure. Yūbin wa kore kiri (dake) shika kimasen. Kami ni sassoku kuru yō ni itte okimash'ta ga, naze kimasen ka wakarimasen. Taisō hara ga hette kimash'ta; nodo mo kawaite kimash'ta. Mō yūbin ga kita ka. Sayō, tadaima kimash'ta; shikashi o kuni kara wa tegami ga kimasen: shimbun dake des'. Sugu ni yūbin-ritte wo katte kimashō ka. Shokuji no ato wo katazukete shimattara, katte koi. Kono kimono wa dorodurake da kara, yoku haratte koi. Ganu to iu Shinajin ga oyaji wo hōmutte ita toki ni karas' ga tsuchi wo motte kita to iu hanashi ga arimas'.<sup>c</sup> Mōsō to iu Shinajin ga takayabu ni haitte naita toki ni takenoko ga yuki no sh'ta kara dete kita sō des'. Inu wa neta kiri<sup>d</sup> okite konai; dō sh'ta no da. Gwanjitsu ya,*

a As a suffix *darake* is much used to form adjectives having the general sense of slovenly or disagreeable: *aka-darake* filthy, *chi-darake* bloody, *hai-darake* (hai ashes), *hokori-darake* dusty, *kusa-darake* (of a garden), *misu-darake* (of a room), *sumi-darake*, *yama-darake* (of a country), *shakkin-darake*, *fushimatsu-darake*, from *shimatsu* good management, economy (lit. beginning and end).

b Merely to take things back to the kitchen is *o sen wo sageru*.

c *Ganu* and *Mōsō* belong to the twenty-four Chinese heroes celebrated for their filial piety—the *ni jū shi kō* (for *kō-shi* filial child).

d *Kiri* is here equivalent to *mama*.



*kinō no oni ga rei ni kuru to iu senryū ga arimas'.* <sup>a</sup> *Anata keiko ye kitari konandari sh'te wa ikemasen ; shijū konakereba narimasen. Konaida Ōsaka hen de arashi ga fuite ie ga tak'san tsubure,* <sup>b</sup> *hitojini mo atta to iu dempō ga kimash'ta. Taisō osoku natta kara nō komai. Iie, kuru ni chigai nai. Hitori no o bā san ga kawa de sentaku wo sh'te ita toki ni ōki na momo ga nagarete kita kara sore wo uchi ye motte kite watte miru to, ōki na akambō ga dete kita sō des'.* <sup>c</sup> *Ano seito wa konogoro ikkō kimasen ga, dō shimash'ta. Konaida atta (from au meet) toki ni konnichi kara koyō to imash'ta. Kokkwaï no hirakeru no mo majika ni natte kimash'ta. Ano kata wa sakunen wa yoku kimash'ta ga, konnen wa sappari konaku narimash'ta.*

It was my intention (p. 95a) to bring [you] the book of which I spoke recently, but I quite (*tsui*) forgot it (forgetting came). The meaning of this word has gradually changed (changing came). Go and buy some (*s'koshi*) letter paper and envelopes. Let me know (*shiraseru*) when the barber comes (past cond.). I ordered him (*iits'kete oku*) to (*yō ni*) bring [it] at once ; why doesn't he bring it (prob.)? Has the newspaper not yet come (pres.)? At present (*tadaima de wa*) much foreign rice (*gwaikokumai*) comes to Japan. In your absence (*o rusu ni*) a circular letter came from the school : I told the messenger (*mōsh'te yaru*) to bring it again [in the] evening. I made (making put) an agreement that (*yō ni*) he should come this evening ; why doesn't he come? This year the cold begins (it has become cold) early. In Japan when a person comes to tender New Year's congratulations (p. 88a), people serve (*dasu sake* or *mochi*). Prince (p. 76c) Iemitsu brought it about (*yō ni suru*) that, excepting Dutchmen (*Orandajin*), Europeans could no longer come to Japan. When Japanese first came to America, they still had (subord. of *yuu*) cues and wore (were wearing) the two swords. The season of rice

a By *oni* is understood the creditor who comes on the last day of the year to collect money due him. *Ya* is a kind of interjection.

b *Ōsaka hen de* in the vicinity of *Ōsaka*. For *arashi ga fuku* compare *kaze ga fuku*. *Tsubure* is the inconclusive form of *tsubureru* and is here equivalent to *tsuburete*.

c This is the beginning of the famous tale of *Monotarō*. For *momo wo waru* compare *take wo waru* to split bamboo.

harvest (when people harvest rice) has not yet come. In Japan when the swallows go away (return), the wild geese come. A girl (*o jō san*) has brought [some] beautiful flowers. I have brought the little boy a toy for (*ni*) a present. Shall I send (sending come) a telegram?

## CHAPTER LVII

To the fifth group belong verbs in *gu*.

Paradigm of *nugu* (stem *nugi*) to take off (an article of clothing):

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>nugu</i>	<i>nuganai, nugan (u)</i>
Past	<i>nuida</i>	<i>nuganakatta, — nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>nugō</i>	<i>nugumai</i>
Probable	<i>nugu darō</i>	<i>nuganai darō, nugan darō</i>
Past	<i>nuidarō</i>	<i>nuganakattarō, — nandarō</i>
Conditional	<i>nugeba (nugaba)</i> <i>nugu nara (ba)</i>	<i>nuganakereba (nuganakuba)</i> <i>nuganeba</i> <i>nuganai nara (ba)</i>
Past Conditional	<i>nuidara (ba)</i> <i>nuida nara (ba)</i>	<i>nuganakattara, — nandara (ba)</i> <i>nuganakatta nara (ba)</i>
Imperative	<i>nuge</i> <i>(o) nugi na</i> <i>o nugi (yo)</i>	<i>nugu na</i> <i>o nugi de nai yo</i>
Subordinative	<i>nuide</i>	<i>nugazu (shite), nugazu ni</i> <i>nuganaide, nugande</i> <i>nuganakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>nugitai</i>	<i>nugitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>nuidari</i>	<i>nuganakattari, — nandari</i> <i>nuganaidari</i>

In such forms as *nuide*, derived from *nugite*, the *g* is elided and by compensation for the loss of the *nigori* in *g* the *i* is *nigori*ed.

The verbs of this group are not numerous. The most common are:

*aogu fan.*  
*fusegu ward off.*

*jusagu shut up, abstract.*  
*hagu patch together.*

*hagu* peel, strip off. <sup>a</sup>

*isogu* hurry.

*kagu* smell.

*kasugu* toil, work diligently  
at.

*katsugu* carry (on the shoulder).

*kogu* row, scull.

*matagu* straddle, step over.

*nagu* be calm (of winds,  
waves, etc.).

*oyogu* swim.

*sawagu* be noisy, excited.

*sogu* cut obliquely, slice off.

*sosogu* sprinkle (rather classic-  
al).

*susugu*, *ysugu* rinse (*minu*  
*de*).

*toгу* whet, grind, wash (rice).

*tsugu* join, graft (*tsugi-ki wo*  
*suru*), inherit.

*tsugu* pour. <sup>d</sup>

*tsunagu* tie, hitch, moor.

*yurugu* shake, quake, be loose.

## Vocabulary

(Include the above list)

*ato* succession.

— *no ato wo tsugu* inherit  
the estate or office of.

*hada* naked body, skin.

*hada wo nugu* expose the  
upper part of the body.

*kishi* bank, shore.

*kui* post, stake, pile.

*ōgi* folding fan. <sup>c</sup>

*shiri* bottom, base. <sup>d</sup>

*eta* pariah.

*ko-gawa* brook.

*ko-gire* small piece (as of  
cloth).

*kurombō* negro.

*seto-mono* porcelain.

*kamoi* upper groove, lintel.

*shikii* lower groove, threshold.

*shiki-mono* rug, carpet.

*toishi* whetstone.

*tō-garashi* cayenne pepper.

*te-tsuke-kin*, *te-tsuke* earnest  
money, bargain money.

*sei* tax, tariff.

*sen* good.

*aku* evil.

*sennaku*, *sen-aku* good and  
evil.

*genkwan*, *genka* vestibule of a  
residence, main entrance.

*nōfu* agriculturist, farmer.

*tem-bin* balance.

a In the literary language the verb *hagu* may also be intransitive; hence the derived form *hagasu*, corrupted to *hegasu*. These and the rare form *hagu* are all synonymous with *hagu* above. The colloquial intransitive is *haguru* "be stripped off," also "become bald."

b These verbs must not be confused with *tsugeru* tell.

c From *nogu*. Fans that do not fold are called *uchiwa*.

d The inside bottom of a *nabe* (pot for cooking) is *soko*; the outside, *shiri*. It is not an elegant word, but there is no other.

<i>ten-bim-bō</i> pole carried on the shoulder with a burden suspended from either end.	<i>soru, suru</i> shave. <i>kami-sori, kami-suri</i> razor. <i>tsumazuku</i> stumble.
<i>o-no-gu</i> pigments for painting.	<i>wareru</i> be split, cracked (tr. <i>waru</i> ).
<i>ramune</i> lemonade.	<i>mi ga naru</i> fruit is produced, bear fruit.
<i>asai</i> shallow.	
<i>hirou</i> pick up, find.	<i>yōshi ni iku</i> enter a family as an adopted child.
<i>isamu</i> be bold.	

## Exercises

*Zen wa isoge* (Proverb). *O cha wo tsuide agemashō ka. Dōso, tsuide kudasai. Sore wa ki ni take wo tsuida yō na hanashi des'.* *Ano hito no ato wa yōshi ga tsugimash'ta. Narutake isoide koi. Narubeku isoide itashimashō. Amari isogu koto de mo nai kara, ash'ta itte mo yoroshii.*<sup>a</sup> *Sake wo tsugu toki ni wa, migi no te de tokkuri wo motte hidari no te wo sono shiri ni atemas'.* *Toishi wo katte kite kamisori wo toide koi. Mizu wa oyogu no wa<sup>b</sup> taihen karada no tame ni narimas'.* *Kaeru wa yoku mizu wo oyogimas' ; sore da kara hito ga jōzu ni mizu wo oyogu to, kaeru no yō da to iinas'.* *Seiron (Ceylon) no minato de fune kara umi ni kane wo nageru to, kurombō ga kaeru no yō ni oyoide sugu ni hiroimas'.* *Mukashi wa eta to iu mono ga atte shinda ushi ya uma no kawa wo haide imash'ta. Ano onna wa kogire wo haide kimono wo koshiraete imas'.* *Hada wo nuide soto wo aruku no wa keisatsu de<sup>c</sup> kinjite arimas' ga, kurunahiki nado wa inaka-michi de hito no inai toki ni wa ats'ku naru to, kimono wo nugimas'.* *Nihon no bash'ki ni wa talami ga (wo) shiite arimas' kara, gela wa genkwan ni nuide agarimas'.* *Seiyōjin mo kuts' wo nuide agaranakereba narimasen.* *Fune wo (kogu koto no s'ki na hito ga kogu no wo suku hito ga) arimas'.* *Minato wo dete kara kase ga naide koganakereba naranakatta kara, taisō oso-*

a *Itte* in this sentence is from *iku*. *De mo nai* corresponds to the English "It is not at all," "it is not exactly." *Kotowasa de mo arimasen ga.....* It is not exactly a proverb, but.....

b *Mizu wo oyogu* swims in the water. Compare *soto wo aruku*.

c For *keisatsu de* compare p. 126c.

<i>tsumu</i> be packed.	<i>tsumeru</i> pack. <sup>a</sup>
<i>yamu</i> cease (as rain).	<i>yameru</i> stop, give up.
<i>yasumu</i> rest, retire.	<i>yasumeru</i> cause to rest.
<i>yurumu</i> be loose, moderate.	<i>yurumeru</i> loosen.
<i>narabu</i> be in a row, be parallel.	<i>naraberu</i> arrange.
<i>ukabu</i> float.	<i>ukaberu</i> launch. <sup>b</sup>

To some transitive verbs correspond passive forms in *eru*, e. g., *momu* rub, *momeru* be rumpled, troubled.

The stem of the verb *shinu* or *shinuru* die is *shini*. In the subordinative, the past, etc., it is conjugated like the above verbs: *shinde*, *shinda*, etc.. - In the present *ru* may be added to *nu* (compare *masuru*, *suru*), and in derived inflections there are longer and shorter forms. Thus the probable is *shinu darō* or *shinuru darō*; the conditional, *shinureba* or *shineba*; the negative imperative, *shinuru na* or *shinu na*: adding *beki* we have *shinu-beki* or *shinuru-beki*. The other inflections are derived regularly from *shinu*; e. g., *shinitai*, *shinō* (*shinan*), *shinana*i, *shine*, *shinumai*. The dialectical *inuru*, return, is inflected like *shinuru*.

## Vocabulary

(Include the above verbs.)

<i>kaji</i> rudder, helm.	<i>hito-gomi</i> crowd.
<i>nami</i> wave.	<i>yama-bushi</i> hermit ( <i>fusu</i> lie down, lodge).
<i>tombi</i> black kite.	<i>kanjiki</i> snowshoe.
<i>tsuna</i> rope. <sup>c</sup>	<i>tōge</i> mountain pass.
<i>yubi</i> finger. <sup>d</sup>	<i>an-shō</i> hidden rock, reef.
<i>haru-saki</i> (lit. spring-front) early spring, springtime,	<i>nin-jin</i> ginseng.

<sup>a</sup> Compare *tsumaru* be clogged, oppressed. These verbs must be distinguished from *tsumu* pile up, to which corresponds the intransitive *tsumoru*.

<sup>b</sup> *Kōko-o ni ukanda* it occurred [to me].

<sup>c</sup> *Tsuna* means a strong rope, made usually of hemp (*asa*). The lighter rope made of straw is *nawa*; if made of hemp, *asa-nawa*. Cord or twine is *hoso-nawa*. String or thread is *ito*.

<sup>d</sup> The thumb is *oya-yubi*, from *oya* parent; the index finger, *hito-sashi-yubi* from *hito wo sasu* point out a person; the middle finger, *naka-yubi*, or *taka-taka-yubi* (children's word), from *takai*; the ring finger, *sumuri-yubi*, alluding to its use in applying salve, or *bani-sashi-yubi* (women's word), from *bani wo sasu* apply rouge; the little finger, *ko-yubi*. The great toe is *saki no oya-yubi*.

*bai-u* the early summer rain,  
the rainy season. <sup>a</sup>

*cha-ya* (lit. tea-house) res-  
taurant, saloon.

*ke-shiki* expression (of face),  
appearance.

*ki-kai* machine, engine.

*kwō-san* mine.

*ma-hō* magic.

*mahō wō tsukau* practice  
magic.

*nin-soku* coolly.

*ri-s* ideal.

*sai-nan* misfortune.

*Sei-sho* Bible.

*sen-kō* stick of incense.

*shin-pai* anxiety (p. 196d).

*shin-rui* } relatives. <sup>d</sup>

*shin-soku* }

*shoku-nin* workman, artisan.

*jō-ki* steam.

*jōki-sen, ki-sen* steamboat.

*go som-pu (sama)* your fa-  
ther (more polite than *o*  
*tottsan*).

*sasu* point out, indicate.

*sashitaru* special.

*sumanai* inexcusable, rude  
(p. 167b).

*so-sō na* heedless.

*mu-jitsu no* untrue, innocent.  
*mujitsu no tsumi* false accu-  
sation.

*amu* braid, knit, crochet.

*erabu, eramu* choose.

*hakobu* carry transport. <sup>b</sup>

*kaeru* be hatched (tr. *kaesu*).

*kazoeru* count, number.

*konomu* like, be fond of.

*kukuru* bind.

*kubi wo kukuru* hang one's  
self.

*kumu* weave, <sup>c</sup> knit together,  
fame, compose (type).

*musubu* tie, bear (fruit),  
make (a contract).

*in wo musubu* make (magi-  
cal) signs with the fingers.

*nomu* drink, swallow.

*tsumu* pile up, load, accumu-  
late.

*hori-dasu* dig out, unearth.

*hai-shaku suru* borrow (po-  
lite 1).

*tada gratis*, free of charge.

*sutto* all the way, direct.

*ma-mo-naku* in a moment,  
immediately, soon.

*yoku-jitsu* the following day.

a Lit. plum-rain, i. e. rain that falls when plums are maturing. The conventional date for the rainy season is the last three weeks of June. The most common name for it is *nyū bai* (*nyū=iru*), a word which originally meant the beginning of the rainy season. Another word for *bain* is *tsuyu*, derived from *tsuyu* dew.

b The latter is a little more elegant than the former. The words *rui* and *soku* form collective nouns. Comp. *kin-rui kin-soku* metals.

c *Hakobu* is also used intransitively in the sense of "to make progress." *Tenki ga yoi to, dō shite mo shigoto ga hayaku hakobimasu.* The work naturally makes rapid progress when the weather is fine. *Nakanaka hakobi ga tsukimasen.* Progress is slow

d To weave on a loom is *oru*.

## Exercises

*Kōrōnde mo tada wa okinu.<sup>a</sup> En no shōkaku wa in wo musunde mahō wo ts'katta sō des'. Watakushi wa sumanai koto wo sh'ta. Watakushi wa sosō na koto wo itash'te makoto ni sumimasen. Kenkwa ga sunde bō wo nigiru.<sup>b</sup> Kono uchi no ichiban yoi no wo erande kudasaimashi. Nagaku keiko wo yasunde wa ikemasen.<sup>c</sup> Kono machi wa Nihombashid ri to narande orimas'. Ninsoku ga sorou made ano chaya de s'koshi yasunde mairimashō.<sup>d</sup> Omae asonde (asunde) bakari ite wa ikemasen. Muika hataraite nanukame ni wa yasumana-kereba naranai to Seisho ni kaite arimas'. Getsuyōbi ni mo asobu (yasumu) shokunin ga tak'san arimas'. Ryūkyū (Lo-choo Islands) de wa onna ga hataraite otoko ga asonde imas'. Gomi wo tsunda fune wo gomibune to mōshimas'. Ano hito wa taisō sake ga s'ki des' keredomo, kane wo oshinde nomimasen. Mō ame ga yamimash'ta ka. Ima yamisō na kesh'ki des'. Kaze ga yandara, aitaka ni naru deshō. Go shimpai ni wa oyobimasen. Shinda ko no toshi wo kazoeru (Proverb). Fune ga anshō ni atatte soko ni ana ga aite kara, sugu ni shizumimash'ta. Nihonjin wa matsu no ki wo taisō kononde yoku niwa ni uemas'. Tombi ga taka wo unda to iu no wa oya yori erai ko ga dekita to iu ko'o des'. Isha wo tanonde agemashō ka.<sup>e</sup> Iie, sash'taru koto de mo arimasen kara, tanomanaide mo yoroshū gozaimash'. Jibun hitori de dekiru mono nara, hito wo tanomanai hō ga ii. Tonari no hito wo tanondara yokatta ni. Jōkisen no kikai ga itamimash'ta no de futs'ka hodo yokei minato ni tomaranakereba narimasen desh'ta. Anma san ni hitotsu monde moraimashō. Wada-tōge<sup>f</sup> hen de wa fuji no*

a The proverb describes a very avaricious spirit.

b The usual form of the proverb is: *kenkwa sugite no bōchigiri. Bō-chigiri* and *chigiri-ki* are equivalents of *bō*. A club is of no use after the quarrel is over.

c Observe that *yasumu* may take an object with *wo* where the English would require a preposition.

d *Yasunde mairimashō*. I will rest and then go. But *mairimashō* is hardly to be taken so literally; it may remain untranslated.

e *Isha wo tanomu* call a physician. But when there is a direct object denoting the thing requested, the person becomes the indirect object with *ni* (p. 125b.)

f The Wada Pass is on the Nakasendō just beyond Karuizawa. *Yuki no ue wo suberu*.

*eda de anda kanjiki wo ts'kaimas'* ; *sono ura ni kire wo ts'kete yoku yuki no ue wa suberimas'*. *Watakushi wa keiko no sunda yokujitsu ni inaka ye tachimash'ta*. *Seiyōjin wa tsūrei, yubi wo kunde Kami wo ogamimas, ga, Nikonjin wa te wo awasete (awash'te) ogamimas'*. *Ano hito wa kawaisō ni mujitsu no tsumi de shinimash'ta*. *Hara wo kittle shine (shinde shimae)*. *Anna warumono wa shinde mo dare mo kamaimasen*. *Nochi ni naru to o:oi komimas' kara, zutto mae no hō ye o tsume kudasai*. *Hito-gomi no naka ye iku to, zutsū ga shimas'*. *Asagao no hana wa hi ga deru to, mamonaku shibonde shimaimas'*. *Hammok'* (hammock) *no tsuna ga yurumimash'ta kara, musubi-naosanakucha abunai*. *Harusaki ni nareba dandan samusa mo yurumimas'*. *Risō no nai hito wa chōdo nami no ue ni ukande oru kaji no nai fune no yō na mono des'*. *Chotto konna kangae ga kokoro ni ukabimash'ta*. *Tonda go sainan de gozaimash'ta*.

This part (*tokoro*) is very difficult ; I finally understood the meaning [only] after reading [it] repeatedly (*tabitabi*). I awoke after the earthquake was over.<sup>a</sup> You have made great progress (advanced much) in language study (*gogaku ga*). When the rainy season is over (*sumu*), [people] air [their] clothes ; this is called *doyōboshi*. In *mushiken*, when the snake and the frog appear (*deru*), the snake wins, because (*naze to iu ni*) snakes swallow (swallowing finish) frogs. When a person dies the relatives [and] friends (*kara*) send sticks of incense. The *yamabushi* often make magical signs with [their] fingers. When I have finished reading the book that I borrowed of you recently, I will at once return it to you. The Japanese often read books with a loud voice.<sup>b</sup> This (*koko*) is a very beautiful place ; we will rest a little and [then] go [on]. That steamboat sank near (*no kin-kai de*) Japan. The copper dug out from this mine is carried by horses to (*made*) the Kitakami River and loaded (*tsumi-komu*) into boats.<sup>c</sup> The bird has laid eggs, but has not yet hatched them. In a Japanese proverb

a In such a context *yamu* is better than *sumu*.

b *Takai koe de*, or, *koe wo agete*. There is a word for reading aloud, namely, *on-doku*.

c The verbs are all active.



they say: To drink ginseng and hang one's self.<sup>a</sup> I have a request to make of you (There is a matter about which I wish to request you). In Japan when [you] go to a person's house you call out with a loud (great) voice in the *genkwan*: "I request!" In a Turkish (*Tor'ko no*) proverb they say: If lost things return (returning come), the dead father too returns. Have you read the *Rongo*?<sup>b</sup> I am now reading [it]. She gave birth to a dead child. Is your father still living?<sup>c</sup> No, father (*wa*) died a long time ago. That sick person will probably die soon; for he drinks too much *sake* (*sake wo nomi-sugiru*). About (*koto wa*) a dead person [one] must not speak ill. If one sinks, one floats [again] (Proverb).<sup>d</sup>

## CHAPTER LIX

To the seventh and last group belong verbs in which a vowel precedes the *u* of the present tense.

Paradigm of *kau* (stem *kai*) to buy, or to keep (animals):

	Positive	Negative
Present	<i>kau</i>	<i>kawanai, kawan(u)</i>
Past	<i>katta, kōta</i>	<i>kawanakatta,—nanda</i>
Future or Probable	<i>kaō</i>	<i>kaumai</i>
Probable	<i>kau darō</i>	<i>kawanai darō, kawan darō</i>
Past	<i>kattarō, kōtarō</i>	<i>kawanakattarō,—nandarō</i>
	<i>katta darō</i>	<i>kawanakitta darō</i>
	<i>kōta darō</i>	
Conditional	<i>kaeba (kawaba)</i>	<i>kawanakereba (kawanakuba)</i>
	<i>kau nara (ba)</i>	<i>kawaneba</i>
		<i>kawanai nara (ba)</i>
Past Conditional	<i>kattara (ba)</i>	<i>kawanakattara (ba)</i>
	<i>kōtara (ba)</i>	<i>kawanandara (ba)</i>
	<i>katta nara (ba)</i>	<i>kawanakatta nara (ba)</i>
	<i>kōta nara (ba)</i>	

a The point is that ginseng is extremely expensive. By the time a man has consumed enough to effect a cure there will be nothing left in life but a hopeless struggle against poverty.

b Known among us as the Analects of Confucius.

c Very polite: *Go sompu sama wa nanda go zommei de irasshaimasu ka.*

d Compare the proverb, p. 184a.

Imperative	<i>kae</i>	<i>kau na</i>
	( <i>o</i> ) <i>kai na</i>	<i>o kai de nai yo</i>
	<i>o kai (yo)</i>	
Subordinative	<i>katte, kōte</i>	<i>kawazu (shite), kawazu ni</i> <i>kawanai de, kawande</i> <i>kawanakute</i>
Desiderative	<i>kaitai</i>	<i>kaitaku nai</i>
Alternative	<i>kattari, kōtari</i>	<i>kawanakattari,—nandari</i> <i>kawanaidari</i>

The vowel preceding the *u* of the present tense may be *a*, *o* or *u*. Compare *omou* think, *kuu* or *kū* eat. In the negative inflections the characteristic vowel *a* becomes *wa*. The positive subordinative, as also the past tense, etc., has two forms, *omotte* or *omōte*, *kutte* or *kūte*. The forms with the long vowel, such as *kōte*, *omōte*, *kūte*, are more common in *Kwansei*, the western provinces, than in *Kwantō*. But even in *Tōkyō* a verb like *tau* ask is conjugated *tōte*, *tōta*, not *totte totta*.

The only verb in which *i* precedes the *u* is *iu* say. It is conjugated *itte* or *iute*, *itta* or *inta*, etc. The forms *itte*, *itta* are homonymous with the corresponding inflections of *iku* go and *iru* enter or *iru* parch (p. 221A). The verb *yuu* or *yū* bind (as, for example, the hair) is in *Kwantō* inflected just like *iu* say.<sup>a</sup>

The form *iwaba* (lit. if I say) has peculiar uses. It may sometimes be rendered "so to speak," "in a word," "for instance"; in some cases it is untranslatable:

*Tatoete iwaba* to speak by way of illustration.

Tennis *wa iwaba Nihon no dakyū no yō na mono desu*.

Tennis is, one might say (for instance), like Japanese *dakyū*.

*Chanoyu wa iwaba hitotsu no nagusami no yō ni miemasu ga kontō wa seishin wo ochitsukeru jutsu desu*.

*Chanoyu* seems like a kind of amusement, but in reality it is an art by which one composes the mind.

Forms of *iu* enter into many idioms in which the original sense of "say" has been obscured:—*to iedomo* "although" (p. 171, top);—*to iu koto wa* or—*to iu mono wa* "the" (p. 126

<sup>a</sup> Observe the pun in the saying: *Yoku iute waruku iwaruru goke no kami*. A widow is ill spoken of when she does up her hair nicely.

b); —*to iu no de* “on the ground that” (p. 132 bottom);<sup>a</sup>  
—*to itte, tote, 'tte* (p. 133 top, 167 bottom); —*to iu to=to*, etc.

*Samui 'tara nakatta.* It was indescribably cold.

To the seventh group belongs also the auxiliary *tamau* used by students, etc., to form an imperative (p. 150): *Oki tamae.* Get up! If the action is requested for the benefit of the speaker *kure tar'ae* must be used: *Kono tegami wo yūbinbako ni irete kure tamae.* Drop this letter into a mail box, will you?

This being the last chapter on the conjugation of the verb, it may be well to note a distinction in the classical language which occasionally influences the colloquial. In the classical there are two forms of the conditional,—*akeba* and *akureba*, (*akereba*), *sugiba* and *sugureba* (*sugireba*), *miba* and *mireba*, *toraba* and *toreba*, etc., the former in each case being conditional in the proper sense and the latter temporal. In the colloquial the latter forms prevail and are used in both ways.

Besides the past conditional in *tara* (*ba*), one may rarely hear a form in *tareba*.<sup>b</sup> The two forms are commonly confused, but properly the former is truly hypothetical while the latter indicates the connection of actual events or conditions: *Kinō hanami ni ittareba mō sakari ga sugite orimashita.* Yesterday I went to see the blossoms, but they were already past their prime.

## Vocabulary

*atari*=*hen* vicinity, in the *kan-jō* reckoning, account, region of, about. bill.<sup>d</sup>

*hashi* extremity, end, beginning, margin.<sup>c</sup> *kō-saku* cultivation (of land).  
*nyū-yō*=*iri-yō* need. —

a This idiom is often a mere connective equivalent to *no de* (p. 104h.)

b Compare *nareba*, which is practically synonymous with *nara* (*ba*). These forms, derived from *naru*=*ni aru*=*te aru*, must not be confused with the conditional of *naru* to become.

c The end of a *machi* or group of houses is *hasure*, rarely *hashi*.

d *Kanjō wo suru* to reckon, draw up accounts. *Kanjō wo shite kudasai*, or, *Go kanjō wo negaimasu.* Please make out your bill, or, Please settle the account. This may be said by either party to a transaction. To collect a bill is *kanjō wo toru* or *morau*; to pay a bill, *kanjō wo harau*. At hotels it has become the fashion with some to substitute *kwaikei* for *kanjō*: *Go kwaikei wo negaimasu.* Please settle your bill. *Kwaikei wo shite kudasai.* What is the bill?

*share* witticism, pun.  
*yami* darkness.  
*yo, yo-no-naka* world.  
*ja-kō* musk.  
*jim-min* people.  
*jun-sa* policeman.  
*shō-nō* camphor.  
*doku-shin* (*doku*=*hitori*, *shin*  
 =*mi*) celibacy.<sup>a</sup>  
*dokushin-mono* bachelor, wid-  
 ower, spinster.  
*habakaru* be afraid, feel  
 backward.<sup>b</sup>  
*harau* pay.  
*kanau* accord, suit, obtain  
 (a wish).  
*kawaigaru* love; be fond of.  
*kayou* go back and forth.  
*kitaru* come (literary).  
*kurau* eat (literary).  
*ninau*, carry on the shoulder.  
*kuiru*, *kuyuru* repent of, feel  
 remorse for.  
*mukuiru*, *mukuyuru* requite.<sup>c</sup>  
*ada* injury, foe.

*ada wo mukuyuru* (*kaesu*)  
 take revenge.  
*okasu* violate (law), commit  
 (crime).  
*soroeru* arrange in order, fur-  
 nish (intr. *sorou*).  
 —*ni sou* be joined to, go  
 along with (tr. *soeru* add).  
*tou* ask, visit.<sup>d</sup>  
*utau* sing.  
*warau* laugh, smile.<sup>e</sup>  
*tai suru*=*mukau* face.  
 —*ni tai shite* (*mukatte*) in  
 regard to, against.  
*tori-yoseru* procure, import.  
*o se-ji wo iu* speak courte-  
 ously, flatter.  
*hidoi me ni au* have a dread-  
 ful experience.  
*yahari, yappari* still, not-  
 withstanding, too.  
*tatoi* although, even though.<sup>f</sup>  
*matawa* or.  
*ū* Ah! Oh!

a A widow is *yamome* or *go-ke* (*nōchi*, *ie*). A widower is *otoko-yamomo* (classical *yamoo*). There is no special word for "old maid." In the rare cases when such a word is needed *yamome* may be used: *San jū no saka wo koshita no ni, mada yamome (dokushin) de imasu ka*. In spite of having turned thirty is she still single?

b *Sensei no mae wo habakaru* be afraid of the teacher. *Seken no temae wo habakaru* be afraid for one's reputation. A common apologetic expression is *habakari nagara* or *habakari desu ga*. Excuse me for asking, but...

c These two verbs (stems *kui*, *mukui*) belong to the first class. There is danger of confusing them with the verbs described in the present chapter. Compare with the latter —*ni muku* or —*ni mukau* face, *mukeru* turn, send, *mukaeru* go to meet, summon.

d In the sense of to "ask" or "inquire" *kiku* (p. 161a) or (in the case of a discussion) *shitsumon suru* is more common; in the sense of to "visit," *tazuneru* or *hōmon suru*.

e Classical: *emu*. To smile is more exactly *hoko-emu*; in Chinese, *bi shā suru* (light laugh). To deride a person is *hito* (*no koto*) *wo warau*.

f With following *mo*. Compare *moshi—nara* if (p. 159 bottom).

## Exercises

*Hito ni wa sotto (sôte) miro, uma ni wa notte miro.*<sup>a</sup> *Mago wo kawai-garu yori inu wo kae* (Proverb). *Nani ka iô to omotte wasurete shimaimash' ta.* *Warau kado ni wa fuku kitaru.*<sup>b</sup> *Hito ga machigatta koto wo itta tote (itta'tte) warau no wa (waratte wa) skitsurei des'.* *Ano hito wa yoku share wo imas'.* *Sakujitsu itta no wa machigai desh' ta, shikashi Kôshi mo "Ayamatta aratamuru ni habakaru nakare"*<sup>c</sup> *to mōshimash' ta kara, naoshimas'.* *Ise no Yokkaichi kara Yokokama made jōkisen ga kayoimas'.* *Nanibun (nambun) yoroshi' ku negaimas'.* *Ā! shimatta.*<sup>d</sup> *Ano hito wa o seji bakari itte ikenai hito des'.* *Uso wo in na.* *Sō itte yatte mo*<sup>e</sup> *yō gozaimashō.* *Mushi no kuwanai yō ni kimono ni shōnō wo irete o kure.* *Furuhon wa yoku mushi ga kutte imas'.* *Kore to onaji shina ga nakeraba, s'koshi chigatta no de mo ii kara, katte kite kure.* *Kono hon ni wa Nichiren Shōnin ga*<sup>f</sup> *mahō wo ts'katta to kaite arimas'.* *Sore wa takakute yoku nai; kawanai hō ga yokatta ni.* *Sonna koto wa iwazu to mo ii des'.* *Maebashi atari de wa yoku kaiko wo katte imas'.* *§ Nihon no Yamaguni de wa taigai ushi wo ts'katta kōsaku shimas'.* *Kore made wa kana wo naratte orimash' ta ga, sore wo yamete chitto kanji no keiko wo itashimashō.* *Sore wa te de nutta mono ni chigai nai.* *Kessh' te*

a A proverb: Don't judge by first impressions. Compare: *Sumeba miyako.* If you live [in a place, it becomes like] a metropolis. Notice the rhyme in *sotte, notte.*

b In this proverb *kado* stands by metonymy for *ie.*

c This saying is taken from the *Kongo.* *Kōshi* is Confucius. In the classical style a verb takes the attributive form (p. 144, 6) before a particle like *ni.* *Habakaru (koto) nakare* is the classical equivalent of *habakaru na.*

d Lit. It is all over. This expression is used in the sense of "It is too bad!" *Shimatta koto wo shita.* I made a mistake.

e *Itte yaru* send word, give orders.

f *Nichō-ran* (sun-lotus), the founder of the sect called by his name, lived in the XIII. Century. *Shō-nin* (*shō=jō=ue, nin=hito*) is an honorary title applied to priests. The *Nichiren-shū,* is distinguished for its spirit of intolerance. It is called also *Hokke-shū,* from the name of its sacred book *Hoke-kyō* (*hō law, ke flower, kyō canon*).

g *Maebashi* is an important town in *Kōtsuke.* *Kōtsuke* is a contraction of *Kami-tsu-ke=upper ke,* this *ke* being the old name of the country and *tsu* the classical genitive particle. Compare *Shimotsuke.* *Kōtsuke* is commonly called *Jō-shū* (*jō=ue or kami, shū country*). Compare *Chō-shū* p. 31a.

*hito no koto ni o kamai ōe nai yo. Rainen no koto wo ieba (iu to) oni ga warau (Proverb). Kono kon ga go nyūyō nara, Tōkyō ye itte yatte toriyosete agemashō. Sakujitsu o me ni kakeyō to omoimash'ta ga, tsui wasuremash'ta. Tabitabi mōshimashō to omoimash'ta ga, ima made shinbō sh'te damatte imash'ta. Nikon de wa kessh'te sonna koto wo i: wa (iia) shimasen.<sup>a</sup> Sō iwanai koto wa nai ga, amari kitanai des' Mus'me no uchi wa yoku shimada wo<sup>b</sup> iimas' ; yome ni itte kara de mo wakai uchi wa shimada wo yū mono ga arimas'. Wakaranai koto wa jibun de kangaete bakari iru yori hito ni tou kō ga ii. Ash'tu boku mo issho ni ikitai kara, matte ite kure tamae. Tatoi hito ga jibun ni tai sh'te donna tsumi wo okash'te mo<sup>c</sup> katte ni ada wo mukuiru koto wa ima no kōritsu de yurushimasen. Bō hodo negatte hari hodo kanau.<sup>d</sup> Dare de mo umai mono wa kuitai. Kore wa negattari kanattari des' (p. 176). Doku wo kurawaba sara made mo.<sup>e</sup> Nome ya! utae ya! issun saki wa yami no yononaka.<sup>f</sup> Are wa yoku warau hito des'. Hankiri no hashi wo yoku sorou yō ni kitte kure. Ninae, jū!*

The *Nakasendō* road in some places follows the Kiso River (there are also places that go along the K. River). In Berlin you must pay tax if you keep a dog. Europeans say that the Japanese are a laughing people (people that laugh well). Even though you make mistakes (say things about which you erred), I (*watakushi ni wa*) still understand. You must not lie (say a lie). Put away the food so that the rats don't eat it. I intended to wear at once the clothes that I put here; why did you put them away? Tell the honest truth (*hontō no koto*)

a See p. 167, bottom. Some say *iyū shimasen*.

b A kind of *mage*. See Brinkley's Dictionary, p. 865. One may also say *shimada ni yū*.

c The combination *tatoi*—*donna*—*mo* may be translated "no matter what." Compare the use of interrogatives in conditional clauses (p. 149, top).

d The idea of the proverb is that the attainment always comes far short of the intention.

e The proverb commends the courage of desperation. If you happen to eat poison, swallow it all! In such a case there is no use in being cautious or scrupulous.

f Such expressions may be heard in a carousal. 'Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die.'

without flattering. I never (*kessh'te*) flatter. Don't talk foolishly (foolish things).<sup>a</sup> If you have (past cond. of *aru*) leisure at some other time (*mata*), send word to that effect (so tell and send by (*ni*) some one. No matter how often I reckon, its always different. He makes a face as when (*yō na*) Emma has eaten musk.<sup>b</sup> These clothes have been so eaten (active subord.) by moths (*mushi*) that they are useless. Though a bachelor,<sup>c</sup> he spends (*tsukau*) a great deal of money. That official keeps (is keeping) two horses. Is it better to learn *kaisho* or *gyōsho*? You must learn both. I don't trouble myself (*kamau*) about (*ni wa*) other people's business. Don't talk too much (*yokei na koto*). Any way will suit me (However it be, I don't mind). Since I have had no time to-day, I think I shall go to Yokohama to-morrow. In (*de*) the rain we got wet through and through and had a dreadful time of it. It is better not to use this word. It may be well to ask that policeman (*ni*). Arrange (arranging put) the shoes in the entrance. Repenting of his crime he committed suicide.

## CHAPTER LX

The verbs *morau* receive, and *shimau* finish, often follow the subordinatives, positive or negative, of other verbs.

*Morau* is used just like *itadaku* (Ch. LV.), but is quite informal and its use should be avoided in speaking of what has been done or is to be done by the person addressed, unless that person is a subordinate or a familiar friend :

*Machi ye iku nara, kono tegami wo dashite moraimashō.*

If you go down town, please mail this letter.

*Sono hako wo akenaide moritai.* Don't open that box.

Common expressions are *isha ni mite morau* be examined by a physician, *hito ni oshiete morau* be instructed by a person. The latter, however, is used rather of casual explanation or information than of regular instruction at a school. In speaking

a One may say ironically: *Baka ie*. Some say *bakā ie* (*hakā* r *baka wo*).

b The god of hell is thought to look more furious than ever when he has eaten musk.

c Translate: *Dokushinmono no kuse ni*. Compare. *Gakusha no kuse ni konna yasashii koto de mo wakaranu*. Though a scholar, he does not understand even such a simple thing as this.

of teaching in the ordinary sense of the word *osowaru* or *narau* take the place of *oshiete morau* or the passive *oshierareru* :

*Nihongo wa dare ni osowarimashita ka.*

By whom were you taught Japanese ?

*Amerikajin ni butsurigaku wo naratta.*

I studied physics under an American.

*Shimau* with a subordinative may sometimes be rendered by a word like "finally" or "completely"; but generally it only adds emphasis and can not be translated. Its very common use is due to the disposition of the Japanese to prefer compound verbal expressions to simple verbs. <sup>a</sup>

*Nete shimaimashita.* He has retired.

*Nokorazu tabete shimaimashita.* He has eaten it all.

*Shinde shimaimashita.* He is dead.

*Kono sashimi wa oku to, waruku narimasu kara, tabete shimaimashō.* We will eat the *sashimi* all up, because it will spoil if we leave it.

*Yūbe kyaku ga atte tōtō dekenaide shimatta.*

Having company last evening, we at last failed to go out.

In familiar conversation various contractions occur; e. g., *yatchimatta*, or *yatchatta*, for *yatte shimatta*.

## Vocabulary

<i>dekumono, o deki</i> sore, ulcer boil.	<i>hi-bui</i> } sepulchral inscrip- <i>hi-mei</i> } tion, epitaph.
<i>ni-zukuri</i> } packing. <i>ni-goshirae</i> }	<i>hō-kō</i> domestic service.
<i>e-kaki</i> painter, artist.	<i>kei-ba</i> horse races.
<i>te-chō</i> notebook (smaller than <i>chōmen</i> ).	<i>haku-ran-kwai</i> exposition, fair.
<i>dō-ri</i> reason, truth, right.	<i>ryō-ji</i> consul.
<i>dōri desu</i> it is natural, proper, right.	<i>ryōji-kwan</i> consulate. <i>sho-gwa-kwai</i> assembly of artists. <sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> It must be remembered that in Japanese verbs are not combined with prepositions as in European languages. To "dig out" is *horidasu*; to "drive in" *uchikonu*; to "drink up" or "drink down" is *nonde shimau*.

<sup>b</sup> From *sho* writing, *gwa* painting, *kwai* assembly. At such an assembly artists write or paint free of charge for those who are admitted.



<i>hō-sō</i> smallpox (lit. pox-sores.)	<i>shi-tateru</i> get ready, make up (as clothes).
<i>ue-bōsō</i> } vaccination.	<i>kami wo karu</i> cut the hair.
<i>shu-tō</i> }	
<i>ten-nen-tō</i> smallpox (lit. natural smallpox).	<i>seru</i> hold an auction.
<i>ki-tai na</i> uncommon, extraordinary, strange (p. 34c).	<i>seri de uru</i> sell by auction.
<i>manabu</i> learn, study.	<i>seri-uri, seri</i> auction.
<i>sum, sū</i> suck, smoke (tobacco).	<i>tsumaru tokoro, tsumari</i> after all, in the end, finally.
<i>na-tsuku, nasuku</i> become attached. <sup>a</sup>	<i>tō-tō, tōto</i> at length, finally (synonymous with <i>tsui ni</i> ).

## Exercises

*Sono dekimono wo isha ni mite moraimash'ta ka. Hai, mite moraimash'ta, shikashi nan de mo nai to mōshimash'ta.*<sup>b</sup> *Watakushi wa meshitsukai wo okō to omou ga, kanai no aru mono de shōjiki na hito wo sewa sh'te moraitai. Yōf'ku wo hito kumi narubeku hayaku sh'tatete moraitai. Ano ekaki ni e wo kaite moraimash'ta. Tamago wa k'satte shinatta mono; kaeran no mo dōri des'.*<sup>c</sup> *O jii san wa (sake ni) yotte shimaimash'ta. Ginkō ni yō ga arimash'ta kara, tomodachi ni tsurete kite moraimashi'ta. Shoguwakwai de ano hito ni nani ka hitots' kaite moraimashō. Gōzen wo tabete shimattara, sugu ni deka-keru tsumori des' kara, ninsoku ga sorotte iru yō ni ki wo ts'kete o kure. Tōkaidō ni mo tetsudō wo shiite shimaimash'ta. Ma-kitabako wo sashiagemashō ka. Arigatō; koko ni nomi-kake ga<sup>d</sup> arimas' kara, kore wo s'tte shimaimashō. Chōmen ni ts'kenai to, sugu ni wasurete shimaimas'. Sore wa donata ni oshiete moraimash'ta ka. Dare kara kiitu no de mo arimasen ga,*

a From *nareru* and *tsuku*. Compare *natsukashii* homesick: *Haha ga natsukashikute tamarimasen*. I am dreadfully homesick for my mother.

b A person may say of himself *nan to mo nai*: *Kayuku mo nan to mo nai*. I don't feel any itch or anything. To the question, *Watakushi no me wa akaku natte imashō ka*. Is my eye red? one may reply, *Iie, nan to mo nai yo*. I don't see any thing (p. 47, top).

c That they do not hatch is natural, i. e., naturally they have failed to hatch. For *dōri desu* one may say also *atarimae desu*.

d Translate: a partially smoked cigar. *Nomi-kakeru* begin to smoke. Compare *furi-kakeru* begin to rain.

ken ni sō kaite arimash'ta. Doits' de wa kodomo ga fū ni sai ni naru to, kanarazu ni dome no uebōsō wo sh'te morawanakereba narimasen. Itami ga hidoku nareba, isha ni mite morawanakereba narimas' mai. Watakushi wa gwaitō wo sh'tatete moraitai; anata wa jōsu na sh'tateya wo go sonji de wa arimasen ka. Watakushi wa heta des' kara, kanai ni nigoshirae wo sh'te moraimashō. Nikon ni oru Seiyōjin wa kuni ye kaeru toki ni wa ie no dōgu wo seri de utte shimaimas' (seriuri ni shimas'). Uchi no inu no ko wa waki ye yatte shimaimashō.<sup>a</sup> Hikeski ga kita toki ni wa mō ie ga mina yakete shimatte ita. Kono ken wo shimatte (put away) shimaimashō. Parii no hakurankwai ye itte taiken kane wo ts'katte shimaimash'ta. Bakuchi wo uttari keiba no kake wo sh'tari sh'te taisō kane wo ts'katte shimaimash'ta. Takakute kawazu ni shimaimash'ta. Ame ga furi-kaketa kara, ikazu ni shimaimash'ta. Sonna koto wo sh'te morau hasu de wa nakatta.<sup>b</sup> Konaida ōmizu ga dete ichi man nin no hito ga shinde shimatta sō des'. Naka ni haitte kenkwa wo wakete shimaimash'ta.

She spent a lot of money on (making) clothes. With (*de wa*) this warm weather the ice will thaw. Finally I cured it myself (*hitori de*) without being examined by a physician. Did you have this wound (p. 159a) examined by a physician? Yes, after I had had it examined he said that if it does not heal immediately, he must cut (cutting finish) [it]. I wish you would secure (*sewa suru*) a servant who has never served (*hōkō sh'ta koto no nai*) in a foreigner's house. This picture I had painted (written) at a *shogwakwai*. He had his own epitaph written while (*uchi ni*) he was [yet] living; isn't it strange? If I drink about three glasses of beer I become entirely drunk. As I have business at (*ni*) the consulate but don't know the way yet, I will have a friend take me there. I wanted to sell these old books, but I finally failed to sell [them]. The pupils who study Chinese at the School for Foreign Languages are taught by a Chinese and a Japanese. If I don't make a note of it in a notebook, I shall forget it

a *Waki ye yaru* give away (lit. send to a side, send aside); *uchi no inu* our dog.

b I should not have been treated like that, or, It was not the understanding that I should be treated so.

entirely (all). Under whom did you learn Japanese? I was taught by an old (*toshitotta*) Japanese scholar, He has become younger [looking], having cut off (*sotte morau* or *otosu*) his beard. I want my hair cut. It is risky to (*no wa*) get vaccinated by an inexperienced physician. In Germany (1) the number of deaths (those who die) from (*de*) smallpox has considerably (*yohodo*) decreased since (*kara* 7) the regulation (5) was issued (*deru* 6) that (*to iu* 4) [people] must be vaccinated (3) twice (2). When I returned (pres.) home (*kuni ye*), I sold my furniture at auction. It was my intention to give away all the pups, but at last, as they became attached to me (*natsuita mon' des' kara*), I kept (ended in not giving) [them]. When I have finished writing (past cond.) this letter, I will go out a little for a walk.

## CHAPTER LXI

In Ch. LI. we gave various examples of irregular causatives. Regular causatives may be derived from any verb, excepting the auxiliary *masu*.

In the case of verbs of the first class *saseru* is added to the stem:

*tabe-saseru* cause to eat, allow to eat, give to eat.

In the case of verbs of the second class the characteristic vowel becomes *a* (*wa*), as in the negative conjugation, and *seru* is added:<sup>a</sup>

*shiraseru*, from *shiru*, let—know, inform.

*sumaseru*, from *sumu*, cause—to come to an end, settle.

*mataseru*, from *matsu*, let—wait, make—stay.

*motaseru*, from *motsu*, have—hold, let—carry.<sup>b</sup>

*awaseru*, from *au*, cause—to meet, join, add together.

*kuwaseru*, from *kuu*, cause—to eat, feed.

Some verbs of the first class have also a form in *seru*, besides the one in *saseru*:

*misaseru* let—see.

*miseru* show.

*abisaseru* have—bathe (intr.). *abiseru* pour (water) over.

<sup>a</sup> In *Shintō* and Christian prayers *seshimeru* and *shimeru*, may be substituted for *saseru* and *seru*; e. g., *arashime tamae* cause to be! In the classical language the common causative inflection has an honorific use; *tasukesase tamae* save!

<sup>b</sup> *Motasete yaru* send (by a person).

The shorter forms have, however, come to have special meanings and may properly be regarded as independent verbs.

The causative of *suru* is *saseru*; of *kuru*, *kosaseru*; of *dekiru*, *dekasaseru* or *dekasaseru*.<sup>a</sup>

The causatives are inflected like verbs of the first class; but sometimes *seru* may become *su*, the conjugation following in part the paradigm of *hanasu* (Ch. LI.); e. g., *tabetasu*, *tabesashite*, *tabesashita*, for *tabesaseru*, *tabesasete*, *tabesasete*.

The above examples show that causatives may be variously translated, using such words as "cause," "make," "have," "let," "allow," "see," etc. The meaning ranges all the way from the active agency expressed by "cause a man to drown" to the passive attitude indicated by "see a man drown."

*Jibun wa oyogi wo shiranai mono desu kara, tasukeru koto mo dekinaide misumisuru ano kodomo wo oboresasete shimaimashita.* As I don't know how to swim, I was unable to save the child and saw it drown right before my eyes.

In the case of a causative derived from a transitive verb whose direct object is expressed or understood, the agent becomes the indirect object with *ni*; otherwise the agent takes *wo*:

*Shafu ni niwa wo sōji saseru.*

Have the rikshaman clean the garden.

*Hito wo warawaseru* make a person laugh.

*Oya wo nakaseru* cause the parents to weep.

As in English, one may use language inexactly; e. g., *ie wo lateru* build a house, for *ie wo tatesaseru* have a house built, *kimono wo koshiraeru* make clothes, for *kimono wo koshiraesaseru*, etc.

## Vocabulary

*su-ro* bathtub, bath.

*ai-te* partner, opponent (in a game).

*aka-gaeru* a frog of a brownish color.

*na-ate* {address

*ate-na* } (of a letter).

*tama-tsuki* playing billiards (lit. ball striking).

*tsuku* construct (of earth, etc.).

<sup>a</sup> There is also a transitive verb *dekasu*: *Kore wo asu made ni dekaishite kudasai.* Please have this done by to-morrow.

<sup>b</sup> This *te*, hand, is often used in the sense of person, as also its Chinese equivalent *shu*; e. g., *rappa shu* trumpeter, from *rappa* trumpeter.

<i>tsuki-yama</i> artificial mountain, rockery. <sup>a</sup>	<i>shi-gai</i> corpse.
<i>sen-sui</i> (c) artificial pond.	<i>yui-gon</i> instructions of a dying person, verbal will.
<i>hanashi-ka</i> professional storyteller.	<i>sei-hon</i> book binding.
<i>fu</i> a kind of food made of wheat gluten.	<i>seihon-ya</i> book binder.
<i>fū</i> custom, manner, style.	<i>nama-nurui</i> tepid.
<i>seki</i> mat, seat, room.	<i>kan</i> epilepsy, irritability.
<i>bappai</i> ( <i>batsu, kai</i> ) a cup of sake drunk for a forfeit.	<i>kan no tsuyoi</i> irritable, peevish.
<i>dō-raku</i> debauchery, profli-gacy.	<i>karu</i> cut, mow.
<i>i-byō</i> dyspepsia.	<i>kireru</i> be used up.
<i>kai-dō</i> highway.	<i>moru</i> leak.
<i>kwa-sō</i> cremation. <sup>b</sup>	<i>tosuru, tojiru</i> bind (a book).
<i>man-zai</i> strolling com'c dancer. <sup>c</sup>	<i>haku, haki-dasu</i> vomit, spit.
<i>mon-jin</i> disciple (lit. gate-person).	<i>kuru</i> reel.
	<i>kuri-kaesu</i> repeat
	<i>te-ire suru</i> repair, attend to
	<i>nambo</i> ( <i>nani hodo</i> )= <i>ikuru</i> .
	<i>om-bin ni</i> quietly, in a private way.

## Exercises

*Akambō ni shōkwa no warui mono wo tabesasete (tabesashi'te) wa ikemasen. Shōsei ni wa yonda tokoro wo tabitabi kurika-esasenakereba narimasen. Byōnin ni kusuri wo nomasemash'ta (nomashimash'ta) ga, mina hakidashimash'ta. Ano hito wa tamats'ki ga jōzu des' kara, itsu de mo aite ni kane wo dasasemas'. Yonde kikasete agemashō ka.<sup>d</sup> Dōzo, yonde kikasete kudasai. O sashitsukae ga arimash'taraba, sō o shirase nas'tte kudasai. Kame no ko ya koi ni fu wo tabesasemas'. Ano manzai wa omoshiroi koto wo itte yoku hito wo warawasemas'. Maketa hito ni bappai wo nomasemas'. Danna sama! tadaima*

a Compare *Tsukiji* (lit. made land), the name of the former foreign concession in Tōkyō.

b From *kwa* fire and *sō* burial (in *sō-shiki* funeral). Interment is *mai-sō* (*mai*=*usumeru* inter).

c From *man* 10,000, many, and *sai* year. *Manzai* go about at New Year's congratulating people and amusing them with their performances, for which they receive money.

d *Yonde kikaseru* read. Comp. *hanashite kika* tell.

*guya ga mairimash'ta. Ima shokuji wo hajimeta tokoro da kara, s'koshi matasete oite kure. Nikonjin wa una ni mame to mugi wo kuwasemas'. Kawaii ko ni wa tabi wo sase(ro)* (Proverb). *Kan no tsuyoi kozomo ni wa akagaeru wo tabe-sasemas'. Anma wo yonde kata wo momase nagara kono machi no hanashi wo kiitara dō des' ka. Dōzo, sono hon wo misete kudasai. Kono kurumaya wa yowasō des' kara, isogaseru no wa kawaiisō des' ; shikashi isogasenai to, kisha no ma ni aimas'mai. Kono hako wo sugu ni motte ikimashō ka, ato kara motte kosasemashō ka.<sup>a</sup> Motte kosaseru hō ga yō gozaimashō. Koko ni hon nado wo chirakash'te oite mama dete ikimas' kara, hito wo hairasete wa ikemasen. Ano mus'ko wa dōraku de oya wo nakasemas'. Dōshō to iu bōsu ga<sup>b</sup> monjin ni yuigon wo sh'te jibun no shigai wo yakasemash'ta ; sore ga kwasō no hajimari da to iimas'. Kore wa tsumetai mizu des' ka. Iie, sore wa namanurui kara, o yoshi nasai ;<sup>c</sup> tadaima kumitate no wo motte kosasemashō. Kozukai ni o taku ye motash'te agemashō. Furo ga moru kara, naosash'te kure. Oi, Matsu!<sup>d</sup> kono tegami wo sugu ni jūbinkyoku ye dash'te kite o kure. Wata-kushi wa tadaima shokuji no sh'taku wo sh'te imas' ga, kurumaya ni dasasete mo yoroshū gozaimas' ka. Sō ka,<sup>e</sup> shikashi isogi no yō da kara, sugu ni ikash'te o kure. Uekiya ni tanonde niwa wo ts'kurasetara yokatta ni. Mats' wa hisash'ku teirē wo sasenai to, waruku narimas'. Mina awasete nambo ni narimas' ka. Ki wo kikasete hayaku kaerimash'ta.<sup>f</sup> Tonda koto de o sawagase nōshimash'ta.<sup>g</sup> Kirash'te orimas'.<sup>h</sup>*

As this picture is very pretty, I will have it copied. I will have the bath heated (caus. of *wakasu*) once more. Feed to

a *A/o kara* after us. Comp. p. 177d. A merchant would say to a customer : *Motashite agemashō ka* or *O todoke mōshimashō ka*. Shall I send it to you?

b The priest *Dōshō* lived in the VII. Century. Notice the *ga's* the logical subject being, not *Dōshō*, but the origin of cremation.

c *O yoshi nasai*. Don't use it (lit. stop!)

d A frequent abbreviation of such a name as *Matsutarō*, *Matsujirō*, *Matsugorō*, etc.

e *Sō ka*, for *sō desu ka*, is very familiar.

f Compare *ki no kiita* (p. 128). This may be said of a visitor who has observed that his presence was embarrassing and has cut his visit short.

g Such an apology is in order when a fire or a similar occurrence in one's house has disturbed the neighbor.

h Said by a merchant when his stock of any article is exhausted (*kireru*).

the horses the grass that the gardener has cut. Where do you have bookbinding done? I have [books] bound at the book-binder's on *Onari-kaidō*,<sup>a</sup> but they are not very skilful [there]. Formerly (*moto wa*) [they] made children read from the very first (*hajime kara*) difficult books like (*yō na*) the *Daigaku*,<sup>b</sup> but now they have [them] read very easy (from very easy) books. As I can't write *Rōmaji*, I will have our student<sup>c</sup> write the address of this letter. Since the dog does not get well, we will poison (feed poison and kill) [him]. Shall I read to you what is (written) in the paper in regard to that matter? If you are at leisure, let me [me] know. If you do not have the pupils write Chinese characters often they will forget [them] all. That story-teller says interesting things and makes people laugh. My horse seems very tired;<sup>d</sup> I can't make [him] run fast. Have the barber wait a little. I will have my garden made (*tsukuru*) in Japanese style (*Nihon-fū*). Then you must have a pond and rockery made (*koshiraeru*). Every day after (*to*) my preparation for (of) school is finished, my father makes me read two or three pages (*mai*) of the *Daigaku*. He has pupils translate English sentences (*Ei-bun*) into Japanese.<sup>e</sup> This too is (becomes) a good exercise (*keikō*). How would it be to call a story-teller and have him give [us] a recitation?<sup>f</sup> My watch is very fast; I must set [it] (p. 160b). As he has dyspepsia, the physician said that we must not feed [him] anything but (*no hōka*) soft rice. Happily we settled the thing in a private way. Please have this done by this evening. He sent it by the maid servant. We will have the hostler clean the garden. The Japanese feed hens rice.

a The name of a street leading to Ueno Park in Tōkyō. The shōgun when he visited the graves of his ancestors used to pass through this street; hence the name *Onari*, *o nari* being equivalent to *oide* in speaking of an Emperor or a shōgun.

b From *dai* great, *gaku* learning,—the name of a Chinese classic.

c Students are often employed in return for lodging or board to perform such services as tending the door, etc.

d Translate "be tired" in the case of a horse *tsukaveru*, not *kutabireru*.

e "To translate" is *yaku suru* or *naosu*. "To translate into Japanese" may be rendered *wa-yaku suru*.

f To give a recitation in this case is *is-seki hanasu*, *seki* being used as a numerative. In some cases *seki* and *sa* are synonymous, but *ichi sa* means the whole company (of a theatrical troupe). Comp. *ichi nichū*, p. 70.

## CHAPTER LXII

The passive and the potential forms of Japanese verbs are usually the same, both having been formed originally by adding the syllable *e*, stem of *eru* (classical *uru*, *u*) to get.<sup>a</sup> The identity of the two forms may be illustrated by means of the English sentence: "Silk sells well," which may be understood to mean either that much silk is sold or that one can easily sell silk. The original Japanese idiom in both cases is; "Silk gets sale." *Kinu wa yoku ureru* (for *uri-eru*).<sup>b</sup>

Attention has previously been called to intransitives in *eru* derived from transitive verbs, as *hirakeru* become civilized, from *hiraku* (p. 222). Such verbs may for the purposes of this chapter be classed as irregular. They are, like irregular verbs in any language, very much used, and for this reason are easy to memorize.

It is to be observed, by the way, that verbs of this kind as passives may be predicated of inanimate things, while regular passives are naturally used when the subject is a person.<sup>c</sup> Some of them are also used in a passive potential sense; e. g.,

*toreru* be taken, be obtainable, from *toru*.

*shireru* be known, be evident, from *shiru*.

*ureru* be sold, be salable, from *uru*.

*kaeru* be bought, be purchasable, from *kau*.

*kikoeru* be heard, be audible, from *kiku*.

*mieru* be seen, be visible, from *miru*.

Generally they may also be used of a personal subject as active

a The verb *eru* is not much used in the colloquial, being usually replaced by other verbs, such as *morau*, *ukeru*, *kōmiru*, *tamawaru*, etc. It occurs in: *Mata ori wo ete ukagaimashō*. I will call again when I have an opportunity. *Go sansei wo etai to omoimasu*. I desire your approval.

b Compare the adverb *yamioesu* unavoidably, from *yamu* *wo* *esuu* (lit. not getting stop).

c In dealing with the Japanese language such a distinction must be made with some reserve. As has been hinted before (p. 116a), the genius of the language does not demand the expression or even the clear conception of the subject of a sentence. Moreover as has been suggested, a sentence may have a double subject, a personal subject with *wa* and a subordinate impersonal subject with *ga*. But what is said above is correct if we have in mind the true subject of a passive verb, that is, the direct object of the action denoted by it.



potentials in the senses "can get," "be in a position to know," etc.,<sup>a</sup> but as passives they cannot be used of a personal subject.<sup>b</sup> The following examples illustrate the manner in which they are used :

*Yohodo tema ga torenasu ka.* Will much time be required?  
*Tetsudō-kōfu wa taisō kane ga torenasu.*

Railroad laborers earn a great deal of money.

*Jōsu na ryōshi (ni) wa sō iu sakana de mo torenasu.*

An expert fisherman can catch even such fish.

*Yoku shirete iru koto desu.* It is a well known fact.

*Shimbun ni de mo kwōkoku wo asanakereba hito ni shiremasumai.* If we do not advertise in a newspaper or something, it will hardly become public.

*Watashi ni wa tōtei sō iu komakai koto wa shiremasumai.*

I am hardly in a position to know such details.<sup>c</sup>

We will now confine our attention to the regular passive forms, used only when the subject is a person. In the case of verbs of the first class the passive is derived by adding *rareru* to the stem, i. e., substituting it for the *ru* of the present tense :

*togame-rareru* be blamed, from *togame-ru*.

In the case of verbs of the second class the characteristic vowel becomes *a* (*wa*), as in the negative and causative forms, and *reru* is added :

*nusumareru* be robbed, from *nusumu*.

*shikarareru* be scolded, from *shikaru*.

*kirawareru* be disliked, from *kirau*.

There is no passive form of the suffix *masu*.

a See the following chapter. When *kikoeru* and *mieru* are used as active potentials it is natural for them to take a subordinate subject: *mimi ga kikoeru, me ga mieru*. The verb *kikoeru* may be used also of other than physical possibility: *Sore wa, dōmo, kikoenai koto desu*. Really, that is unreasonable talk.

b The verb *mieru* in some of its senses is an exception. In the sense of "to be present" it may be used of a person, though not of the speaker himself: *Sensei ga niemashita ka*. Has the teacher come? *Kinō o mie nasaimasen deshita, ne*. You didn't put in an appearance yesterday. In the sense of "to look" it may be used in any person: *Taisō fukete niemasu deshō*. I presume I look quite old. *O toshi hodo ni wa miemasen*. You don't look as old as you are. The verb *shireru* may be used of the discovery of a criminal.

c In these examples observe the tendency to use *ni wa* with the personal subject and to avoid making the thing an object with *wo*. The verbs are properly neither passives nor potentials, but intransitives.

The passive of *suru* is *serareru* or *sareru* :

*Shakkin wo saisoku sarete komarimasu.*

I am annoyed by being dunned for debts.

The passive of such a verb as *kinzuru* or *kinjiru* (p. 214.7) is *kinjirareru* or *kinzerareru*, not *kinsareru*.

Passives may be derived from causatives ; e. g., *awaserareru* or *awasareru*, from *awaseru* or *awasu* cause to meet, introduce :

*Hidoi me ni awaserareta (awasareta).*

He (or I) was caused to meet with a dreadful experience.

*Sake wo ogoraserareta (ogorasareta).*

He (or I) was compelled to set up the *sake*.

The passive of *kuru*, come, is *korareru*. It is a peculiarity of the language that passives can be formed from intransitives :

*Kyaku ni korareta* had visitors.

*Teishu ni shinareta* lost her husband (*shinu* die).

*Ame ni furareta* was rained upon (*ame ga furu*).

These examples show also that the person or thing that would be the subject in the active construction takes the particle *ni* (less commonly *kara* or *no tame ni*) in the passive.

A passive verb may have an object :

*Suri ni kane wo toraremashita.*

He was robbed of his money by a pickpocket.

*Mune wo uchi-nukareta* was shot through the breast.

The passive is not used as much in Japanese as in English. As has been said above, regular passives cannot ordinarily be predicated of inanimate things.<sup>a</sup> An active verb often takes the place of an English passive :<sup>b</sup>

*Mada Tōkyō wo Edo to mōshimashita koro.*

When Tōkyō was still called Edo.

a This does not apply to the literary language : *Waga kōshikwan wa Shin-kan-hei-ni yakaretari.* Our legation was burned by Chinese and Korean soldiers. A few exceptions are to be found also in genuine colloquial : *Shiro ga toraremashita.* A castle was taken. *Kuni ga uraremashita.* The country is betrayed (sold). *Sono ki wa tōdō kirarete shimaimashita.* That tree was at last cut down. *Tetsu de mo ensan ni wa tokasarete shimaimasu.* Even iron can be dissolved by hydrochloric acid.

b Compare the examples on p. 53. In English the passive is often preferred to the active because it is unnecessary or inconvenient to name the agent, as in the case of the small boy who tells his mother : "My pants got torn." An active verb in Japanese requires no subject and in this respect may be quite as vague as a passive.

Again, English passives are often represented by intransitive verbs or Chinese compounds.

*Ya ni atatte uchijinî shimashita.*

He fell struck by an arrow

*Fune ga hasen shimashita.* The ship was wrecked (p. 89f).

An intransitive verb often differs in sense from the regular passive derived from the same stem. Thus, *tasukaru* means "escape with one's life," but *tasukerareru* means "be saved":

*Sendô wa tasukebune de tasukarimashita.*

The sailors escaped in a lifeboat.

*Tasukebune ni tasukeraremashita.*

They were saved by a lifeboat.

In some cases a verb like *ukeru* or *kômuru* may perform the function of a passive inflection: *hazukashime* (or *bu-joku*) *wo ukeru* be insulted = *hazukashimerareru* or *bujoku sareru*.

*yobi-dashi wo ukeru* be summoned (by a court of justice).

*i-rai wo ukeru* be requested.

*kô-geki wo ukeru* be attacked.

*shi-ken wo ukeru* be examined.

*meshi wo kômururu* be called (Christian phrase).

*batsu wo kômururu* be punished.

*go men wo kômururu* be excused.

*kan-kwa wo kômururu* be influenced.

Some substantives like those with which *suru* is used to form active verbs may with *ni naru* convey a passive sense:

(*o*) *sewa ni naru*, (*go*) *yakkai ni naru* be assisted.

*men-shoku ni naru* be discharged.

*go chisô ni naru* be entertained (polite I, 3).

The verb *omowareru* in the sense "the thought occurs to me" may be construed either as a potential or as a passive. Compare "methinks." It is also used as an ordinary passive:

*Hito ni yoku omowareru hito desu.*

He is a person well thought of by others.

## Vocabulary

*buyu, buto* name of an insect with a very venomous sting. *hatago, hatago-sen, hatago-ryô* price of lodging.

*fukuro* bag, sack.

*hisashi* a small roof over a door or window

<i>obiru</i> gird on, wear in the belt.	<i>kensa wo ukeru</i> be inspected.
<i>obi</i> girdle, belt, sash.	<i>kun-shu</i> sovereign (lit. lord, master).
<i>taka</i> hawk.	<i>mō-jū</i> wild beasts.
<i>ama-gasa</i> rain umbrella. <sup>a</sup>	<i>ryū-gaku</i> being abroad for purposes of study.
<i>asa-se</i> shoal, ford (compare <i>haya-se</i> ).	<i>sen-kyo</i> election.
<i>dō-maki</i> money belt ( <i>dō</i> trunk of body, <i>maku</i> roll).	<i>shi-kei</i> the death penalty.
<i>ma-mushi</i> viper.	<i>shū-gi</i> congratulation, congratulatory gift.
<i>omo-ya</i> the main house.	<i>tai-shō</i> general, commander.
<i>shita-yomi</i> rehearsal, preparation (of a lesson).	<i>koku-ji-han</i> political offense ( <i>koku</i> = <i>kuni</i> , <i>ji</i> = <i>koto</i> , <i>han</i> offense).
<i>tabi-bito</i> traveler.	<i>kotowaru</i> give notice, refuse.
<i>urū-doshi</i> leap year, <sup>b</sup>	<i>nikumu</i> hate.
<i>waki-zashi</i> short sword.	<i>okuru</i> send, escort (p. 59a).
<i>sue-ko</i> , <i>suekko</i> , <i>bas-shi</i> (c) the youngest child.	<i>ou</i> carry on the back. <sup>c</sup>
<i>shappo</i> (Fr. <i>chapeau</i> ) } hat.	<i>sasu</i> sting.
<i>bō</i> , <i>bōshi</i> }	<i>shiiru</i> force (a thing on a person).
<i>rō</i> , <i>rō-ya</i> prison (obsolescent).	<i>soshiru</i> slander. <sup>d</sup>
<i>tō</i> party.	<i>nagasu</i> banish.
<i>jiyū-tō</i> Liberal Party.	<i>tamawaru</i> bestow, receive. <sup>e</sup>
<i>doku-ja</i> poisonous snake (of the larger kinds).	<i>toraeru</i> } seize, arrest.
<i>gi-in</i> member of a deliberative assembly.	<i>tsukamaeru</i> }
<i>ken-sa</i> inspection.	<i>ukareru</i> be buoyant, light-hearted, giddy. <sup>f</sup>

a In distinction from *hi-gasa parasol*, the latter being made of oiled paper.

b *Urūdoshi* properly denotes the leap year of the old lunar calendar, according to which every fifth year has thirteen months. This year may also be called *urūsuki no aru toshi*.

c From this are derived *obuu* carry (a child) on the back and the children's word *ombu* (*ombo*) *suru*. Note the contracted passive causative *obusaru* be carried on the back. Another synonym is *shou*, from *se-ou* (*se* back).

d This verb (subord. *soshite*) belongs to the class described in Ch. XLVIII., but it was not included there because it occurs very rarely in the colloquial.

e Derived from *tamau*. It may be used as a passive, or as an honorific.

f From *uku* float. One may also say *ki* (*kokoro*) *ga uite imasu* (*ukiuki shite imasu*).

<i>kui-tsuku</i> bite (of an animal such as a dog or a snake).	<i>sho suru</i> sentence (a criminal).
<i>atsukau, tori-atsukau</i> manage, treat.	<i>shi-kei ni sho suru</i> condemn to death.
<i>yobi-kaesu</i> call back, recall.	— <i>kai ga aru</i> it is worth while to (opp. <i>nai</i> ).
<i>ike-doru, ike-dori ni suru</i> take alive.	<i>kwain-pi de</i> at Government expense.
<i>baka-su</i> befool, bewitch.	

### Exercises

*Watakushi wa Frans' to ik'sa ga okotta toki zehi heitai ni narō to omoimash'ta ga, kensa wo ukerara, amari karada ga yowakute kotowararemash'ta. Inu honeotte taka ni torareru.<sup>a</sup> Hisashi ni kash'te omoya mo torareru (Proverb). Mamushi ni kamareta kara, isha ni mite morawanakereba narimasen. Ryūkyū ni wa dokuja ga tak'san orimas' ; kuits'karetara, sugu ni sono tokoro wo kitta shimawanakereba narimasen. Watakushi wa inu ni ashi wo kamaremash'ta kara, arukemasen. (arukaremasen). Kase ni shappo wo toraren yō ni go yōjin wo nasai. Mujitsu no tsumi de shikei ni sho serareta hito mo nai de wa nai. Oda Nobunaga wa Akechi Mitsushide to iu jibun no kerai de atta taishō ni korosaremash'ta<sup>b</sup> Kodomo ga amari itazura wo sh'te junsu ni sh'kararemash'ta. Hanfu to iu Shinajin wa haha no koto wo waruku itta no de ōki na hebi ni nomareta sō des'.<sup>c</sup> Yomu to iu Shinajin wa oyaji wo korosh'ta no de kaminari ni utarete shinda sō des'. Shosei ga sake wo nonde ukarete uta wo utaimash'ta. Nihonjin wa mukashi takoku ye iku koto wo kinjirarete (kinzerarete) imash'ta. Kunshu kara wakizashi wo tamawatte seppuku wo mōshits'kerareta<sup>d</sup> koto mo atta. Kōyasan no bōzu bakari wa Deshima ni<sup>e</sup> hairu koto wo yurusarete imash'ta. Tonari ni ko ga umaremash'ta kara, shūgi ni sakana wo okurimashō. Otoko no ko no umareta ie de wa sono toshi kara shichi nen no aida naitoshi go gwatsu no its'ka ni nobori wo tutemas'. Aits' wa*

<sup>a</sup> The object of *torareru* in this proverb is to be supplied. One labors and another enjoys the fruit.

<sup>b</sup> Akechi murdered Nobunaga in 1582 in order to usurp the supreme power.

<sup>c</sup> The stories of Hanfu and Yomu are taken from the *Dō-ji-kyō* (*dō-ji* or *ji-dō* children, *kyō*—*os/hie*).

<sup>d</sup> *Mōshi-tsukeru*—*ii-tsukeru* command.

<sup>e</sup> *Deshima* was under the old regime the Dutch Concession in Nagasaki, the only place in the Empire open to foreigners.

*dorobō wo sh'te kangoku ye okuraremas'h'ta. Ushi ni hikarete Zenkōjōimairi.*<sup>a</sup> *Ōta ko ni oshierarete asase wo wataru* (Proverb). *Hito wo koros' to, kubi wo kiraremas'.* *Shina mo chikai uchi ni motto hirakeru darō to omowaremas'.* *Yoshida Shōin wa*<sup>b</sup> *gwaikoku ye ikō to sh'ta tame ni toraerarete rōya ni ireraremas'h'ta. Nihon no seifu ni wa gwaikokujin ga tak'san yatowarete imas'.* *Ichī nen no uchi ni wa Nihongo no hanashi ga jiyū ni dekimashō to omoimash'ta ga, ima keiko wo hajimete miru to, totemo dekišō ni wa omowaremasen.* *Ber'rin de wa taitei jiyūto no giin ga senkyo saremas'.* *Tabibito wa yoku kire de dōmaki to iu nagai fukuro wo koshiraete, sore ni kane wo irete, tsurarenai yō ni obi no sh'ta ni shimete orimas'.* *Watakushi wa konaida hachi jū yen nusumaremas'h'ta ; keisatsu ni todoketa keredomo, kane ga kaerimasenakatta. Sensei ga taihen shosai ni yararemas'h'ta.*<sup>c</sup> *Dōmo, ame ni furarete komarimas'.* *Nikumarete yo ni iru kai wa nakeredo, kawaigararete shinu (shinuru) yori mashi da.*<sup>d</sup> *Atama wo tatakaremas'h'ta. Buto ni sasareru to, saisho wa nan to mo arimasen ga, ni san nichi tatte itaku narimas'.* *Kyō wa o kyaku ni ittara,*<sup>e</sup> *sake wo shiirarete komarimash'ta. Watakushi mo kodomo no toki ni wa kitsune ni bakasareru koto wo osorete orimash'ta. Sakuban tomatte yadōya de taihen hatagosen wo toraremas'h'ta.*

In the eleventh year of Meiji Ōkubo Toshimichi was killed at Kioizaka by Shimada Ichirō [and] others (*ra*).<sup>f</sup> I always get

a *Zenkōjō-ji* a famous temple of the buddha Amida at Nagano in Shinano. *Zenkōjō* or *Yoshimitsu* is the name of a person who brought the gold image of the buddha from *Naniwa* (*Osaka*). It is said that a woman pursuing an ox which had caught some of her wash on its horns unconsciously followed it so long a distance that she at last reached *Zenkōjō-ji* and had the joy of being able to worship Buddha there. The proverb is applicable to one who is gradually led to go a long distance or accomplish a great task without any intention of doing so at the start.

b A scholar from Chōshū who attempted to go abroad on one of Commodore Perry's ships in order to acquaint himself with western civilization.

c The verb *yaru* is here used in the sense of "tease" or "humiliate."

d *Nakeredo* = *nai keredomo* (comp. *yokeredo*, p. 99). Similar forms may be derived from the past tense: *yokattaredo*, *nakattaredo*. Verbs also may be inflected in the same way, substituting *do* for *ba* in the conditional, but the indicative with *keredo* (*mo*) is more commonly used.

e *Kyaku ni iku* (*yobareru*) go as a guest, be invited out.

f Ōkubo was Home Minister. *Ra* after the name of Shimada Ichirō is equivalent to *nado*, *naro*.

scolded by the teacher because I am not prepared (don't make preparation and come). There is a saying (*mōs' koto*) that if you sneeze once, you are praised (inconc.) by some one ; if twice (you do it), you are slandered (inconc.) by some one ; if thrice (you do it), you catch a cold.<sup>a</sup> A Japanese proverb says (In a Japanese proverb they say) that if you lie you will get your tongue pulled out (*nuku*) by Emma after you die. There is also a proverb that says : To have your hand bitten by your pet dog (*kai-inu*). They say that one born in leap year is patient. The number of people killed (*kami-korosu*) by wild beasts and poisonous snakes in British India (*Ei-ryō Indo*) in (*chū ni*) the year 1886 was (there were) 24,000, it is said. Yesterday I did not go to take my lesson (*keiko ni*) because I was invited out (called). He was sent (caused to be) abroad for study at the expense of the Government ; but as he was not diligent, he was recalled. The youngest child is loved most by its parents. There being a fire in the neighborhood last night, I was wakened by my servant. When you are robbed of money by a thief, you must report [the fact] to the police. About 90 years ago the Russian captain Golownin was arrested by the Japanese and put into prison, but it is said that he was quite kindly treated. As I have no umbrella I shall indeed be troubled if I am overtaken by rain (rained upon). In the war he was shot in the thigh. For (*no wake de*) a political offense he was banished to Tsushima.<sup>b</sup> Sugawara no Michizane was banished to Dazaifu<sup>c</sup> and died there. Taira no Munemori was captured alive at the battle of Dan no Ura<sup>d</sup> and sent to Kamakura. Being told that there was no one there, I was very much astonished.

## CHAPTER LXII

The regular potential, denoting possibility, is identical in form with the regular passive described in the previous chapter :

a The pronouns, of course, are not to be translated.

b A group of islands between Japan and Korea.

c In Chikuzen, the province on the south side of the Straits of Shimonoseki. In ancient times Dazaifu was the residence of the governor of Kyūshū.

d Along the coast of Chōshū, near Shimonoseki. It was in 1185 the scene of a decisive naval battle between the houses of *Gen-ji* (*Minamoto*) and *Hei-ke* (*Taira*).

*tabe-rareru* be able to eat, from *tabe-ru*.

*mi-rareru* be able to see, from *mi-ru*.

*urareru* be able to sell, from *uru*.

*tatareru* be able to stand, from *tatsu*.

*itadakareru* be able to receive, from *itadaku*.

*awareru* be able to meet, from *au*.<sup>a</sup>

Besides the form in (*a*)*reru* there is, in the case of verbs of the second class,<sup>b</sup> a shorter one in (*e*)*ru* derived by changing the characteristic vowel to *e* and adding *ru*. Thus from *iku* go we have *ikareru* or *ikeru*; from *iu* say, *iwareru* or *ieru*.<sup>c</sup> The longer form is preferable when the idea of being permitted to do a thing is to be expressed:

*Kono tabako wa karakute nomemasen* (or *nomaremasen*).

This tobacco is so strong that I can't smoke it.

*Tetsudōbasha no naka de wa tabako wo nomaremasen*  
(not *nomemasen*). One may not smoke in a street car.<sup>d</sup>

The potentials of *kuru* and *suru* are also identical in form with the passives. But there is not much use for *serareru* (*sareru*), the construction with *suru koto ga dekiru* or simply *dekiru* taking its place.

*Anshō (suru koto) ga dekimasen*. I can't memorize it.

While uncontracted potential forms are inflected like verbs of the first class, contracted forms like *makaru* (p. 181) and *mōkaru*, from *mōkeru* gain, belong to the second.

The subject of a potential verb is naturally a person (or animal), because the idea of will is involved. In speaking of things

a The most explicit and emphatic expression of potentiality is found in the idiom *koto ga (wa) dekiru*.

b In some of the provinces verbs of the first class too have two potential forms; e. g., from *oboeru* remember, learn, *oboerareru* and *oboeruru*.

c *Kikoeru* and *mieru* (p. 260b) are irregular. The form *kikeru* belongs to the verb *kiku* be efficacious (p. 221). *Itō wa kuchi ga kikeru mono da kara, ano mura de wa ibatte imasu*. Ito, being eloquent, is carrying himself high in that township. In the sense of "tolerable to the ear" *kikeru* may also serve as a potential of *kiku* hear: *Piano wo are gurai hikeba, mā, kikeru sa, ne*.

d In previous treatises on the grammar of the colloquial the fine distinction between physical possibility and moral possibility, between "can" and "may," has received more emphasis than the facts warrant. Very few Japanese are aware of the distinction. In this connection contrast: *Totemo ikemasen*. It will never do. *Totemo ikaremasen*. I can't possibly go.



the simple indicative is sufficient: *Kore mo hairimasu*. This too can go in. But one may also say:

*Ki ga sodatenai*. Trees can't grow.

*Kisha ga ugokenai* (or *hashirenai*).

The train can't move (can't run).

*Fune ga susumenai* (or *tōrenai*).

The boat can't advance (can't pass).

*Sonna koto ga araremaskō ka. Arareyō hazu ga nai.*

Can such a thing be? It can't be.<sup>a</sup>

With a potential, as with a desiderative (p. 176, middle), the word which is the object in English may take *ga* instead of *wo*.<sup>b</sup>

Besides the passive and the potential uses of the longer forms in (a) *reru* there is an honorific use; e. g., *shinareru* for *shinuru*, *kinzerareru* for *kinsuru*, *korareru* for *kuru*, *nasaru* for *nasu*, *kudasaru* for *kudasu*, *irassharu* for *iru*, *kuru*, or *yuku*, etc. The last is from *iraserareru*, the honorific form of the causative of *iru*, the causative also having had an honorific use. These honorific forms differ from the corresponding simple verbs only in being used of the acts of exalted personages or of those whom one wishes to honor.

## Vocabulary

*koshi* loins.

*kurai* rank, title, throne.

*kurai ni tsuku* (*noboru*) ascend  
the throne.

*moya* fog.<sup>c</sup>

*nazo* riddle.

*nazo wo kakeru* propound a  
riddle.

a It would be useless to attempt to decide in every case whether the subject of the verb is the person or the thing. The Japanese themselves do not think of such a distinction, especially when the verb is in the attributive position. *Kono hōchō wa oku kiveru*. This kitchen-knife cuts well. *Kono fude wa zuibun kakeru*. This writing-brush does quite well. *Kanari yomeru hon desu*. It is quite a readable book. *Aō iu sakana de mo ryōri no shiyō ni yotte wa nakanaka kumasu*. Even such fish can be eaten if properly cooked (lit. depending on the cooking).

b Note that while one may say: *Tabako ga nomaremasen*. "I can't smoke tobacco," this phrase can never mean: "Tobacco is not smoked." Compare: *Yona ga sakana ni nomaremashita*. Jonah was swallowed by a fish.

c We may say *kiri ga furu* a mist falls, but with *moya* we may not use *furu*,—only *kakaru*. Haze, such as appears in the spring, is *kasumi*. A fog on the sea is in Hokkaidō called *gasu* (Eng. "gas").

<i>warabi</i> fern, brake.	<i>chō-ren</i> drill.
<i>se, se-naka, sena</i> back.	<i>chō rem-ba</i> } parade ground.
<i>shini-me</i> the moment of death.	<i>rem-peī-jō</i> }
<i>te-gata</i> certificate, passport, check. <sup>a</sup>	<i>ji-chi-sei</i> self-government.
<i>tō</i> flower stalk (of a vegetable).	<i>de-iri no daiku</i> the carpenter usually employed about the house. <sup>c</sup>
<i>tō ga tatsu</i> go to seed.	<i>yondokoronai</i> unavoidable, necessary. <sup>d</sup>
<i>chi-hō</i> locality, province.	<i>kaku</i> (c) every, all.
<i>chi-ji</i> governor.	<i>kwa-bin na</i> too keen, nervous.
<i>fū-sen</i> }	<i>mōkeru</i> establish, make, gain, acquire.
<i>kei-ki-kyū</i> } balloon.	<i>motsureru</i> be tangled, confused.
<i>go-bō</i> burdock.	<i>suru</i> rub, polish.
<i>hō-chō</i> kitchen knife.	<i>sureru</i> be rubbed, worn.
<i>hō-ken</i> feudalism.	<i>sumu</i> be clear, distinct.
<i>jō-shin</i> report to a superior ( <i>jō=ue, shin=mōsu</i> ).	<i>nimi wo sumashite kiku</i> listen intently.
<i>ke-byō</i> feigned sickness.	<i>sashi-komu</i> penetrate into, enter (of light).
<i>kwa-hei</i> coin, specie. <sup>b</sup>	<i>tori-kiru</i> take all, exhaust the supply of. <sup>e</sup>
<i>kyō-sō</i> competition.	<i>bachi ga ataru</i> suffer punishment (lit. punishment strikes).
<i>niku-gan</i> the naked eye.	<i>kasuka ni</i> faintly, dimly.
<i>ron-seitsu, ron-bun</i> essay, article.	<i>raku ni</i> easily, happily.
<i>seki-sho</i> barrier (p. 77d).	
<i>shin-kei</i> nerves.	
<i>tep-pū</i> gun.	
<i>u-ten</i> rainy weather.	
<i>sap-pō</i> miscellaneous news.	

## 8

## Exercises

*Ano hito wa kebyō wo ts'kattara, bachi ga attate hontō ni okirarenaku narimashta. Anata wa kono shimbun wo raku ni*

<sup>a</sup> The modern technical word for "passport" is *ryokō-menjō* or simply *ryo ken*.

<sup>b</sup> Paper money is *shi-hei*, from *shi=kami*. Compare *kin-kwa* gold coin, *gin-kwa* silver coin, *dō-kwa* copper coin.

<sup>c</sup> From *deru* go out and *iru* come in. Compare *deiri no isha* family physician.

<sup>d</sup> *Yondokoro* is derived from *yori-dokoro*, that on which one can rely, resource.

<sup>e</sup> The compound verbs will be treated in Ch. LXVI.—LXIX.

yomemashō. Zappō wa yomemas' keredomo, rousets' wa yomenasen. Mō ronsetsu mo yomeru yo ni narimash'ta. Chōremba ye itte mo hito ga ōkute nani mo miemas'mai. Meinaī koto wa arimas'mai. Fūsen ga dandan tōku natte mō nikugan de wa miemasen. Yakamash'kute kikoemasen. Shinkei ga kwabin ni natte neraremasen. Sake wa yameraremas'ga, tabako wa yameraremasen. Koko ni warabi ga tak'san arimas': ikura totte mo torikiremasen. Tak'san chōdai itashimash'ta; mō itadakaremasen. Deiri no daiku no uchi ye itte sugu ni korarenai ka kiite kite kure. Danna sama, tadaima kaette mairimash'ta; daiku wa yondokoronai yō ga atte sassoku wa mairemasen to mōshimash'ta. Ano hito no yamai wa mō naorimas'mai ka. Dōmo, ukeawaremasen. Se ni hara wa kaerarenu (Proverb). Kyō wa kaze ga kawatte toki no kane ga kikoemasen.<sup>a</sup> Sore wa iwazu to mo shireta koto des'. Kakken no<sup>b</sup> chiiji wa mina sono chihō ni jichisei ga okonawaremas' ka, okonawaremasen ka wo<sup>c</sup> torishirabete naimu-daijin ni jōshin shinakereba narimasen desh'ta. Warui nazo to kakete nan to toku. Motsureta kami to toku; kokoro wa, toku ni tokarenu.<sup>d</sup> Anata go ga utemas' ka. S'koshi wa utemas'. Kyōkō to iu Shinajin wa taisō bimbō sh'ite itte mo hidoku benkyō shimash'ta; abura ga kaenakatta kara, kabe ni ana wo akete ts'ki no akari wo sashikomasete hon wo yomimash'ta. Sensei ni shitsumon itashimash'ta ga, sensei ni mo wakarimasen to mōsaremas'h'ta. Go no s'ki na hito wa oya no shinime ni awarenai. Sō mo ienai koto wa nai keredomo, metta ni iimasen. Shina no gakumon wa taisō komiita mono de

a There are such bells in Buddhist temples. Comp. p. 198, top.

b *Kakken*, for *kaku-ken* all the prefectures, or rather every prefecture. The collective "all" is rather *sho*. Comp. *kakkoku* every country, every province, *kakkyōkwaī* every church.

c The particle *wo* after *ka* makes the question dependent on *torishirabete*.

d In solving an English conundrum we usually have to explain why two given things are similar, i. e., may be described by means of the same words. In a Japanese conundrum only one of the two things is named and the other must be found. The question here is: "What is like a poor conundrum?" The answer is: "Tangled hair." *Kōkoro* means "sense," "explanation." It is quite usual to prefix to a negative potential verb the indicative of the same verb with *ni*. Literally *toku ni tokarenu* may be rendered: "in explaining you can't explain," or "when you try to explain (untangle), you can't explain (untangle)."

*Seiyōjin ni wa koshi no magari made<sup>a</sup> naratte mo totemo oboeremasen. Sono nedan de wa uraremasen. Teppō no oto ga kikoemas' ; nan deskō. Ima kane ga natte imas' ka. Mimi wo sumashi'te kiku to, kas'ka ni kikoemas'. Konaida wa sō iemasen to iimash'ta ga, yoku shirabete mimash'tara, yahari sō mo iemas'. Ano yama wo haraisagetara, zuibun mōkari-mashō.<sup>b</sup> Warawazu ni wa oraremasen. Ki no shirenu hito des'.*

You can't use *hashi (wa)* until you become accustomed [to them]. Europeans (*ni wa*) can't sit like (*yō ni*) Japanese. As I have written too much, my hand is so painful that it has now become impossible to write (p. 101, 2). The letters are worn so that one can't read them. I can't cut well with this knife. The Ōigawa is so swift that one can't cross it by boat. When (*toki ni wa*) the weather is fine (*harete oru*), the smoke of the volcano of Ōshima can be seen even from (*kara de mo*) Enoshima. He got so drunk last night that he couldn't walk. It was so foggy (p. 124 top) that Fuji could not be seen from the ship. This burdock has gone to seed and become inedible. He said (*itte oku*) that as he was busy he would probably not be able to come. The former German Emperor (*Doits' no sen-tei*) died<sup>c</sup> immediately after (*to*) he ascended the throne. In the feudal age there were barriers at various places (*achikochi*) on (of) the highways (*kaidō-suji*), so that without (p. 98b) a passport one could not go through (*tōru*). Really, I can't believe that (*wa*). The inscription (letters) on this coin (*wa*) is worn off so that it is illegible. Until now people thought (were thinking) that that mountain was inaccessible (a place that one can't ascend). I can't buy at (*de wa*) that price. I could not start on account of (*de*) the rainy weather. Come down on the price a little more. Really, I can't come down. As it is dreadfully smoky (smoke rises dreadfully), we can't stay (*iru*) here. In this neighborhood I can't make much

a Until a man's back is bent, i. e., until one becomes an aged man.

b The verb *harai-sageru* is used of sales of government property; *yama* may denote a forest or a mine. *Mōkaru* is like the intransitive verbs described in the previous chapter; it may be construed either as a passive or as a potential.

c Use the honorific form of *shinuru* or *nakumaru*. One may also say *o kakure ni naru* (p. 77a) or *go hō-gyo ni naru*. The latter expression is properly applicable only to a Japanese Emperor.

[money], as there are many people in (of) the same business and competition is severe (*hageshii*). The (sound of the) bells of Shiba can be heard faintly. At (*wa*) this hotel both Fuji and the sea can be seen, so that the scenery is fine. Even though you go, cannot guarantee that you will surely be employed by the Japanese Government. When (subord. *wa*) I am spoken to in that manner, I can't keep silent.

## CHAPTER LXIV

This chapter will treat of certain peculiar idiomatic uses of the indicative forms of verbs. <sup>a</sup>

1. A verb, like an adjective, may be made a substantive by adding *no*. A substantivized verb may have either a concrete or an abstract sense.

In the former case the *no* is equivalent to *mono* or *koto*. <sup>b</sup> Such particles as *wa*, *ga*, *ni*, *wo*, *mo*, *de* may be added : <sup>c</sup>

*Sashidasu no wo te ni totte mimashita.*

I took into my hands what was presented and examined it.

*Sakujiitsu itta no wa machigai deshita.*

What I said yesterday was a mistake.

Observe the idiom *to iu no wa* (or *ga*, etc.) "what is called," "the expression," "the assertion that." <sup>d</sup>

*Ainu to iu no wa Ezo no dojin no koto desu.*

The Ainu are the aborigines of Ezo.

*Konna shigoto de kane wo mōkeyō to iu no wa okashii ja arimasen ka.* Isn't it ridiculous to talk about making money in such a business?

A substantivized verb usually has an abstract sense, denoting merely the idea of the action or state expressed by the verb. The *no desu*, ordinarily contracted to *n' desu*, which occurs so

a Re-read the introductions to chapters XIX. and XXXVII.

b In such expressions as *Mi'a koto ga arimasen*. I have not seen it, *no* may not be substituted for *koto*. *Mita no ga arimasen* would mean "There is no one that has seen it."

c In the literary style these particles may be added immediately to the verb. See the second sentence in the Japanese exercises.

d In defining a word or explaining a phrase *to iu no wa* is often contracted to *to wa*, but this has rather a literary flavor.

often at the conclusion of a sentence is in many instances a mere flourish. But *no desu* may also add something to the sense. Thus while *Ame ga furimashō*, *furu deshō*, and *furu n' deshō* do not differ appreciably, the expression *furu no deshō* plainly implies that the statement is meant to be an explanation of a given condition of things, as, for example, of an oppressive atmosphere. Note also :

*Kiku n'datta ni ; oshii koto wo shita.*

I should have heard it ; it's too bad that I missed it.

*Amerika ye iku n'desu.* He is to go to America

*Amerika ye iku n'deshita.* He was to go to America.

*Ano toki ni byōki de nakereba, watakushi mo itta n'desu.*

At that time, if I had not been sick, I should have gone too.

Here *itta n'desh'ta* would indicate still more strongly that it had been definitely decided to go. But *itta n' desu* may also be a mere circumlocution for *itta* he has gone.

One may even hear such expressions as :

*Sō iu n'ja nai n'da.* It isn't so. It is a mistake. <sup>a</sup>

*Hoka ni shiyō ga nai n' ja arumai ja nai ka.*

There is no other way, don't you see.

In familiar talk, especially among women, *no* may be used elliptically for *no desu* or *no desu ka*, the accent showing whether the sentence is an assertion, a question or an exclamation :

*Kasa ga aru no.* Have you an umbrella ?

*Aru no (yo).* I have.

After an indicative *no ni* may have an adversative sense (pp. 149 and 193f). But *no ni* may also have other meanings, as in the following examples :

*Kōbe ye iku no ni (wa), ōyoso ichi jikan hodo kakarimasu.*  
It takes about one hour to go to Kobe.

*Naze to iu no ni, me ga warukute ji ga yomenai kara desu.*  
The reason is that my eyes are so bad that I cannot read.

*Watakushi ga (or no) omoimasu no ni (wa), go shatei san no hō ga o warui yō desu.* In my opinion your younger brother seems to be in the wrong.

<sup>a</sup> Taking *sō iu* in the sense of "such," this sentence may also be rendered : They are not of that kind. Compare : *Sō iu (yō na) no ga dō.* There are many such. *Sō iu n'ja nai (yo)* may also mean : You must not say so. The writer once heard a man scold a coolie like this : *Kōsama sō iu koto wo iu mon'ja nai ja nai ka.* Don't you know that it is unbecoming for you to talk like that ?

*Sensei no iu no ni (wa), Doitsu ni mo tsuru ga oru to iu koto desu.* According to what my teacher says, there are storks in Germany also.

In these examples *no* may be omitted.

2. In certain connections verbs may take *wa, ga, etc.*, without *koto, mono, or no*. In *Aru koto wa arimasu* the *koto* may be omitted.<sup>a</sup>

*Motte kuru ga ii.* You had better bring [it] (p. 150, bottom).

*Yomu ni (wa) tarimasen.* It is not worth reading.

*Miru ni (wa) oyobimasen.* It is not necessary to look at it.

*Koraeru ni koraerarenu.* One cannot endure it (p. 270d).

*Kakusu ni kakusarenai.* It cannot be hid.

*Iu ni iwarenai kanashimi.* Unutterable sorrow.

*Desu* (rarely *da*) is often added to a predicate verb :

*Sō itte mo wakaru desu.* Such an expression is understood.

In the same way *ja nai ka* or *de wa gozaimasen ka* (p. 191b) may be used. One must not say *Wakatta desu* or *Wakaru deshita*. But there is a growing tendency to use expressions like the former ; e. g., *Sō itta desu*. *Deshita* is regularly used with the negative of the auxiliary *masu* : *Sō iimasen deshita*.

The student will note that some of the expressions given above are rather slangy. They are quoted for study, not for imitation.

## Vocabulary

*haji* shame.

*sono* garden.

*miya-ko* capital, metropolis.<sup>b</sup>

*son* loss (p. 85a).

*ai-sō* hospitality, entertainment.

*is-shō* one's whole life.<sup>c</sup>

*it-tan* one instance, once (p. 70a).

*ku-betsu* distinction, difference, classification.

*setsu-mei* explanation.

*shū-ji* (*shū*=*narau*) penmanship.

*kyū-kō* going in haste (*kō*=*yuku*).

*res-sha* train (on a railway).

*kyūkō-ressha* express train.

a Here if *no* be substituted for *koto* the sense is changed to : There are some that have [them]. *Saishi no aru bōsu mo arimasu ka.* Are there also priests who have families? *Aru no wa arimasu ga, amari tattobaremasen.* There are some that have, but they are not very highly respected.

b The *ko* is an old word denoting place. Compare the final syllable in *koko, doko, etc.*

c For *isshō* compare *isshō-kemmei* (p. 71d).

<i>iwayuru</i> so called (classical for <i>iwareru</i> ).	<i>asa-ne wo suru</i> sleep late in the morning.
<i>aratamaru</i> be altered, amended (tr. <i>aratameru</i> ).	— <i>ni kansuru</i> be moved or affected by.
<i>kotaeru</i> answer.	— <i>ni kan-shin</i> (or <i>kam-puku</i> )
<i>de-au</i> meet on the way.	<i>suru</i> feel admiration for.
<i>kaki-kaeru</i> rewrite.	<i>kanshin</i> ( <i>kämpuku</i> ) <i>desu</i> is
— <i>ni sumi-nareru</i> by long residence become accustomed	admirable, wonderful.
to, come to feel at home in.	<i>ō-yō suru</i> put into practice,
<i>oi-kakeru</i> pursue.	apply, adapt.

### Exercises

*Kanji wa narau no ni wa mitsukashi kute sugu wasurete shimaimas'. Tou wa ittan no haji, towanu wa isskō no haji.*<sup>a</sup> *Aru hito no mōshimas' ni wa, goku mukashi wa Ezojin ga Nihon zenkoku ni sunde ita to iu koto des' ga, hontō de gozaimashō ka.*<sup>b</sup> *Sore wa hontō de gozaimashō; Nihon no rek'shi ni mo kaite arimas' kara. Shiroi kiji ga aru to iu no wa hontō des' ka. Sayō sa, hontō des' ka, dō des' ka, wakarimasen, shikashi mukashi tenshi ni shiroi kiji wo kenjita hito ga itta to rek'shi ni kaite arimas'. Hon wa chirakash'te oku no wa gak'sha no kuse des'. Sakujitsu itta no wa machigai desh'ta kara, konnichi naoshimashō. Yūbe Ōkuma san ni deaimash'ta no wa doko desh'takke.*<sup>c</sup> *Kono dekimono wo kirazu ni utchatte oku to, naoru no ga nagabikimas'. Anata no tokiakash'te kudasa'imash'ta no wa mada yoku wakarimasen karu, mō ichi*

a Another form of this proverb: *Kiku wa ittoki no haji, shiranu wa matsu-dai no haji* (*matsu* end, *dai* generation).

b Or: *Aru hito no hanashi ni wa*. Observe that while the words—*no iu ni wa*, etc., at the beginning of a quotation seem to correspond to the English “—say that,” a verb of saying or an expression like *to iu koto desu* is required to complete the sentence. Comp. p. 224b.

c This *takke* is a remnant of the classical *tarikeri*, an emphatic past termination. *Ano kojiki wa kinō mo kite imashitakke*. That beggar was around here yesterday too. The so called past tense of a Japanese verb is not always definitely past (p. 143, 5, 2); but the addition of *kke* helps to recall vividly a situation in the past. It is used only in familiar conversation. In a question *kke* indicates a conviction that the event occurred even though there is doubt about the exact circumstances. *Kā* may be added before *shiran*: *Are wa mitā koto no aru yō na hito desu ga, doko de mimashitakke ka shiran*. He seems like a person that I have seen before, but where was it that I saw him?



do oshiete itadakiō gozaimas'. Aratamatta toki ni (aratamareba) sō iu n'des'.<sup>a</sup> YE no kawari ni NI wo ts'kau no wa machigai da to itte mo hito ga ts'kau kara, sh'kata ga nai. Watakushi wa asune wo suru no ga s'ki des'. "Sumeba miyako" to iu no wa dō iu imi des'ka. Sayō, suminareta tokoro ga ichiban iu to iu imi des'. Kyūkōressha de Ōsaka ye iku ni wa hanjikan hodo kakarimas'. Go zonji (ga) nai no des'ka.<sup>b</sup> Watakushi wa shijū isogashū gozaimash'te tadaima ni sampun no hima wo mite<sup>c</sup> chot'ō o tazune mōsh'ta tokoro de gozaimas'. Sekkaku o tazune kudas'tta no ni, nan no o aisō mo gozaimasende makoto ni shitsurei de gozaimash'ta. Ā, o isha sama wa o rusu de atta ka. Sorya sekkaku itte kureta no ni kinodoku de atta ne.<sup>d</sup> Bis'mar'k' ko no kao wa e ni kaku no ni tsugō no ii kao des'. Yasumono wo kau no wa kaette son des'.<sup>e</sup> Do:ts' kara Nihon ye riku de iku ni wa dō iu fū ni ittara yō gozaimashō. Sensei, "sono" to iu no to, "niwa" to iu no to dō iu yō ni chigaimas' ka.<sup>f</sup> Amari tabako no nomu no de byōki ni narimash'ta. Amari tōku made aruita no de taisō kutabire mash'ta. Anata ga hayaku Nihongo wo oboe nas'tta no wa kanshin des'. Dorobō no nigeru no wo oikakemash'ta.<sup>h</sup>

My son is too young (still a little small) to (*ni wa*) send (*yarū*) to school. It is healthy (becomes medicine of the body) to (*no wa*) bathe in cold water. Even though a foreigner speaks incorrectly (uses mistaken words), it is impolite to laugh. My

a In this sentence *aratamatta toki ni* means: when one is serious and formal, i. e., not familiar.

b Notice that when a positive sentence ending in *de*, *desu*, etc., is turned into a negative, *de* may be dispensed with: *O wakari ga nakatta kara* since you did not understand (positive: *o wakari deshita*). *Dekisō mo nai*. It does not seem practicable (positive: *dekiō desu*). *Ikaresō mo nai*. It is not likely that I (or he) will be able to go. *Mitō mo nai* (for *mitaku mo nai*, contracted also to *mittononai*). It's disgusting (lit. I don't want to see). *Shinitononai*. I don't want to die.

c *Hima wo mite* is for *hima no aru no wo mite*.

d Said by a man to his servant. *Sorya*=sore wa.

e *Yasui mono* things bought at a low price. *Yasu-mono* cheap stuff. There is a proverb: *Yasu-mono-kai no zeni-ushinai* (*ushinai* lose). For *son desu* one often says *son ga ikimasu*.

f "What is the difference between *sono* and *niwa*?" The latter word is more common in the colloquial.

g This adverb is used like a substantive.

h In English we say the fleeing robber, not the fleeing of the robber.

tooth aches very much, but I dislike (*iya des'*) to have it extracted. Is this your first visit to Kyōto (is your coming to K. *kajimete*)? To explain this minutely would take (takes) considerable time. To correct this is the same thing as to re-write [it] entirely. I don't go to Japanese houses (houses of Japanese) very much because it is such a bother to take off (*nugu*) my shoes. In my opinion it will be very difficult to adapt *Rōmaji* to the Japanese language.<sup>a</sup> Is it true that (*to iu no wa*) there were [once] so-called *jindai-moji*?<sup>b</sup> What you said yesterday was a mistake (*o machigai*). Did you understand what I said yesterday? Formerly it took about a month to go from Edo to the middle provinces;<sup>c</sup> but now if one goes by steamer, one can do it (go) in (*de*) 2½ days. To learn to write (*kaki-kata*) Chinese characters, how had I better begin (if in what manner I have begun will it be good)? It will be well to engage a teacher of penmanship and learn to write (*kaku no wo*) large characters with a writing-brush. What is written in this book is almost all false (lies). For a congratulatory gift it is usual to send raw fish, but since raw fish spoils easily (*waruku nariyasui*) many send other things. What is the difference between *wa* and *ga* (What they call *wa* and what they call *ga*, what sort of distinction is there)? It is easy to ask [questions], but difficult to answer [them].<sup>d</sup>

## CHAPTER LXV

The uses of the stems of verbs with auxiliaries have been explained in previous chapters. Some other idiomatic uses of stems will now be described.

1. Many substantives are originally stems of verbs; e. g., *samurai*, from *samurau* serve, *tōri* thoroughfare. from *tōru* pass through. Comp. pp. 22, top and 119, bottom. *Deki ga warui*.

a A sentence beginning with—*no omou ni wa* or—*no kangae de wa* ends with an expression like *yō desu*.

b Characters, not Chinese, said to have been used in prehistoric times—in "the age of the gods" (*jin* god, *dai* age).

c The middle provinces (*chū-goku*) are the eight westernmost provinces of the main island.

d In the literary language: *Tou wa yasuku, kotayuru wa katashi*.

It is poorly done. Stems of verbs, as substantives, often take the place of English verbs, especially in formal conversation :

*O tanomi no hon* the book for which you asked (p. 193a).

*Ōse no tōri* as you say (p. 209a).

*Go zōji no tōri* as you know.

*Go zōji de wa* (or *ga*) *arimasen ka*.

Don't you know about it?

*Go zōji no hazu desu*. You ought to know.

*Oide no jibun ni* when you (he) were here (were there, came, went, come, go).

*Oide wo negaimasu*. I beg you to come.

*Mō o kaeri desu ka*. Are you going home so soon? <sup>a</sup>

*O wakari deshita ka*. Did you understand?

Stems of verbs often occur elliptically in proverbial expressions; e. g., *Setsunai toki no kamidanomi* praying to the gods in time of distress.

2. In speaking of the actions of others one may use the stem of any simple verb with the honorific *o* and *ni naru* :

*O wakari ni narimashita ka*. Did you understand?

*O me-zame ni narimashita ka*. Are you awake?

*Itsu o tachi ni narimasu ka*. When do you start?

*Seifu de o shirabe ni narimashita*.

The Government has been investigating.

3. With verbs that denote an act done in order that a certain purpose may be accomplished,—such verbs as “go” “come” “send,” etc.,—the purpose may be expressed by the stem of a verb with *ni*.<sup>b</sup> This may have an object. It is to be translated by means of the infinitive :

*Isha wo yobi ni iku* go to call a physician.

*Sumō wo mi ni iku* go to see the wrestling.

*O kuyami ni agaru* come to condole.

*O yorokobi ni agaru* come to congratulate.

4. When a verb stands in antithesis to another or is to be

<sup>a</sup> A riksha-man when he has brought some one home shouts at the gate: *O kaerū*. One in the house may then say to another: *O kaeri desu (yo)*. The one who has come home is greeted with the words: *O kaeri nasaimashi*.

<sup>b</sup> With Chinese compounds the stem of *suru* is not required. “To come to see the sights” is *kembutsu ni kuru*, more commonly than *kembutsu shi ni kuru*.

emphasized, the stem may be used with *wa* (in rapid speech *ya*) and *suru* (p. 249a) :

- Shini wa shimasumai.* He will not die.  
*Wakari wa shimasu ga ...* I understand, but ....  
*Sonna shina wa arya* (for *ari wa*) *shinai.*  
 There are no such things.

In a conditional clause, as in "If you just understand that's enough," the particle *sae*<sup>a</sup> may be substituted for *wa*: *Wakari sae sureba ii.* *Ari sae sureba sashiagemasu ga ...* I would give it if I had it, but .... Similarly the stem may be used in clauses translated by means of "both—and," "neither—nor":

*Nihon no ji wo yome mo suru shi*<sup>b</sup> *kake mo shimasu.*

He can both read and write Japanese.

*Gozen mo taberaremasen shi, nerare mo shimasen.*

I can neither eat nor sleep.

*Ano byōnin wa nomi mo kui mo shinai kara, shinimashō.*

That patient will die, since he neither eats nor drinks.

5. Observe the following emphatic expressions :

*O kaeri nasaru no wo machi ni matte imashita.*

We were waiting and waiting for his return.

*Korae ni koraete kurushii no wo gaman shite otta.*

I have borne the suffering to the utmost limit of endurance.

*Soroi mo scrotte fushigi na hitotachi bakari da.*

They are queer people without exception.

6. The stem of a verb may be joined to certain words, such as *nagara*<sup>c</sup> or *shi-dai* (lit. succession-order), which are used like conjunctions to form adverbial phrases :

*Hon wo yomi nagara* while reading a book.

*Habakari nagara* (or *desu ga*), *kore wo negaimasu.*

With great diffidence I make this request.

a *Sae* may also be used with other substantives: *Kane sae areba, donna koto de mo dekiru.* You can do anything, if only you have money.

b For *suru shi* the simple stem *shi* may stand here (comp. p. 14d). *Yome* and *kake* are stems of potentials.

c See p. 197c. This *nagara* is also used with the negative stem in *su*: *Oyobanau nagara o tetsudai itashimashō.* I will assist to the best of my poor ability (lit. though not reaching). The word *nagara* originally meant "actual condition," as in *umare-nagara no mekura* one born blind.

*Deki shidai motte kimashō.*

I will bring it as soon as it is done.

The idiom —*to wa ii nagara* is equivalent to “though”:

*Ainu wa yabanjin to wa ii nagara nakanaka shigoto ga takumi desu.*

The Ainu, though barbarians, are skilful workmen.

7. Adjectives are formed by adding *sō* to the stem of a verb:

*Mō ame ga yamisō desu.* The rain seems to be stopping.

*Nan to ka shiyō ga arisō na mon' desu.*

I hope it may be managed somehow (p. 115, middle).

8. In long sentences, especially in formal speech or in narratives, the stem may take the place of the subordinative (p. 187d). This feature is derived from the literary language, in which the verbs of cōordinated clauses, with the exception of the concluding clause, are in the form of the stem. In negative clauses the form in *zu* corresponds to the stem (p. 171).

Observe the idioms —*wo hajime* and —*to ii*:

*Kōchō wo hajime shosei made mo kimashita.* The whole school, from the principal down to the students, came.

*Kotoba-zukai to ii, mi-buri to ii, kettan no nai enzetsuka da.* Both in his use of words and in his gestures he is a faultless orator.

## Vocabulary

*tsue* cane.

*hama* seacoast, beach.

*kuri* chestnut.

*hama-guri* clam.

*de-guchi* way out, exit.

*iri-kuchi* entrance.

*hiki-shio* } ebb tide.

*shio-hi* }

*michi-shio* } flood tide.

*sashi-shio* }

*age-shio* }

*shio no sashi-hiki* ebb and flow of the tide.

*na-fuda*

*te-juda*

*mei-shi(c)*

*gei* accomplishment, entertaining performance.

*kam-bun* Chinese composition, Chinese literature.

*ryo-hi* travelling expenses.

*ten-ka* (lit. under heaven) the whole country, Japan.

*ji-sen* charity, benevolence.

*ji-sen-shi* bazaar (*shi* = *ichi*, market).

} visiting card.

*tei-koku* empire.

*zu-e* pictures. <sup>a</sup>

*shi-dai* order, circumstances,  
reason. <sup>b</sup>

*hayasu* allow—to grow long  
(intr. *kaeru*).

*kimaru* become settled, cer-  
tain (tr. *kimeru*).

*suzumu* cool one's self off.

*ji-san suru* bring, take (p.  
231b).

*shuttai suru* (from *shutsu-  
rai*=*dekiru*) be finished,  
be done, happen.

*mi-ataru* be found.

*chanto* precisely, properly,  
just, right.

*shibaraku* for some time.

*sahodo* so much.

*sazo* how—you must (with  
probable form).

*sen-toku* a little while ago.

## Exercises

*O kasa wo o mochi ni narimash'ta ka (o mochi de gozaimas' ka). Iie, jisan itashimaseu desh'ta ; watakushi no agarimasuru jibun ni wa<sup>c</sup> o tenki ga taisō yoroshū gozaimash'ta no de. Nihon de wa akindo ga sakana ya yasai wo hito no uchi ye uri ni kimas'. Watakushi no itta koto ga o wakari ni narimas' ka. Wakari wa shimas' keredomo, kotoba-zukai ga s'koshi oka-shū gozaimas'. Ano byōnin wa shinimashō ka. Shini wa (ya) shimas'mai keredomo, sukkari naoru na wa mutsukashū gozaimashō. Kimono ga deki shidai<sup>d</sup> motte kuru yō ni sh'tateyu ni itte koi. Anata kono atsusa de o yowari deshō. Nāni,<sup>e</sup> sahodo de mo arimasen. Anata ichi nichi o aruki nas'tta kara, sazo o kutabire deshō. Iie, watakushi wa aruki-narete imas' kara, kutabiremasen. Kinō mōshiageyō to omoimash'ta ga, oide ga nakatta kara, tegami ni (p. 56c) kaite agemash'ta. O tano mi na Edo-meisho-zue<sup>f</sup> wo konnichi jisan itashimash'ta. Watakushi wa chotto tonari no uchi ye hanashi ni iku kara, watakushi no matte iru tegami ga todoitara, sugu ni motte kite kure. Hōrits' wo okashi sae shinakereba, donna koto wo sh'te*

a Comp. p. 95d. The word *zue* is used only in compounds. Reversing the order, we have *e-zu*, which may mean a single drawing, map or picture.

b *Shidai desu (de gozaimasu)* is often used as a formal ending to a sentence, without adding anything to the sense. But compare: *Omae wa tōdō kaette kita to iu shidai ka.* So! have you come back at last?

c Translate when I came (p. 121c). The auxiliary *masu* may be lengthened in formal conversation.

d *Shidai* is used in the sense of "as soon as" only in speaking of the future.

e *Nāni*, from *nani* what, may be rendered: "Oh, no!"

f Illustrated guide to noted places in *Edo*.

mo ii to omou hito ga arimas'ga, nakanaka sō wa ikemas'mai. Kesa ni do korareta o kata ga senkoku karu o machikane de gozaimas'. O wakari ni narimash'tara, watakushi ni mo itte kikasete kudasai. Anata sakki kara o machikane de gozaimashō. Oyaji wa watakushi ni hayaku Nihon ye kaette moraitagatte, mō ryōhi wo okutte kuremash'ta; ryōhi ga tsuki shidai kaette kure to iu tegami mo yokoshimash'ta. Ichi mon oshimi no hyaku shirazu.<sup>a</sup> Rongo yomi no Rongo shirazu.<sup>b</sup> Rikugun no koto wo torishirabe ni Yōroppa ye ikimash'ta. Kyō no kidaore, Ōsaka no kuidaore.<sup>c</sup> Anata mō o hikkoshi ni narimash'ta ka. Iie, mada des'; shikashi tsugō no ii ie ga miatari shidai hikkosō to omoimas'. Anata mo go sonji no Tanaka san ga mairimash'ta. Douata ka oide no yō da; dare ka hayaku toritsugi wo shiro. Gwaikoku no kata ga kono nasuda wo o dashi ni natte sugu ni o kaeri ni narimash'ta. Sazo o kutabire de gozaimashō kara, go yururi to o yasumi nasaimashi. Nana korobi ya oki.<sup>d</sup> Anata sakuban okaeri ni natte kara sugu ni o yasumi ni narimash'ta ka. Iie, shimbun wo mite kara nemash'ta. Sonna ni yoku kakanak'te mo, wakari sae sureba ii. Shōgwatsu ni wa manzai wo zash'ki ni agete<sup>e</sup> iroiro na gei wo sasete tak'san zeni wo yarimas'. O wakari ga nai nara, mō ichi do tokiakash'te agemashō. Yu ga waki shidai hairimashō. Ke wo hayash'te iru bōzu<sup>f</sup> mo ari, hayash'te inai no mo aru. Sazo o komari de gozaimashō.

In Tōkyō, when the tide is out (at the time of ebb tide), people often go to Susaki & to gather (*hirou*) clams. To-mor-

a Compare the English: Penny wise, pound foolish. *Oshimi*, as also *yomi* in the following proverb, has a concrete sense=*oshimu hito*.

b The sense is: He reads the *Rongo* diligently, but does not understand nor observe its precepts.

c According to this proverb, the people of Kyōto waste their money on fashions; those of Ōsaka, on dainties (*kiru* wear, *kuu* eat, *taoreru* fall).

d This proverb inculcates perseverance in spite of repeated failures. *Nana* and *ya* are numerals.

e *Zashiki ni ageru* have—come into the house.

f It would, of course, be rude to use this word in the presence of a priest. Say *bōsan*.

g On the shore of Tōkyō Bay in Fukagawa. There is here a famous temple of Benten, goddess of luck.

row, if it is (has become) fine weather (p. 34a), I will go fishing. In (*wa*) summer I went every day to the Sumida River for a swim. As you know, formerly the Emperor entrusted the government of the whole country to the *shōgun*. Shan't we go to Ekōin<sup>a</sup> to see the wrestling? Are you going to buy things, or are you only going to tease (p. 202a)? We will go to the Sumida River to cool ourselves off. Many students, instead of attending (without hearing) the lectures, go to amuse themselves. Did you have a cane? Yes, I left (put) it at the entrance of the *genkwan*. Is it raining? It is not raining, but it is foggy. Go to the shoemaker's and tell him to bring the shoes as soon as they are done. You have worked the whole day without resting; how tired you must be! On account of (*ni*) the earthquake (of) last night I awoke (*me wa samemash'ta*), but I did not get up. We will decide (deciding put) just when you will come (pres.) next time. I have brought the *Nihongi*<sup>b</sup> for which you asked, but as it is written in Chinese style (a Chinese composition), you will hardly understand it. Come again for a chat (*hanashi*). Did no company (guest) come during (*no ma ni*) my absence? Yes, one student came. When I said (past cond.) that you would come immediately, he waited (was waiting) for a short time, but, as you did not return (there was no returning), being unable to wait (p. 217e) he went away (returning finished). Where are you moving? I don't know yet. I am now looking for (*sagash'te iru tokoro des'ta*) a house. Was the Imperial (Empire) Hotel finished (*mō shuttai sh'te imash'ta ka*) before you left Tōkyō? They opened a bazaar there recently. Are you going out just now? Sir, will you (do you) stop at this hotel? It seems dirty here (*koko wa*). There may be a better one if we go to the next town. At first (*hajime wa*) I disliked (p. 91e) *sake*, but gradually came to like it (*suki ni naru*). You mustn't laugh. I am not laughing, but I think it queer (*hen ni*). You mustn't think about other things while you are reading

a A famous temple in Honjō, Tōkyō, where great exhibitions of wrestling are held in January and in May of each year.

b The *Nihongi* (*ki* record) is an old historical work dating from the VIII. Century.



a book. Have you given up the study of German? I have not given (do not give) it up, but I haven't very much time to study. You ought to know that.

## CHAPTER LXVI

Compound verbs (*kumi tate-dōshi*) are very numerous. Some are derived from a noun and a verb.

*egaku* draw, from *e* picture, *kaku* write.

*katasukeru* lay aside, from *kata* side, *tsukeru* affix, put.

*motozuku* be based on, from *moto* base.

*namidagumu* be moved to tears, from *namida* tears, *fukumu* contain.

*negiru* beat down the price, from *ne* price, *kiru* cut.

*toshiyoru* or *toshitoru* become aged, from *toshi* year, *yoru* gather, *toru* take.

Others are derived from an adjective and a verb :

*nagabiku* be protracted, from *nagai* long, *hiku* draw.

*tōsakeru* keep at a distance, withdraw from, from *tōi* far, *sakeru* avoid (also —*ni tōsakeru*).

*atsusugiru* be too hot (p. 106).

*amanzuru*, *amanjiru* relish, be satisfied, from *amai* sweet.

With the last compare *omonzuru* and *karonzuru*, p. 215.

The suffix *garu* is much used to form compounds with the stems of adjectives and desideratives :

*hoshigaru* desire (p. 152a). *omoshirogaru* feel interested in.

*ikitagaru* want to go (p. 176). *hairitagaru* want to enter.

The verb *buru*<sup>a</sup> "put on airs" enters into some compounds :

*gakushaburu* pose as a scholar.

*takaburu* be arrogant, boast, from *takai* high.

Most numerous are the compounds derived from two verbs. As we have before observed (p. 251a), the Japanese language has no prefixes or prepositions by means of which compound verbs may be formed, as in European languages. Consequently

<sup>a</sup> This *buru* is related to *furi* air, appearance, in *otoko-buri ga yoi*, *onna-buri ga yoi* is handsome. Note also the suffix *baru*, from *haru* stretch, extend: *kowabaru* be stiff, from *kowai* hard, *i-baru* be haughty, *yoku-baru* be avaricious, *gishiki-baru* be excessively formal, etc.

in very many cases one of the two verbs in a compound serves as a kind of auxiliary to the other and in not a few instances is practically meaningless. Accordingly we divide compound verbs, somewhat arbitrarily, into three classes: (a) those in which the components are correlative; (b) those in which the second component serves to modify the sense of the first; and (c) those in which the first modifies the second. One can not always be sure to which class a given compound should be assigned; but the distinction is practically helpful.

A. Usually transitive verbs are joined with transitive, and intransitive with intransitive. But the components often differ and then usage rather than grammar must be consulted in determining the voice (pp. 203a, 239a). ✓

*atehameru* apply, from *ateru* hit, *hameru* fit.

*hipparu* (*hikiharuru*) pull and stretch, bring along.

*iiharuru* insist, from *iu* say, *haruru* stretch.

*kakitoru* note down, write at dictation.

*kamikudaku* crunch, from *kamu* bite, *kudaku* crush.

*ketsumazuku* stumble, from *keru* kick, *tsumazuku* stumble.<sup>a</sup>

*surinuku* rub off, abrade, skin, from *suru* rub, *nuku* peel.

*tsukikorosu* stab (or gore) to death, from *tsuku* pierce.

*ukeau* guarantee, from *ukeru* receive *au* meet.

*ukeou* contract for, from *ou* carry.

In *Kwansei* compounds with *oru* are formed, corresponding to the subordinative with *iru* or *oru* (p. 163): *ikioru* (also pronounced *ikiyoru*) is going (but *itte oru* is gone). This idiom is derived from the literary language.<sup>b</sup>

B. In the second class we include a number of verbs which as suffixes form well defined groups of compounds. In many instances either the intransitive or the transitive form may be used. Thus to "commence to rain" is either *furikakaru* or *furikakeru*; "happen to be on hand" is *ariau* or *ariawaseru*. The following list is not a complete one.

<sup>a</sup> In the literary language the stem of *keru* is *ke*. Comp. *ke-mari* football. In the colloquial *keru* belongs to the second class (Ch. XLVIII.).

<sup>b</sup> Some apparently simple verbs were originally compounds: *dekiru*, from *deru* and *kiru*; *hairu*, from *hau* creep and *iru* enter; *mochiiru*, from *motsu* have and *iru* be.

1. *Ageru, agaru*: (a) "up," i. e., "upward"; (b) "up," i. e., "completely"; (c) a polite termination.

*kuriageru* move up, carry forward, rearrange, from *kuru* reel.  
*kakiageru* finish writing.<sup>a</sup>  
*shiiageru, yariageru* finish.<sup>b</sup>  
*shibariageru* tie up, from *shimageru* look up to.  
*baru* tie.

*nobiageru* stretch one's self up, straighten up.  
*dekiageru* be finished.  
*mōshiiageru* tell.<sup>c</sup>

*tobiageru* fly up, jump up.  
*okiageru* rise up.  
*tsukeageru* "be stuck up."  
*kaiageru* purchase (on the part of the Government).<sup>d</sup>  
*meshiageru* take (food, etc.).

2. *Au, awaseru*: (a) "mutually"; (b) "together"; (c) "happen to."

*tasukeau* help each other (p. 58).  
*ochiau* come together (of rivers or of persons), from *ochiru* fall.

*niramiiau* glare at each other, from *niramu* stare.  
*shiriau* be mutually acquainted.  
*sureau* be rubbed together, chafe, be on bad terms, pass in close proximity.

*toriau* take hold of each other, pay attention.  
*kikiawaseru* gather information, inquire.

*tsukiau* associate, become acquainted.  
*mōshiiawaseru* reach an agreement.

*miawaseru* look at each other (*kao wo*), forego, give up.  
*dekiau* happen to be finished, be ready made.

*deau* meet on the road.  
*ariau, ariawaseru* happen to be on hand.<sup>e</sup>  
*komiau* be crowded together.

These verbs may be used with the postpositions *ni* and *to*. Those into which *awaseru* enters may also take objects with *wo*.

a Compare the older compound *kakageru* hoist, publish, inscribe. The verb *kaku* means also "scratch."

b *Yariageru* cannot be used in the sense "put on a finishing touch." *Yariageru* may also mean "get up in the world."

c Compare *o age mōsu* give.

d The opposite is *urisageru*, used, for instance, of selling postage stamps. Another verb, *haraisageru*, is used of selling property which the Government no longer needs. Comp. p. 184d.

e These compounds usually occur in the form of the adjectives *dekiai na* and *ariai no* or *ariawase no*.

3. *Chigau, chigaeru* : (a) "differently"; (b) "mistakenly."  
*ikichigau* go in opposite directions without meeting.  
*surechigau* pass closely on the road.  
*kikichigau, kikichigaeru* hear incorrectly, mishear.  
*omoichigau, omoichigaeru* misapprehend, misconjecture  
 (— *wo* — to *omoichigau* mistake — for —).
4. *Deru, dasu* or *idasu* : (a) "out," "from"; (b) "suddenly,"  
 "begin to" (*dasu* only).  
*kogideru, kogidasu* row out. *omoidasu* call to mind.  
*fukidasu* blow out, burst out *sagashidasu* search out, look up  
 into laughter. *abaredasu* suddenly become  
*furidasu* shake out, remit, fractious.  
 from *turu* shake, scatter, *iidasu* utter, begin to speak.  
 pay. *nakidasu* begin to cry.  
*nigedasu* escape, run away.
5. *Hateru, hatasu* : "completely," "utterly."  
*akirehateru* be utterly astonished (and disgusted), from  
*akireru* be surprised.  
*korihateru* be taught a good lesson, from *koriru* be warned,  
 punished (comp. *korashimeru* chastise).  
*shinihateru* die out (of a family).  
*yowarihateru* be utterly exhausted, nonplussed.  
*tsukaihatasu* use up.
6. *Iru, ireru* : (a) "in"; (b) a suffix, originally intensive,  
 added to some verbs of feeling (*iru* only).  
*semeiru* enter forcibly, from *osorireru* be much obliged, be  
*semeru* assault. overwhelmed by another's  
*kaiireru* buy in, buy up. condescension (p. 193g).  
*kakiireru* write in, mortgage. *hajiiru* be very much ashamed.  
*shiiireru* lay in (goods). *kanjiiru* feel great admiration.  
*yobiireru* call in.

## Vocabulary

(Include the compounds given above. Easily understood compounds are not explained.)

*hiza* knee.

*ito* thread, raw silk.

*soba* side, vicinity.

— *no soba ni* beside.

*soba ni yoru* approach near.

*tayeri* communication, news.

- hama-be* seacoast. <sup>a</sup>  
*kake-ne* fictitious price.  
*kakene wo iu (suru)* ask an amount in excess of the proper price.  
*mi bun* station in life.  
*sai-tori* middleman, broker.  
*toku* (c) profit, gain.  
*en-nichi* monthly festival day at a Buddhist temple.  
*hi-nan* censure, criticism.  
*sek-kan* chastisement.  
*sok-ki* stenography.  
*koku-shi-byō* black plague (lit. black death disease).  
*ureshii* joyful.  
*aware na* pitiful.  
*waga-mama na* wilful, wayward, selfish.  
*yō-i na* easy.  
*yu-kwai na* delightful.  
*kimari* disposition, order.  
*kimari ga warui* be embarrassed.  
*shidara no nai* unsystematic, badly managed.
- akirameru* give up all hope, feel resigned. <sup>b</sup>  
*shibireru, shibire ga kireru* be numb, asleep (of limbs).  
*utsumuku* bend the face down.  
*yuzuru* relinquish, yield.  
*shimaru* be tight, strict.  
*tori-shimaru* supervise (tr.).  
*hara wo tateru* } get angry.  
*rip-puku suru* }  
*dossari* abundantly, largely.  
*hyoi to, hyotto* suddenly, accidentally.  
*hisashi-buri de* after a long interval.  
*aku, akiru* (p. 142, middle) be surfeited.  
*aku made* to the utmost.  
*hon ni* really (in *hon-to*).  
*ip-po* one step.  
*is-sai* altogether, at all.  
*to-kaku* in one way or another, almost inevitably, be apt to.

## Exercises

*Kono kikai wa ippun no uchi ni mizu wo sen rittor' gurai suiagemas'.* Matsuyama kun wa kimi no kotoba wo kikichi-gaete taisō okotte otta yo. Ittan iidash'tu koto wa yōi ni kaerareru mono de nai. Ano o kami san wa ōku no mono wo torishimaranakereba naranai mibun de aru no ni, jissai ts'kiate mimash'tara, sono shidara no nai no ni wa akirehatete shimas-

a The suffix *be* is equivalent to *hen* vicinity: *vama-be* region near a mountain.

b Used with *to*: *Tōtei dekinai mono to akiramete iru* be convinced that it is utterly impossible. The verb *akirameru* must originally "understand clearly." Comp. *akiraka na*.

*mask'ta.* Sono ji ga nukete imas' a kara, koko ye kakiirete okimashō. Kono ushi wa abarete hito wo ts'kikorosh'ta koto ga arimas'. Omae san, kakene wo itchā komaru. Iie, kessh'te kakene wa mōshigemassen. Hisashiburi de atla (from au) mon' des' kara, tagai ni dakiatte ureshi-namida wo nagashimash'ta. Sumi ya takigi wo sannuku naran uchi ni kaiirete oku hō ga yas'kute toku des'. Nagai aida suwatte ite tachigarō to shimash'tara, shibire ga kirete tatemassen desh'ta. Ano hi'o wa sei ga takai kara, nobiagattara, atama ga kamoi ni todokimashō. Tagai ni kao wo miawasete kimariwarusō ni utsumukimash'ta (sh'ta wo mimash't.i). Hakurankwai wa kok'shibyō ga dekita tame ni miawase ni natta sō des'. Senu-datte ryokō chū ni kane ga nakunatte shimatte, kaeru koto ga dekisu, betsu ni shiriai no hito mo nai no de, yovarihatemash'ta. Yasui toki ni tak'san shiirete okimash'ta kara, dossari mōkarimash'ta. Uchijini sh'ta to akiramete ita ani kara tayori ga atta no de tobiagaru hodo ureshū gozaimash'ta. Omiya de kudari no kisha to nobori no kisha ga (to) surechigai ni natta. b As' wa mina san to mōshicawasete hanami ni mairimashō. Sakihodo tegata wo juridash'te yarimash'ta. c Taihen machigatta koto wo itash'te hajiitta shidai de gozaimas'. Suisengū no ennichi ni wa aruku koto mo dekinai hodo komiimas'. Inu wa shinda no ka to omotte soba ni yottara ugokidashimash'ta. Takayama hakase no rombun wo yomu tabi ni fude no tassha na no ni wa kanjiirimas'. d Itō san wa miageru hodo rippa ni narimash'ta. Donna muri wo iite koyō to, e issai toriawan hō ga yoroshū gozaimas'. Sono hon wa ima Tōkyō ni aru ka d) da ka kikiawasete agemashō. Doits' to F'rans' wa itsu mo sureatte imash'ta. Aits' wa gak'shabutte nanigoto ni mo kuchi wo das' (ireru) kara, hito ni iyagararemas'. Hyotto omoidashimash'ta. Donna hinan ga atte mo

a Translate: is omitted; lit. has escaped (in the process of writing). One may also say *ochite imas'*.

b *Kudari no kisha* the train going in the direction from the capital; *nobori no kisha* the train going in the direction to the capital. The verb *surechigau* is not so common as *kō-kwan suru*.

c The verb *yarū* as used with subordinatives may sometimes be translated "for" but is often untranslatable. It belongs to the same class as *ageru, oku, kuru, shiman*, etc.

d The word *fude* is used by metonymy for style.

e A future verb with *to*, abbreviated from *to mo*, is one of the idioms denoting concession. Translate: No matter how unreasonably he speaks to you.

*amanjite ukeru tsumori des'. Mō shigoto ga arimasen kara, konnichi wa jikan wo kuriagete san ji ni kaeru koto ni itashimashō. O Ume to O Take ga ningyō wo hippariatte tōtō kowashi'te shimaimashi'ta.<sup>a</sup> Asa hayaku okite hamabe ni tatte tōku oki ye kogideite oru fune wo nagameru no wa makoto ni yukwai des'. Ikura hantai sarete mo aku made jibun no sets' wo iihatte ippo mo yuzurimasen. Ainu wa jibun no kao-katachi wo egakareru no wo gowagarimas'. Betsu ni sh'taku wo shi'ta no de wa gozaimasen; hon no ariawase no shina wo sashiageru no des'.<sup>b</sup>*

I will deliver them as soon as they are finished. Since they are brothers, they ought to help one another, but (*hasu na no ni*) they are constantly quarreling. It was my intention to meet him at the Club (*K'rab'*), but on the way we passed without meeting. It is said that recently in Egypt a boat five or six thousand years old (*mae no*) has been dug out. This child by burning (*yaita no ni*) its hands once has learned a good lesson and no longer goes (has become not approaching) near the fire. That broker has gone to Maebashi to buy in raw silk. I stumbled and fell and skinned my knee. Having fallen and struck my knee dreadfully, for a little while I could not rise up. I was guilty of (did) great impoliteness, mistaking the lady of the house (*ok'san*) for the servant. The horse suddenly became fractious and smashed the carriage. In that family (house) all have died out, from (*hajime*) the old to the young, and now only that one child is left (it has become that one child). Have you taken down the lecture? Yes, I have taken it in shorthand (stenographing put). If you treat (*sh'te yaru*) servants and the like (*naso*) too gently, they get stuck up and are apt to become wilful. Since [they] will be expensive if you order [them], it would be better to buy ready-made goods. It is not easy to look up a character in (*de*) the *Kōkijiten*. I will go for a walk after I have finished writing this letter. Both glared at each other for a while without saying anything. It was too much for us (became *tamaranaï*) and we all burst out laughing. The Hirose River and the Natori River come together

<sup>a</sup> Triple compounds like this are not uncommon.

<sup>b</sup> An apology for a meal.

in the vicinity of Sendai. A fox runs away at once when it sees a dog. Mr. Inouye is a very interesting person when you get acquainted with him (associating see). It will still take considerable time to (*made ni wa*) finish this. When you have finished reading that book please lend it to me. When stone and metal are rubbed together, fire is produced (*deru*). Though I said I would go home (*kaeru*), Tanaka pulled my sleeve and did not allow me to go home (*kaesu*). A really able (*dekiru*) man never boasts before others. We withdrew from the others (*hito*) and consulted until late (*osoku made*) at night. Since you will become fatigued and unable to return if you swim out too far, please be cautious. It is said that the carpenter who contracted for the building of the school has fled. Hearing that pitiful story, they were unconsciously (*oboesu*) moved to tears. Saying that the child had been in mischief, he got dreadfully angry and chastised it by (subord.) tying up its hands and feet. The Government has purchased that lot to (*tame ni*) build a court house. By profligacy (*hōtō wo sh'ite*) he used up all his property within one year. How would it be to call in that *amma* and have him shampoo us a little (*hitotsu* or *s'koshi*).

## CHAPTER LXVII

7. *Kaeru, kawaru* change: "re —," "trans —," the idea of substitution.

*kakikaeru* rewrite.

*uekaeru* transplant.

*kikaeru* change (clothes).

*irikuwaru* enter by turns.

*harikaeru* re-cover, from *haru* spread, paste, cover.

— *ni narikawaru* take the place of.

*iikaeru* say in other words.

*umarekawaru* be reborn

*irekaeru* replace, put in afresh.

transmigrate, be regenerated,

*norikaeru* change cars, etc.

ated, become a new man.

8. *Kaeru, kaesu* return: "re —," "back."

*jurikaeru* turn around.

*torikaesu, torimodosu* take

*ikikaeru* revive, be refreshed.

back.

*kurikaesu* repeat.

*yobikaesu, yobimodosu* recall.



9. *Kakeru, kakaru*: (a) "on," "at"; (b) "by chance"; (c) "begin to."

*nagekakeru* throw on or at. *furikakeru,*, *furikakaru* begin to fall (of rain etc.).  
*oikakeru, okkakeru* pursue, to fall (of rain etc.).  
 from *ou* chase. *kakikakeru* begin to write.  
*furikakaru* fall upon, happen. *shikakeru, yarikakeru* begin to do.  
*torikakeru, torikakaru* hap-  
 pen to pass. *chirikakaru* begin to fall (of  
*dekakeru* start out. blossoms).

10. *Kaneru*: "find it hard to," "be unable to."  
*machikaneru* wait impatient- *mōshikaneru* hesitate to say. <sup>a</sup>  
 ly, be unable to wait.

11. *Kiru, kireru*: (a) "completely," "entirely," "all" (comp. *wakarikitta* p. 128); (b) "through"; (c) "cease."

*torikiru* take all, exhaust the *hairikireru* all go in.  
 supply of. *surekireru* be worn through.  
*kaeshikiru* return all. *mikiru* abandon, clear off.  
*urikiru* sell out. *omoikiru* cease to think about,  
*urekireru* be sold out. give up.

12. *Koeru, kosu*: (a) "across"; (b) "past."  
*tobikoeru, tobikosu* leap over, *norikoeru, norikosu* ride past,  
 jump across. overtake.

13. *Komu*: "in."

*sashikomu* shine in. *nomikomu* swallow, under-  
*tsumikomu* load in. stand.  
*fukikomū* blow in. *ochikomū* fall in.  
*hikkomu* draw in, retire. <sup>b</sup> *omoikomū* get an impression.  
*irikomu* enter in. *orikomū* weave in, from *oru*  
*kikikomū* hear (lit. take in <sup>c</sup> weave.  
 by hearing). *shikomū* lay in (goods), teach  
*mōshikomū* put in a request. (something), educate.  
*nagekomū* throw in. — *ni horekomū* be captivated.

<sup>a</sup> Very common are the compounds: — *wo koraakaneru*, — *mi taakaneru* and *tamarikaneru* be unable to endure. The last is used only in the form of the subordinative.

<sup>b</sup> To be distinguished from *hekomu* become hollow, from *heru* decrease. For *he* compare *ketsumazuku* (p. 285a).

<sup>c</sup> The verb *kikiiveru* means "assent," "grant," (a request).

14. *Naosu*: "re—" "again," "a second time." "over."  
*denaosu* come (or go) again. *ninaosu* reboil.  
*kangaenaosu* change one's *yarinaosu*, *shinaosu* do over.  
 mind.

15. *Nuku*, *nukeru*: (a) "through"; (b) "out."  
*tsukinuku* pierce through. *erinuku*, *yorinuku* choose out,  
*uchinuku* strike through. select, from *eru* choose.  
*tōrinukeru* pass through.

## Vocabulary

(Include compounds given above.)

<i>hitai</i> forehead.	<i>hata</i> side.
<i>hori</i> ditch, canal, moat.	<i>michi-bata</i> roadside.
<i>inochi</i> life.	<i>sa-naka</i> the very midst.
<i>kabuto</i> helmet.	<i>mi-nashi-go</i> orphan. <sup>a</sup>
<i>kuchi</i> opening, demand (for services or goods).	<i>yopparai</i> drunkard.
<i>suku</i> to open up, be thinned out (p. 102a).	<i>teki</i> enemy.
<i>suki</i> , <i>suki-ma</i> crack, opening.	<i>chō-ka</i> = <i>machi-ya</i> house of a merchant. <sup>b</sup>
<i>suso</i> lower border of a garment, skirt.	<i>dō-chū</i> journey.
<i>tsuyu</i> dew.	<i>ji-jō</i> condition, circumstances, special reasons.
<i>ya</i> arrow.	<i>kok-kin</i> national interdict (comp. <i>kinsuru</i> ).
<i>yumi</i> bow.	<i>mo-yō</i> pattern, design, state of things. <sup>c</sup>
<i>ama-mori</i> leak in the roof (lit. rain-leak).	<i>nem-matsu</i> end of the year.
<i>sato</i> village, one's native place.	<i>sai-sen</i> offering of money at a place of worship.
<i>furu-sato</i> } birthplace,	<i>sei-nen</i> young man (lit. green years).
<i>ko-kyō</i> (c) } home.	<i>kwō-tai-shi</i> crown prince.
<i>ki-mae</i> disposition, temperament.	

<sup>a</sup> Lit. a child without *mi*. The word *mi* means not only "self" but also one's condition or relations in life (compare *mi-no-ue*, p. 58). Accordingly *minashigo* means a child without relatives.

<sup>b</sup> In former times the samurai lived in the midst of ample grounds along back streets, while the crowded town was occupied by shopkeepers.

<sup>c</sup> *Kesa no moyō de wa ame ga furisō deshita ga, saiwai furasu ni shimaimashita.* This morning it looked like rain, but happily there has been none.

<i>bōto</i> boat (English).	— <i>ni sawaru</i> touch.
<i>hakanai</i> transient.	<i>sodateru</i> bring up, rear (intr. <i>sodatsu</i> ).
<i>yoginai</i> unavoidable.	<i>tetsudau</i> help.
<i>ken-go</i> na firm, substantial.	<i>todomaru</i> = <i>tomaru</i> stop, stay.
<i>omoi</i> (mo) <i>yoranu</i> unexpected.	<i>hiki-ukeru</i> take over, make one's self responsible for (comp. <i>ukeau</i> ).
<i>kei-ki</i> appearance, state of trade.	<i>hiki-zuru</i> drag.
<i>keiki ga yoi</i> times are good (opp. <i>fu-keiki</i> ).	<i>ippan ni</i> generally.
<i>tuku</i> roof, thatch. <sup>a</sup>	

## Exercises

*Kimono ga nureta kara, betsu no to kikaemashō. Tsurezuregusa no<sup>b</sup> bunshō wa taihen kirei da kara, kurikaeshi te yomimashi'ta. Makoto ni mōshiagekanemas' ga, s'koshi tetsudatte itadakaremās'mai ka. Kotoshi wa keiki ga yokute kaiireta mono wa mina urekiremashi'ta. Tera ya miya ye sankei suru hito wa saisenbako ni zeni wo nagekōmimas'. Ato no bōf' ga saki no wo norikoshimashi'ta. Sō iu mukashi no shiki no koto ga kono hon ni kaite arimas' to omoimashi'ta ga, dōmo, miatarimassen. Nāni! kaite aru sa. Sonnara mō ichi do yominashimashō. Taihō no tama ga atsui kabe wo uchinuite Pekin no yō na kengo na shiro wo mo otoshimashi'ta. Cha wo hitotsu irekaete kite kure. Amari muzukashi kute watakushi ni wa wakarikanemas'. Sekkaku no o kotoba des' ga, konnichi wa yoginai koto ga gozaimashi'te zannen nagara agarikanemas'. Ikura benkyō shi'te hataraiete mo shigoto ga shi'kirenai. Matsuri no toki ni wa inakamono ga ōzei machi ni irikomimas'. Kono bunshō wa machigaidarake da kara, kakinaoshi nasai. Yane ga furuku natte amamori ga suru kara, fukikaeyō to omoimas'. Sonna abunai koto wo suru to, ato de torikaeshi no ts'kanai<sup>c</sup>*

a The different kinds of roofs are: *warabuki*, from *wara* straw; *kayabuki*, from *kaya* rush; *sugikawabuki*, from *sugi* cryptomeria and *kawa* bark; *kobabuki* shingled; *kawarabuki* tiled; *s'reit'buki* or *sekibanbuki* slated; *totanbuki* roofed with galvanized iron, etc.

b Miscellanies written by Kenkō in the XIV. Century. *Tsurezure* means "leisure hours"; *kusa* (lit. grass) "miscellanies." Compare *kusagusa no* various.

c The negative of the verb *tsuku* is used in this and similar idioms in the sense of *dekinai*.

*ayamachi wo shimas' yo. Omoi mo yoranu sainan ga jurika-katte mairimash'ta. Miru ni mikanete (p.274,2) tas'kete yari-mash'ta. Yoi kuchi ga attara, sewa wo sh'te kureru yō ni mō-sh'konde okimash'ta. Kono kimono wa nan da ka guai ga warui yō da kara, nuinaosh'te moraitai. Yumi no ya ga kabuto wo ts'kinuite teki no hitai ni atarimash'ta. "Jinsei chōro no gotoshi" <sup>a</sup> to iu no wa, ikuereba, Hito no inochi wa makoto ni hakanai mono de aru to iu koto des'. Tochū de kyū ni hara ga itanidash'ta no de, aruku koto mo dekisu, taorete orimash'ta ga, chōdo soko wo tōrikakatta no ga isha de arimash'ta kara, saiwai tas'keraremash'ta. Sendatte shinda kodomo no koto wa dō sh'te mo omoikiru koto ga dekinasen. Zehi kuni ye kaerō to omoimash'ta ga, kangaenaoshimash'te Nihon ni todomaru koto ni itashimash'ō. Kono kowareta hon wo mina tojinaosa-nakereba narimasen. Moto wa ikenai hito des'i'ta ga, konogoro wa umarekawatta yō ni yoi mono ni narimash'ta. Konnichi wa irikawari tachikawari o kyaku ga kite isogashū gobaimash'ta. Kurikaeshi kurikaeshi shinsetsu ni oshiete kuremash'ta. Muri ga tōreba, dōri ga hikkomu (Proverb). Nijijina san wa <sup>b</sup> kokkin wo okash'te gwaikoku no june ni norikonde Amerika ye mairimash'ta. Ittan omoikonda koto wa yōi ni aratamerarenai mono des'. Yopparai wo hikisurikomarete <sup>c</sup> tonda meiwaku wo itashimash'ta. Dorobō no kao ni hai wo nagekakemash'ta. Aits' wa sake wo nomu to, sugu ni kenkwa wo sh'kakemas'. <sup>d</sup> Atsui sanaka ni nagadōchū wo sh'te, ts'karehatete shimaimash'tatta ga, <sup>e</sup> shibaraku koko de yasunda no de, yōyō ikikuetta yō na kokochi ga itashimas'. Mikirimono <sup>f</sup> des' kara, o yas'ku agemas'. Kame no ko no kubi wa bō de sawaru to, jiki ni hik-*

<sup>a</sup> *Hito no inochi wa asa no tsuyu no yō na mono desu.*

<sup>b</sup> The founder of the Christian institution, the Dōshisha, in Kyōto. He went to America secretly in 1864. The name is often spelled Neesima.

<sup>c</sup> The keeper of a restaurant might express himself in these words on discovering that he had a drunkard on his hands.

<sup>d</sup> In this compound *kakeru* does not mean "begin." The man when drunk picks a quarrel, i. e., inflicts a quarrel on another. Compare *hanashi wo shikakeru* or *hanashikakeru* address one's self to.

<sup>e</sup> The ending *tatta*, from *te atta*, is used like *takke* (p. 275c) to make vivid a past situation.

<sup>f</sup> Goods to be disposed of at a clearing sale.

*komimas'*. *Nomikomi no ii gejo des'*. *Mukashi chōka de wa ippan ni onna no ko ni yūgei wo sh'konda mon' des'*. *O rusu nara, mata denaoshite mairimashō*. *Rosha no kwōtaishi ga Ōtsu de horosarekakemash'ta*.

To go from Tōkyō to Nikkō you must change cars at Utsunomiya. At the end of the year people everywhere re cover their *shōji*. Chrysanthemums, if not transplanted every year, do not bloom well (good flowers do not bloom). There is no one who would (does) not turn round and look back (*ato wo miru*) when he left (leaves) his birthplace. The cherry blossoms are now beginning to fall. The company has been (guests are) waiting impatiently for some time. This box is so small that the goods will hardly all go in. This building is called *Kotsudō*;<sup>a</sup> into it (*kono uchi ni*) the teeth, etc., of dead people are thrown (in). Can you jump across this brook? Recently a new street has been made (*dekiru*) by which one can (*koto no dekiru*) pass through from the Station to South Street. As this child (*wa i*) is an orphan, we intend to take the place of its parents and rear it. As I am just beginning (to write) a letter, please wait a little. I hesitate to say it, but could I borrow a little money? That dictionary is sold out (past). The horse fell in when it attempted (p. 216 top) to leap over this ditch. As I made a mistake, I will do it over. From among many young men the strongest are selected and taken for soldiers. He was recalled to his country on the ground that (*to itte*) unavoidable business had turned up (*dekita*). I am sorry, but there are various special reasons, so that I can't guarantee that much (*sore dake*). He has not yet paid (returned) all his debts. In Japan designs and letters are woven (*orikomu*—active) into women's sashes. You can still wear this padded garment, if you make it over. As the thief fled, a policeman pursued him with all his might. I was captivated by his disposition. If you don't reboil this fish, it will spoil by to-morrow. The skirt of the *kimono* is worn through. I am annoyed by the snow blowing in through (from) a crack in (of) the door. Lately I heard a strange rumor. Travelers often throw their *waraji* upon trees by (of) the roadside.

<sup>a</sup> Lit. bone-hall. Devout Buddhists desire to be buried, at least nominally, by the side of Kōbō Daishi on Kōyosan (p. 113d). The *Kotsudō* is provided for the remains of cremated bodies.

## CHAPTER LXVIII

16. *Otosu* : "fail to," "neglect to."  
*niotosu* overlook.  
*kakio:osu* accidentally omit in writing.  
*toriotosu* forget to take, leave behind.
17. *Sokonau* injure : "mis—," "wrongly."  
*dekisokonau* prove to be a failure.  
*yarisokonau*, *shisokonau* do amiss, spoil.  
*misokonau* misjudge.
18. *Sugiru*, *sugosu* : "excessively."  
*ikisugiru* go too far (p. 128).  
*nomisugiru*, *nomisugosu* drink to excess.  
*tsukaisugiru*, *tsukaisugosu* use too much.
19. *Tatsu*, *tateru* : (a) "up"; (b) "away."  
*nietatsu*, *nitatsu* boil, from *ukitatsu* be buoyant, excited  
*nieru* (intr.) or *niru* (tr.) (p. 263f).  
*umelateru* fill up. *oitateru* drive away, evict.
20. *Tōsu* : "through."  
*fukitōsu* blow through.  
*yaritōsu*, *shitōsu* put through, carry out.
21. *Tsuku*, *tsukeru* : (a) the idea of approach or attachment  
— "to," "at," "against"; (b) "happen to."  
*kuitsuku* bite (of an animal). *fukitsukeru* blow against.  
*natsuku*, *nazuku* become at- *kakitsukeru* note down.  
tached (p. 252a). *nagetsukeru* throw at, fling.  
*ochitsuku* return to a normal *takitsukeru* kindle.  
condition, become settled. *uchitsukeru*, *buchitsukeru*,  
— *ni oitsuku*, *ottsuku* over- *buttsukeru* nail on, throw  
take.<sup>a</sup> at.  
*sabitsuku* get rusty, from *sa-* *yosetsukeru* bring close.  
*biru* rust. *iitsukeru*, *mōshitsukeru*, *ōse-*  
*sugaritsuku* cling fast, from *tsukeru* (polite 2) tell,  
*sugaru* cling. command.  
*suitsuku* take hold by suction. *yattsukeru* overcome, scold.

<sup>a</sup> Compare the adverb *ottsuke* presently.

*kikitsukeru* happen to hear, *kangaetsuku*, *omoitsuku* happen to think of, call to overhear.  
*mitsukeru*, *mekkeru* happen to see, discover. mind, invent.

The expressions *kikitsukete imasu*, *mitsukete imasu*, mean also "be accustomed to hear," "be used to seeing."

22. *Tsukusu* (intr. *tsukiru*) exhaust: "all."

*mitsukusu* see all.

*shitsukusu*, *yaritsukusu* do everything possible.

23. *Tsumeru*, *tsumaru*: "to the utmost."

*iitsumeru* silence (in an argument).

*oitsumeru* corner.

*senjitsumeru* boil down, from *sensuru* make a decoction.

*ikitsunaru* get to a place where one can go no further.

24. *Tsuzuku*, *tsuzukeru*: "continuously."

*furitsuzuku* fall continuously (of rain, etc.).

*teritsuzuku* continue bright (of the weather).

*nomitsuzukeru* keep on drinking.

*yaritsuzukeru*, *shitsuzukeru* keep on doing.

## Vocabulary

(Include the compounds given above.)

*ami* net.

*hiru* leech.

*ike* pond.

*kakoi* enclosure (from *kakou* enclose).

*kama* kettle, pot for cooking.

*mari* ball.

*sumi* corner.

*sune* shin.

*ari-sama* state, condition.

*kai* shell, shellfish.

*kai-gara* empty shell (of a shellfish).

*kōji* (*ko-michi*) lane, alley.

*naga-ya* row of houses under one roof, tenement house.

*no*, *hara*, *no-hara* plain, moor, prairie.

*nusubito* thief.

*ō-dōri* main street.

*yo-ake* daybreak.

*osandon* servant girl. <sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *O San* was once a very common name for girls; *don* is from *dono*, a title like *sama*, *san*. Compare *Sansuke*, the name by which the attendant at a public bath is usually called. The term *osandon*, like *gejo* or *kahi*, is applicable only to those who do menial work in the kitchen, etc. A servant girl of higher rank is *jo-chū* or *naka-bataraki*.

*hei* fence, wall (p. 129a).

*jō, jō-mae* lock.

*wan* bay.

*bōsan* Buddhist priest (p. 282f).

*chi-e* wisdom, sagacity.

*en-kwai* banquet.

*jō* feeling, affection, passion.

*gō-jō* stubbornness (*gō*=*tsu-yoi, kowai*).

*gōjō wo haru* be obstinate.

*hos-shin* [Buddhist] religious conversion (lit. arouse spirit).

*hyō-satsu* name tablet fastened to a gatepost, doorplate.

*i-shi* will, volition

*kei-kuaku* plan, scheme.

*nai-kaku* cabinet, ministry.

*nan-gi* hardship.

*nes-shin* zeal, enthusiasm (lit. heat spirit).

*nin-tai* patience, fortitude.

*ri-eki* profit, advantage.

*sei-tō* political party.

*tetsu-bin* iron teakettle.

*ton-jaku* concern.

*ya-chin* rent (of a house).

*zei-taku* luxury.

*sa-hai-nin* real estate agent.

*garasu* glass.

*gomu* gum, rubber.

*arayuru* all. <sup>a</sup>

*asahaka na* superficial.

*tan-ki na* impatient, irritable (*tan*=*mijikai*, p. 123).

*zan-koku na* cruel.

*mukai no, mukō no* the opposite (p. 28,3).

*ten-chi-kan no* of heaven and earth (*kan*=*aida*).

*haneru* bounce.

*hirogeru* spread out, enlarge.

*magotsuku* be perplexed.

*oboreru* be drowned.

*todokōru* be impeded, delayed, in arrears

*yabureru* be torn, broken, destroyed (tr. *yaburu*).

*sarau* } review

*fuku-shū suru* } (a lesson).

*jō-ju suru* be accomplished, succeed, accomplish.

*ukkari (to)* thoughtlessly.

*massaki (ni)* at the very first. <sup>b</sup>

*nan-to-naku* } without any  
*nan-da-ka* } special reason,  
without knowing why. <sup>c</sup>

*fu-i-ni* suddenly.

*ichi-men (ni)* all over the surface.

## Exercises

*Ano hito wa sō itta sō des' keredomo, watakushi wa ukkari kikiotoshimash'ta. Ano e wa kakisokonaimash'ta kara, ima (or mō) ichi mai kaite miru tsumori des. Yachin ga nisan-*

<sup>a</sup> For *arareru*. Compare *iwayuru* (p. 275, top).

<sup>b</sup> Compare *masshiro* perfectly white, *makkuro* jet black, *makkurai* pitch dark, *maka* na deep red, *massakari* full bloom, *mannaka* the very midst, etc.

<sup>c</sup> The second of the two expressions is rather vulgar. See p. 295, line 4



*kagetsu todokōrimash'ta no de sahaijin ga okotte nagayajū (no hito) wo oitatemash'ta. Kongetsu wa amari kane wo ts'kai-sugosh'te mō ichi mon mo nakunatte shimaimash'ta. Kesu yudoya wo tats' toki ni yoku heyajū wo mite kita kara, tori-otosh'ta mono wa nai hazu des'. Shinagawa-wan wo umetatete Tōkyō-shi wo kirogeyō to iu keikwaku wo shite oru hito mo gosaimas'. Kono kōji wo ittara, tabun ōdōri ni derareru darō to oinomash'ta ga, mamonaku ikitsumatte shimaimash'ta. Ittan yarikaketa koto wa aku made yarit'se. Kono mae wo Kinyō no asa tazunete kita hito wa nan to iimash'takke; ikura kangae mo kanguets' kimasen. Ningen no asahaka no chie de tenchikan no dōri wo shirits' kusō nado to omou no wa chōdo kaigara de umi no mizu wo kumits' kusō to iu no to onaji koto des'. Tochū de deatta omoshiroi koto wo mina nikki ni kaki-ts'kete okimash'ta. Anata no o hanashi de omoitsuita koto ga gozaimas'. Kono setsu no yō ni teritsuzuite wa ts' ga warete ine ga karete shimaimashō. Gomu no mari wo itabei ni nagets' keru to, hanekaerimas'. Kono ko wa kan ga okotta to miete, s'koshi ki ni iran koto ga aru to, nan de mo kamawazu te ni motte iru mono wo nagets' kete kowash'te shimaimas'. Ano zainin wa iroiro tazuneraremash'ta ga nanigoto mo shiranu shiranu to itte gōjō wa karitōshimash'ta. J'mae ga sabitsuite tansu no hikidashi ga akimassen. Bis'mar'k' wa isha no tsuyoi hito de, hantai-tō ga ikura yakamashii koto wo itte mo, ikkō tonjaku naku kessh'te jibun no kangae wo magezu ni, aku made oshitōsh'ta kara, hitobito wa "tekketsu saishō" to mōshimash'ta.<sup>a</sup> Ano hito wa makoto ni mimi no hayai hito de yononaka no koto wa nan de mo massaki ni kikits'kemas'. Aits' wa amari jibunkatte na koto bakari iu kara, hidoku yatts'kete yatta. Isshōkemmei ni okkakemash'ta keredomo, tōts'ōts'-kikanemash'ta. Konoaida Ikao ye iku toki ni, hi wa kururu, hara wa suku,<sup>b</sup> hijō ni nangi shimash'ta ga, kuruma ni mo norazu ni, tōtō mukō made arukitōshimash'tu. Boku no ie wa ura ga nohara ni natte oru no de, fuyu ni naru to, yuki ga fuki-*

<sup>a</sup> From *tetsu* iron, *ketsu* blood, *sai-shō* prime minister. A prime minister is now called more commonly *sōri-daijin*.

<sup>b</sup> *Ikao* is a famous hot spring in *Jōshū* not very far from *Maebashi*. After *kururu* and *suku* the disjunctive particle *shi* might be added to complete the grammatical construction; but in order to make the situation more vivid it is omitted.

*ts' kete jitsu ni komaru. Hito ga mizu ni oboreyō to suru baai ni wa nan de mo kamawazu sugarits' kimas'. Isshō no meshi wo tabets' kush' te shimatta no ka ; kimi no taishoku ni wa odorokaiite shimau.<sup>a</sup> Nusubito ga ushiro no hayashi ni kakurete makanaka wakarimasen desh'ta ga, junsu ga yōyō mekkedashimash'ta. Dandan toitsumete itta tokoro ga, mukō wa tōtō iitsumatte shimaimash'ta. Ano bōsan wa wakai toki ni wa arayuru zeitaku wo shits' kush'ta hito da sō des' ga, aru toki sensō ni itte sono sankoku na arisama wo mite niwaka ni hosshin shi'ta to iu koto des'. Yarisokonatta kara, mō ichi do shinaoshimashō. Yarisokonai no nai hito wa nai keredomo, neshhin to nintai sae areba, shimai ni wa jōju shimas'. Sendatte kaisreka sekitan wa mō takits' kush' te shimaimash'ta. Heya no shōji ga yaburete kaze ga fukitōshi na mon' des' kara, sakuban tōtō kaze wo hikimash'ta. Toriotoshi no nai yō ni yoku ato wo shirabete o kure. Kono hyōsats' wo mon ni uchits' kete oite kure ; hito ga tazunete kita toki ni wakaranaide magotsuku to ikenai kara. Biri' wa sake hodo ni wa yowanai to itte mo, nomisugiru to, karada no gai ni naru kara, yahari noman hō ga yoroshii.*

The servant girl rises early in the morning and kindles [a fire] under the pot (*kama no shi'ta wo*). When I went (pres.) into the pond with (holding) a net for the purpose of catching (thinking that I would catch) fish, at once three or four leeches took hold of my shins. It has been raining continuously of late ; consequently the roads have become extraordinarily bad. I must send (*dasu*) a letter once more, because there is something that I omitted in the previous letter. As this box has proved to be a failure, I will make another (*betsu ni*) for you. When spring comes (it becomes spring), without any special reason a person's spirits (*kokoro*) are buoyant. He is talented, but is apt to spoil things, being impatient. If you put a teakettle on a *hibachi*, the water (*yu*) boils at once. I thought she was an honest person, but misjudged [her]. He chased to a corner of the fence the chicken that flew out of the enclosure and at last caught (*ts' kamaeru*) it. If I don't note down newly learned words one by one (*ichiichi*) in my notebook and re-

<sup>a</sup> From twenty to thirty bowls of cooked rice are considered to amount to one *shō*. For *taishoku* compare *taishokka*, p. 16.

view them often, I soon forget them. As there was suddenly a clap of thunder (thunder suddenly sounded), the children were frightened and clung to their mother. I have (there is) one more order (*sits'keru koto*); call Gonske back. At the banquet last evening four or five tipplers (*jōgo*) having come together (*yorian*), they kept on drinking until daybreak. The dog is ill-natured and dangerous; take care not to bring children close to him (his side). As we have already seen about all the noted places of Tōkyō, we intend soon to go to Kyōto (and see). The *baiu* is (*no koto des'*) a rain that falls continuously (every day) at the beginning of summer. When the rainy season is over, [the weather] continues bright. Hoshi Tōru was a much criticised man (a man about whom there was considerable criticism), but he was eminent in that (because) he carried out his ideas (*kangae*) to the end. Your affairs (*monogoto*) will never succeed if you now stop and again begin, as you do (*sonna ni*); what you have once begun you must keep on doing to the end. Yesterday as I hurriedly passed by the front of the station, Itō happened to see me from a distance and persistently called after me (*yobikakeru*). Children have thrown stones at and broken much of the window-glass. The present (*ima no*) cabinet and the political parties are arguing variously (*iroiro*); but if you boil it down, both sides (*dochira mo*) are thinking only [of] their own advantage.

## CHAPTER LXIX

C. There are also groups of compounds which we classify according to their first components. In some cases the prefixes in a marked degree add to the sense; in others they are merely intensive or practically meaningless. Such a prefix is *ai*, which occurs in certain formal phrases, such as: *Dandan o sewa ni ainarimashite arigatō gozaimasu. Konogo mo aikawarimasesu.* My obligations to you are gradually increasing. Please continue your favor in the future also.

1. *Furi*, from *furu* shake.  
*furihanasu* break loose.  
*furikiru* sever forcibly.  
*furisuteru* abandon.

2. *Hiki*, from *kiku* draw.  
*hikiwaseru* introduce, compare. <sup>a</sup> *hikitatsu*, *hittatsu* improve (*hittatte mieru* look better).  
*hikkaesu* return (intr.). *hikitateru* favor, encourage.  
*hikkakeru* suspend. *hikitomeru* detain.  
*hikikomoru* stay at home, from *hittsukamaeru* catch (vulgar).  
*komoru* be shut up (p. 239a). *hikiukeru* make one's self responsible for, take over.  
*hikkosu* remove. *hikkurikaeru* be overturned.  
*hikinuku* pull up by the root.
3. *Meshi*, from *mesu* summon, use.  
*meshiagaru* take (food, drink, etc., 2, 3).  
*meshitoru* arrest.  
*meshitsukau* employ (as a servant).
4. *Mochi*, from *motsu* hold.  
*mochidasu* offer (a motion or bill).  
*mochikuzusu* ruin (self or property).  
— *ni hanashi wo mochikakeru* solicit.
5. *Oshi*, from *osu* push.  
*oshihirogeru* spread out, enlarge.  
*oshikaeshite kiku* ask to repeat.  
*oshitsumatte kuru* the end of the year approaches.
6. *Sashi*, from *sasu* grow, rise, penetrate.  
*sashiageru* lift up, offer, present. *sashihiku* deduct.  
— *ni sashikakaru* approach.  
*sashideru* intrude (in *sashidegamashi*, p. 110). *sashitsukaeru* be hindered, embarrassed, from *tsukaeru*  
*sashidasu* offer, present, send be obstructed.  
(freight, mail, etc.).
7. *Tachi*, from *tatsu* stand.  
*tachikaeru* return.  
*tachidomaru* stop while walking, from *tomaru* stop.  
*tachiyoru* call in passing.
8. *Tori*, from *toru* take.  
*toriatsukau* manage, treat. *torikaeru* exchange.  
*toriawaseru* combine. *torikesu* retract.

<sup>a</sup> Many of these words are becoming obsolete. Thus *shōkai suru* is more common than *hikiwaseru* in the sense of "introduce"; *tei-shutsu suru*, than *ucchidasu*; *shik-kō suru*, than *toriokonau*, etc.

- *ni torikakaru* commence work on.  
*torikuzusu* tear down.  
*torimatomeru* gather all together, settle, from *matomeru* bring together, adjust.  
— *ni torinasu* take the part of.  
*toriokonau* administer, perform, celebrate.  
*torishiraberu* investigate.  
*torishimaru* supervise.  
*torisoroeru* gather all together.
- toritsugu* transmit, announce (a visitor).  
— *ni toritsuku* attach one's self to.  
*totsukamaeru* catch (vulgar).  
*toriyoseru* have — sent to one's self, procure, import.  
*toriisogu* be in a hurry.  
*torikomru* be crowded, busy (of a house, hotel or store).  
*torimagireru* be in confusion, distracted, from the rare verb *magireru* (p. 202).
9. *Uchi*, from *utsu* strike.  
— *ni uchikatsu* overcome.  
*uchiakeru* open (the heart), be candid.  
*uchitokete hanasu* speak frankly or familiarly.  
*uchitsuzuku* continue a long time.  
*utcharu*, from *uchiyaru*, throw away, reject, let alone.  
*bukkiru*, for *buchikiru*, hack.  
*bunnaguru*, for *buchinaguru*, thrash, drub, from *naguru* beat.

## Vocabulary

(Include the compounds given above)

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>mizore</i> sleet.  | <i>gi</i> (c) righteousness, trustiness, loyalty.            |
| <i>ori</i> opportunity.   | <i>shi</i> city.   |
| <i>toride</i> fort, stronghold, intrenchment.   | <i>sen = mae</i> front.                                      |
| <i>hari-tsuke</i> crucifixion. <sup>a</sup>   | <i>bu-shi</i> samurai. <sup>b</sup>                          |
| <i>tachi-ki</i> standing tree.  | <i>chō-nin</i> one of the trading class, merchant (p. 293b). |
| <i>tamoto</i> ( <i>te</i> , <i>moto</i> ) lower part of [Japanese] sleeve (which serves as a pocket). | <i>chū-i</i> attention, heed, care.                          |
|   | <i>fū-fu</i> man and wife.                                   |

a A "cross" is *haritsuke-bashira*. The Christian term is *jū-ji-ka*, from *jūji* the character for 十 (+) and *ka* erection, frame.

b From *bu* brave and *shi* man or *samurai*. Compare *gi-shi* loyal *samurai*, from *gi* righteousness.

*gi-an* bill (in a deliberative assembly).<sup>a</sup>

*gwan-sho, negai-sho* (*gwan* = *negai*) petition.

*kaku-jō* confession.

*kyō-men* surface, exterior.

*jiki-so* direct appeal.

*kan-ja* spy.

*ko-jin* = *mukashi no hito*.

*kok-ka* (*koku* = *kuni*, *ka* = *ie*) state.

*kō-nō* virtue, efficacy, effect.

*sai-kun* wife (familiar).

*shi-shutsu* (proncd. *shishitsu*) expenditures.

*shū-nyū* income, receipts.

*so-han* coarse food (polite 1).

*soku-ryō* surveying.

*sai-moku* lumber.

*san-kin* (*nokotta kane*) balance.

*dai-gi-shi* representative (in Parliament).

*ho-shu-tō* conservative party.

*tonnaru } tunnel.*  
*dō-mon }*

*koishii* beloved, affectionate.

*tsurenai* heartless.

*hisoka na* secret.

*nodoka na* calm.

*samasama na* (*no*) various.

*shi-ritsu no* private (opposite *kwanritsu no* established by the Government).

*osaeru* repress, hold back.

*tabi-datsu* set out on a journey.

*nori-ki ni naru* fall in with a proposal.

*isure* in some way or other, at all events.<sup>b</sup>

*tokkuri* (*to*) attentively, thoroughly, fully.

*sano ba de* on the spot.

*age-ku ni* finally, besides all that.

## Exercises

*Watakushi no tamoto wo osaete sh'kiri ni hikitomeyō to shi-mash'ta keredomo zehi kaeranakereba naranai koto ga aru to itte muri ni furikanashi'te nigete mairimash'ta. Tadaima oide nas'tta o kata wa zanjimasen kara, dōzo go shōkai (o hikiawase) wo negaimas'. Chōmen ni hikiawasete yoku shirabete mimashō. Mukashi Hangaku to iu onna ga arimash'ta ga, hijō ni chikara no tsuyoi onna de, uma ni notte i nagara tachiki wo hikimuite teki to tattakata to iu koto des'. Ima Hayashi kun no uchi ye itte kita ga, saikun no iwareru ni wa*

<sup>a</sup> From *gi* discussion and *an* plan. Compare *gi suru* discuss, *gi-ketsu suru* take a vote (*ka-ketsu suru* adopt, *hi-ketsu suru* reject), *gi-in* member of a deliberative assembly, *gi tō* president, *gi-ji* parliamentary business (*ji=koto*), *gi-ji dō* assembly hall, etc. A motion is *dō-gi*, from *dō* move.

<sup>b</sup> *isure* is properly a classical relative pronoun.

*anata no o taku ye agaru to itte sakihodo de kaketa.<sup>a</sup> to iu koto de atta kara, tabun tochiū de ikichigattarō to omotte sugu ni hikkaeshi'te kimashi'ta. Sakura Sōgorō ga shōgun ni jikiso wo shi'ta no ga futsugō da to iu no de yakunin wa Sōgorō wo meshi'totte harits'ke ni shimashi'ta. Konoaida hoshutō no daigishi ga kō iu gian wo teishutsu shimashi'ta (mochidashimashi'ta). Dandan oshitsumatte mairimashi'te sazo o isogashū gozaimashō.<sup>b</sup> Sohan wo sashiagetō gozaimas'kara,<sup>c</sup> konban roku ji ni oide kudasaimashi. Chōdo yamasaka ni sashikakatta toki ni misore ga juridashi'te kita no de hidoku nangi wo itashimashi'ta. Shibaraku tachidomatte keshi'ki wo nagamete imas' to, ushiro kara tomodachi ga kite fui ni kata wo tataitu no de bikkuri itashimashi'ta. Kyū na go yō wo ōsets'kerarete myōgonichi Hokkaidō ye shuttatsu senakereba naranai kara,<sup>b</sup> kimono nado wo hayaku torisoroete o kure. Hei, kashikomarimashi'ta. Matsushima ni Zaimokushima<sup>c</sup> to iu dōmon no yō ni ana ga aite sono naka wo fune no tōreru shima ga arimas'ga, anata wa go ran ni narimashi'ta ka. Iie, amari toriisogimashi'ta mon'des' kara, tsui miotoshimashi'ta. Mukashi no samurai wa chōnin nado ga burei na koto wo suru to, daikon ya gobō wo kiru yō ni sugu ni buchikitte shimatta mon'des'. Tada hyōmenjō no ts'kiai bakari de naku tagai ni uchitokete hanashi wo shi'te minakereba, hito no kokoro wa tōtei yoku wakaru mono de wa arimasen. Ano tetsudō wa hajime shiritsu no kwaisha de yarikakemashi'ta ga, nochi ni seifu de hikiukemashi'ta. Suzuki san ni hanashi wo mochikakete mimashi'ta ga, sappari noriki ni naranai no de komatte shimaimashi'ta. Mukō no iu koto ga wakāranakatta kara, oshikaeshi'te tazunemashi'ta. Mukashi no bushi wa gi no tame ni wa itsu nandoki de mo inochi wo sashidashi'te kakatta mono des'.<sup>f</sup> Doits'no kanja ga*

a The sentence from *anata* to *dekaketa* is a direct quotation. It is quite legitimate to repeat polite words addressed to one's self. But comp. p. 126d.

b In Japan at the close of the year it is customary to settle all accounts and every one is busy.

c A suitable formula for inviting a person to a meal.

d *Go yō* Government business. *Hok-kai-dō* (lit. north sea way) designates Ezo and the Kuriles. Observe that *dō*, like *chō* (p. 95e), may mean a "district" as well as a "road."

e The columns of rock look like piles of lumber.

f The idea expressed by *kakatta* is that of undertaking (to serve a master or cause).

*sōka ni F'rans'no toride wo sokuryō sh'ta no de F'rans'jin ni totts'kamaeraremash'ta. Iroiro torikonde orimas'kara, ori wo mite tokkuri go sōdan itashimashō. Bunnagutte yarō!<sup>a</sup> Aikawarazu o hikitate wo negaimas'.<sup>b</sup> Ekaki wa iroiro enogu wo toriawasete samazama no iro wo dashimas'. Watakushi mo o me ni kakatte o wabi wo mōshiageru tsumori des'ga, anata kara mo nanibun yorosh'ku sensei ni o torinashi wo negaimas'. Konna ni fushiawase na koto bakari uchitsuzuita ageku ni anata ni made sō tsurenaku saremash'te wa mō toritsuku shima ga gozaimasen.<sup>b</sup> Asu san ji kara sotsugyōsh'ki wo shikkō suru (toriokonau) sō des'. Shūnyū wa hyaku yen de shishutsu wa hachi jū go yen ku jissen naraba, sashihiki bankin wa jū yo yen jissen ni narimas'. Shinnen ni naru to, nantonaku no-doka de wakai toki ni tachikaetta yō na kokochi ga itashimas'. Kono hon wa kami ga nukete imas'kara, hoka no to torikaete o kure. Ani to uchiakebanashi wo sh'te imash'ta.*

Many men for the sake of [their] country have severed ties of affection (*koishii naka*) between (of) parent and child (p. 225 a), husband and wife, gone to war and died in battle. Please introduce <sup>c</sup> me to that gentleman. The child is crying, having flown (*hikkakeru*) its kite on a tree. I should like to enlarge my grounds (*yash'ki*) and plant plenty of trees. They presented a petition to the Home Office. Happening to pass by (because I passed by) your gate (*go mon-zen*), I have just called for a moment; some other time (*isure*) I will soon visit you again. As I am a little in a hurry, I will now be excused (p. 262. middle). Since the old castles were mostly torn down after the Restoration, there are now not many (*amari*) left. As (*tōri*) the ancients said, it is not so (*sakodo*) difficult to overthrow the rebels (*soku*) in the mountains (*san-chū no* or *yama no naka no*), but it is truly not easy to overcome the rebels in one's heart (*shin-chū no* or *kokoro no naka no*). Abandoning wife and children, he set out for (*ye*) a distant place. The street car line was started by a private company (is one that a private company established—*mōkeru*), but later the City Office (*de*)

a This is, of course, a vulgar expression.

b We have here the figure of one lost at sea.

c *Hikiawasete kudasai*, or, more commonly, *go shōkai wo negaimasu*.



may possibly (*ka mo shirenai*) take it over. He ruined himself (*mi wo*) by (*ni*) profligacy and caused (*ni kakeru*) his parents much (*hijō ni*) anxiety. There is nothing at all, but I will give (pres) you what happens to be on hand. The robber was caught on the spot, but did not confess. The goods you have ordered (*go chūmon no*) will all be gathered together by tomorrow and delivered at (*yo*) your house (p. 261, bottom). As evening came (*yūgata ni natte*) and we approached a mountain road (*yamasaka*) we were greatly perplexed. At the close (*kure*) of the year all [houses] are busy. I (*ga*) will make myself responsible for this matter (*wa* 1) and settle it. As I must go quickly (*kyū ni*), I am distracted on account of the preparations (*sh'taku wo suru no de*). Does it also happen that (*koto mo arimas'ka*) lamps are overturned by earthquakes? If you put (*ts'keru*) a red lining into this garment, it will look very much better. As he employs many people, he ought to be more careful (*mot-to chūi suru*). Though you print (*dasu*) a disavowal (*torikeshi*) in the newspaper, it will not have (there will not be) much effect.

## CHAPTER LXX

In previous chapters attention has been called to the propriety of using certain special verbs and special inflections in speaking to superiors or to those to whom one wishes to show respect. A little attention to the original sense of an honorific expression is often sufficient to explain its usage. Thus *yonde ageru* (p. 84f) is more polite than *yonde yaru* (p. 289c), because *ageru* means properly "lift up"; *oshiete itadaku* (p. 227) is more respectful than *oshiete morau* (p. 250), because the original meaning of *itadaku* is "put on the head." There are also honorific inflections, as in *nasaru*, from *nasu*, and *irassharu*, from *iru* (pp. 181, 268), changing ordinary verbs into forms which it would be utterly ridiculous to use of one's self.

Polite verbs may be divided into two classes, humiliatives and exaltatives.

1. There are humble verbs which are used properly in the first person.

Such a verb is *mosu* say (p. 207a). *Mōsu* may also be used

in the third person, to show respect to the one addressed. It may even be used in the second person, either when it is desired to impress upon the one addressed the fact that he is inferior or when the one addressed is not a superior and his act concerns a very exalted personage. But these are rare exceptions to the rule that verbs of the humble class are not used in the second person. The student will remember that in the sense of "do" *mōsu* is also used with stems of verbs<sup>a</sup> together with the honorific *o*, and that *itasu* is used with stems of verbs and *o*, or with Chinese compounds with or without *go* (p. 216, 12). The very formal *tsukamatsuru* is used just like *itasu*, though less frequently; e. g., *Dō tsukamatsurimashite* (comp. p. 218d). A still rarer variant is *tatematsuru* (lit. offer), borrowed from the literary language for use (without *o*) in prayer and in speaking of what is done to or for the Sovereign.

The humble expression for "receive" is *itadaku* or *chōdai itasu*, used also in a peculiar way with subordinatives as described in Ch. LV. Another humble term is *kōmuru*, used of favors or commands. Still another is *tamawaru*, used of favors or gifts. The compound *ukokamawaru* is used only in the sense of "hear."

"See" is *hai-ken itasu*, from *hai*=*ogamu*, *ken*=*miru*, used of the possessions of others, letters from others, etc.<sup>b</sup> Compare *hai-shaku* borrow, from *shaku*=*kariru*. "Show" is *go ran ni ireru* or *o me ni kakeru* (p. 44a). *O me ni kakaru* means "meet."

*Mōshiageru* means properly "say." It is used like *mōsu*. In some localities it may also be used in the sense of "give," but this is a provincialism. "Give" is *sashiageru* or *shin-jō itasu* (*shin-tei itasu*, *tei-jō itasu*).

"Go" or "come" is *mairu*; "go" or "come" to the house of the one addressed is *agaru*; e. g., *o rei ni agaru* come to express one's obligations, *o kuyami ni agaru* come to condole,

<sup>a</sup> *Mōsu* differs from *itasu* in that its use is limited to acts affecting the one addressed. In a few instances it may be used with *go* and a Chinese compound, but not when the compound is in itself honorific; e. g., *go annai mōsu*, *go shōkai mōsu*, *go henkyaku mōsu* return (a borrowed article), but never *chōdai mōsu*, or *haiken mōsu*.

<sup>b</sup> *Haiken itasu* may not be used of seeing a person; but a physician will say: *Go yōtei wo haiken itashimashō*, or even: *Go byōin wo haiken itashimashō*. One may also say: *Kondo o umare nas'ita o ko san wo haiken itashitai*.

*o yorokobi ni agaru* come to congratulate. The formal verbs *sansuru* (*san*=*mairu*) and *san-jō itasu* are synonymous with *agaru*, and so is the rather rare *makari-ideru*, *makari* being a prefix taken from the classical language.

2. There are also verbs that are used to exalt the person addressed, or a third person.

The student is already familiar with the uses of *nasaru*, *ku-dasaru* and *ni naru* (pp. 190, 278). The very formal *asobasu* or *asobasareru* is used just like *nasaru*, especially by ladies; but the regular causative, *asobaseru*, retains the original sense of "cause to play." The exaltative corresponding to *tatematsuru* is *tamanu* (but see also p. 246, top).

"Use" is *mesu* (lit. summon); e. g., ride in rikshas, etc., is *kuruma ni mesu*, put on clothes is *kimono wo mesu*, take a bath is *o yu wo mesu* or *o yu ni mesu*.<sup>a</sup> "Eat," "drink" or "smoke" is *agaru* or *meshi-agaru*.

"See" is *go ran nasaru*. The old contracted form *gorōzuru* or *gorōjiru* is now rare, except in theaters.

"Say" is *ossharu*, derived from the now rare verb *oseru*. It should be noted that the honorific form of *mesu*, namely, *mōsareru*, is polite even in the second person.

For "go," "come," "be," we have *irassharu* or *oide nasaru* (p. 190). Of the Emperor the words (*o*) *mi-yuki* or *gyō-kō nasaru* (*ni naru*, *asobasareru*, *ga aru*, etc.) are used; of the Empress or Crown Prince, (*o*) *miyuki* or *gyō-kei* (*gyō=yuku*).

"Retire," "go to bed" is *gyo-shin ni naru*, commonly contracted to *geshinaru*, from *gyo*, a variant of *go*, and *shin*=*neru* go to bed.

Note that there is a limit to the reduplication of honorifics. Thus we may say *irasshaimashi* and *irasshite kudasai*, but not *irasshari nasai* or *irasshari ni natte itadakitai*. It should

<sup>a</sup> For the use of *mesu* as a prefix see the previous chapter. *Mesu* also occurs as a suffix in the honorific *oboshimesu* deign to think, which is used in the colloquial, especially in the form *oboshimeshi* thought. The verb *kikoshimesu* deign to hear, has passed from the sense of "hear," to that of "govern," and from this to the sense of "eat" or "drink," which it now has in the colloquial. One may say ironically: *Suzuki kun wa ippai kikoshimeshite imasu kara. nakanaka genki ga yō gozaimasu*. Suzuki is animated, having taken a drink. The verb *shiroshimesu* deign to know, does not appear in the colloquial except rarely in the sense of "govern."

be remembered that in very formal speech the ending *masuru* is more appropriate than *masu*.

### Vocabulary

<i>kakushi</i>	} pocket.	<i>bun-ko</i>	library. <sup>c</sup>
<i>poketto</i>		<i>dan-shi</i>	= <i>otoko no ko</i> boy, male, man.
( <i>o</i> ) <i>kaze</i>	} a cold.	<i>jo-shi</i>	= <i>onna no ko</i> girl, female, woman.
<i>fū-ja</i>		<i>em-pitsu</i>	lead pencil.
<i>hago</i>	shuttlecock (also <i>hane</i> ).	<i>ju-kwai</i>	displeasure, indisposition ( <i>fukwai desu</i> is indisposed).
<i>hago-ita</i>	battledore.	<i>han-jō</i>	prosperity ( <i>hanjō suru</i> be prosperous).
<i>ni-gao</i>	portrait, likeness.	<i>hei-ka</i>	His (or Her) Majesty. <sup>d</sup>
<i>oshi-e</i>	a picture in relief made of stuffed pieces of cloth.	<i>kai-sei</i>	revision.
<i>habutae</i>	a kind of thin silk cloth. <sup>a</sup>	<i>rei-fuku</i>	ceremonial dress.
<i>tan</i>	a piece of cloth between ten and eleven yards long.	<i>sei-sho</i>	a clean copy.
<i>hiki</i>	a piece of cloth containing two <i>tan</i> .	<i>shi-ken</i>	examination.
<i>uta</i>	isshu one poem ( <i>shu</i> = head).	<i>shin-nen</i>	new year.
<i>go byō</i>	= <i>o tamaya</i> ancestral shrine, sepulcher. <sup>b</sup>	<i>shihan-gakkō</i>	normal school.
<i>ai-satsu</i>	salutation, answer.	<i>yō-dateru</i>	furnish, lend.
<i>baku-fu</i>	the government of the shōgun.	<i>mazu</i>	first of all, on the whole, well.
		<i>hito-mazu</i>	once, for a while.

### Exercises

*O tsue wo o mochi asobashimash'ta (asobaşaimash'ta) ka. Sayō. jisan itashimash'ta, shikashi dochira ye okimash'ta ka*

a Undyed *habutae* is exported in large quantities.

b This term is applied to the sepulchers of shōguns and daimyōs. The sepulcher of an Emperor is *go ryō* or *mi-sasagi*.

c Libraries are now generally called *sho-jak-kwan* or *to-sho-kwan* (*sho* or *shaku*, *seki* book, *to*, *su*, drawing).

d The word *heika* is frequently used by itself as a designation of the Emperor. It is derived from *hei* steps, *ka* beneath. The corresponding title of a prince is *denka*; of a high official, *kakka*. Another term used in speaking of the Emperor is *shu-jō* (*shu* lord, *jō*=*ue*).

sonjimasen. *Danna san wa doko ni irasshaimas'ka. Hei, tadaima ya ni haitte irasshaimas'. Mada go hou wo kaishaku sh'te orimas'ga, o iriyō nara, hitomazu o kaeshi mōshimashō. O seisho wo chotto haiken (itash'tō gozaimas'). O cha wo nō IPPUKU meshiagare. Arigatō, jiyū ni chōdai itashimas'. Sakuban ku ji goro ni<sup>a</sup> go monzen wo tōrimash'ta kara, chotto o yori mōshimash'ta ga, mohaya geshinatte irasshaimash'ta. Sore wa osoreirimash'ta; yūbe wa f'kwai de arimash'te hayaku yasumimash'ta. Dōmo, kaneire ga mienaku narimash'ta; kōbō wo sagash'te mo doko ye itta ka wakarimasen. Anata sakujitsu o meshi nas'tta zūbon no kak'shi wo go ran nasaimash'ta ka. Sakujitsu chotto o rei ni agarimash'ta ga, o rusu de gozaimash'ta. Chotto a fude wo haishaku (itash'tō gozaimas'). Mata sono uchi (ni) o me ni kakarimashō.<sup>b</sup> Bakufu no jibuu no kwahai (zeni or kane) wo go ran nas'tta koto ga gozaimas'ka. Iie, mada haiken itash'ta koto wa gozaimasen. Watakushi wa uchi ni motte imas'kara, tsuide ga attara, o me ni kakemashō. O namae wa tabitabi uketamawarimash'ta ga, mada ichi do mo o ue ni kakatta koto wa gozaimasen. Ima Tōkei no shiku-kaisei ni<sup>c</sup> torikakatteru oru koto wo o kiki nasaimash'ta ka. Sorō, uketamawarimash'ta. O jō san, sono o hagōta wo chotto haiken sash'te kudasai. Oya, taisō kirei wa oshie des'koto; kore wa Fukus'ke no<sup>d</sup> nigao des'ka. Makoto ni go yakūai ni narimash'te arigatō sonjimas'. Dō ts'kamatsumimash'te. Senjitsu o hanashi mōshimash'ta koto wa, hito ni kiite mimash'tara, watakushi no mōshimash'ta tōri de mo nakereba, anata no osshatta tōri de mo nai sō des'.<sup>e</sup> Kono hou wa naikaku no bunko kara kaishaku sh'ta no des'. Anata Tōkyō ye oide no jibuu ni kwōkyō wo haiken nasaimash'ta ka. Iie, haiken itashimasen desh'ta. Konaida shinnen no o utakwa*

a Translate: about nine o'clock. The addition of *gyū ni* (p. 37c) makes the expression vague.

b An expression used in parting from a friend.

c From *sai* city, *ku* division, district ward. In this connection the term has reference to the straightening and widening of the streets.

d Fukusuke was a famous actor in Tokyo. Battlelores are often decorated with portraits of famous personages done in brocade.

e The conditional inflection in *nakereba* takes the place of a conjunction (p. 148, 1, 2).

*ni<sup>a</sup> tenshi sama mo o uta wo isslu o yomi asobasaremask'ta. Itsu o yu ni o meshi nasaimas'ka. Yu ga deki shidai hairimashō. O meshimono wa dore wo o meshi ni narimas'ka (dore ni nasaimas'ka). Go reij'ku de gosaimas'ka. Nani wo o meshi ni narimas'ka. Kono habutae wo ippiki kaimashō. Amari tak'san de nakereba, go yūdute mās'kato mo dekimas'. Shitsurei nagara go men wo kōmurimash'te koko kara go aisats'wo mōshiagenas'.<sup>b</sup> Kondan wa o tomari asobase na.*

Have you seen photographs of the sepulchers at (of) Nikkō? No, I have not yet seen them; I should like to see them if I might be permitted to do so (*ainarimasureba* or *narimasuru koto nara*). I have none, but I will borrow (borrowing come) them from a friend and show them to you. Did you see the Emperor's palace when you went to Tōkyō? Yes, I saw it, but I did not think it at all magnificent.<sup>d</sup> Which clothes (*o meshimono*) will you wear? Bring (*dasu*) the swallowtail; for I am going (*deru*) to an evening party to-night. I have come to return the umbrella (*o kasa*) that I borrowed recently. The bath is now hot (boiling); will you take it at once? Please lend me your lead pencil a moment. Did the fire break out after (*ato desh'ta ka*) you went to bed? No, it was when all in the house (*uchijū no mono ga*) were still up.<sup>e</sup> I have brought some old coins to show you (thinking I should like to show you). Recently Her Majesty the Empress<sup>f</sup> went to the Female Normal School and viewed the examinations (of the pupils). Won't you please return for a while the book that I loaned you (*go yūdute mōsh'te oita*). I should like to inquire (*ukaganu*) what you think (how is your thought) in regard to this matter. Receiving your kind favors (*o hikitate*) we are prospering more and more (*oioi*). You are catching (*mesu*) a cold.

a An *uta-kwai* is a party at which each member composes a poem on some assigned theme. Because it is the Emperor's party it is called *o utakwai* or *wa utakwai*.

b Said in a party when it is inconvenient for a person to leave his seat to make his bows before a friend.

c When honorific verbs are used, personal pronouns are generally superfluous.

d Translate: *kōdai to wa omowaremasu deshita*. For *kōdai* see p. 34c. The expression —*to omou* may be used not only with verbs and adjectives, but also with nouns: *Ano o kata wo Shinajin to omoimashita*. I thought he was a Chinaman.

e Either: *Mada okite oru toki*, or: *dare mo yasumanai uchi*.

f In very formal speech *ni wa* takes the place of *wa*.

# THE ADVERB<sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER LXXI

Adverbs may be divided into the following groups :

1. Adverbial forms of adjectives ending in *i*.
2. Adverbs formed by means of the particle *ni*.
3. Adverbs formed by means of the particle *to*.
4. Duplicatives.
5. Substantives used as adverbs of time, place, degree, etc.
6. Subordinatives of certain verbs.
7. Ordinary adverbs.

In general it is to be observed that the Japanese often employs adverbs where the English does not (Ch. XVIII.), and vice versa.

On the formation of adverbs from adjectives proper see Chapters XI. and XXX. Sometimes the contracted form, as, for instance, *yō* for *yoku*, is used with other verbs besides *gozaimasu*, while the uncontracted form in *ku* is sometimes used with *gozaimasu* :

*Yō oide nasaimashita.* Welcome !<sup>b</sup>

*Takaku wa gozaimasen.* It is not at all dear.

The adverb *yoku* is used in various senses :

*Yoku irasshaimashita.* I am glad you came.

*Yoku kimasu.* He comes often.

*Yoku wa shirimasen ga.* I don't know exactly, but...

*Yoku nite imasu.* It is very much like it.

*Yoku anata wa Nihongo wo wasuremasen.*

It is remarkable that you don't forget your Japanese.

The adverb *yoku* enters into a few compounds :

*hodo-yoku* agreeably, satisfactorily, moderately.

*ori-yoku* opportunely (opp. *ori-ashiku*).

*shubi-yoku* successfully, from *shu-bi* head and tail.

*tsug-yoku* conveniently.

a *Fuku-shi*, from *fuku*=soern add.

b The particle *koso* is often inserted here for emphasis: *Yō koso oide kudasaimashita.*

Adverbial expressions are frequently formed by combining *naku* with substantives. The addition of *mo* "even" makes them emphatic:

*ma-mo-naku* immediately, from *ma* interval.

*kodo (mo) naku* "in no time," from *kodo* quantity.

*wake-mo-naku* unreasonably, exceedingly, from *wake* reason.

*machigai (mo) naku, sō-i (mo) naku* without fail, surely.

*itashikata (mo) naku, ze-hi (mo) naku* (comp. p. 160a) perforce, of necessity.

*omoigake (mo) naku* unexpectedly, from *omou* and *kakeru*.

*oshige-mo-naku* ungrudgingly, from *oshii* regrettable and *ke* in *keshiki* appearance.

*oyami (mo) naku* incessantly (of rain), from *o* little and *yami* pause.

*taema (mo) naku* uninterruptedly, from *tae-ma* cessation.

*(go) en-ryo (mo) naku* without reserve.

*tohō-mo-naku* extraordinarily, outrageously, from *to* way *hō* direction.

*sō-sa (mo) naku* without trouble, easily.

Corresponding adjectives in *nai* are also in use.<sup>a</sup> Note also *nan-to-naku*, for *nan to iu koto* (or *wake*) *mo naku*, without any special reason, not knowing why or how.

In the cases of some adverbs in *ku* the corresponding adjectives are wanting or occur only in the literary language:

*shibaraku* (=classical *shibashi*) for some time, for a while.

*sukoshiku* = *sukoshi* a little, somewhat.

*kotogotoku* altogether, entirely, thoroughly.

*gotoku* = *yō ni* as, like (*an no gotoku* as was expected).

The particle *ni* is often added, pleonastically, to *gotoku*.

Observe the idiom in *osoroshii takai shina, tohōmonai takai mono*, where we should expect the adverbial forms *osoroshiku, tohōmonaku*.

The adverbs *tooku* far and *chikaku* near are often used like

<sup>a</sup> The expression *wake mo nai* has, however, the sense of "not difficult": *Sore wa betsudan wake mo nai koto desu*. That is not specially difficult. The idiom — *ni sōi (ga or wa) nai* or — *ni chigai nai* is often used at the conclusion of a sentence to add emphasis: *Kuru ni sōi nai*. He will certainly come. Compare: *Ano hito no iu koto ni wa machigai ga nai*. There is no mistake in what he says.



substantives: *ōku ga, ōku ye, ōku made*, etc. Compare *ōku no* many (p. 50). *ōku wa* for the most part.

The frequent idiom *Mattaku deshō* is apparently elliptical for: *Mattaku sō deshō*. It is probably quite true.

The particles *ta no* added to an adverbial form give it a concessive sense (p. 102, 5).

Note further the following idioms:

*hōbarashiku omou* consider foolish.

— *wo waruku iu* speak ill of.

*muisukashiku ieba* to use difficult (precise) language.

*Yoroshiku itte kudasai*. Please speak a good word for me.

For *yoroshiku negaimasu* and *koboreyasuku negaimasu* see p. 104, b and c; for *yoroshiku mōsu*, p. 207a.

The adverbial form of an adjective is regularly used with *naru* (p. 24) and with *suru* (p. 212, 2): *kuroku aru* become black, *kuroku suru* make black; *nakunaru* disappear, *nakusu (ru)* lose, etc. The inflections of the adjective are derived from the adverbial form and *aru*. From the imperative *are* we have *osokare hayakare* sooner or later (lit. be it late, be it early) = *sō-ban* (*sō* = *hayai*, *ban* = *osoi*).

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs.)

<i>beni</i> rouge.	<i>an</i> thought, expectation, plan.
<i>beni wo sasu</i> (or <i>tanheru</i> ) apply rouge (p. 240d).	<i>byō-bu</i> folding screen. <sup>a</sup>
<i>kumo</i> cloud.	<i>en-ki</i> postponement.
<i>kuchi-biru</i> lips.	<i>kyō-dai</i> title (of a book).
<i>kazari</i> decoration.	<i>jō-yaku</i> contract, treaty.
<i>matsu-kazari</i> Yew Year's decoration = <i>kado-matsu</i> (p. 133).	<i>ki-gen</i> temper, state of health. <sup>b</sup>
	<i>rei-ten</i> zero (naught point).
	<i>sei-chō</i> growth.

a A *kyō bu* may have two, four, six, or eight leaves. A single-leaf screen standing on a base is called *tsuite*.

b See p. 223a. *Go kigen yō* is a salutation used both in meeting and in parting, being elliptical for *Go kigen yō irasshaimasu ne*, or *Go kigen yō irasshae*. Instead of the former one may say to a familiar friend: *Go kigen desu ne*, or *Go kigen yō oide desu ne*.

<i>yō-ki</i> cheerfulness (sunlight spirit).	<i>chijimu, chijimaru</i> shrink (tr. <i>chijimeru</i> ).
<i>taiko</i> drum.	<i>someru</i> dye.
<i>taiko-mochi</i> buffoon, clown.	<i>semaru</i> be narrowed, straitened.
<i>shin</i> (c) new (in composition).	— <i>ni semaru</i> approach, oppress.
<i>wō</i> (c) this, the said, the — in question (in composition). <sup>a</sup>	<i>shi-yankeru</i> train.
<i>medetai</i> fortunate. <sup>b</sup>	<i>kuchi ga kakaru</i> be in demand (of singing girls, etc.).
<i>sabishii, samushii</i> lonely, dreary.	<i>sayō-nara</i> good-bye (lit. if it be so).
<i>umai</i> clever, well done.	
<i>o seji no ii</i> courteous, obsequious.	

### Exercises

*Taisō yoku matsukawari ga dekimash'ta, Kono honyaku wa umaku dekimash'ta. Kono sara wa taisō us'ku dekite imas'. Yoroshi'ku o agari nasai.<sup>c</sup> Sonna koto wa bakarashi'ku onoi-mas'. Ano hito wa itsu mo osoku nemas'kara, yoku asane wo shimas'. Matsubara san wa yoku watakushi no uchi ye kimas'. Osoroshii takai mon'da. Ano taikomochi wa o seji ga ii kara, yoku kuchi ga kakarimas'.<sup>d</sup> Hisashi'ku sake wo nomimasen kara, nonde miru to,<sup>e</sup> hidoku yoimashi'ta. Hido-ku ats'ku naru to, hi ni (a day) ni do zutsu mizu wo abimas'. Nihon de wa gwanjitsu no asa hayaku wakai hito ga ido ye mizu wo kumi ni ikimas'; sono mizu wo wakamizu to mōshimas'. Dōzo o kamai naku.<sup>f</sup> Tōnen wa Hakodate no*

<sup>a</sup> *Tō-nin* he or she; *tō-hō de wa* we; *tō-ji, tō-setsu* at this time (*sono tō-ji* at the time of which we have been speaking); *tō-bun* for the present; *tō-nen* this year; *tō-haru* this spring; *tō-jitsu* the day in question, etc. *Ano uma wa ittai no ho desu.* That horse was born this year (comp. p. 74, middle). The word *hon* is similarly used.

<sup>b</sup> *O medetai gozaimasu.* I congratulate you. *Shinnen o medetō, or Akemashite o medetō.* Happy New Year!

<sup>c</sup> Eat as much as you like! The expression is not one of the most refined.

<sup>d</sup> *Taikomochi* are male (rarely old women) professional entertainers belonging to the same class as the young women called *gai-sha*. They are not so numerous as the latter.

<sup>e</sup> Lit. if I drink and observe (the result); translate, "when I tried to drink."

<sup>f</sup> An elliptical expression: Never mind (about entertaining me). Don't let me disturb you. From *kamau* heed, mind.

*fune ga osoku ts'kimash'ta no de yōyaku tadaima shin-sake (shinjake) ga miatarimash'ta.*<sup>a</sup> *Oya, danna, hisash'ku o mie nasaimasen desh'ta ne; itsu mo go kigen de kekkō des'. Hodoyoku itte okimashō.*<sup>b</sup> *Hodoyoku sh'te agemashō. F'kaku hotte mita keredomo, koko wa misu ga demasen. Ni do bikkuri to wa nan no koto des'ka. Hajime taisō yoku omotte ita koto ga, ni dome ni miru to, taisō hajime to chigatte oru no de odoroku koto des'.*<sup>c</sup> *Ano hito wa dare no koto de mo waruku iimas'kara, watakushi wa waruku iware e mo kamaimasen. Fujisan ni nobottara, sazo tōku made miemashō. Iie, taitei kumo ga kakatte iru kara, amari yoku miemasen. Sayōnara, go kigen yō. Hon no hyōdai wa taigai mutsukash'ku kaite arimas'. Kore wa yasash'ku kaite arimas'kara, anata ni mo wakarimashō. Kiri no ki wa hayaku seichō shimas'. Kono daikon wo narubeku us'ku kittle kudasai. Nihon de wa niku wo komakaku kittle nimas'. Sh'ken mo shubiyoku sumimash'te o medetō gozaimas'. Bunshō wo ts'kuru ni wa narudake yasa-sh'ku kakanakereba narimassen. Haru wa nantonaku yōki ni narimas'. Ōta san wa daigakkō no sotsugyōsh'ken wo ukete kara hodo (mo) naku kyōju ni narimash'tu. Kinō wa ashi kara ban made yuki ga taema naku furimash'ta no de sanjaku bakari tsumorimash'ta. Sore wa, mutsukash'ku ieba, ko u jū ni narimas'. Myōasa ku ji made ni sōi naku koshiraete agemas'. Tochū de omoigake mo naku sensei ni aimash'ta. Sakuban amari samukatta kara, yuki de mo furu ka shiran to omottara, kesa ni natte an no gotoku masshiro ni natte imash'ta. Saigyō wa Yoritomo kara sekkaku moratta gin no neko wo oshigemonaku kodomo ni kurete shimaimash'ta.*<sup>d</sup> *Bimbō ni semararete zehi naku hito no mono wo nusumimash'ta.*

In (wa) the fall I fell melancholy; I don't know why (without any special reason *kokoromochi* becomes dreary). Please

a *Hakodate* is the chief port of Hokkaidō, the island of Ezo; *sake* or *shake* salmon; *miatarimash'ta* have appeared on the market (lit. have been found).

b I will speak to him so as to satisfy him. The next sentence means: I will fix it to suit you.

c The phrase *ni no bikkuri* may also be used in the opposite sense — of a thing which seemed very bad at first sight, but afterwards proved to be just the opposite.

d A famous Buddhist priest and poet. His conduct in the matter of the silver cat illustrates the Buddhist ideal of indifference to the things of the world.

don't think ill [of me]. After he took (*ukeru to*) his final (graduating) examination he immediately became an official. Last month it rained continually. To-day we walked about seven hours without resting. The sun is up (*demashi'ta*); we must start immediately. I will dye this red. I cannot wait long. If you do not associate a long time (long) with Japanese, you cannot learn to speak (*hanasu yō ni nararemasen*) Japanese proficiently. Since I am going to the country, I shall (do) not see (*o me ni kakaru*) you for some time. The revision of the treaties has been postponed (*enki ni naru*) for a while. This dog being well trained, is good-tempered (*otonashii*) and performs various tricks (*gei*). Yesterday (*wa 1*) it was (became) two (4) degrees (5) below (*ika 3*) zero (2); to-day (*wa*) it has become a little warmer. He bought this screen cheap and sold it at a high price (highly). The *Hakkenden* composed (*ts'kuru*) by Bakin is written very interestingly.<sup>a</sup> Condense (*chijimeru*) this sentence and make (write) it a little shorter, as it is too long. I don't know exactly, but it is probably quite true. As this mountain is low, one cannot see (*miemasen*) far. Please explain it minutely once more; I do not yet clearly (*hakkiri*) understand. Japanese ladies often apply rouge to their lips. As that is a newly made (*dekita*) word, ordinary (*atari-mae no*) people will hardly understand it. That is outrageously dear. He used up (entirely) all the money he had (*aru dake no kane*). Isn't it exceedingly cold to-day? A friend coming opportunely, I was helped [out of my difficulties].

## CHAPTER LXXII

As we have observed (Chapters XXXIII., XXXIV.), substantives which with *na* or *no* form adjectives may with the particle *ni* serve as adverbs; e. g.,

*omo ni* mainly, chiefly.

*ōki ni* greatly.

*muyami ni* recklessly.

<sup>a</sup> Bakin, the great novelist, died in 1848. The *Hakkenden*, from *hachi* eight, *ken=inu* dog, *den* biography, narrates the adventures of eight heroes, each of whose names contained the word *inu*.

*sairivai (ni)* happily, fortunately.

*tashika ni* certainly. <sup>a</sup>

*yataru ni* carelessly.

*katte ni, etc-katte ni, jibun-katte ni* selfishly, inconsiderately,  
as one pleases (p. 191d).

*waga-mama ni* waywardly, without restraint.

*matou ni* confusedly, not neatly, coarsely.

*soku ni* commonly, vulgarly, colloquially.

*gō-gi ni* enormously, extraordinarily.

*hi-dō ni* unjustly, wickedly, cruelly.

*mu-ri ni* unreasonably, in spite of every thing.

*tei-nei ni* carefully, politely.

*yō-i ni* easily.

*kari ni* temporarily, provisionally.

(o) *tagai ni* mutually, reciprocally. <sup>b</sup>

*tsugi ni* next.

*tsune ni* always.

*sasuga (ni)* under the given circumstances, as one would naturally expect.

*massaki (ni)* at the very first.

*betsu ni, betsu-dan (ni), kaku-betsu (ni)* exceptionally, particularly, specially. <sup>c</sup>

*sen ni* formerly.

*choku-setsu ni* directly, immediately (opp. *kun-setsu ni*).

*hi-jō ni* unusually, extraordinarily.

*hon-tō ni, honto ni, hon ni* really.

*ippan ni* generally, at large.

*sei-sai ni, shi-sai ni (komaka ni)* minutely, in detail.

*ten-nen ni* naturally, spontaneously.

*Konna ni, sonna ni, anna ni* (p. 39), *donna ni*, are irregular.

In many cases there is no corresponding adjective :

*koto ni* especially.

<sup>a</sup> The *ni* may be omitted when *tashika* is used with a verb in the probable form and has the weaker sense of "most likely": *Tashika iku deshō*. He will probably go. *Tashika ni ikimasu*. He will certainly go.

<sup>b</sup> *O tagai ga (wa, no, etc.)* is often used familiarly for the pronoun "we."

<sup>c</sup> "Specially" in the stricter sense is *toku-betsu-ni*.

- metta ni* seldom (with negatives).<sup>a</sup>  
*nobetsu ni* continuously.  
*sugu (ni)* immediately, at once.  
*tama ni* occasionally, once in a while.  
*tende ni* severally, each (duplicative from *te* hand).  
*tsui (ni)* at last, finally, unconsciously.<sup>b</sup>  
*tsuide ni* incidentally.  
*hi-mashi ni* day by day, every day (*masu* increase).  
*hito-kuchi ni* at a mouthful; in a word.<sup>c</sup>  
*histori-de (ni)* of itself, spontaneously.<sup>d</sup>  
*o make ni* besides, into the bargain.  
*jiki (ni)* immediately, at once.<sup>e</sup>  
*om-bin ni* quietly, peaceably, in a private way.  
*shi-dai ni* gradually.

Sometimes the particle *ni* is omitted, as the parentheses show. In a few cases *mo* may be added for the sake of emphasis; e. g., *saiwai ni mo*.

It remains to observe a few suffixes and words by means of which adverbial expressions may be formed.

One is *goto ni*, which added to a substantive means "every": *iegoto ni* in every house, *toshigoto ni* every year. But such expressions as *doko no ie ni de mo*, *ieie ni*, *kengome ni*, from *ken* (p. 86, 5) and *komeru* comprise, *maitoshi* or *mainen* (p. 50, top), etc., are more common in ordinary colloquial

The suffix *gake* may be added to stems of verbs: *ikigake ni* on the way, *kaerigake ni* or *modorigake ni*, *kigake ni*, *mairigake ni*, *tōrigake ni*. Compare: *Amerika kara kitate ni* just after my arrival from America.

In like manner *tōri*, *yō* and *fū* are used with limiting words:

a There is also an adjective *metta na*, but this means "heedless": *Metta na koto wa ienai*. It will not do to speak (lit. one cannot speak) heedlessly (anything heedless).

b The particle *ni* is never added to *tsui* when it means "unawares."

c *Hitokuchi* as a noun means a bit (of food), a little (of a speech).

d From *hitori* and the postposition *de*.

e This *jiki* is a variant reading of the character *choku* in *chokusetsu ni*. It is used commonly of immediateness in time. A corrupted form, *jika ni*, is used in the sense "without anything between," "without intervention," being synonymous with *chokusetsu ni*.

*Kono yō ni koshiraete o kure.*

Make it like this (*kono tōri ni* exactly like this).

*Uma no yō ni kuu* eat like a horse.

*Nihon-fū ni kurashite imasu.*

He is living in Japanese style.

Pleonastically one may even say : *anna yō na fū ni.*

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs.)

*ete* dexterity.

*katachi* form, shape.

*ichi-ba* market place.

*kaji-bō* shafts, thills.

*dai-tan* boldness.

*en-kaku* development (historical).

*gen-in* cause.

*kon-nan* distress, difficulty.

*kon-zatsu* confusion.

*ri-en* divorce.

*sai-fu* money bag, purse.

*sei-do* institutions, system.

*kō-shi-kwan* embassy, legation.

*it-ten* no a single (one point).

*kudaranu, kudaranai* unintelligible, absurd.

*curasu* pass (time), live, make a living.

*saeru* be bright (of the moon in the fall and winter).

*uyamau* revere.

*matomaru* be brought together, settled (tr. *matomeru*).

*mochi wo tsuku* make *mochi* (by pounding glutinous rice in a mortar).

*kiri-nukeru* cut a way through.

*tori-tateru* collect (bills, taxes, etc.).

*sata* communication, news.

*go bu-sata wo itasu* fail to keep up communication with a friend, neglect to call or write a letter (polite 1).

## Exercises

*Shizuka ni! Konna ni yakamash'kucha komaru. Nihon de mo kanai wo etekatte ni rien suru koto wa dekimasen. Sō iu yō ni kimattemas'* (p. 163 top) *ka.* *Ano hito wa sake wo yatara ni nonde imas'.* *Nihon no seifu de wa yatōi-ireta Sei-yōjin wo teinei ni toriats'kaimas'.* *Shōgwatsu ni wa iegoto ni mochi wo ts'kimas'.* *Tash'ka ni sō des'.* *Kyō wa nan de konna ni nigiyaka deshō ka.* *Makoto ni yoku tenki ga tsuzuki mash'te ii o shōgwatsu de gozaimas'.* *Mō jū ni ji no taihō ga*

*narimash'ta ka. Iie, mada des', shikashi jiki ni narimashō*  
*Ano kata wa kodomo ga mina nakunatte shiniatte jitsu ni kinodoku na koto de gozaimas'. Kichigai dōyō ni* (p. 41d) *toriat's'kawaremash'ta. Kono fūōku no genin wo shisai ni torishirabemashō. Ano hito wa ha ga warui kara, niku wa komaka ni kitte dasanakereba narimasen. Kurumaya san! kore kara saki wa michi ga waruku naru kara, s'koshi shizuka ni yatte o kure. Kono ishi wa tennen ni hito no katachi ni natte iru no de, mezurashii to itte hito ga empō kara mi ni kimas'. Makoto ni go busata wo itashimash'ta.<sup>a</sup> Iie, o tagai sama de gozaimas'. Soko wa sasuga ni Bis'mar'k' des'kara, konnan na baai mo umaku kirinukemash'ta.<sup>b</sup> Sasuga ni samurai no ko dake atte daitau des'. Makoto ni yoku ts'ki ga saete imas'; sora ni itten no kumo mo arimasen. Maru de ichiba no yō ni konzatsu shimash'ta. Sensei! mukashi tenshi to shōgun to no aida wa dō iu kwankei ni natte orimash'ta ka. Sore wa Nihon no rek'shi no uchi de taisō irikunda kotogara des'kara, nakanaka hitokuchi ni wa iemasen. Hidō ni risoku wo toritatete kanemochi ni narimash'ta. Sonna ni nen wo irete yaranak'te mo ii; zatsu ni koshiraete kurete mo ii. Shinsetsu ni sewa wo sh'te kuremash'ta. Ano gwaikoku no kata wa maru de Nihonjū ni kurash'te (no kurashi wo sh'te) imas'. Sugu ni kuruma no sh'taku ga dekite iru yō ni ki wo ts'kete oite o kure. Oki ni go yakkai ni narimash'te arigatō gozaimas'. Shōsei ga nokorazu keiko ni kuru koto wa metta ni arimasen. Kurumaya san! kajibō wo sonna ni takaku agecha abunai. Chōdo neko no me no yō ni kawariyasui hito des'. Saiju wo otosh'te omake ni kasa made nakush'te shimaimash'ta. Jibun no ete na koto wa yōi ni dekiru. Tende ni jibunkatte na koto bakari iimas'kara, sōdan ga matomarimasen. Zoku ni yuki no ōi toshi wa saku ga ii to iimas'.*

a "Pardon me for neglecting to call. This often amounts to nothing more than the expression of a wish to be friendly. The answer, *O tagai sama desu*, means: "I have been equally remiss." One may also say: *Watakushi koso, am the one [who has been remiss]*.

b In this sentence *soko wa* serves as a sort of connective: "in that predicament." The *sasuga ni—desu kara* may be freely rendered: "As was to be expected just because it was—." Compare *sasuga no Bis'mar'k' mo* even such a one as Bismarck. In the following sentence the common idiom *sasuga ni—dake atte* may be rendered: "As is to be expected in the case of—."



As I bathe in (*abite imas'*) cold water every day, I seldom catch cold (there is seldom a catching cold). On my way back I will call at (*ye*) your house. On my way to school I dropped my purse, but fortunately there was n't much in it (*hайте iru*). I am greatly troubled (*komaru*) at having been addressed (since I was spoken to) in that manner (*sō*). It is impolite to (*no wa*) say such a thing directly. The law is provisionally enacted (*dekite oru no des'*). I am very sorry (it is truly regrettable) that he has lost (losing finished) the money that he has saved (saving put) with special pains. He investigated in detail the development of the feudal system.<sup>a</sup> Do as you please. He recklessly talks (*shaberu*) nonsense (absurd things). He used a great deal of (extraordinarily) money when he was in Berlin. In (*wa*) Nagasaki even in (*de mo*) winter it does not become specially cold; snow seldom falls (there is seldom falling of snow). In old times what relations were there between Japan and Corea (*Chōsen*)? That being a complicated matter, I cannot tell you in a word. It will hardly be possible (not be easily possible) to use *Rōmaji* generally. Formerly in Japan the teacher was revered as (*dō-yō*, p. 41d) a father. The disease becomes worse day by day. There are unusually large trees in Japan. It is enormously dear. I will give it up. We will call (*yotte mairu*) at the Legation on the way to the station. That expression is not used (they do not say so) generally, but it may be that (one cannot know whether) people say that, depending (*yotte*) on the locality. Shall we send it directly to Tōkyō, or shall we request you [to take it along]. The parliament building is [only] temporarily built. If I study continuously two or three hours (*hodo*), my eyes begin to hurt (become painful). It will heal of itself, even if I don't give you [any] medicine. You must n't put the teakettle directly on the *tatami*. I met him just after my arrival from England. You must make it exactly like this. I seldom read newspapers or (*ya*) magazines.

<sup>a</sup> The feudal system, *hōken seido* (*hō* fief, *ken*=*'ateru*), is distinguished from *gun-ken seido* (*gun* county, *ken* prefecture), the modern form of government centering in the Emperor. The whole country is divided into *ken* or *fu*; the *ken*, into *gun* (*kōri*) or *shi* (cities); the *gun*, into *son* (*mura*) or *chō* (*machi*).

## CHAPTER LXXIII

The particle *to* is used with a large class of adverbs. Many of this class end in *ri*:

*bikkuri* (of a shock or fright).

*bonyari* dimly, perplexedly.

*burari*, *burabura* (of dangling or idling).

*chirari* with one glance, cursorily.

*dossari* abundantly, plentifully.

*garari*, *garagara* (of a clattering noise).

*hakkiri* distinctly.

*hirari* like a flash.

*honnori* (of redness in the sky or a person's face).

*horori*, *horohoro* (of teardrops).

*karari* brightly, completely.

*kitchiri*, *kitchinto* tightly, precisely.

*kossori*, *kosokoso* on the sly, stealthily.

*mekkiri* (of a fact that suddenly becomes noticeable).

*nikkori* (of smiling or laughing). [unwieldily.

*nossori*, *nosonoso* at a snail's pace, in a strutting manner,

*patchiri* (of large, bright eyes). [manner].

*sakuri* (of a thing that splits open readily or of a frank

*sappari* clearly, wholly, at all (p. 187b).

*sarari* entirely.

*shikkari* firmly, faithfully, substantially.

*sukkari* entirely.

*surari* (of a slender form or of a smooth motion).

*tappuri* abundantly, fully.<sup>a</sup>

*tokkuri* (*toku to*) attentively, thoroughly.

*ukkari* (*uka to*), *ukauka* thoughtlessly, inattentively.

*yukkuri* leisurely, slowly (p. 33e).

*yururi*, *juruyuru* slowly, leisurely.

Many of the above are of onomatopoeic origin. The freedom with which such words are formed and used is a characteristic of the Japanese language. Like interjections, they are hard to define.

<sup>a</sup> *Tappuri* (*taputapu*) *fulotte iru*, or, *Deppuri* *fullote iru*. He is very fat.

As indicated, there are in many cases corresponding duplicatives (see the following chapter). These, as a rule, are more strictly onomatopoeic. Thus, *surasura* is used of a smooth movement, not of a slim figure. The duplicative also implies the idea of repetition. Thus, *nikkori* is used of a single smile, while *nikoniko* indicates smiling continually. The duplicative often has an entirely different sense; e. g., *bikyubiku* (of hesitating fear), *chirachira* (of a fluttering motion), *hirahira* (of a waving motion), *karakara* (of a rattling noise, as of wine glasses, = *garagara*, or of laughter), *sarasara* (of a rustling sound, as of a river).<sup>a</sup> The adverb as a whole may be doubled: *burariburari to aruku* saunter.

Properly *to* should be added to all, but it is generally omitted. The adverbs in *ri* may also be used with *suru* (p. 215, 8), and, accordingly, *shite* may be added to or substituted for *to*. In *shikiri ni* "persistently" *to* may take the place of *ni*. *Yahari* or *yappari* "still," "too," does not belong to this class.<sup>b</sup>

The particle *to* is also used with shorter words of the same general character. The etymology of some is doubtful. The particle *to* is never separable and often coalesces with the word to which it is attached.<sup>c</sup>

*bōtto* (of beclouded vision or unconsciousness).

*chanto* precisely, properly, just, right.

*chitto* a little.

*choito*, *chotto* briefly, just a moment (*choichoi* occasionally).

*don to* (of a loud noise).

*dotto* (of sudden applause, laughter, etc.).

*gyotto* (of a state of consternation).

*hatto* (of surprise).

*hyoi to*, *hyotto* accidentally, suddenly.

a We may also say: *Senwa koto wa sarasara sonjimasen*. I don't know anything at all about it.

b Notice the odd, rather slangy expression: *Ikitari battari tabete aruita*. I journeyed eating wherever I happened to be (*iku* or, *ataru* strike). Others say *ikinari battari*.

c The adverb *fu-to* (= *hakarazu*) unexpectedly, from *fu* not and *to* = *hakaruz* calculate, belongs to a different category. There is also an onomatopoeic *futo* or *futto* used of a breath: *futto rampu too kesu to* extinguish a lamp with a puff.

*jito* firmly, steadily, with concentration.

*kitto* surely.

*mo:to* more.

*pon to* (of a little explosion).

*patto* (of a quickly spreading thing).

*patatto* with a thud.

*pishanto, pisshari to* with a slam, tight.

*pin to* (of cracking glass or crockery).

*shika to* firmly, certainly, exactly.

*sotto* softly, gently.

*tonto* totally, at all (with negative words).

*zutto* all the way, direct, very much.

With some words belonging to the class described in the previous chapter *to* also is used.

*sugu (to or ni)* immediately, at once.

*wasa to (ni)* purposely, intentionally (*wazawasa* specially, not incidentally).

*yōyatto, yatto* (from *yōyaku*) with difficulty, finally.

*zatto = zatsu ni* coarsely, briefly.

*shi-zen (to or ni)* naturally, spontaneously.

*totsu-zen (to or ni)* suddenly, abruptly.

Note finally : *nani-ka to = iroiro* in many ways ; *nan to* how !  
*Itsu-nari to* may be regarded as a briefer form of *itsu nari*  
*to mo = itsu de mo.*<sup>a</sup>

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs).

*hagi* bush-clover.

*mizo* drain, ditch, groove.

*hoya* (from *hi-ya*) lamp-chimney.

*niseru* imitate (from *niru* resemble).

*nise-mono, nise* imitation, counterfeit.

*tsuku-biki* (lit. luck drawing) distribution of prizes by

drawing lots.<sup>b</sup>

*bashō* banana tree.

a The classical *nari* is used in the colloquial to indicate alternatives : *Migi nari, hidari nari, dochira de mo ikaremasu*. You can take either way, right or left.

b This is a very common game. The slips of twisted paper drawn by lot have written on them names or expressions which are puns on the names of the prizes given.

<i>kak-kō</i> shape, form. <sup>a</sup>	<i>mi-kakeru</i> get one's eyes on,
<i>kō-jō</i> kind feelings.	catch sight of.
<i>enzetsu-kwai</i> meeting for the	— <i>ni buttsukaru</i> collide with.
purpose of hearing addresses,	<i>kokoro wo irekaeru</i> repent,
lecture-meeting.	turn over a new leaf.
<i>ji-ten-sha</i> (self-move-vehicle)	<i>hassuru</i> start, be produced.
bicycle.	<i>juku suru</i> become ripe, ma-
<i>hirogaru</i> be spread abroad,	ture.
extend (tr. <i>hirogeru</i> ).	<i>ayaniku, ainiku</i> unfortu-
<i>nozoku</i> bend the head down	nately.
to look, peep.	<i>kanarazu</i> assuredly, without
<i>toboru</i> burn (of a light).	fail.
<i>yokeru</i> get out of the way.	<i>jum-ban ni</i> in turn.

### Exercises

*Sore wa choito shi'ta<sup>a</sup> hanashi de wa arimasen. Sazo o ts'kare deshō; go yururi to o yasumi nasaimashi. Ano ie no uchi ni wa akari ga bonyari (to) tobotte imas'. Sakunen wa nanika to go kōjō ni azukarimash'te (p. 184b) arigatō; konnen mo aikawarimasezu. Mō s'koshi yururi to hanash'te kudasai. Shizen to (ni) hassuru hōsō wa tennentō to mōshimas'. Dōmo, uchi no kodomo wa itazura de waza to omocha wo kowashimas'. Fukubiki wo itashimashō; watakushi wa kuji wo shikkari to motte imas'kara, anatagata wa jumban ni o hiki nasai. Mō yo ga karari to akemash'ta. Karari to tenki ni narimash'ta. Ano hito no warui koto wa sarari to wasurete shimae. Sendai Hagi de Semmats'wo<sup>c</sup> koros'no wo mite horori to namida ga koboremash'ta. Sake wo ippai nondara kuo ga honnori to akaku narimash'ta. Mizo wo hyoi to tobikosh'ta. Hako ga don to ochita kara shi'te, me ga sameta no des'. Teppō ga don to naru to, yane no ue no hato ga mina tatte*

<sup>a</sup> *Kak-kō*—*adakamo yoshi* just about the right thing. Compare: *Kakkō ni shite agemasu*. I will sell it at a reasonable price.

<sup>b</sup> Translate: simple, easy to understand.

<sup>c</sup> The name of a boy in the celebrated drama called *Sendai Hagi*. The plains around Sendai were once famous for bush clover; in this case *Sendai Hagi* means a famous tale of Sendai. The mother of Semmatsu was in a position to substitute her own child for the heir of her lord at a time when a plot was laid to assassinate the latter.

*shinaimash'ta. Otōto wa sarari to kokoro wo irekaemash'ta. Ano onna wa surari to sh'ta ii kakkō des'. Onna hodo yo ni arigataki mono wa nashi; Shaka ya Kōshi wo hyoi hyoi to umu.<sup>a</sup> Kono ame de bashō no ha ga zutto nobimash'ta. Ima honyaku nas'tta tokoro wo zutto hajime kara mō ichi do yonde kikase nasai. Kore wa zutto moto no imi des'. O jama ni narimas'kara, o itoma (ni) itashimashō. Ma! go yururi to.<sup>b</sup> Kondo o me ni kakattara, chanto kimeru yō ni itashimashō. Kochira ye zutto o tōri nasai. Itsunari to o hanashi ni oide nasaimashi. Yatto hitogomi no naka wo ōrinukemash'ta. Kodomo ga hei ni notte ashi wo burari to sagete imas'. Gejo wa itsu no ma ni ka<sup>c</sup> kōssori to dete ikimash'ta. Ukkari (to) yokei ni haratte yarimash'ta kara, torikaesh'te kimashō. Ukkari to nisemono wo kaimash'ta. Mekiri (to) ats'ku narimash'ta. Nan to, mā, baka na koto ja nai ka. Fui ni kaminari ga natte hatto omoimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Ano onna wa me ga patchiri to sh'te imas'. Totsuzen to jūshū ni deatte yokeru koto mo dekizu abunai tokoro desh'ta. Sh'ka to wa xonjimasen ga, ōkata sō deshō. Hōchō de suikwa wo sakuri to watte mita tokoro ga, mada juku sh'te imasen desh'ta. Bōtto sh'te mukō ga niemasen. Kuri wo hi ni irete oitara, pon to hanemash'ta. Sono toki Chambaren (Chamberlain) no uwasa ga patto lirogarimash'ta. Hako ni shinamono wo kitchiri oshikonda. Kakimono wo sh'te oru ushiro kara<sup>e</sup> sotto nozoite mimash'ta ga, Suzuki kun wa ikkō ki ga ts'kimasen desh'ta (p. 221, 3). Ki no eda ni butts'katte gyotto shimash'ta. Sensei wa nikkori waratte irassharu.*

He is standing lost in thought (thinking something stands perplexedly). In (*ni wa*) Japan azaleas and camellias grow wild (naturally). Please hold (p. 198c) this firmly a little while (*chotto no aida*). How kind a person he must be! As

<sup>a</sup> A humorous poem. Translate *hyoi hyoi* to one after another very easily. *Shaka* is the Japanese form of *Sakya*, the family name of the Buddha; *Kōshi* Confucius.

<sup>b</sup> The usual phrase when one urges a caller to stay longer: Don't be in a hurry.

<sup>c</sup> Translate: no one knows when.

<sup>d</sup> *Hatto omoimashita* = *bikkuri itashimashita*.

<sup>e</sup> Observe how the adjectival phrase modifies *ushiro* directly. We should expect *Suzuki kun no* before *ushiro*.

I have been (an) a little indisposed lately, I cannot say that (*to wa*) I will surely come. On that day (*tōjitsu*) if I feel well (cond.) I will visit [you] without fail (*kanarazu*). Is there a lecture-meeting in the Kinkikwan to-day? I really don't know; <sup>a</sup> I have not heard anything about it (that *hanashi* I do not hear at all). Lately I called at (*ye*) your house just a moment (past cond.), [but] unfortunately you were out. When the gun went off (sounded *don* — past cond.), the pheasant fell with a thud. She is slender and has a good form. Shut (*shimeru* or *tateru*) the *shōji* tight, so that (*yō ni*) the dust may not come in. Read (*yondē kikaseru*) once more from the very beginning (all the way from the beginning) what (*tokoro*) you have translated. Sit properly! The cat has stolen a piece of *katsuobushi* on the sly. All burst out laughing when (*to*) they heard the story. I could n't see at all, because a tall man was standing (unwieldily) in front of me. I caught a glimpse of (with one glance got my eyes on) the fleeing robber (the fleeing and going of the robber). A boatman, seeing that (*no wo*) a child had fallen into the water, jumped in (*tobikomuu*) like a flash and saved it. The lamp chimney cracked (*wareru*) with a snap. Mother is in a brown study (is thinking steadily).

## CHAPTER LXXIV

Duplicatives form a large group of adverbs in Japanese. We have here a language within a language, as expressive as it is unique. <sup>a</sup> There are in English a few analogous expressions, such as ticktack, dingdong, rubadub, higgledy-piggledy, little by little, over and over, through and through, so-so, etc.

Most of these words are of onomatopoeic origin, either imitating a sound, or at least voicing a feeling produced by an action. They are used commonly without any particle; or with *to*, if with any at all. In most cases they cannot be translated into English:

<sup>a</sup> Translate: *ikaga desu ka*, elliptical for *ikaga desu ka sonjimasen*. Similarly *Nan desu ka* in a reply may mean: "I don't know what it is."

<sup>b</sup> An investigation made by Mr. Irie at the instance of the German psychologist Prof. Wundt resulted in a list of six hundred that are in common use.

- barabara, barari* (of things that scatter about, such as large raindrops, leaves of a torn book, etc.).
- betabeta, bettari* (of sticky things).
- bishibishi, gishigishi, mishimishi* (of creaking timbers).
- bombon* (of the faint ringing of a bell or the striking of a clock — *bombon-dokei*).
- boroboro, borori* (of ragged or crumbling things).
- buruburu* (of trembling or shuddering).
- butsubutsu, butsuributsuri* (of bubbling or grumbling).
- chibichibi* a little at a time but often, in driblets.
- chinchin, chirinchirin* (of the ringing of a small bell).
- chokochoko* (of short intervals or quick steps).
- chorochoro* (of the flowing of a brook or the toddling of a baby).
- daradara, darari* sluggishly, languidly, in a slovenly way.
- dondon* in rapid succession, in great quantity (or of the sound of a drum).
- gasagasa* (of a rustling sound, as of paper).
- gatagata, gatari* (of a rattling, slamming or banging noise).
- geragera, getageta* (of laughter).
- gōgō, gūgū* (of snoring).
- gongon* (of the sound of a large temple bell).
- gorogoro, gorori* (of a rumbling noise, as of thunder).
- gotagota* (of disorder).
- guruguru* round and round.
- guzuguzu* (of loitering, dawdling or grumbling).
- hyorohyoro* (of staggering).
- janjan* (of the sound of a fire-bell).
- kankan* (of the sound of a bell beaten with a little hammer).
- mechamecha* (of confusion).
- niyaniya* (of a grin).
- perapera* rapidly, fluently.
- pichipichi* (of a floundering fish).
- piipii* (of the sound of a flute, of whining or complaining).
- pikapika, pikaripikari* (of shining, glittering, or flashing).
- pimpin* in a vigorous or lively manner.
- pokaripokari* (of tobacco smoke or of mild heat).
- potsupotsu, potsuripotsuri* here and there, leisurely.
- pumpun* (of an order or of sullen anger).



*sawasawa* (of the murmuring of the wind).

*sesse* energetically. *sassa* hastily.

*sorosoro, sorori* slowly, softly, gradually.

*sutasuta* (of fast walking).

*teratera, tekateka* = *pikapika*.

*tsurutsuru, tsururitsururi* (of slippery things).

*waiwai* (of people in a tumult).

*zarazara, zarari* (of things rough to the touch).

*sawazawa* (of a chilly feeling or of the noise made by people passing).

*zunzun* rapidly, readily.

Some duplicatives are formed by doubling ordinary words or their stems :

*shikajika* so and so, and so on. <sup>a</sup>

*hibi (ni), hibihibi, nichinichi* = *mainichi* every day. <sup>b</sup>

*hitotsubitotsu, ichiichi* one by one, every one.

*iroiro (ni or to), shuju* in various ways.

*nakanaka (ni)* contrary to expectation, very, hardly or by no means (with negatives).

*oriori, tokidoki* at times, now and then.

*tabitabi shibashiba* at times, often.

*chikajika (ni)* in the near future, soon.

*harubaru (to)* from a distance (*haruka na* far).

*noronoro (to)* sluggishly, slowly.

*shibushibu (to)* with reluctance.

*kaesugaesu (mo)* repeatedly, exceedingly.

*masumasu* increasingly, more and more, gradually.

*nakunaku* tearfully.

*kanegane* formerly.

*kasane-gasane* repeatedly, over and over.

*kawarigawari (ni)* alternately, by turns.

*kuregure (mo)* repeatedly, again and again.

*oioi (ni or to)* gradually.

[*etrate*).

*shimijimi (to)* penetratingly, thoroughly, (from *shimiru* pen-

<sup>a</sup> Used, like the Chinese *unun* (pronounced *ununun*), instead of repeating all the words of a quotation.

<sup>b</sup> Doubling for the sake of emphasis is very common in Japanese (compare the English "very, very"): *Mainichi mainichi kimasu*. He comes day after day. At the beginning of a tale one may hear: *Mukashi mukashi (sutto) ō-mukashi* Many, many years ago, in very ancient times. Compare also p. 92e.

- shinobishinobi* stealthily, (from *shinobu* conceal one's self).  
*yoknyoku* very carefully, exceedingly.  
*iyoiyo* increasingly, after all, certainly (from the classical *iya* more and more).  
*tamatama* rarely, unexpectedly.  
*betsubetsu* (*ni*) separately.  
*dandan* (*ni* or *to*) gradually (from *dan* step).  
*konkon* (*to*) carefully, in a kindly or friendly manner.  
*nennen*, *saisai* (*ni*) yearly.  
*sansan* (*ni*) recklessly, harshly, severely.  
*shōshō* a little.  
*shidaishidai* (*ni*) gradually.

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs).

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <i>ōke</i> tub, (wooden) bucket.  | <i>kek-kon</i> marriage.  |
| <i>sasa</i> bamboo grass.   | <i>setsu-yu</i> instruction, advice, reprimand.                             |
| <i>yoko</i> side, transverse or horizontal direction (opp. <i>tate</i> ). | <i>tai-riku</i> continent.  |
| <i>ha-ori</i> [Japanese] coat.  | <i>tan-tei</i> secret investigation, detective (properly <i>tanteiri</i> ). |
| <i>ko-ashi</i> little steps.  | <i>yu-nyū</i> imports.  |
| <i>katte</i> } kitchen.   | <i>yu-shutsu</i> (often proncd. <i>yu-shitsu</i> ) exports.                 |
| <i>daidokoro</i> }  | <i>hi-mi ga yoi</i> = <i>kokoromochi ga yoi</i> (p. 138).                   |
| <i>an-satsu</i> assassination.  | <i>areru</i> be rough, be desolate (of land), be refractory.                |
| <i>do-jin</i> native, aborigine.  | <i>furueru</i> shake, tremble.  |
| <i>fu-bun</i> rumor.  | <i>kasaneru</i> pile one on top of another (intr. <i>kasanaru</i> ).        |
| <i>gi-kwai</i> deliberative assembly, congress, parliament, diet.         | <i>kōru</i> freeze. <sup>a</sup>  |
| <i>jūn-shu</i> race (ethnological).                                       | <i>migaku</i> polish.   |
| <i>jin-rei</i> pilgrimage, pilgrim (properly <i>junrei-sha</i> ).         | <i>sutaru</i> be discarded (tr. <i>sutaru</i> ).                            |
| <i>roku-bu</i> pilgrim.   |   |
| <i>kei-yō</i> figure, metaphor.   |   |

<sup>a</sup> The subordinative of *kōru* is properly *hōtte*, but it is often shortened to *hōtte*. Comp. *hōru*, *hōtte*, p. 228, Voc.

<i>yoromeku</i> stumble, stagger.	<i>ibiki wo kaku</i> snore.
<i>ato wo tsukeru</i> follow in another's track.	<i>tsusuke-sama ni, tsusukedama ni</i> continuously, one after another.
<i>tabako wo fukasu</i> smoke tobacco.	<i>yoppite (yo hito yo)</i> the whole night.
<i>hitori-goto wo iu</i> talk to one's self.	

## Exercises

*Ano hito wa ansatsu saremash'ta ka. Sō iu fubundes' ga, ma-da hakkiri wakarimasen (iyoiyo sō<sup>a</sup> to wa iemasen). Amerika no dojin no kazu wa dandan (ni) hette kimas'. Kō iu (konna) kudaranai fūsoku wa oiai s'tatte kite mo yō gozaimas'. Iroiro o sewa sama ni narimash'te makoto ni arigatō gozaimas'. Ano ok'san wa chokochoko koashi de arukimas'. Ano kahi wa o shiroi wo betabeta (thick) ts'kete imash'ta. Andō san wa yoku o taku ye niemash'ka. Moto wa shibashiba kimasht'a ga, kono sets'wa sappari konaku narimash'ta; dō sh'te iru ka shira. Shimbun-haitatsu ga chirin'chirin to kane wo narash'te kimasht'a. Rokubu wa kankan to kane wo tataite arukimas'. Masumasu samuku natte kite, dōmo, komarimas'. Chikajika ni Ōu (no) tetsudō ga<sup>b</sup> dekite shimaimashō. Hiragana ga sunsun (to) yoneru kurai (gurai) ni nattara,<sup>c</sup> kanji wo narai nasaru ga yō gozaimashō. Oke no naka no sakana ga pichipichi hanemas'. Kono ni san nichi wa<sup>d</sup> iyoiyo atataka ni narimash'ta. Hinichi ga sunsun tachimas'. Kono yoko wo kuruma ga garagara tōru<sup>e</sup> kara, yakamash' kute benkyō ga dekimasen. S'ta-s'ta aruite hi no kurenai uchi ni yadoya ni ts'kimash'ta. Ta-*

a For *sō da*; *wa* following a dependent clause with *to* puts the whole statement in antithesis to other possible statements, and so emphasizes its significance: that it is so one can not say with certainty.

b The word *ō* (interior—same character as *oku* in *oku san*) designates the eastern part of the northern end of the main island, while *u* is the initial of the names of the corresponding western provinces, Uzen and Ugo, formerly called Dewa. *Ōu* is also called *Tō-hoku* (east-north), as it lies north-east of the island.

c Translate —*kurai ni nattara* when you get so proficient that—. Compare the use of *hodo* in: *Kurakute ashimoto ga mienai hodo desu* (p. 101, 2).

d Translate: the last two or three days. *Koko ni san nichi* the next two or three days.

e *Yoko wo tōru* pass along the side (of the house).

*bako wo pokaripokari to fukash'te iru to iu no wa hima de tai-kutsu sh'te sh'kata ga nai kara, tsuzukezama ni tabako wo nomu yūs'wo keiyō sh'te iu no des'. Sakana ga pimpin hanete ryōri ga shinikui. Nihon no yushuts'wa nennen suete kite yunyū yori mo ōku narimash'ta. Tonari de amado wo garagara shimete imas'. Take ni kaze ga sawasawa fuite imas'. Soto ye deru to, karada ga sawazawa suru kara, haori wo kasanete dekakemashō. Ano ōki na tokei wa bombon narimas'. Hanshō wa janjan, tera no kane wa gongon narimas'. Yūbe tonari de hito ga gōgō (gūyū) ibiki wo kaku kara, yoppite nerarenakatta. Ano hito wa nandaka butsubutsu hitorigoto wo itte imas'. Okame wa<sup>a</sup> nikoniko sh'tu kao wo sh'te imas'. Ano hito wa niyaniya waratte bakari ite nandaka kokoro no soko no wakaranai hito da. Kaminari wa narazu ni inabikari bakari pikapika shimas'. Eta wa<sup>b</sup> Shina kura kita mon des'ka. Iyoiyo sō to wa wakarimasen ga, sō ka mo shiremasen. Gejo ga guzuguzu sh'te iru kara, yoru osoku naru made daidokoro ga katazukimasen. Kono hon wa nakanaka ats'kute ikura sassa to yonde mo yōi ni o shimai ni narimasen. Sassa to sh'te shimae. Nihon no tegami no bun wa mutsukash'kute nakanaka oboeremasen. Inu wa byōki de guruguru mawatte imas'. Nihon no naikaku wa ima gotagota sh'te imas', Kaminari ga garagara natte kimash'ta.<sup>c</sup> Uchi no inu wa kinō made nete bakari imash'ta ga, kyō wa pimpin sh'te imas'. Tegami no kakidashi (beginning) ni wa yoku masumasu go kigen yoku<sup>d</sup> shikajika to iu kotoba ga hairimas'. Karada ga daradara sh'te hatarakenai. Potsupotsu aruite itte mo yūgata ni wa ie ni kaeremashō. Teishaba no mae ni ōsei hito ga*

a The smiling face of Okame (alias *Otafuku*) is familiar to all who have seen Japanese *men* (masks), her characteristic features being a flat nose, small eyes and projecting forehead and cheeks. She is supposed to be the same as Uzume, the goddess of joy and wantonness, who, according to the received mythology, danced so merrily before the cave in which the sun-goddess had hid herself that the latter was induced to open the door and look out. She is represented as perpetually smiling.

b The Eta were formerly the lowest class of people. One of their trades was the slaughtering and flaying of cattle.

c Of thunder near by. The sound of distant thunder is represented by *gorogoro*.

d I hope you are quite well (lit. increasingly well).

*atsumatte waitwai sawaide orimas'ga, nani ka meznraskii koto de mo arimas'ka. Kawa ga sarasara nagarete iru. Iiyak'shō ga sesse to kaseide orimas'. Ano kichigai wa geta-geta (geragera) waratte bakari ite nandaka kimi ga warui. Fuyu ni naru to, ūrai no yuki ga kōtte tsurutsuru subette aru-kinikui. Tantei ga shinobishinobi dorobō no ato wo ts'kele ikimash'ta. Gons'ke ga yoku migaite kureta no de kuts'wa teratera sh'ite imas'. Amerika de wa kekkon no toki ni kome wo barabara nagets'keru shūkwan ga gozainas'. Hon ga barabara ni natte tsuzuki ga wakarimasen. Meshi ga boroboro sh'ite kuenai.<sup>a</sup> Te ga arete (chapped) zarazara shimas'. Dondon kane wo ts'kaimas'. Samugatte buruburu surue:ie imas'. Kore ni wa iroiro wake ga aru. Soto wa zawazawa suru ga, nanigoto ka okita de nai ka. Shimijimi iya ni nari-mash'ta.*

In this region (*wa*) vehicles are rattling (pass noisily) all the time; consequently it is so noisy that last night I couldn't sleep all night. He smokes tobacco from morning to night. The population of Japan increases yearly. When the cherry blossoms bloom every one is lazy (all idling do not work). Thunder is rolling in the distance (*tōku de*). A drunkard staggering about stumbled against a stone and finally fell over. That old gentleman is still hale (*tassha de*) and vigorous. Did the Japanese race in ancient times come across (crossing come) from the continent? There is (also) such an opinion; but we don't know certainly whether it is so or not (*sō ka dō ka*). You won't catch the train if you dawdle (are dawdling) like that. If you don't hurry (hastily doing finish), the day will be gone (*hi ga kureru*). Chinese characters are so difficult that [I] will hardly (*nakanaka*) be able to learn [them]. To-day, as the weather is fine, we will saunter through (idly walk the region of) Shiba. The French parliament is now and then quarrelsome (*kenkwa nazo ga atte*) and disorderly. It has begun to rain (p. 231, 4). Last night after one o'clock it snowed more and more heavily (*hidoku*). I was startled (*gyotto suru*) as a bear came with a rustling sound out of a thicket

<sup>a</sup> The Japanese do not like rice unless it is cooked just enough to make it stick together, but no more.

of bamboo grass (*sasayabu*). The brook flows with a murmuring sound. When there is any little thing (*nani ka s'koshi de mo*) that displeases him, he is sullen and, though you speak [to him], does not reply. Oxen walk slowly. The sick one is gradually becoming weaker (*yowatte kuru*). A policeman is carefully advising [him]. He came out with reluctance. At (*ni wa*) *Setsubun* beans are scattered (*barabara maku*) all through the rooms (*heyagoto ni*). He took leave (*wakareru*) of (*ni*) his parents and went out tearfully. Lately on account of the snow (*yuki ga furu no de*) the poor are in distress and are complaining. Hoping (thinking) to reach the deathbed (*shinime ni au*) of my father, I came from far Formosa (a long distance from *Taiwan*); but (*no ni*) missed it (could not meet) by a day (*ichi nichu no chigai de*). He uses up his money in driblets.

## CHAPTER LXXV .

Many words which are translated by means of adverbs are really substantives used adverbially. This is true of many of the words which we class as ordinary adverbs (Ch. LXXVII.). In this chapter we shall confine our attention to certain words denoting place, time, degree, etc., which are still in use as substantives proper.

Such are *koko*, *soko*, *asoko* (*asuko*), *doko*, *dokka*, *soko*, *koko*, *kochira*, *sochira*, *achira*, *dochira*, *achi kochi* or *achira kochira* (*to*), *konata* here, *kanata* there, etc.<sup>a</sup> They take particles and postpositions just like nouns:

*Doko ga o itō gozaimasu ka.*

Where have you pain (Which place is painful) ?

*Doko wo sagashimashita ka.* Where have you searched ?

*Doko deshita ka.* Where was it ?

<sup>a</sup> *Konata* is used politely in speaking of a host's house: *Konata sama de wa mina sama go jōbu de kekkō de gozaimasu.* I am very glad all are well at your house. It is also used as a personal pronoun of the first person. *Go busata wo itashite orimashita. Iie, konata kara koso shitsurei bakari itashite orimasu.* I have been quite remiss. No, it is I who am always rude. Compare *anata*, *sonata*, *donata*, pp. 28 42.

To the same category belong such substantives as *mae*, *saki* or *omote* front, *ura* or *ushiro* back, *naka* or *uchi* inside, *soto* outside, *ue* above, *shita* below, *mukō* the place opposite or yonder, *hoka* another place,<sup>a</sup> etc., which serve also in lieu of postpositions and will be treated under that head. As has been explained (p. 20a), words of this kind take the particle *ni* to indicate the place where a thing or person exists and *de* to indicate the scene of an event or a certain condition of things. This rule applies likewise to such words as *empō* a distant place, *atari*, or *ken* (*kono ken*, *sono ken*, etc.), or *kimpen* vicinity, etc. But we must keep in mind other uses of *ni* and *de*. The former may also have the sense of "to" and indicate an indirect object, while the latter often performs the same function as the subordinative termination of the verb.<sup>b</sup> Compare:

<i>Koko ni orimasu.</i>	I am here.
<i>Koko ni okimasu.</i>	I shall (will) put it here.
<i>Koko de yasumimashō.</i>	I shall (will) rest here.
<i>Koko de yoroshii.</i>	This place will do.

Words denoting time when used as adverbs commonly take no particles. But when a contrast is implied, or when the corresponding adverb in the English sentence takes the first or emphatic position, *wa* is required (p. 23c). A word denoting time in an unemphatic position, in the few cases when a particle is used, takes *ni*: *ima ni*, *mae ni*, *nochi ni*, *asa ni*, *ban ni*, etc. There are some apparent exceptions. Thus *ima de wa*, *konnichi de wa*, etc., are equivalent to *ima ni natte wa*, etc. The expression *ato de*, in contrast with *nochi ni*, originally denoted position. Also compare:

<i>Ato de o hanashi mōshimashō.</i>	I will speak to you afterwards.
<i>Kore wo ato ni shita hō ga ii.</i>	It is better to postpone this.

Any of these words may by means of the particle *no* be made

a This *hoka* may mean not only "elsewhere," but also "besides." Note also *omoi-no hoka (ni)*—*an-gwan* (c) beyond expectation, and *koto-no-hoka (ni)* exceedingly, from the *koto* in *koto ni* especially.

b There are a few adverbs formed by means of this *de*, but they are hardly numerous enough to make a separate chapter; e. g., *ato de* afterwards, *maru de* entirely *mina de* altogether, *tada de* gratis, *hitori de* alone (in the sense of "spontaneously" *ni* may be added), *kachi de* afoot, *hisashiburi de* after a long interval, *jibun de* by one's self, *tochū de* en route.

an adjective (p. 119): *mukō no o tera* yonder temple; *ima no seitō* the present political parties, *yūbe no kwaji* last night's fire. The principal adverbs of time are (comp. p. 66a):

*konnen, kotoshi, tōnen* this year.

*sakunen, kyonen* last year.

*issakunen, ototoshi (otodoshi)* year before last.

*issakusakunen, sakiototoshi* two years before last year.

*myōnen, rainen* next year.

*myōgonen, sarainen* year after next.

*kongetsu, kono tsuki* this month.

*sengetsu, atogetsu, mae no tsuki* last month.

*sensengetsu* month before last.

*raigetsu* next month.

*saraigetsu* month after next.

*konshū, kono shū* this week.

*senshū* last week. *raishū* next week.

*konnichi, kyō* to-day.

*sakujitsu, kinō* yesterday.

*issakujitsu, ototoi* day before yesterday.<sup>a</sup>

*issakusakujitsu, sakiototoi* two days before yesterday.

*myōnichi, asu, ashita* to-morrow.

*myōgonichi, asatte* day after to-morrow.

*yanoasatte, shiasatte* two days after to-morrow.

*aru hi (no koto)* on a certain day, one day.

*yokujitsu (ni), akuru hi (ni)* the following day.

*asa (ni)* in the morning (*asa hayaku* early in the morning).

*konchō, kesa* this morning.

*kesahodo, kesagata* this morning (used later in the day).

*sakuchō, kinō no asa* yesterday morning. [ing.]

*myūchō, myōasa, asu no asa, ashita no asa* to-morrow morn-  
ban (*ni*) *banhodo, bankata (bangata), bankei, yūkata (yū-  
gata), yūkoku* in the evening (p. 232d).

*sakuban, sakuya, yūbe* last evening.

*komban, konya, konseki* this evening.

<sup>a</sup> *Ototoi* or *ototsui* is derived from *ochi*, yonder, far, *tsu*, and *hi*. This *tsu* is an old genitive particle. It appears also in *ononukara* or *misukara*, classical for *jibun de*. With *ototoi* compare *ototoshi*, from *ochi* and *toshi*.



*myōban, myōya, asu no ban, ashita no ban* to-morrow evening.  
*hiru* by day. *yoru* by night.

*ima (ni)* now. <sup>a</sup> *imagoro (ni)* about this time.

*tadainma* now, just now (past), presently (future). <sup>b</sup>

*imagata, imashigata* a moment ago.

*sakki, sakihodo, senkoku* a short while ago (less than a day).

*kono setsu* in these days.

*sakkon* nowadays (lit. yesterday and to-day).

*konohodo, konoaida (konaida)* lately, recently. <sup>c</sup>

*senjitsu, sakigoro* a few days ago, the other day.

*kinnen* in recent years (*kin=chikai*).

*moto* originally, formerly.

*mukashi* in ancient times.

*hajime (ni)* at the beginning, at the first.

*saisho (ni)* at the very first.

*nochihodo, nochigata* after a little while (within the day).

*kondo* next time (also : this time).

*chikai uchi (ni)* within a short time, soon.

*kinjitsu* within a few days (*kin=chikai*).

*nochinochi* after some time, after a long time.

*shōrai* in the future.

*itsu, itsugoro* when, about when ?

Attention may well be called once more to *kurai, bakari, dake, hodo* (pp. 22b, 36, 43, 48b), words which generally perform the functions of true adverbs, taking no particles, but sometimes are treated just like nouns. Words like *mina, ōsei*, etc. (Ch. XVIII.), are used both as adverbs and occasionally as substantives. So also :

*banji* all things, or, in every respect.

*daitai* the principal part, or, in the main.

*tashō* many or few, much or little, quantity, or, more or less.

*taigai, taitei* generality, or, for the most part, almost.

a Practically, of course, such a word as "now" must refer either to the immediate future or to the immediate past. *Ima* may also be used like *mō* in the sense of "more": *ima ippai* one cup more. For *imagoro* note: *itsu de mo imagoro* always about this time.

b *Tadainma* differs from *tatta ima* in that the latter can refer only to the past.

c *Chikagoro* and *konogoro* may be used either of an event in the recent past, like *konohodo* and *konoaida*, or, like *kinrai*, of a state of things continuing to the present.

*Taigai (taitei) ni shite oka.* Don't take too much pains.

To the same category belong the suffix *chū* or *jū* (p. 137a), as in *karadajū* the whole body, and *ichidō* (lit. one and the same), as in *kyōin seito ichidō* the teachers and pupils as a body, the whole school. Such compound expressions may be used adverbially, without particles, and also as substantives.

Finally we might include the numerals, with *ikutsu*, *ikura* or *nanihodo* (vulgar *nambo*), etc. But the numeratives, though originally substantives, never take the particles *ga*, *wo*, etc., and are therefore to be classed as adverbs.

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs.)

<i>katana</i> sword.	<i>hot-tan</i> beginning
<i>nada</i> stretch of rough sea.	<i>hyō-ban</i> rumor (— <i>no hyōban wo suru</i> ), reputation, popularity.
<i>sakai</i> boundary, frontier.	
<i>kake-ji</i> = <i>kake-mono</i> .	<i>ken-pō</i> the constitution.
<i>karasu</i> clear off, dispel (intr. <i>hareru</i> ).	<i>shi-nin</i> dead person.
<i>mi-harashi</i> an extensive view.	<i>tō-ji</i> medical treatment at a hot spring ( <i>tō</i> = <i>yu</i> ), taking the baths.
<i>kataru</i> speak, tell.	<i>gam-pi-shi</i> Japanese paper of very fine quality.
<i>mono-gatari</i> tale.	<i>kō-ban-sho</i> police substation (p. 94f).
<i>oka</i> hill, land.	<i>gyō-sei-kwan</i> administrative official
<i>ho</i> ear (of grain).	<i>sai-ban-kwan</i> judge. <sup>b</sup>
<i>oka-bo</i> upland rice.	<i>tabako-bon</i> tobacco tray (containing a small <i>hibachi</i> , <i>haifuki</i> , etc.).
<i>yaki-ba</i> crematory.	
<i>yu-ya</i> } public bath.	<i>ki-myō na</i> strange, wonderful.
<i>sen-tō</i> }	
<i>sū, su</i> (c) number. <sup>a</sup>	
<i>chi-sho</i> } = <i>ji-men</i> land, lot of	
<i>ji-sho</i> } ground.	
<i>to-chi</i> }	
<i>hap-pu</i> promulgation.	

<sup>a</sup> This is a very common word: *sū-gaku* mathematics, *dai-sū* algebra (*dai* substitution), *tan-sū* singular number, *fuku-sū* plural number, *ri-sū* number of *ri*, *su-hyaku* several hundred, *su-ka-getsu* several months.

<sup>b</sup> The term *shi-hō-kwan* (administer-law-official) includes both *han-ji* judges and *ken-ji* public prosecutors.

*hakaru* calculate, estimate, *nikki wo kuru* turn leaves of weigh, consider. a diary.

*motomeru* desire, search for, *massugu (ni)* straight purchase. *subete* in general, all.

*kachi de iku* go afoot.

### Exercises

*Koko wa Ōkubo san no korosareta tokoro des.* 'Sakujitsu o motome nas'tta kakeji wa soko ni o mochi de gozaimas'ka. Chotto soko ye itte kimas'.<sup>a</sup> Mukashi koko ye zainin no kubi wo sarashimash'ta. As'ko ni tōmyōdai ga dekimash'ta kara, mō kono nada de hasen wa arimas'mai. Doko ga o itō gozaimas'ka. Doko to mo iemasen ga, karadajū (ga) itō gozaimas'.<sup>b</sup> Myōnichi wa yo ga aketara, sugu ni okosh'te o kure. Dare ka tabakobon wo motte koi. Hai, tadaima. Kono kimpun ni kōbansho ga arimasen ka. Koko kara massugu ni san chō hodo iku to, (kōbansho ga) arimas'. Kono gampishi wa doko de o kai ni narimash'ta ka. Soko no kamiya de kaimash'ta. Hakone<sup>c</sup> nado ni wa moto sekisho ga atite, tegata ga nakereba, tō-raremasen desh'ta. Dokka kono hen de ippai yarakashimashō; doko ga ii ka shira<sup>d</sup> Miharashi ga yō gozaimas'kara, Uwajū ye mairimashō. Jōyaku-kaisei sen de mo seifu ni yatorareta gwaikokujin wa Nihonkokujū doko ye de mo sumu koto ga dekimash'ta. Kome wa doko ni de mo ts'kuru to iu wake ni wa ikanai. Mizu wo hikenai tochi ni wa okabo no hoka wa ts'kurenai.<sup>e</sup> Chotto soko ye iku n' des'kara, ramp' wa kesazu ni okimashō. Kore kara saki wa saka ga ōi kara, kuruma kara orite aruite mairimashō. Koko wa uma wa kaes'tokoro des'kara, orite arukanakereba narimasen. Sentō (yuya) wa doko ni de mo arimas'. Koko de wa jama ni naru kara, hibachi wo sochira ni yare. Mukō ni kemuri no

a Translate: I am going out for a little while. *Soko ye* is used indefinitely: for *itte kimasu* see p. 231.

b *Doko to mo iemasen.* I can't say where. Compare: *Nan to mo iemasen.* I can't say. It may be. I don't know.

c The well known pass on the Tōkaidō.

d *Yarakasu* is a vulgar equivalent of *yarū* or *suru*; *ippai yarakasu* take a drink. *Uwajū* is the name of a restaurant in Mukōjima.

e *Okabo no hoka wa* anything (any kind of rice) except upland rice. For the particle *ni* in these two sentences compare pp. 56c, 59b.

*deru tokoro ga arimas'ga, (are wa) nan des'ka. As'ko wa shinin no yakiba (kwasōba) des'. Konnichi hajimete wakarimash'ka. Ima kitchiri roku ji des'ku. Mada karekore jippun hodo mae deshō. Onna wa yoru soto ye deru mono de wa nai. Kinō nikki wo kutte mitara, konna warui tenki ga mō tōka bakari tsuzukimas'. Sassok'desu ga,<sup>a</sup> konnichi wa shōshō o negai mōsh'tai koto ga atte mairimash'ka. Danna wa itsu (de) mo o rusu no yō des'ga, do sh'ta mon'deshō. Iie, shijū rusu to iu wake de wa gozaimasen; bankata roku ji go ni irasshareba, itsu mo o uchi des'. Sensei, Godaigo tennō ga<sup>b</sup> Oki ye shimanagashi ni seraremash'ta no wa itsugoro des'ka (itsugoro no koto des'ka). Sayō, karekore go hyaku shichi jū nen hodo mae no koto des'. Chikagoro ito wa f'keiki des'. Monogatari no hottan ni wa yoku "ima wa mukashi" to kaite arimas'. Moto wa gyōseikwan ga saibankwan wo kanete ita ga, ima de wa betsubetsu ni narimash'ka. Sore wa dare ga saisho ni iidash'ta koto des'ka. Konogoro wa mata jōyaku-kaisei no hyōban ga gozaimas'. Imashigata kaminari ga nat-ta ja nai ka. Ima Ueno no kane wo utta yō des'ga, uchi wa shimasen desh'ta ka; nan'ji no kane deshō. Tadaima ni ji wo uchimash'ta. Ni jū ni nen no haru kempō ga happu ni narimash'ta. Washi hodo hayaku tobu tori wa nai. Kono chisho wa shōrai hijō ni takaku narimashō. Chikagoro wa kotonohoka o samū gozaimas'. Daitai dekimash'ta.*

This (*koko wa*) is Japan Bridge; distances in every direction (*hōbō ye no risū*) are all calculated from this bridge (they calculate making this bridge the origin). To (*made wa*) that place we can ride (go by horse), but beyond (*kara wa*) that we must dismount and go a foot. Last year (*wa*) I stopped here; but will not stop this time (*wa*), because the rooms were dirty. Where are you going this vacation (*ni wa*)? I should like to go somewhere among the mountains (*yama ye de mo*). I lost my notebook somewhere (*ye*); no matter where I search I

a By using this expression one makes an apology for proffering a request without the usual ceremonious preliminaries.

b The Emperor *Go-daigo*, "the later Daigo" (*go=inochi*) reigned 1319—1338. Having made an unsuccessful attempt to wrest the supreme power from the Hōjō family, he was banished to the island of Oki in the Sea of Japan.

cannot find it (*mits'karimasen*). This sea (1) is not always (2) [so] calm as (4) [it is] to-day (3). The cold in (of) Hokkaidō is almost the same as [that of] Germany. In Japan there are a good many mountains that are as high as Oyama. In the whole world there are no [other] mountains as high as the Himalayas. Last night it was very hot, so that I could not sleep well. To-day swords are often sold to Europeans, because they are no longer needed (have become useless). What time is it now? It is probably about ten o'clock. Go to the neighbor's and inquire if the master is at home. I just now caught sight of (*mika-keru*) him going out in (*de*) a riksha. This year the heat seems (*yō des'*) to continue long. I feel queer (a strange feeling does) to-day for some reason or other (*nandaka*). At the beginning I could not sit [in the Japanese way], but afterwards (*wa*) I gradually became accustomed [to it]. Every year when summer comes (it becomes summer) he goes for (*ni*) treatment to hot springs (of) here and there. Lately many missionaries were invited to the American Legation and entertained. Outside it looks unattractive (*kitanai*), but inside it is very fine.

## CHAPTER LXXVI

The subordinatives of certain verbs must be rendered by means of English adverbs; e. g., *kasamete iu* say repeatedly, *keiyō shite iu* speak metaphorically, etc. The following words have become practically adverbs. A few of them, which we may designate as formal, are heard not so much in common conversation as in speeches:

*aete* daringly (formal).

*aratamete* again, anew.

*hajimete* for the first time.

*hatashite* after all, really, as was expected.<sup>a</sup>

*itatte* exceedingly, very.

*kaette* on the contrary, rather.

<sup>a</sup> As is not infrequently the case, the native word has become formal, in the sense of "as was expected," while *an no gotoku* generally takes its place in the colloquial.

*kanete* previously.

*kiwamete* extremely (formal).<sup>a</sup>

*kosotte* all (formal).

*mashite* how much more.

*narashiite* on an average, from *narasu* level (p. 201a).

*otte* afterwards, by and by, from *ou* chase.

*sadamete* in all probability, doubtless (with probable form).

*semete* at least.

*shiite* compulsorily, perforce, importunately.

*subete* in general, all.

*tatte* urgently, importunately.

*wakete*, *tori-wake* especially.

*mae-motte* = *mae ni* previously, beforehand.<sup>b</sup>

*omoi-kitte* decisively, resignedly (p. 292, 11).

*ori-itte* persistently, earnestly.

*oshi-nabete* (classical *nabete*) in general, on an average.

*besshite* especially, for *betsu ni shite*.

*kesshite* (p. 214a) positively, never (with negatives).

Compare *dō shite* how, how is it that, why (p. 212b), *dō shite mo* by no means (with negatives), *sō shite* then, so, and (p. 212, 3), *toki to shite* at times.<sup>c</sup>

The etymology of these words in all cases where it is practically helpful will readily be guessed by the student. But it should be noted that the following verbs are obsolete, in the colloquial: *aeru dare*, *kosoru* assemble, *suberu* bring together, govern, and *naberu* or *nameru* = *naraberu* put in a row.

Both *hajimete* and *subete* are used with *no* as adjectives: *hajimete no koto* the first instance, *subete no mono* all things. Note also *motte-no-hoka* = *omoi-no-hoka* or *koto-no-hoka* very (always used in a bad sense).

The following are derived from negative subordinatives :

a The verb *kiwameru* to determine, or to carry to an extreme, is best translated by means of the adverb "extremely": *ogori* (or *sei-taku*) *woo kiwameru* to be extremely luxurious.

b The adverb *asatte* day after to-morrow is derived from *asu* and *satte*, from *saru* leave; *sendatte*, from *sen* and *tatte*, from *tatsu* pass, elapse.

c The expression *yaya-mo sureba* (or *yaya mo suru to*) "quite often," derived from *yaya* gradually, considerably, is also practically an adverb, though it is usually to be rendered "is apt to," like *tokaku*.

*hakarazu* (*mo*) unexpectedly.

*nokorazu* all.

*oboezu* unconsciously.

*omowazu* unintentionally.

*tarazu* closely, nearly.

*kanarazu* assuredly, certainly, without fail, necessarily.

*tōkarazu* in the near future, soon.

*mukō-mizu ni* blindly, recklessly.

*yamu-wo-ezu, yamuoezu* unavoidably (p. 259b).

*ai-kawarazu* as always.

*tori-aezu* immediately, in haste, provisionally.

*tori-mo-naosazu* namely, in other words, the same thing as.

*shirazu-shirazu* unawares.

### Vocabulary

*ie-gara* lineage (p. 217a).

*ke-mono* hairy quadruped,  
beast.<sup>a</sup>

*yuki-doke* thawing of snow.

*moto-kin* } capital,  
*gwan-kin* } principal.

*kō, kō-kō* (the second *kō*=*o-*  
*konai*) filial piety.

*fu-bo* father and mother.

*fu-shin* inability to compre-  
hend, doubt, suspicion.

*kō-zui* flood.

*ris-shin* } rise in the world,  
*shus-se* } promotion.

*shin-tai* body.

*shū-shō* lamentation, mourn-  
ing.

*sui-gai* damage by floods.

*to-kwai* city, metropolis.

*yū-reki* traveling for pleasure.

*shū-gi-in* the Lower House,  
House of Representatives  
(p. 305a).

*tei-shutsu-an=gi-an* bill (p.  
303a).

*mottomo na* reasonable.

*ki-muzukashii* ill-humored.

*iyagaru* dislike.

*osamari ga tsuku* be settled.

*guduguda ni* you get dead  
drunk.

*tai-zai suru* sojourn, stay.

*rokuroku* fully, sufficiently  
(with negatives).

*toki ni* now (at the beginning  
of a sentence).

<sup>a</sup> The term *kedamono*, from *ke-tsu-mono* (*tsu* genitive particle), exactly corresponds to the English "beast" and is almost obsolete, being used only in vulgar curses, while *kemono*, which originally denoted "domestic cattle," has been expanded so as to include all hairy beasts.

## Exercises

*Tembun nenkan ni hajimete Seiyōjin ga Nihon ye kimash'ta.*<sup>a</sup> *Kanete o namae wa uketamawatte imash'ta.*<sup>b</sup> *Amari teinei ni iisuguru to, kaette shitsurei ni atarimas'.* *Dō sh'te mo Nihon no hon ga yomeru yō ni wa narimas'mai.* *Kessh'te sonna koto wa suru na.* *Dō sh'te mo zenkwai wa itashimas'mai.* *Anata hajimete Seiyō ye oide ni naru no nara, sazo tokwai no tatemono no takai no ni o odoroki nasaru deshō* (p. 132 a). *Hajimete go ran nasaru n' des'kara, go fushin wa go mototomo des'* (p. 33d). *Tonari de wa teishu ga shinimash'ta kara, sadamete shūshō sh'te iru koto deshō.* *Zaisan mo ari, na mo aru hito des'kara, sadamete shūgiin giin ni senkyo sare-mashō.*<sup>c</sup> *Nihon no hon ga yomeru yō ni naranak'to mo, semete (wa) hanashi dake de mo jiyū ni*<sup>d</sup> *dekiru yō ni naritai mon' des'.* *Hōbō (wo) yūreki suru koto wa dekinak'te mo, semete Kyōto dake wa zeki kembutsu sh'tai mon' des'.* *Ano hito wa geko da no ni, shiite sake wo nomasemash'ta kara gudaguda ni yomash'ta.* *Iyagaru no ni, shiite kodomo wo gakkō ni yari-mash'ta.* *Nihonjin wa toriwake teinei des'.* *Doits'de wa haru ni naru to, yukidoke de yoku kōzui ga arimas'ga, sakunen wa bessh'te suigai wo uketa tokoro ga ō gozaimash'ta.* *Watakushi wa tomodachi to hanashi wo sh'te aruite iru uchi ni shirazu-shirazu tōi tokoro made ikimash'ta.* *Betsu ni keiko wa shimasen desh'ta ga, shirazu-shirazu hanashi ga dekiru yō ni narimash'ta.* *Hisash'ku go busata wo itashimash'ta; mina sama o kawari mo gozaimasen ka.* *Toki ni, tōkarazu izure ye ka (dokka ye) go shuttatsu ni narimas'ka.* *Nihongo no keiko wo nasaru o tsumori nara, kanarazu kanji wo oboenakereba narimasenu.* *Kemono de mo ano tōri des'kara, mash'te ningen wa kodomo wo daiji ni shinakereba narimasenu.*<sup>e</sup> *Mori san wa Ise no tai-byō ye kutsu wo haita mama (de) agatta to iu fūbun ga ari-*

<sup>a</sup> *Tem-bun* is the name of a *neugō*, 1532—1555. *Nen-kan* is derived from *nen=toshi* and *kan=aida*; translate: during the period called *Tembun*.

<sup>b</sup> An expression often heard by a person when introduced to another.

<sup>c</sup> *Shūgiin giin* member of the Lower House.

<sup>d</sup> *Jiyū ni* freely, unrestrictedly; *jiyū ni hanasu* speak readily.

<sup>e</sup> *Ano tōri* refers to a previous illustration of the idea expressed by *ko wo daiji ni suru*.



*mash'ta ga, hatash'te sō desh'ta ka.*<sup>a</sup> " *Shintai happu kore wo fubo ni uku; aete sokonai-yaburazaru wa kō no hajime nari*" to *Kōkyō ni kaite arimas'*.<sup>b</sup> *Yokohama ni mairimash'te toriaezu o tazune mōshimash'ta ga, mata aratamete ukagaimashō.*<sup>c</sup> *Sore wa torimonaosazu kō iu imi des'. Jikan ga nakatta mon'des'kara, yamwwoezu rokuroku hanashi mo shinaide kaette mairimash'ta. Ano hito wa toki to sh'te hijō ni kimusukashii ko'o ga gozaimas'. Tatte tomeru mono des' kara, tsui yūhan no chisō ni natte kimash'ta. Isure otte go henji wo itashimashō. Anata ni oroitte o negai mōsh'tai koto ga gozaimas'. Kono shinamono wa narash'te (narashi) hitotsu ga jū go sen ni atarimas'. Kono sets'wa itatte fukeiki de makoto ni komarimas'. Mukōmizu ni yarikaketa no de nam to mo osamari no ts'keyō ga nakunarimash'ta. Kono ie wo tate-ru ni go sen yen tarazu kakarimash'ta. Tadaima o tegami wo haiken itashimash'te toriaezu sanjō itash'ta yō na wake de, nani mo motte mairimasen kara, isure sono uchi ni mata yukku-ri o ukagai mōshimashō. Sore wa mottenohoka futsugō da.*

If not all (*mina de naku to mo*), return at least half (*hambun dake de mo*). If I can't (though I don't) make anything specially (*betsu ni i*), I wish at least to recover (*torikaesu*) the principal. That wrestler is especially stout. To-day as it is very windy (the wind is very strong), you must be especially careful with the fire (*hi no yōjin wo suru*). This spring (p. 317a) the cherry blossoms have bloomed especially early. It happened just as (*tōri ni naru*) I prophesied (beforehand saying put). Is this your first trip abroad (in regard to your going abroad is *kondo* the first time)? About this time (*imagoro wa*) it ought (*hazu da*) to be getting warmer, but (*no ni*) on the

a Viscount Mori, Minister of Education, was assassinated on the 11th of February, 1889, for an alleged display of irreverence at the shrine of Ise. *Ise no tai-hyō* (*tai* gr cat) is the largest and most celebrated temple of the sun-goddess.

b The *Kō-kyō* (*kō* filial piety, *kyō*=*oshie*) is a Confucian Classic. *Happu* is from *hatsu* hair and *fu* skin; *kore wo* is pleonastic, as often in the literary language; *uku* is the conclusive form of *ukeru* receive; *aete* is usually to be translated "dare to"; and the negative of *sokonai-yaburu* takes the attributive form before the particle *wa*; *navi*=*desu*.

c There is an implied apology for not bringing a *miyage*.

contrary it has become gradually colder the last (*kono*) two or three days. As he is lazy he will doubtless fail in the examination. How is it that you have learned Japanese so quickly? In this case you must certainly add (*ts'keru*) the word *wa*. As he is clever and of good family, he will doubtless rise in the world. I shall soon go to Atami, but intend to return [after] staying [there] three days. The pupils of this school are in general studious (*benkyō des'*). This is an extremely interesting book; do read it (reading see). The Government's bill (*ni wa*) was opposed by (act.) all the representatives (*ga*). On the way (2) yesterday (1) I unexpectedly met your parents (*go ryōshin sama*). *Mutsuki* is the same thing as January.<sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER LXXVII

There remains a comparatively small class of words used as adverbs which are without any inflection, particle, peculiar structure, or any external mark to indicate what they are.

1. Some are derived from the Chinese. Note compounds with *ichi* "one" and *mai* "every":

*goku* = *kiwamete* (emphatic *shi-goku*, from *shi* = *itaru*) very.<sup>b</sup>  
*chō-do* exactly, just.

*dai-bu*, *dai-bun* (lit. large part) very, rather.

*guan-rai* = *moto-yori* originally, in reality,

*hei-zei* ordinarily, usually, habitually.

*irai* hereafter, since (in the latter sense with a substantive or subordinative).<sup>c</sup>

*i-sai* minutely, in detail.

*kin-rai* lately, recently (p. 340c).

*mochi-ron*, *mu-ron* (lit. without discussion) of course.

*sek-kaku* with special pains, kindly (p. 193d).

*shi-jū* (lit. beginning and end) constantly, always.

*sho-sen* after all, by no means (with negatives).

a *Mutsuki*, from *mutsumashii* friendly, sociable, is so-called because January is a month of social festivities.

b Practically *kiwamete* is more emphatic even than *shigoku*.

c In the sense of "hereafter": *Anata wa irai sō iu koto wo shite wa ikemasen. Osoreimashita; irai wa ki wo tsukemasu kara, dōzo, go kamben wo negaimasu.* You must n't do such a thing again. I am very sorry, I will be careful hereafter; please be patient with me.

*ta-bun* (lit. many parts) for the most part, probably.  
*tō-tei* utterly, at all (with negatives).  
*tō-tō, tōto* at length, finally.  
*tsū-rei, tsū-jō* usually, customarily.  
*zan-ji* (*zan*=*shibaraku*, *ji*=*toki*) a little while.  
*zen-tai* (lit. whole body) constitutionally, originally, properly speaking, in reality (*sentai ni* in general).  
*zuibun* (*ni*) a good deal, considerably.  
*ikkō* (lit. one direction) entirely, at all (with negatives).  
*ippai* (*ni*) a whole—, with one's whole—(*sei ippai* with all one's might),  
*issai, issatsu* entirely, at all.<sup>a</sup>  
*issō* (lit. one layer) doubly, more.<sup>b</sup>  
*ittai* (lit. one body)=*sentai*.  
*mai-nen, mai-toshi* yearly.  
*mai-getsu, mai-tsuki* monthly.  
*mai-shū* weekly, *mai-nichi* daily.  
*mai-asa* every morning, *mai-ban* every evening.  
*mai-do* every time, often.

Other adverbs are derived from stems of native verbs :

*amari, amuari* too, so very, so much, from *amaru* be in excess.  
 — *kiri, giri* merely, only, just, from *kiru* cut.<sup>c</sup>  
*tsumari* after all, in the end, so to speak, finally, from *tsumaru* be straitened.  
*ottosuke* presently, soon, from *ou* chase (p. 297a).  
*sashi-atari* at present, from *ataru* strike.  
*yo-dōshi* the whole night through, from *tōsu* cause to pass.

The following, of native origin, may be designated adverbs proper. The list should include *kō* (*kayō ni*), *sō* (*sayō ni*),

<sup>a</sup> *Sai* and *setsu* are variant readings of the same character. *Issatsu* is used only with negative words.

<sup>b</sup> *Iso* (*no koto*), which means "rather," is probably a corruption of this.

<sup>c</sup> See pp. 232a, 233d. *Mō kore kiri mairimasen*. I shall not come any more. *Bakari* or *bakkari*, from *hakaru* calculate, might be included in the same group with *kiri*. It is used not only with substantives and numerals in the sense of "about" but also with substantives, subordinatives, etc., in the sense of "only" and with preterits in the sense of "only" or "just" e. g., *asonde bakari iru* do nothing but play, *sukoshi totta bakari desu* have taken only a little, *kaetta bakari desu* have just returned (p. 229c). Note also the idiom — *bakari de naku* — *mo* "not only — but also" (p. 146a).

*ā*<sup>a</sup> and *dō*. From the last are derived *dōzo* (*nani-to-zo*), *dōka* somehow or other, if possible, please (p. 177f), and *dōmo*. Note: *Sō wa ikenai*, or, *Sō de wa ikenai*. That won't do. That's the wrong way.

*dōse* (*dō shite mo*), *dōde* (*dō de mo*) any how, at any rate, after all.

*hanahada* (from *hanahadashii*) very, very much.

*hotondo* (from classical *hotohoto*) almost, very much.

*ikaga* (from *ika ni ka*) how?

*iku-bun-ka* somewhat.

*ima-sara* (*sara ni* in addition, again) after so long a time, no more (with negatives).

*isure* in some way or other, at all events (p. 305b).

*ka-nari* moderately, passably, fairly.

*katsute* formerly, once before (formal).

*mada* still, yet.<sup>b</sup> *mata* again.<sup>c</sup>

*masu* first of all, on the whole, well (*hito-masu* once, for a while). [negatives].<sup>d</sup>

*mō* already, by this time, soon, now, still, no more (with

*mo-haya* already, soon, no more (with negatives).

*moppara* chiefly, principally, specially.

*mottomo* most.

*nani-bun*, *nambun* (*ni*) in every way, at any rate, at all (with negatives), by all means, please (p. 208d).

*nao* still more. *nao-sara* all the more.

*naze* why?<sup>e</sup>

*nomi* only (*sore nomi narazu* = *sore bakari de naku*).

a This *ā* is used not in *ā iu* but also, rarely, with other verbs: *ā yatte it wa totemo seikō shimasumai*. If he acts like that, he will never succeed.

b See p. 17d. *Mada arimasu ka*. Are there any left? *Mata ichi ji desu*. It is only one o'clock.

c *Mata* does not mean exactly "again" in: *Sore wa mata nanigoto desu ka*. And what is that?

d *Mō jiki ni* now at once; *mō yoroshū gozaimasu* that will do now; *mō takusan* enough now; *mō arimasen* there are no more; *mō (ma) sukoshi* a little more or a little longer; *mō (ma) hitotsu* one more; *mō ichi do* once more; *mō sukoshi de* within an ace of, almost, soon.

e Foreigners should be careful about using *naze* in direct address. It is rather familiar, and is never heard in polite conversation, except perhaps in *naze desu ka*. Use *dō shite* instead of *naze*. For *naze naraba* and *naze to iu no ni* see p. 224b.

*ō-kata* for the most part, probably. <sup>a</sup>  
*ori-fushi* = *oriori*, *tokidoki* now and then.  
*oyoso* about, approximately. <sup>b</sup>  
*sa-hodo (ni)* so much (with negatives).  
*sate* so, then, well (in proceeding with a story or speech).  
*sazo* how — you must (with probable form).  
 — *shika. shikya* but, only (with negatives).  
*sukoshi* a little.  
*sunawachi* that is, namely.  
*tada, tatta* only, merely. <sup>c</sup>  
*to-kaku* in one way or another, is apt to, sad to say. <sup>d</sup>  
*tomokakumo, tomokaku, tonikaku* at any rate.  
*totemo*, for *totemo kakutemo*, by no means (with negatives).  
*yagate* soon, presently.  
*yahari, yappari* likewise, too, still, notwithstanding.  
*yo-hodo, yoppodo* a good deal, very (p. 174a).  
*yoppite (yo hito yo)* the whole night.  
*yōyaku, yōyō* finally, at last, with difficulty, barely.

In the literary language many of these words, especially those derived from the Chinese, are used also as substantives. In the colloquial, too, many of them may be used with *no*. The student will generally be able to judge from the nature of the adverb whether it can be so used or not. Especially common are: *mochiron no koto* a matter of course, *sekkaku no oboshimeshi* your kind intention, *zanji no aida* for a little while, *yōyaku no koto de* with great difficulty.

2. There are particles of emphasis, *koso, sae, suru* and *dani*, which can hardly be translated, unless by means of the word "even." *Koso* has on the words which it immediately follows

<sup>a</sup> The learned also say *osorakuwa*, which may be translated, "It is to be feared that." A similar classical form *negawakuwa*, which is equivalent to *danjo* or *nanijozo*.

<sup>b</sup> The original classical form *ōyoso* also occurs in the sense of "in general." *Oyoso* may be used pleonastically with *kurai*, etc. (p. 72c).

<sup>c</sup> *Tada* is often used pleonastically with *bakari, kiri* or *shika*. Note also *tada de gratis. Tada desu*. It costs nothing.

<sup>d</sup> *Tokaku* occurs with especial frequency in sentences that express regret and is often hard to translate (=German *leider*): *Tokaku kono setsu wa ame ga furimasu*. It rains a great deal these days. *Tokaku yasui mono wa hayaku sonjimasu*. Cheap things soon wear out.

the same effect as italics in English. It may be added to substantives (p. 323), adverbs (p. 314b), postpositions, conditionals and subordinatives :

*Sō yatte koso kōkō to iu mono da.*

To act like that is filial piety indeed.

*Nihonjin kara chokusetsu ni naratte koso hontō no Nihongo ga oboerareru no ni, S'mis'san wa gwaikokujin ni tsuite benkyō wo shite orimasu.* In spite of the fact that Japanese can be mastered best by learning directly from a Japanese, Mr. Smith is studying under a foreigner.

*Sae* is usually added to substantives, adverbs or stems of verbs in conditional or concessive clauses (p. 279a), and often occurs in the combination (*de sae (mo)*) :

*Kodomo de sae mo yoku wakaru no ni.....*

Though even a child can understand.....

*Sura* is used only with substantives, postpositions, subordinatives and in the idiom (*de sura (mo)*) :

*Issen sura motanai.* I have n't even a cent.

*Chanto shōko wo misete sura (mo) sō de nai to iimasu.*

He denies it even though I show him the evidence.

*Napoleon de sura mo Roshiajin no tame ni yaburaremashita.*

Even Napoleon was defeated by the Russians.

*Dani* is used, with substantives, in the same sense as *sura*.

3. Finally we have the particle *mo*. It serve to modify the word which it follows and has the sense of (a) "also," "too," "on the other hand," and (b) "even."

*Kore mo yoroshii.* This also will do.

*Anata mo oide ni narimasu ka.* Will you go too?

*Shōyu wo (o) shitaji to mo iimasu.*

*Shōyu* is also called *shitaji*.

*Ima mo sō iu shūkwan ga nokotte orimasu ka.*

Does such a custom persist even now?

*Hitori mo arimasen.* There is not even one there.

*Mono (wo) mo iwazu (ni)* without saying anything at all.

*Hitotsu mo nokosazu (ni)* without leaving a single one.

\* Observe the position of *mo*; *one* never hears *shitaji mo to iimasu*.

*Dō suru koto mo dekisu.* It can't be helped (= *Shikata ga nai*).  
In many negative expressions *mo* is untranslatable :

*kagiri mo nai* unlimited, infinite.

*kawari mo nai* unchanging.

*kono ue mo nai* unsurpassed (of good things only).

*omoi mo yoranai* unexpected.

*Waruku mo nai.* That's not bad.

*Arisō mo nai hanashi desu.* It's improbable (p. 276b.)

Compare adverbial expressions like *ma-mo-naku* (p. 315).

Added to interrogatives *mo* makes them universal indefinites (Ch. XVII.) :

*itsu made mo* for ever.

*doko made mo* to the utmost, to the very end.

*ikutsu mo, ikura mo, ikutari mo,* etc., very many.

*ika-ni-mo* indeed, very. <sup>a</sup>

When *mo* is repeated it has the sense of "both—and," or, with a negative word, "neither—nor" :

*Kore mo are mo ii.* Both this and that are good.

*Noni mo ka mo takusan orimasu.*

Both fleas and mosquitoes are plentiful.

*Pen mo inki mo arimasen.* There is neither pen nor ink.

*Mo* rarely serves as a conjunction (p. 400, 16). <sup>b</sup>

The combination *de mo* (= *de atte mo*) or, more emphatically, *de sae mo* or *de sura mo*, may be rendered "even." *De mo* is also used to make the sense of a word vague and may be rendered "such a thing as," "or something of the kind" (p. 178b), or, with a negative word, "exactly" (p. 237a). *De mo* with interrogative pronouns makes emphatic indefinites (Ch. XVII). It takes the place not only of *wa, ga* and *wo*, but also of other particles. Like *mo* it may be added not only to substantives, but also to particles and postpositions :

*Daigakusha de sae mo wakarimasen.*

Even great scholars do not understand.

a From the classical *ika ni=dō* how? *Ika ni shite mo=dō shite mo.* *Ika ni mo* meant originally "in every way." It is now often used as a response in conversation like the English "To be sure!"

b *Mo* also enters into the idiom—*ka mo shirenai* (p. 109a), concessives like *keredomo* and *to idomo* (pp. 99, 245), *yori mo* (p. 136), *moshi mo*, etc., without making any perceptible addition to the sense.

*Empitsu de mo yoroshii.* A lead pencil will do.

*Gakusha de mo gozaimasen.* He isn't what you call a scholar.

*Pen de mo empitsu de mo arimasen.*

There is not a pen of any sort nor any pencil.

*Giin ni naranai (narumai) mono de mo nai* (common idiom).

It is not impossible that he will become a representative.

*Dō de mo kamaimasen.* Any way will suit.

*Natsu de mo yasumi wa arimasen.*

[I] have no vacation even in summer.

*Seiyō no yoi shiba wa Kōbe de mo<sup>a</sup> metta ni miraremasen.*

One can seldom see a good European play even in Kōbe.

*Sore de mo hara wo tatemasen.*

He nevertheless did not get angry.

*Iya de mo ō de mo kamaimasen.<sup>b</sup>*

I don't care whether he likes it or not.

*Mukōjima made de mo ikitai to omoimasu.*

I should like to go at least as far as to Mukōjima.

*Nan-de-mo* is used adverbially in the sense of "at all events," "probably":

*Nan de-mo benkyō ga kanjin da.*

In any case diligence is the important thing.

*Nan-de-mo jibun de Tōkyō ye ittarashii.*

It seems likely that he himself has gone to Tōkyō.

The combination *to mo* in *Nan to mo iemasen* needs no further explanation (p. 342b). In other connections *to mo* appears to be elliptical, as in *Kayuku mo nan to mo nai* (p. 252b), where *to mo* = *nan to iu koto mo*; or, *Sō to mo* (or *wa*) *shirazu*, where *sō to mo* = *sonna koto ga aru to iu koto mo*. In replies to questions *to mo* is especially common and has the sense of "most assuredly":

*Kimasu to mo.* He will certainly come.

*Arimasu to mo.* Of course there are.

4. Our "yes" corresponds to *sō da*, *sō desu*, *sayō de gozaimasu* (but see also p. 134a); "no," to *sō ja nai*, *sayō de wa*

<sup>a</sup> In this case not *Kōbe de de mo*. But even this is a possible construction; e. g., *Nihon de wa Nichiyōbi de mo kamawazu shōbai wo itashimasu. Yokohama de de mo desu ka.* In Japan people do business even on Sunday (lit. even on Sunday not heeding). Is that the case even in Yokohama? *De mo* may be an ellipsis for *ni de mo*: *Dare de mo dekimasu*, for, *Dare ni de mo dekimasu.*

<sup>b</sup> This *ō* is the literary equivalent of *hai* yes. Compare *ōsuru* or *ōjiru* agree or comply with.



*gozaimasen*, etc. One may also repeat the verb of the question. *Wakarimashita ka. Wakarimashita* (or *Wakarimasen*). Have you understood? Yes (or No). The word *kai* or *hei* alone usually means "yes" in the sense that the speaker is attentive to what is being said to him. *Hai* or *hei* and *iie* or *iya* also precede verbs: *Hai, wakarimashita*. Yes, I understand. *Iie, wakarimasen*. No, I don't understand. But it is a peculiarity of the Japanese that these words refer not so much to the objective fact as to the attitude of agreement or disagreement with what has just been said (p. 12a): *Kyō kimasen ka. Hai* (or *Sayō de gozaimasu*). Isn't he coming to day? No (lit. Yes, i. e., as you say). *Iie* (or *Sō de gozaimasen*) would have to be translated Yes, he will (lit. No. i. e., you are mistaken). Hence such combinations as *Sayō, kimasen*, or, *Iie, kimasu*.

## Vocabulary

(Include the new adverbs.)

<i>chimba</i> lameness, lame person (or animal).	<i>moku</i> (= <i>me</i> eye) intersection of lines on a checker-board, numerative for checkers.
<i>momi</i> red silk cloth.	<i>sei</i> energy, force.
<i>tsukue</i> [Japanese] table (p. 96d).	<i>dam-pan</i> conference, negotiation.
<i>o ha-guro</i> black dye for the teeth. <sup>a</sup>	<i>dan-nen</i> ( <i>dan</i> = <i>kiru</i> , <i>nen</i> = <i>omoi</i> ) ceasing to think about, giving up.
<i>ma-go</i> one in charge of a horse, hostler or driver.	<i>fu-soku</i> insufficiency, dissatisfaction.
<i>mayu-ge</i> eyebrows.	<i>nani fusoku ga nai</i> is well off.
<i>naga-iki</i> long life.	<i>i-chi</i> position, situation.
<i>o shi-oki</i> execution (of criminals).	<i>i-shō</i> clothes.
<i>jō</i> (c)= <i>ba</i> place (in composition).	<i>jis-sai</i> actual conditions, practice. <sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> In olden times all married women blackened their teeth. It was a mark of faithfulness and respectability. The best quality of *haguro* being made of iron ore it was called *kane*. To dye the teeth is *o haguro wo tsukeru*.

<sup>b</sup> Also used as an adverb in the sense "in reality."

<i>kin-shin</i> circumspection, moderation.	<i>daime na</i> useless, impossible.
<i>mei-yo</i> honor, reputation.	<i>hayaru</i> prevail, be in fashion.
<i>on-do</i> temperature.	<i>hayari no</i> fashionable,
<i>ri-kutsu</i> reason, argumentation.	<i>me no chikai</i> shortsighted.
<i>shi-dan</i> division (of the army).	— <i>ni otoru</i> be inferior to.
<i>ship-pai</i> failure.	<i>kokoro eru</i> perceive, understand.
<i>shū-kwan</i> habit, custom.	<i>kamai-tsukeru</i> pay attention to (with <i>wo</i> ).
<i>tsū-shō</i> commerce.	<i>oi-harau</i> drive out.
<i>tsū-yō</i> being in common use, currency.	<i>kou</i> beg.
<i>yō-jō</i> taking care of the health.	<i>ama-goi wo suru</i> pray for rain.
<i>jō-bi-gun</i> standing army. <sup>a</sup>	<i>hiiki suru</i> favor, be partial to (with <i>wo</i> or <i>ni</i> ).
<i>kai-sui-yoku</i> sea (water) bathing.	<i>jō-yoku wo musubu</i> make a treaty.
<i>men-jō</i> permit, license.	<i>i-sha ni kakaru</i> consult a physician.
<i>ryōkō-menjō</i> = <i>ryōkōken</i> passport.	<i>on-gi ni kansuru</i> feel grateful for kindness.
<i>utoi</i> distant, estranged, unacquainted.	

## Exercises

*Ikanimo ossharu tōri de gozaimas'. Ima de mo Nihon no onna wa mayuge wo otoshimas'ka. Sayō sa, wakai onna wa mina tatete imas' ; mata toshiyori no uchi ni mo Seiyōfū ni tatete iru onna mo arimas'.*<sup>b</sup> *Anata wa hodo no ii koto bak-kari<sup>c</sup> (o seji bakkari) itte imas'.* *Kore wa kōtōgakkō (p. 55a) de bakari mochiiru tokuhon des'.* *Mada Nihon no cha wa nonde mita koto ga arimasen kara, ori ga attara, ippai nonde mitai mon'des'.* *Koban wa mō sappari tsuyō shinaku*

<sup>a</sup> From *jō=tsune ni*, *bi=somaeru* have in readiness, and *gun* army. The first reserve is *yo-bi-gun*, from *yo=arakajime* beforehand; the second reserve, *kō-bi-gun*, from *kō*, a variant of *go=nochi*.

<sup>b</sup> *Mayuge* is often pronounced *maigu*. *Mayuge wo otosu* shave the eyebrows; *mayuge wo lateru* let the eyebrows grow.

<sup>c</sup> *Hodo no ii koto* flattery. With *bakari* the particle *wo* is rarely used: *koto wo bakari*. In the next sentence note the position of *de*: *kōtōgakkō bakari de* means "it being only a college."

*narimashi* *monogoro s'koshi mo ame ga furimasen kara, hyak'sho matte amagoi wo shimas'*. *Ooka Echizen no kami wa<sup>a</sup> hito no kao wo mizu ni saiban wo shimash'tu*; naze nareba, kao wo mireba, shizen to dochira ka (ni) hiiki suru kokoro ga okoru kara des'. *Itsu mo go kigen yō irasshaimash'te kekkō de gozaimas'*. *Dō iu fū ni tenarai no keiko wo sh'tara yō gozaimashō*. *Sō de wa ikemasen ga. kō nas'taru yoroshū gozaimashō*. *Nihon no jōbigun wa tatta<sup>b</sup> jū san shidan sh'ka arimasen*. *Ano hito wa taisō kinshin sh'te sake wo nomanaide orimas'*. *Tadaina yonda bakari des' kara, oboete iru hazu des' ga*. *Sakuban no o kyaku wa ikutari desh'ta ka*. *Mina de jū nin manekimash'ta ga, tatta roku nin sh'ka kimasen desh'ta*. *Gakumon, sae areba, meiyō no aru ichi ni noboremas'*. *Watakushi no tokei wa mō yo jī ni narimas'*; *shikashi chanto atte iru ka dō da ka wakarimasen*. *Sonna ni osoku wa gozaimasen; mada san jī han des'*. *Ano uma wa chimba da kara, tada de mo iya da*. *Inu de sae mo shujin no on wa wasurenai*. *Amari kaze ga fuite iru yō de wa arimasen*. *O taku de wa mina sama o kawari mo gozaimasen ka*. *Seiyō no suzume wa os'to mes'to wa keiro ga taisō chigaimas' ga, Nihon no wa mes'mo os'mo (or to) onaji koto des'*. *Ishikawa Goemon ga<sup>c</sup> o shioki ni naru toki ni, watakushi wa tada wazuka no kane wo nusunda bakari des' ga, Hideyoshi wa tenka'yū wo nusumimash'ta no ni, naze watakushi bakari shirabete Hideyoshi wa shirabemasen ka to mōshimash'ta*. *Gasshūkoku<sup>d</sup> seifu wa bakufu to nagaku dampan wo sh'ta ato de jōyaku tsūshō-jōyaku wo musubimash'ta*. *Mago ni mo ishō (Proverb).<sup>e</sup> Kōbō ni*

a This is the name of a *machi-bugyō* in Edo in the XVIII. Century, who is famous among the Japanese for the Solomonic wisdom of his judgments. The city was governed by two *bugyō* who possessed military and judicial as well as administrative functions. *Echizen* is the name of a province on the coast of the Japan Sea; *kami* lord. Titles like *Echizen no Kami*, originally used only of the lord of the country, gradually became applicable to others.

b *Tatta* is used when a quantity is regarded as very small. Compare *tada go yen satsu ichi nai shika motanai* and *tatta issen shika motanai*.

c A notorious robber at the end of the XVI. Century.

d *Gas-shū-koku* the United States, from *gō=awaseru*, *shū* province and *koku*.

e Clothes make the man. Compare the other proverb: *Mugi-wara ningyō mo ishō-gara*. Even a doll made of wheat straw [is judged according to] the quality of its clothes (p. 217a).

mo judē no ayamari (Proverb).<sup>a</sup> Oya kane wa tanin da (Proverb).<sup>b</sup> Taikō sama Keichō<sup>c</sup> san nen sunawachi sen go hyaku ku jū hachi nen desh'ta. Yō wa ato ni sh'te mazu o agari nasai. Mō shakkin wa sukkari kaesh'te shimaimash'ta kara, kore de anshin des'. Kyōto no jinkō wa oyoso san jū roku man nin gurai des'. Mō hitotsu meshiagare. Mō kore kiri kimasen ka. O me wa ikaga des'ka. Arigatō, kono setsu wa daibu yō gozaimas'. Nihon ni mo kinnen wa kaisuiyokujō ga tak'san dekimash'ta. Watakushi wa go no sensei ni shichi moku okasete moratte mo shijū makete imash'ta ga, dandan jōzu ni natte ima de wa yō-yaku katsu yō ni narimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Fujisan wa itsu mo yuki ga tsumotte ite shiroku miemas'ka. Iie, goku ats'ku nareba, hito ts'ki gurai no aida yuki ga mienaku narimas'. Naratta ji wo orifushi kurikaesanai to, wasuremas'. Mō ryokōmenjō no negai wa dashimash'ta ga, mada menjō wa sagarimasen. Omae koso uso-ts'ki (liar) da. Sonna koto wo onna de mo dekinas' ; mash'te otoko wa naosara (no koto)<sup>e</sup> des'. Kono setsu wa tokaku hitogoroshi ga ōkute komarimas'. Kore koso itte minakereba narimasen. Taisō honeotte yōyaku Nihon no hon ga shōshō yomeru yo ni narimash'ta. Sonna ni ts'kue ni kuttsuite o yomi nasaru to, o me ga nao chikaku narimas'yo. Sekkaku dekiagaru to, sugu ni kowarete shimaimash'ta. Sekkaku takai omocha wo katte yatta no ni, sugu kowash'te shimaimash'ta. Tako ga yōyō agarimash'ta. Kono sets'wa amari yō mo arimasen karu, kashihon<sup>f</sup> de mo yomimashō. Kore kara Nihongo bakari ts'kaimashō. Ano hito wa ko mo aru shi (ari)

a *Kōbō* is an abbreviation of *Kōbō Daishi*, the great teacher *Kōbō* (*kō*=*hiromeru* promulgate, *hō* law). He was the founder of the *Shin-gon* (=makoto no kotoba) sect and is renowned as a scholar and penman.

b When it comes to a question of money even such a close relation as that between parent and child is like the relation between strangers. For *seni kane* see p. 225a.

c The name of a *nengō*, 1596—1615.

d The checkerboard is *go-ban*; the checkers are *go-ishi*. The one who occupies (*ishi wo oku*) the larger number of points (*me*) on the board wins. The teacher handicaps himself by allowing his pupil at the beginning of the game to occupy seven points.

e *Mashiite-naosara no koto desu*, is a common pleonastic idiom, like *tada-bakari*, *moshi-nara*, *tatoi-mo*, etc. *Naosara* (*nokoto*) *desu* is elliptical for *naosara dekiru haau desu*.

f An entertaining book borrowed from a *kash-hon-ya*.

*kane mo aru shi (ari) nani hitotsu jusoku ga nai. Kesshi'te sō iwarenai to wa iemasen ga, tsūrei sō wa iimasen. Maido kodomo ga agarimash'te o jama wo itashimas'. Dō itashimash'te ; nigiyaka de kaette yoroshū gozaimas'. Maido o sewa ni narimash'te osoreirimas'. Ano hito wa gwanrai karada ga amari jōbu de nakatta ga, yōjō ga yokatta mon'des'kara, nagaiki wo itashimash'ta. Isai torishirabeta ue de (alter) mōshigemashō. Ikura negatta tokoro ga, shosen kiite kuremai kara, dannen suru yori hoka arimas'mai.<sup>a</sup> Kono yō ni itte kikash'te mo kikanai nara, igo wa issatsu kamai-tsuken kara, sō omoē. Otts'ke dō ni ka narimashō.<sup>b</sup> Ikubunka kokoroē no nai hito ni wa. ikura tokiakash'te yatte mo, nakanaka wakarinas'mai. Nanigoto ni yorazu<sup>c</sup> heizei chūi sh'te oranai to, tokaku shippai shimas'. Anata no ossharu koto wa mochiron rikutsu ni wa kanatte orimas'ga, jissai ni wa utō gozaimas'. Zentai oya ga warui kara, kodomo ga anna tsumaranai mono ni natta no da. Sono kimono wa momi no ura wo ts'ketara, issō rippa ni narimashō. Dōse, mutsukashii mono nara, issō kō yatte mitara dō des'. Tori ya kemono de sura mo on wo ukete wa kae's koto wo sh'tte oru no ni, hito to sh'te ongi ni kanjiru kokoro no nai mono wa tori kemono ni mo otoru mono de wa arimas'mai ka. Go kigen yoroshū gozaimas'ka. Hai, kawatta koto mo gozaimasen. Isai shōchi itashimash'ta. Kodomo wa gakkō kara yagate kaette kuru jibun des'. Kono gakkō no seito wa moppara Eigo wo benkyō sh'te orimas'.*

I have already forgotten [my] German entirely, since I can no longer associate with Germans (opportunities to associate with Germans have become not existent). Why do Japanese women dye their teeth black? I don't know why it is, but such is the custom (it is such a custom). As it is cool to-day, there will hardly be so many mosquitoes (mosquitoes will hardly come out so much). The temperature (of) this morning was about five degrees below (*ika*) zero. I (*ni wa*) have only one brother;

<sup>a</sup> *Tokoro ga*, or *tokoro de*, makes a clause concessive ;=*ikura negatte mo*. The idiom—*yori hoka nai* 'there is no way but to—is also a very common one.

<sup>b</sup> *Dō ni ka naru* will come to some (satisfactory) conclusion.

<sup>c</sup> Translate: it doesn't matter what the business is.

he is ten this year (this year ten becoming brother—but one there is). In Japan not only adults but even (*de mo* or *mado mo*) little girls use (*ts'keru*) face-powder. Even monkeys [sometimes] fall from trees.<sup>a</sup> Please speak (use) Japanese only. At last the preparations are (have been) finished. It was my intention to go second class, but, if you go first class, I (too) will likewise go with you (*go issho ni itasu*). By this time it is useless to consult a physician (though you consult a physician, it is useless). Formerly there was also in Japan a feudal system, but after the Restoration it went to pieces. As there is still work (*yō*) in the house, wait a little longer and go out (*dete ike*) to make your purchases afterwards. After (*tatte*) two years I at last became able to talk (at last it became that (*yō ni*) speaking was possible). After having the teacher explain two [or] three times, I at last understood. When may I send the messenger? Any time will do. You may go out now and then for recreation (*asobi ni*). As I drove him out of (from) the house, he will not come a second time (*mō f'tatabi*). That lady is always wearing fashionable clothes. Sometimes (*toki to sh'ite* or *toki ni yotte*) I drink as much as (even) ten glasses of beer. Another day we will again speak of it (*sore wa* 1). Usually the Japanese do not smoke tobacco while they are at work (*hataraitte iru aida wa*). There are very few Europeans that can read Japanese books. At present I have no particularly good ideas (*kangae*). In your composition (*wa* 1) there are not so many mistakes; it is fairly well done. At any rate (*nanibun*), since the days are short, we can't do more than this (can do only this), though we work with all our might. Formerly when I was in Germany I met Bismarck.

a This proverb is often joined to the one given above: *Kōdō ni mo fude no ayamari*.

## THE POSTPOSITION\*

### CHAPTER LXXVIII

Words in Japanese which correspond to English prepositions must be called postpositions, for the reason that they follow the words that they govern. These particles may be divided into two groups: postpositions proper and quasi-postpositions. Postpositions proper immediately follow the words that they govern. Some are particles, like *de*, *ni*, and *to*, while others were originally substantives, which, however, are no longer felt to be such. Quasi-postpositions are really substantives, still used as such, to which dependent words are joined by means of the particle *no*. There are also certain subordinatives that are used like English prepositions.

Often where the English employs prepositions other constructions are required in Japanese:

*Mizu wo abiru* bath in cold water.

*Machi wo aruku* walk about the town (or walk the streets).

*Nihon wo* (or *kara*) *tatsu* start from Japan (or leave Japan).

*Soko wo ugoicha ikenai*. You must n't move from that place.

*Gakkō wo sotsugyō suru* graduate from the school.

*Shina wo tabi suru* travel through China.

*Hito no koto wo omou* think of a person.

*Isha wo yōbi ni yaru* send for a physician.

*Zaisan no nai hito* a person without property.

*Shippo no mijikai neko* a cat with a short tail.

*Wa* often occurs where we should expect a postposition: *kono ni san nichi wa* in the last two or three days, *Tōkyō atari wa* in the region of Tōkyō, about Tōkyō, etc.

To the postpositions proper belong *de*, *ni*, *to*, *kara* or *yori*, *made* and *ye*. These can be used with adverbs: *yoru osoku made* until late at night. Compare *tō kara* for a long time, and

---

a "Preposition" is *sen-chi-shi*; postposition, *kō-chi-shi*; *sen=mae*, *kō=go=*  
*no-chi*, *chi=oku*.

*tō ni* a long time ago, from *tōku*. Sometimes *ni* is added to another postposition, as in *made ni* (see the following Chapter). When in English a prepositional phrase is used to modify a noun, *no* is required in Japanese :

*Tōkaidō ye no risū* distances (in *ri*) to [points on] the Tōkaidō.

*Tōkyō made no kippu* a ticket to Tōkyō.

*Nihon to no kō-tsū* intercourse with Japan.

The remainder of the chapter will be devoted to explaining the uses of *de*, *ni* and *to*.

1. *De* may be local and instrumental, like the classical *nite*. It also performs a function similar to that of the subordinate. <sup>a</sup>

(1.) *De* is used in a local sense, answering the question "Where?" when the verb indicates an action or a certain state of things :

*Kochira de wa sonna koto wo shimasen.*

Here we don't do anything of the kind.

*Nihon de wa dō shimasu ka.* What do they do in Japan?

*Doko de o motome nasaimash'ita ka.* Where did you buy it?

*Doko de dekimashita ka.* Where was it made?

*Gwaikoku de shinimashita.* He died abroad. <sup>b</sup>

*Chizu de sagashidushite kudasai.* Please look it up in a map.

*Koko de matte imashō* I will wait here.

*Amerika de wa sō iu shūkwan ga gozaimasen.*

In America there is no such custom.

*De* is used in speaking of the mere existence of a thing in a place when the place is contrasted with some other place, as in the example, p. 35a: *Tokugawake no o tamaya wa doko desu ka.* *Tōkyō de wa Shiba to Ueno ni arimasu.*

<sup>a</sup> This distinction between the *de*'s may seem at first sight more subtle than important, but it is certainly a factor in determining the usage. In the subordinate is involved the idea of a cause, condition or circumstance which objectively or in a necessary way modifies the action or state expressed by the principal word of the sentence. Thus a Japanese would not say, *Ame ga futte kaerimashō*, because the decision to return is not necessarily connected with the rain; but it is natural to say, *Ame ga futte komarimasu*. Now compare: *Kōre de wa komarimasu*. This sort of thing is annoying. *Kōre de o wakare mōshimashō*. At this point I will take my leave. The connection between *kōre de* and the verb in the former sentence is closer than in the latter.

<sup>b</sup> "He was killed in the war between Japan and China" may be either *Nisshinsensō de shinimashita*, or, more rarely, *Nisshinsen-sensō ni shinimashita*.



Some expressions with *de* have passed over from a local to a temporal sense: *ato de* afterwards,<sup>a</sup> *soko de* now, then.<sup>b</sup>

(2.) *De* may indicate cause or means:

*O kage sama de naorimashita.*

Thanks to your aid, I have recovered (p. 14c).

*Kono attaka na tenki de wa kōri ga tokemashō.*

With this fine weather the ice will probably melt.

*Take de dekita shina* wares made of bamboo.

*Bō de naguru* beat with a club.

*Fune de* (or *fune ni notte*) *iku* go by boat.

*Ichi nichī de dekimashō.* It can probably be done in a day.

*Zokugo de wa kō iimasu....*In the colloquial they say...

*Yume de mita koto ga aru.* I have seen it in a dream.

*Ichi yen de kaimashita.* I bought it for a yen.

Sometimes either *de* or *ni* may be used with practically no difference in the sense. Simply to "dream of a thing" is usually *monō wo yume ni miru*. *Ichi yen ni kaimashita* (or *urimashita*) does not differ from *ichi yen de kaimashita* (or *urimashita*) any more than the English "buy at one yen" differs from "buy for one yen."

(3.) *De* may indicate a condition or a circumstance:

*Kore de ii.* This will do.

*Ariawase de yoroshii.* What is on hand will do.

*Mitsu de takusan desu.* Three are enough.

*Mina de san jū ni narimasu.* There are thirty-two in all.

*Raigetsu de wa osoi ja nai ka.* Won't next month be too late?

Some of the adverbial expressions into which *de* enters come under this head: e.g., *futari de* the two together, etc. (p. 65), *hisashiburi de* after a long interval (p. 338b). There are many such adverbial phrases; e. g., *sono ikioi de* (*ikioi* power) in consequence of the impetus gained, at that rate:

*Sono ikioi de susumeba jiki ni Nihongo ga hanaseru yō ni narimashō.* If he keeps on at that rate, he will soon become able to speak Japanese.

a Compare: *O ato kara mairimashō.* I will go after you, i. e., later (p. 257a). *O ato ni (tsuite) mairimashō.* I will go behind you. *Itto no ato ni tatte imasu* He is standing behind some one. See p. 338, bottom.

b *Ima de=ima ni shite* or *ima ni natte* under the present circumstances: *ima de ieba* according to present usage.

Note also : *sore de* or (with a future verb) *sore de wa*, *sore ja* in those circumstances, then, in that case.

There are also conjunctive phrases like *tokoro de*.<sup>a</sup> *Tokoro de*, or *de* alone, often serves as a superfluous connective between sentences in the same way that many use "and" in English. Note the elliptical expression : *Dōri de*, Quite right!

*De* is used with predicate substantives in the idioms *de aru* (*de gozaimasu*) and *de iru* (*de irasshaimasu*) : *Hei-ki de iru*. He's unconcerned.

(4.) *De* may have the sense "on the part of" and be practically equivalent to *ga*, especially with words denoting a body or a corporation (p. 126c) :

*Seifu de o haraisage ni narimashita*. The Gov't has sold it.  
*Jimmin no warui no de wa nai* ; *seifu de machigatta no desu*.

It's not the people's fault ; it's the Government that blundered. So also *bakufu de* the government of the Shōgun, *keisatsu de* the police, *kwaisha de* the company, *seken de* the world, etc. To the same class may be assigned the peculiar expressions *uchi de wa* or *temae de wa* we, *yado de wa*<sup>b</sup> or *taku de wa* my husband, *mukō de wa* or *saki de wa* he or they, etc.

(5.) *De* with substantives is often equivalent to *de atte* or *deshite* (p. 89c.) : *Shimpai de naranai*. I am exceedingly anxious (p. 158b). It takes the place of the ending *kute* with quasi-adjectives : *Byōki de arukenai*.<sup>c</sup> He is so sick that he can't walk. It is used in the same way with substantivized adjectives or verbs (Chapters XXXVII., LXIV.).<sup>d</sup>

2. The particle *ni* has a great variety of uses.

(1.) *Ni* has a local sense, answering the question "Where?" when one thinks of the mere existence of a thing in a place, that is, when *aru*, *oru*, *iru*, or one of the corresponding polite verbs, constitutes the predicate :

<sup>a</sup> *Tokoro de*, like *tokoro ga*, often has an adversative sense : *Yonde mita tokoro de, watakushi ni wa totemo wakarimasumai kara, yoshimashō*. Even though I read it I should not understand it at all ; so I will give it up.

<sup>b</sup> The word *yado* alone may mean "lodging place" or "husband."

<sup>c</sup> The *de* in, *Byōki de yasemashita*, He is emaciated on account of sickness, is felt to be different from the *byōki de* above.

<sup>d</sup> The negative subordinative in *naide* is derived from the negative present form and *de*.

- { *Tamagawa ni ai ga takusan orimasu.*  
 In the Tama River there are many trout.  
 { *Tamagawa de ai ga takusan toremasu.*  
 In the Tama River many trout are taken.  
 { *Bōshi wa doko ni arimasu ka.* Where is my hat?  
 { *Doko de bōshi wo kaimashō ka.* Where shall I buy a hat?

Sometimes *ni* occurs with other verbs or with adjectives when the idea of being in a place is the prevailing one :

*Konokawa ni wa unagi ga ōi.* Eels are numerous in this river.

*Mukō ni miemasu.* Over there it is (appears).

*Te ni motte imasu.* He has it in his hand. <sup>a</sup>

*Soto ni hito ga matte imasu.* There is some one waiting outside.

*Soto ni gomi ga tatte imasu.* It is dusty outside.

*Koko ni suwarimashō.* I will sit here.

*Ta ni kusa ga haeta.* Weeds have grown in the paddy-field. <sup>b</sup>

*Kabe ni ana ga aite iru.* There is a hole in the wall.

*Shimbun ni kaite aru.* It is in the newspaper.

*Tonari ni ie ga tatta.* A house has been built next door.

In the last examples it is a question whether the *ni* should not be parsed as the particle of the indirect object, especially when the verb is made transitive: *kabe ni ana wo akeru*, *shimbun ni kaku*, *tonari ni ie wo tateru*. <sup>c</sup>

Such verbs as *sumu* or *sumau* dwell, *tomaru* sit (of a bird) or lodge, *noru* be on or ride, etc., <sup>d</sup> naturally take *ni* with the word that answers the question "Where?"

(2.) *Ni* is the proper particle to use with words denoting time, answering the question "When?" (p. 338): *nichiyō atari ni* about Sunday, *asa to ban ni* in the morning and in the evening (p. 81b). Note also: *hi ni san do zutsu* three times a day; *san nen ni ichi do* once in three years. <sup>e</sup>

a *Te de motte imasu.* He holds it with his hand.

b Compare *niwa ni ueta ki*, *niwa ni dekita imo* (p. 342e).

c *Tonari de* would mean "on the part of my neighbor": My neighbor has built a house. Similarly: *Shimbun de kakimashita.* It is reported in the newspaper.

d We say *jitensha ni noru* ride on a bicycle, but *jitensha de iku* go by wheel. *Noru* may also mean "be induced to take part": *sōdan ni noru* take part in a consultation (Comp. *nori-ki ni naru*, p. 305).

e *Ima ni* may mean "until now" or "soon": *Ima ni kō yatte kurashi wo shite imasu.* Up to the present time I have been making my living in this way. *Ima ni yoku narimashō.* It will soon improve.

(3.) With *aru* and similar words *ni* may denote possession or a close relation (p. 9a): *Ushi ni tsuno ga aru. Watakushi ni wa imōto ga nai.*

(4.) *Ni (wa)* may have the sense of "among":

*Kono shina ni kō otsu ga gosaimasu.*<sup>a</sup>

Among these goods there are two kinds, first class and second.

*Kuma ni wa ke no shiroi no mo kuroi no mo arimasu.*

Among bears some have white fur and some have black.

*Ano hito no iu koto ni wa machigai ga nai.*

There is no mistake in what he says. What he says is true.

(5.) *Ni* may be rendered "in addition to", "besides", "and" (p. 67d); e. g., *sore ni* besides, moreover. In describing ideograms *ni* is much used: *Meiji no mei wa hi hen ni tsuki to iu ji wo kakimasu.* The character *mei* (明) in *Meiji* is composed of (written) *hi* (日) and *tsuki* (月).<sup>b</sup> Note the idioms: *nen ni nen wo irete* taking the greatest pains; *korae ni koratte* enduring to the utmost (p. 279, 5). Note also proverbial expressions like: *Ume ni uguisu.* Plum-tree and bush-warbler, i. e., the *ume* and the *uguisu* naturally belong together. *Urikotoba ni kai-kotoba.* Tit for tat (compare: "paid back in your own coin"). In idioms like these the idea of contrast is often involved: *Botan ni karashishi.* The peony and the lion, i. e., strength and beauty.

(6.) *Ni* may mark the thing into which anything enters or to which it is transferred:

<sup>a</sup> Compare; *Kono futa. no aida ni wa kō otsu ga nai.* There is no difference between the two (no superiority and inferiority). *kō* and *otsu* belong to a series of ten signs called *jikkan* or *eto*.

<i>ko</i> = <i>ki-no-e</i> tree	<i>otsu</i> = <i>ki-no-to</i> herb
<i>hei</i> = <i>hi-no-e</i> flame	<i>tei</i> = <i>hi-no-to</i> glow
<i>bō</i> = <i>tsuchi-no-e</i> earth	<i>ki</i> = <i>tsuchi-no-to</i> pottery
<i>kō</i> = <i>ka-no-e</i> coin	<i>shin</i> = <i>ka-no-to</i> hardware
<i>jin</i> = <i>nizu-no-e</i> sea water	<i>ki</i> = <i>nizu-no-to</i> fresh water

These sign are used as we use A, B, C, etc. They are also used parallel with the twelve zodiacal signs, the *ju ni shi*, to name the sixty years of the old cycle. For practical purposes it is sufficient to learn the first four, *kō, otsu, hei, tei*.

<sup>b</sup> The part of an ideogram called in English the radical, when it forms the left side of the character, is called *hen*=*kata* side. Thus the *hen* 彳 is *nimben*, from *nin*=*hito*; 言 is *gonben*, from *gon*=*kotoba*. The remainder, the phonetic part of an ideogram is called *tsukuri* body, from *tsukuru* make, construct.

*Hako ni ireru* put into a box; *furo ni hairu* enter a bath.

*Hito tokoro ni atsumaru* assemble in one place.

*Yama ni noboru* ascend a mountain (also *wo*).

*Nihongo ni honyaku suru* translate into Japanese.

(7.) *Ni* may denote an aim or a result, as in *sampo ni deru* go for a walk, *shippai ni owaru* end in failure.

For *ni* as used with stems of verbs to express purpose see p. 278, 3. In the same sense it is used with substantives and may be rendered "for", "as"; with substantivized verbs, "to":

*Kore wo nani ni tsukaimasu ka.* What is this used for?

*O rei no skirushi (made) ni sashiagemasu.*

I offer this as a token of appreciation. <sup>a</sup>

*Gakusha de mo nai ga, kyōshi ni wa taihen ii n'desu.*

He is not at all a scholar, but very good as a teacher.

*Kome wo tsukuru ni wa mizu ga takusan nakereba naranai.*

To grow rice one must have plenty of water.

*Ni* may have the sense "so as to become," often translated "as":

*Shichi ni oku* deposit as a pledge, pawn.

*Kyaku ni iku* go as a guest, be invited out.

*Yoshi ni morau* receive as an adopted son.

*Iin ni ageru* appoint as a committee.

*Giin ni senkyo suru* elect as a representative.

*Fujisan no koto wo uta ni yomu* compose a poem about Fuji.

Especially common are the idioms *ni suru* (p. 215) and *ni naru* (p. 262):

*Koko wo niwa ni shimasu.* I will make this a garden.

*Hito wo baka ni suru* make a fool of a person.

*Hanashi no tane ni naru* afford a topic for conversation (or a story).

*Tame ni naru hanashi* profitable conversation.

*Kwōkoku ni naru* make a [good] advertisement.

*Mu-chū (mu=yume, chū=naka) ni naru* become absorbed.

*Ate ni naranai hito* a person not to be relied on.

*Kodomo no byōki ga ki ni natte hitobanjū nerarenakatta.*

The child's illness affected me so that I could not sleep all night. With *ki ni naru*, compare *ki ni suru*, p. 215, 10.

<sup>a</sup> A common expression employed when a gift is offered.

(8.) *Ni* is used to form adverbs. In this connection note such phrases as: *oshii koto ni wa* (p. 117d) and to say; *shiwase na koto ni wa* happily; *fushigi na koto ni wa* strange to say.

(9.) In the following very common idioms *ni* may be literally translated "in," often having the sense of "according to" "or in regard to":

*Kaeri ni tachiyorimashō.* I will call on my way back.

*Sono koto wa hanashi ni kiita.* I heard it in conversation.

*Kotowaza ni.....to iimas'.* In a proverb it is said that.....

*Aru hito no hanashi ni wa.....to iu koto desu.*

Some one has told me that.....

*Kotaemasuru ni wa* (or *kotaete*) *to mōshimashita.*

He replied that.....

*Watakushi no omoimasu ni wa... (yō desu).*

I think that.....<sup>a</sup>

*Naze to iu no ni.....kara desu.* The reason is that.....

*Kaku ni komarimasu.* It is difficult to write.

*Koraeru ni koraerarenu.* One cannot endure it (p. 274,2).

*Sono kotoba wa kō iu imi ni* (or *de*) *tsukaimasu.*

They use the word in this sense, namely.....

*Tomaru wake ni wa ikanai* (or *ikenai*). [I] may not stay.<sup>b</sup>

(10.) With causatives and passives *ni* indicates the agent. Compare: *Watakushi ni wa dekimasen.* I can't do it.

Honorifically *ni wa* may take the place of *wa* with a subject, as in *Kwōgō heika ni wa* (p. 313f).

*Ni* may also indicate a cause, being equivalent to *no tame ni* "on account of":

*Fune ni you* be seasick; *sake ni you* be intoxicated.

*Hi ni yakeru* be sunburned.

*Namida ni kurete iru* be blinded with tears.

*Kane ni komaru* be troubled on account of money.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> There is no appreciable difference between *watakushi no omoimasu ni wa* and *watakushi no kangae de wa*. A sentence beginning with the latter phrase may end with *to omoimasu*.

<sup>b</sup> Note that while one may say, *Watakushi wa ikanakereba narimasen*, a phrase like *itte wa naranai* cannot be used in the first person. But—*wake ni wa ikanai* may be used in any person.

<sup>c</sup> When the cause of distress is not an external object, a subordinative or *de* better: *Bimbō de* (or *ni wa*) *komaru*.

*Shujin no kemmaku ni osorete.....*

Being afraid of the master's [angry] appearance.....

*Kao no warui no ni wa odorokimashita.*

I was startled by her ugliness.

The verbs *kansuru*, *kanshin suru*, *kampuku suru* (p. 275), take *ni*: *Sensei no go on ni kanjimashita.* I was deeply moved by the master's kindness. When the object is cognate *wo* may be used: *Itami wo kanjimashita.* I felt pain. But *kandō suru* (*dō=ugoku* move, inter.) takes only *ni*, never *wo*.

*Ni* may even be instrumental:

*Ryōhō no te ni hiku* lead [two] by the hand, one on each side.

*Hi ni hosu* dry in the sun; *hi ni sarasu* bleach in the sun.

*O rei wa kotoba ni tsukusaremasen.*

I cannot completely express (exhaust) my gratitude in words.

It appears from the above that the particle *ni* has more uses than any other postposition. As has been intimated (Ch. V.), it also performs the function of what we call the Dative Case in other languages. With verbs *ni* indicates the indirect object. While in most cases the usage is analogous to that in other languages and needs no explanation, in some the Japanese is peculiar.

Transitive verbs often take *wo* with the thing and *ni* with the person; e. g., *hito ni mono wo yaru*. Note particularly verbs meaning to "ask," etc., like *tau* (p. 247d), *inoru* pray, *negau* beseech, *tanomu* request, *wabiru* apologize, etc. *Hito ni tazuneru* is to inquire of a person, but to search for or call on a person is *hito wo tazuneru*. As in English there is a shade of difference between "mix this and that" and "mix this with that," so also in Japanese: *kore to are wo mazeru* and *kore wo are ni mazeru*. The verb *kaeru* change is used in the same way.

The following are examples of intransitives that take *ni*. It is left to the student to decide to which of the above ten rules any particular case should be assigned:

*ataru: tomi ni ataru* win in a lottery.

*mizu ga hi ni atatte iru* water stands in the sun.

*sakana ni ataru (aterareru)* be made sick by eating spoiled fish.

- skitsurei ni ataru* (p. 71c) be impolite (of conduct).  
*au* : *nangi na me ni au* experience hardship.  
*mujitsu no tsumi ni au* get punished for a crime of which one is innocent.  
*fureru* touch (*mono ni te wo*), infringe, violate.  
*kakaru* : *haibyō ni kakaru* get consumption.  
*isha ni kakaru* consult a physician.  
 — *ni o me ni kakaru* have the honor to meet.  
*shigoto ni kakaru* (*torikakaru*) begin work.  
*michi ni kakatte iru* be on the way.  
*kamau* : *hito (no koto) ni kamau* be concerned about other people's affairs (rarely *wo*).  
*karakau* banter : *kodomo ni karakau* tease a child.  
*katsu* : *teki ni katsu* defeat the enemy (opp. *mukeru*).  
*masaru* excel (opp. *otoru*).  
*muku, mukau, tai suru* face.  
 Note compounds like *han-tai suru* or *teki-tai suru* oppose.  
*oyobu* reach (p. 196d) : *Miru ni (wa) oyobanai*. It is not necessary to look.  
*narau* : *hito ni narau* learn of a person (but *koto wo narau*).  
*niru* resemble (Ch. V.).  
*sawaru* : *atsusa (shoki) ni sawaru* be affected by the heat.  
 — *no ki ni sawaru* offend.  
*shaku ni sawaru* hurt one's feelings (of a thing).  
*shinobiru* endure : *Kodomo wo hito-te ni watasu ni shinobinai*.  
 I can't endure it to give the child to another.  
*shitagau* follow, obey.  
*somuku* act contrary to, violate.  
*sou* be joined to, go along with.  
*sugiru* exceed : *Nagusami no tame ni yatta ni suginai*. He did it only for fun.  
*takeru, chōsuru* (ideogram *chō*=*nagai*) be expert :  
*keizaigaku ni chōsuru* be versed in economics.  
*tariru, taru* be sufficient : *Kiku ni (wa) tarinai*. It isn't worth hearing.  
*tatsu* : *yaku (yō) ni tatsu* be of use ; *me ni tatsu* be conspicuous.  
*tetsudau* : *oya ni tetsudau* help one's parents (but *shigoto wo tetsudau*, or *shigoto no tetsudai wo suru*).  
*tsukaeru* : *otto ni tsukaeru* serve one's husband.



*tsutomeru* : *gwainushō ni tsutomete iru* be employed in the Foreign Office ; *sensei ni tsutomeru* be attentive to the master (but *kyōshi wo tsutomeru* perform the duties of a teacher).

*tsuku* adhere, arrive, etc. :

*sensei ni tsuite keiko wo suru* study under a master.

*shigoto ga te ni tsukanai* be unable to get on with the work.  
*yoru* approach, depend.

*tsūsuru* be proficient in.

*kan-shō suru* interfere with (but *soku-baku suru* is transitive).

*kwan-kei suru* have relations with.

*kyūdai suru* : *shiken ni kyūdai s.* pass an examination (opp. *raku-dai, s.*).

The following will strike the student as being very peculiar :

*mayou* : *michi ni mayou* lose the way (also *wo machigaeru*).

*tōzakaru* : *hito ni tōzakaru* keep away from a person (*hito wo tōsakere*)

*hazureru* : *kisoku ni hazurete iru* be contrary to the rules.

*wakareru* : *hōyū ni wakareru* part from a friend (also *to*).<sup>a</sup>

*hanareru* : used with *ni, kara, to* or *wo*. Compare.

*Kokyō ni hanarete* leaving home.

[England.

*Amerika ga Igirisu kara hanarete* America separating from

*Bōto ga honsen to hanarete* the boat parting with its ship.

*Kuni wo hanarete* leaving one's country.

Even adjectives may take *ni* :

*Nihongo ni kuwashii*. He is well versed in Japanese.

*Tanuki wa kemuri ni yowai*. A badger can't endure smoke.

*Tenka ni nadakai hito* a man famous all over the country.

3. *To* is exactly equivalent to the English "with," which, however, may be rendered more emphatically *to tomo ni, to issho ni*. It is used with verbs and adjectives as in the following examples :

—*to* (or *ni*) *hanashi wo suru* speak with.

—*to* (or *ni*) *tsuki-au* associate with.

—*to* (or *ni*) *yakusoku suru* make an agreement with.

—*to* (or *ni* or *mo*) *onaji* the same as (p. 39).

—*to kokoro-yasui, kon-i da* be intimate with.

<sup>a</sup> *Wakareru* may also take *kara* in such a sentence as : *Kono uchi wa mukai no ōkii uchi kara wakareta no desu*. This house is a branch of that large house.

*Kanai to futari de shibai wo mi ni ikimashita.*

I went with my wife to the theater.

*Watakushi to kyōdai desu.* He is my brother.

*Go isshin no toki ni nengō wo Meiji to aratamemashita.*

At the time of the Restoration the era was changed to Meiji.

*To* is used with *suru* as explained on page 216, 10; *to naru* sounds rather bookish. With *au*, *to* is rarely substituted for *ni*, but with its compounds (p. 286, 2) *to* is more common. With *chigau*, *to* should be used, except in the common idiom—*ni chigai nai*: *Chi-mei ni chigai wa nai*. It is certainly a geographical name (compare p. 315a). With *majwaru* or *kō-sai suru* either *to* or *ni* may be used.

## Vocabulary

*futokoro* bosom.

*hōki* broom.

*ikioi* power.

*kame* jar.

*kasu* residue, dregs.

*nabe* pot, kettle, or pan for cooking.

*shichi* pledge, pawn.

*tsura* face (not polite).

*abura-mi* fat, suet, lard.

*oku-niwa* back garden.

*ume-boshi* pickled plums.

*hen* radical written on the left side of an ideogram.

*bak-kin* fine. <sup>a</sup>

*choku-yaku* literal translation.

*chū-kai* annotation, explanatory notes, commentary.

*ei-sei* (lit. guarding life) sanitation, hygiene.

*fu-shin* building or repairing a house. <sup>b</sup>

*ga-gen* (lit. elegant words) classical language.

*gak-kwa* branch of study, lesson, curriculum.

*hik-ki* memorandum, note.

*jō-rei* regulation, rule.

*kan-go* Chinese words.

*kei-sai* economy, economics.

*kit-chō* favorable sign. <sup>c</sup>

*kon-i* intimacy.

*kwai-gi* conference, meeting.

(*o*) *ni-kai* second story. <sup>d</sup>

*sei-shin* spirit, intent.

*seki hi* stone monument.

<sup>a</sup> In modern legal phraseology a small fine not exceeding Y. 1.95 is called *kwa-ryō*.

<sup>b</sup> From *fu=amaneku* at large, *shen=kou* beg; *fushin* originally meant building in connection with a temple but is now synonymous with *ken-chiku*.

<sup>c</sup> The character *kichi*, meaning "good," "lucky," enters into many proper names. Synonymous with *kitchō* is *yoi shirase*.

<sup>d</sup> The ground floor is called simply *shita*. The third floor is *sangai*.

<i>yūbin-sei, yū-sei</i> postage.	<i>koyashi</i> fertilizer, manure. <sup>b</sup>
<i>sho-yū-ken</i> proprietary rights.	<i>muragaru</i> be gathered together.
<i>kaban</i> trunk, satchel.	
<i>arai</i> rough, coarse.	<i>mura-kumo</i> a cluster of clouds.
<i>ara-mono</i> goods made of coarse materials, such as brooms, ropes, mats, <i>wara-ji</i> , etc.	<i>ochiru</i> flee.
<i>Nihon-deki no wa-sei no fū-ryū na</i> } made in Japan. <sup>a</sup>	<i>oeru</i> = <i>owaru</i> end, complete.
<i>na ni ou</i> famous ( <i>ou</i> carry).	<i>te ni oenai</i> be unmanageable.
— <i>ni amaeru</i> act like a petted child toward, take advantage of.	<i>uzumeru</i> bury, fill in.
<i>amayakasu</i> pet, indulge.	<i>somuku</i> ( <i>so</i> back, <i>muku</i> face) act contrary to, violate.
<i>ataeru</i> grant, bestow.	<i>ume-awaseru, umeyawase wo tsukeru</i> make up the deficiency.
— <i>ni fureru</i> touch, transgress.	<i>tsū-suru</i> be proficient in.
<i>koeru</i> become fat, fertile (tr. <i>koyasu</i> ).	<i>ryū-kō suru</i> prevail, be in fashion.
	<i>nyū-bai ga akeru</i> the rainy season ends.
	<i>oroshi de</i> at wholesale.
	<i>sora de</i> by heart, from memory. <sup>c</sup>

## Exercises

*Hokkaidō de wa (ni wa) kome ga yoku dekimasen. Nihon ni wa kwazan ga tak'san arimas'. Mukashi wa bakufu de gwaikoku ye iku koto wo kinjite arimash'ta. Sakunen wa fune de Hakodate ye ikimash'ta ga, kondo wa riku no hō wo ikimashō. Sore dake de yō gosaimas'. Kono uten de wa sakura no hana ga chitte shimaimashō. Watakushi no kangae de wa tsumari Nihon seifu de gwaikokujin ni tochi no shoyūken wo ataeru darō to omoimas'. Kodomo wa amayakas'to kuse ni narimas' (get spoiled). Hanas' (話) to iu ji wa gomben (言) ni sh'ta (舌) to iu ji wo kakimas' (iu ji des'). Saikyō de wa "taiken" to iu imi de yoku "erai" to iu kotoba wo mochiimas'.*

a "Imported" is *haku-rai* (*haku* ship, *rai*=*kuru*).

b Also *hi-ryō*, from *hi*=*koyasu*.

c *Kore wo sora de iwaremasu ka.* Can you say this by heart? From this *sora* is derived *soranuru*=*anshō suru* memorize.

*Mō s'koshi de* (p. 351d) *jū ni jī ni narimashō*. *Kono uma wa abarete te ni oenai*. *Kane ga nakatta kara, to'ei wo shichi ni okimash'ta*. *Kono ike ni wa koi ni funa ga orimas'*. *Ebi de tai wo tsuru to iu no wa Doits'go no aburami de nezumi wo toru to iu kotowasa to onaji imi des'*. *Watakushi no tonari ni gakkō ga tachimash'ta*. *Tonari de konyu konrei ga arimas' kara, sawaide imas'*. *Kono setomono wa Nihondeki ni chigai (wa) nai*. *Watakushi wa kaze wo hiita no de zutsū ga shimas' Oroshi de kau to, yasui*. *Kore wa Nihongo de nan to mōshimas'ka*. *Chishima de wa shake ga dossari toremas'*. *Kyō no koto wa asu ni nobasu na*. *Warenabe ni tojibuta*.<sup>a</sup> *Kaeru no tsura ni mizu*.<sup>b</sup> *Ber'rin ni zairyū sh'te iru Nihonjin ni wa kanai no aru hito mo arimas'*. *Kono ninjin no ue wa nani ni shimas'ka*. *Sayō, kusuri ni shimas'*. *Mukō ni kas'ka ni mieru yama wa Kanōzan des'*.<sup>c</sup> *Nihon no gakkō no kazu wa mina de samman rok'sen da sō des'*. *Gakkwa no hikki wo uchi ye kaette seisho shimas'*. *Chotto kuchi ni demasen*.<sup>d</sup> *Kore wa amari takasugiru; mollo yasui no ni shimashō*. *Shimbun-jōrei ni furete bakkin wo toraremasht'a*. *Amari fubenkyō desh'ta kara, ima ni natte kōkwaish'te imas'*. *Hisashiburi de ō me ni kakarimash'ta*.<sup>e</sup> *Sore wa doko ni mo motte iku wake ni wa ikemasen*. *Uri no tane ni wa nasubi ga haenu* (Proverb). *Kōyasan ni Akechi Mitsuhide no sekiki ga arimas'*. *Jikōgara de* (p. 217a) *asa ban wa yohodo susush'ku narimash'ta*. *Mō s'koshi de nyūbai ga akemashō*. *Komban wa o kyaku ni ikimas'kara, reif'ku ya nazo wo yoku sh'taku sh'te oite o kure*. *Go shuttats' wa ikkagoro des'ka*. *Sayō de gozaimas', raigetsu no futs'ka mikka goro ni narimashō*. *Zeniire ga yaburete dokka de kane wo otoshimash'ta*. *Kono kuruma wa furuku natte yaku ni tatanaku narimash'ta*. *Nihon ni wa take de koshiraeta utsuwa ga tak'san arimas'*. *Anata yanagigōri ni kaban wo motte oide nasaimas'ka*. *Dōmo, warui kaze des'*;

<sup>a</sup> *Warenabe*, from *wareru* be cracked and *nabe* kettle; *tojibuta* from *tojiru* bind and *futa* lid. For the meaning of the proverb compare; "Misery loves company."

<sup>b</sup> Compare the English, "Water on a duck's back."

<sup>c</sup> A mountain in the province of Kazusa, visible from various points in Tōkyō.

<sup>d</sup> The meaning is: I know it very well, but I can't for the moment express it.

<sup>e</sup> Note the difference between *hisashiburi de* an 1 *hisashiku* (p. 204a), the one being used with positive verbs and the other with negative.

sore ni o shimeri ga (rain) chitto mo nai kara hidoi kokori de arukemasen. Hyōtan wo sagete hanami ni iku no wa fūryū ni miemas'. Kono hōki wa kinjo no aramonoya de kaimash'ta. O nikai ni itashimashō ka, sh'ta ni itashimashō ka. Dochira de mo kirei na hō ga yoroshii. Anata to wakarete karu yagate ame ga furidashimash'ta. Mus'ko to f'tari de sakana wo tsuri ni ikimash'ta. Kono shimbun to issho ni tegami ga kimasen ka. Hakurankwai ni iku yō ni tomodachi to yak'soku sh'te okimash'ta ga, sashits'kae ga atte yamemash'ta. Umeboshi to iu mono wa ume wo shio ni ts'kete (p. 160g) sore kara hinata ni hosh'te mata ts'keta mon'des'. Watakushi wa wasurete orimash'ta ga, konya kwaigi ga aru yō ni techō ni tomete arimas'kara, kore kara dekakenakereba narimasen. Watakushi wa ikanai tsumori des'ga, baai ni yotte wa ikanakereba naranai ka mo shiremasen. K'ris'tokyō wo shinzuru no wo samatageru no wa kempō no seishin ni somukimas'. Mada narenai mon'des'kara, watakushi wa jitensha wo norihazush'te sono ikioi de hei wo buchikowashimash'ta. Chikagoro shinin wo sono mama haka ni uzumeru yori mo kwasō wo suru hō ga eiseijō kara itte mo mata tochi no keizaijō kara itte mo ryōtoku (double gain) de aru to iu setsu ga daibu ryūkō sh'te mairimash'ta. Kyōto no Arashiyama wa na ni ou sakura no ineisho des'. "Tsuki ni murakumo hana ni kaze" to iu no wa kono yo no mama ni naranu koto wo (p. 227a) keiyō sh'ta kotoba des'. Okuniwa ni ume no hana ga saite imas'no de bash'kijū yoi nioi ga shimas'. Kodomo wo futokoro ni daite yuki no naka ni tatte iru onna no e wa Tokiwa ga (p. 162c) kodomora wo tsurete ochite yuku tokoro wo kaitu no des'. Hito ni oshieru no wa taihen jibun no keiko ni narimas'. Issakujiisu no jishin ni o uchi wa o itami nasaimasen desh'ta ka. Yamagi ni kaza-ore (kaze ni oreru koto) nashi (Proverb). Bakin no kaita Hakkenden wa Nihonjin de shiranai hito wa arimasen. Kuchi ni (de) wa sō iimas'ga, hara no uchi de wa kō omotte imas'.

The Government has purchased (*kaiageru*) this lot. How should I say that in Japanese (p. 149,2)? Are battledores all made of *kiri*? On account of sickness, Itō has not been coming to recitations (*keiko ye denai*) for some time, but he will at once make up the deficiency. Are the things that appear

at once make up the deficiency. Are the things that appear yonder mountains or clouds? Japan formerly was not divided into *ken*. They say that it is a favorable sign if you dream of Fuji. At London it is seldom quite clear (*mattaku harete oru*). In Japanese books the notes are written above, but in Western books they are written below. He has two sons and three daughters. On this letter there were no (*hätte nai*) stamps; so I was charged (*torareru*) double (*ni bai no*) the postage. It is said that the people of Tōkyō build with the expectation (*tsumori*) that [the house] will burn once in three years. The character "pine" (松) is composed of "tree" (木) and "prince" (公). This evening I go to dinner (*go chisō*) at [my] neighbor's. I am so (*kō* or *konna ni*) late, because (*no de*) I lost the way coming here (*kigake ni*). The character "cry" (鳴) is composed of "mouth" (口) and "bird" (鳥). The residue of the sardines is used for manure. I cannot say it by heart. The *iroka* is (*natte iru*) a song, but its meaning is hard to understand. At the end of December *mochi* is made (pounded) in every house (*ieie de*). The Japanese do not mind (*tonjaku suru*) being in a draughty place (place where wind blows through). What is in those jars? There is tea in these jars. It will be finished (*dekiagaru*) in two hours. I have become quite intimate with him. Hideyoshi's grave is in Amida-gamine.<sup>a</sup> In Shinto shrines there are (*tatte iru*) *gohei* and a mirror. As that is Chinese classical language (*kango no gugen*), it is not used in the colloquial. It sounds strange (*hen ni kikoeru*) if you translate it literally into English. That is certainly written by a Japanese (a thing that a Japanese wrote). This will afford a topic for (seed of) conversation. It hurts (*sawaru*) the eyes to read by a dim (*kurai*) lamp. It is stated (*notte iru*) in the newspaper that (*yō ni*) a Russian man-of-war arrives at Yokohama to-morrow. We will spread new mats in the rooms. It is said that he is (*de*) a great scholar and is proficient in ten languages (languages of ten countries). Small (*komakai*) articles if not gathered together and put (*irete oku*) into boxes soon (*yoku*) disappear (become invisible).

---

<sup>a</sup> A hill behind the *Daibutsu* temple in Kyōto. *Amida* the chief divinity of northern Buddhism; *mine* peak.

## CHAPTER LXXIX

4. *Kara, yori* from, since after :<sup>a</sup> *koko kara* from this place ; *moto kara* from the first ; *mukashi kara* of old ; *saki kara* since some time ago ; *kore kara* from here (= *koko kara*), after this, next ; *sore kara* from there, after that, then ; *hiru kara* in the afternoon ; *asa hayaku kara* early in the morning ; *tsune kara, fudan kara* usually ; *ura kara* from the back, by way of a hint.

*Hata kara kuchi wo dash'cha ikenai.* It will not do to intrude one's opinions. (*hata kara* from a side, as a bystander).

*Hachi ji kara hajimarimasu.* It begins at eight (p. 161 c).

*Anata kara o hajime nasai.* You begin.

*Nihojin no kangae kara ieba.....*

To speak from a Japanese point of view.....

*Gakumonjō kara iu naraba.....* To speak scientifically.....

*Kara* is also used as a conjunction (p. 401).

*Yori* (originally stem of *yoru*, is in the colloquial less common than *kara*. Note the expressions *moto-yori* of course to be sure = *gwanrai* (p. 349), *kanete yori* for a long time = *tō kara*. In making comparisons (p. 136) *kara miru to* is sometimes substituted for *yori* :

*Nani yori kekkō na shina wo itadaite arigatō gozaimasu.*

I thank you for the handsome (incomparably splendid) gift. <sup>b</sup>

*Yoru osoku made okite iru yori mo asa hayaku okite benkyō suru hō ga yoku oboeraremasu.* <sup>c</sup>

One can learn better by rising and studying early in the morning than by staying up late at night.

*Nashi wa ringo kara miru to, yohodo assari shite orimasu.*

Pears are rather insipid as compared with apples.

5. *Made* until, as far as to, to :<sup>d</sup>

a In the sense of "after" *kara* is used not only with substantives, but also with subordinatives (p. 96c). In either case *i-rai* (p. 349c) or *kono-kata* may be substituted for *kara*. The pleonastic idiom—*kara irai* may be heard occasionally.

b Elliptically one may say : *Kore wa kore wa nani yori.....*

c In such a sentence the natural predicate is a word like *yoi*, here converted to *yoku oboeraremasu*.

d *Made* is used inclusively ; e.g., *Doyōbi made yasunde yoroshii.* You may take a vacation until Saturday (inclusive). But compare : *Kono hon wo hajime kara hyaku mai no tokoro made yomimashita* I read to [the beginning of] the hundredth leaf of this book.

*Doko made oide ni narimasuka.* How far are you going?  
*Tōkyō made iku ri arimasuka.* How many *ri* are there to T.?  
*Atama no teppen kara tsumasaki made doro ni mabireta.*  
 I was covered with mud from the crown of my head to the sole of my foot (lit. tips of the nails).

There is a difference between *made* and *made ni* (p. 161d):

*Ban made ame ga furimashō.*

It will probably rain until this evening.

*Ban made ni furimashō.*

It will probably rain by this evening.

*Made ni* is used when verbs like "come", "be finished," etc., form the predicates:

*Uchi de o machi mōshimasu kara, yoji made ni irasshai.*

I will wait for you at home; come by four o'clock.\*

*Myōnichi made ni dekimashō.* It will be done by to-morrow.

Note the peculiar use of *made ni* in the sense of "for" or "as" in such idioms as:

*O rei no shirushi made ni sashiagemasu.*

I offer this as a token of appreciation.

*Go sankō made ni mōshiagemasu.* I offer it as a suggestion.

*Made* in some connections means "everything including even," or simply "even," in which case the combination is treated as a substantive and may take case-particles or *mo* (p. 53a)

*Ni made* also occurs:

*Shujin ga toshiyori wo hajime kodomo ni made mo o miyage wo katte kimashita.* The master bought presents for all, from the old folks down to the children.

*Uta ni made mo utawareru* be the subject even of songs.

Note finally the use of *made* with verbs, as in *aku made* to the utmost, from *akiru* be surfeited, and the common idiom *iu made mo nai* = *muron no*: *Iu made mo nai warui koto desu.* It is of course bad (lit. obvious badness).

6. *Ye* to, toward: *gwaikoku ye iku* go abroad; *waki ye deru* go out [of the house]; *Nihonjū ye hiramaru* be spread throughout all Japan. *Ye* is often substituted for *ni* or used pregnantly:

\* *Yo ji made irasshai* would mean: "Stay till four o'clock."



*Tōkyō ye tsuku* arrive at Tōkyō; *tana ye ageru* put on the shelf (metaphorically : be oblivious of); *yūbinkyoku ye yotte iku* call at the post office on the way; *Teikoku Hōteru ye tomaru* stop at the Imperial Hotel. Note : *Nihon ye atsurareru* order from Japan.

### Vocabulary

*ari* ant.  
*tamashii* soul, spirit  
*hana-bi* fireworks.  
*ko-goto* complaint (p. 15,2).  
*tsumasaki (tsume no saki)* tip of the toe (nail).  
*yakedo (yake-dokoro)* a burn (*yakedo wo suru*) be burned.)  
*gun=kōri* (p. 324a).  
*shi*=samurai.  
*shuku* relay-station, stopping place, post.  
*yui-nō* presents exchanged at a betrothal. <sup>a</sup>  
*i-butsu* legacy, relics.  
*yō-shō* youth, juvenility.

*ju-ban* } undergarment, un-  
*hada-gi* } dershirt. <sup>b</sup>  
*seibo* (= *toshi no kure*) a present made at the end of the year. <sup>c</sup>  
*sō-hō (tomo)* both parties (lit. sides).  
*sō-shin* the whole body.  
*tep-pen* summit, crown.  
*shimeppoi* moist, damp. <sup>d</sup>  
*so-matsu na* coarse. rude.  
*hau* creep, crawl.  
*kakueru* embrace, employ (as a workman or servant).  
*tobi-oriru* jump down.  
*nage-suteru* throw away.

### Exercises

*Tenshi sama wa moto kara Tōkei ni irasshatta no de wa gozainasen. Asa mo hayaku kara hito ni koraremas' kara, s'koshi*

a This is a case of *yūōyomi* (p. 19), the *yui* being the stem of *yuu* to tie (in *kamiyui*). The *i* in *i-butsu* (= *nokosu*) is in some compounds pronounced *yui*; e.g., *yui-gon* or *i-gon* verbal will (of a dying person). So also in *i-butsu-ron* materialism the *i* (= *tada*) is often pronounced *yui*.

b An outer shirt, called *shatsu*, does not come under this head. But Japanese have also begun to wear flannel *shatsu* under their *hadagi*.

c This is a case of metonymy. Compare a similar transfer of meaning in the case of *shūgi* (p. 263).

d In speaking of the air or climate say *shikke (shimeri-ke) ga tsuyoi*, not *shimeppoi*. With the latter compare *wasureppoi* forgetful, *okorippoi* irritable, *akippoi* easily tired, fickle, *awareppoi* pathetic, etc.

mo hima ga arimasen. Shi jū shichi shi no (shi jū shichi nin no gishi no) ibuts'wa ikka (nan nichī) kara miseru deshō ka. Kesahodo gakkō ye iku tochū de (michi de) kō iu mezurashii furui hon wo kaimash'ta. Kokyō ye nish'ki (nish'ki wo kite kokyō ye kaeru).<sup>a</sup> Sen ri no michi mo ippo yori hajimaru (Proverb). Danna wa tabi ye dete rusu de gozaimas'. Yui-nō wo yaru no wa dō iu wake des'ka. Kekkon suru mae ni yak'soku no shirushi to sh'te sōhō kara shinamono wo torikawasu no des'. Uguis'wa doko ye nigeta ka omae wa minakatta ka. Jibun no warui koto wa tana ye agete hito no koto wo iimas'. Koi wa doko made mo noboru mono des'kara, kodomo ga shusse suru yō ni to itte o iwai ni ts'kaimas'. Mado kara ts'ki (no hikari) ga sashikonde imas'. Kōban fune de Ōhashi made itte hanabi wo kembutsu shimashō.<sup>b</sup> Seifu kara<sup>c</sup> kono jimen wo o haraisage ni narimash'ta. Kore wa somatsu na mono de gozaimas'ga, o seibo (no shirushi) made ni sashiagemas'. Kore wa, kore wa nani yori no (o) shina wo itadakisash'te makoto ni arigatō gozaimas'. Nihon no shibai wa asa kara ban made kakarimas'. Itsu made mo ryūgaku sh'te iru wake ni wa ikanai kara, ima no uchi yoku benkyō shimashō. Yoritomo no koro made wa gunken no seido de arimash'ta ga, sore kara hōken-seido ni kawarimash'ta (p. 324a.) Mutts'kara tō made no kodomo wa chi wo hau ari made (ga) niku-mu. Mayuge wo otos'to iu shūkwan wa Shina kara kita sō des'; Shina de wa ima de mo kodomo made ga mayuge wo otoshimas'. Nihon de wa meshitsukai ga sono uchi no kodomo ni made mo teinei ni shimas'.<sup>d</sup> Mitsugo no tamashii hyaku made (p. 64c). Are kara dochira ye irashaimash'ta ka. Are kara sugu (ni) uchi ye kaerimash'ta. Kono warui fū ga tōji no hito ni made oyonde oru. Doyōbi made azukete okimashō. Doyōbi made ni tori ni kimashō. Chikagoro go tōke ye o kakae ni nari-

a The idea of the proverb is that a man should not visit his birthplace until he has become a distinguished person.

b Ōhashi, a bridge over the Sumida River at Senju in Tōkyō. In Japan fireworks are often sent off from boats on a river.

c Kara is here used like *de* (p. 365A). For haraisageru see p. 286d.

d Teinei ni suru treat courteously. In Japan a servant uses respectful language even to the little children of his master.

*mask'ta bettō wa dokō no kuni no mono de gosaimas'ka.<sup>a</sup>*  
*Temae kara saki ni dete ike.<sup>b</sup>* *Saki ye mus'ne ga maitte*  
*orimas'.* *Asa kara no ōyuki de michi ga tomarimash'ta.<sup>c</sup>*  
*Bakuchi ni makete nani kara nani made torarete shimaimash'ta.*  
*Ano onna wa uguis'no yō da to iu no wa, koe wa ii keredomo,*  
*kao ga warui to iu koto wo ura kara iu no des'. Umegatani*  
*wa aku made chikara no tsuyoi sumōtori de dare mo narabu*  
*mono ga nakatta. Kakikata no somatsu na no de tomodachi*  
*kara tabitabi kogoto wo itte kimash'ta. Asa kara no ōyuki des'.*

From here to the next stopping place it is about four *ri*. At what o'clock will (does) to-morrow's performance begin? From (the time of) [his] youth [his] eyes were bad. I have known (am knowing) him for a long time. A wind is blowing (*fukits'keru*) from (the side of) the sea and driving the waves up (*nami wo uchiageru*) on the shore. A fruit-bearing tree may be known from its blossoms (Proverb). Hello, rikshaman! for (*de*) how much will (do) you go to the Legation? Take this plant out of the pot and plant it in the garden. If a priest is detestable, even his scarf is detestable (Proverb). In the time of Iemitsu the water of the Tama River was brought (*hiku*) to Tōkyō. A railroad from Aomori to Akita has been completed (*dekimash'ta*). My servant is of course dishonest but, as he is efficient (*monogoto ga yoku dekiru*), I employ him (p. 226a) just as he is (*sono mama*). In (*ni*) the recent fire I jumped down from the second story and hurt myself. The fireman was burned all over (*sōshin*) from the crown of his head to the tips of his toes. Well! (*oya*) where are you going in this bad weather (in spite of the badness of the weather)? Having unavoidable business, I am going just for a little (as far as) to Eyeglass Bridge. The cherry blossoms have begun to bloom everywhere; so we will go (*itte mimashō*) to-morrow to Mukōjima. When (subor. *wa*) the rain continues like this (*kō*) everything (*na-*

<sup>a</sup> *Go tō-ke* your house here. For *tō* see p. 327a. Compare *go tō-sho*, from *sho=tokoro*.

<sup>b</sup> Translate: You go out first. For the *kara* compare *seifu kara* and *honata kara* (p. 337a). *Saki* is used in a different sense in the following sentence, where it indicates a family which the daughter has entered as a wife or as a servant.

<sup>c</sup> *Michi ga tomaru* the road is impassable (lit. is stopped).

*ni kara nani made*) gets damp and one feels uncomfortable. A second class excursion ticket to Fujisawa, please! From here to the pass the road is dreadfully bad. As I have never been in (gone to) that region, I think it would be better to engage a guide (go engaging a guide). As I am going out just a little (*chotto soko made*), if a guest (*dare ka o kyaku*), comes (has appeared), say that I shall return at once. He half (*hambun made*) smoked the cigar and threw the rest (*nokori*) away. We shall finish our preparations by the time the teacher comes. How far had we come (*yaru*)? Until the next [lesson] make a clean copy. Having lost (*makeru*) in gambling, he had [everything] taken—from his coat to his shirt.

## CHAPTER LXXX

Quasi-postpositions, as we have previously remarked, are really substantives. They are joined to dependent words by means of *no* and may themselves take case-particles and postpositions proper. Instead of a limiting substantive with *no*, the demonstratives *kono*, *sono*, and *ano* may be used (p. 36). Either *ni* or *de*, according to the context (p. 338, top) may be attached to quasi-postpositions denoting place; with such words as *kawari* and *tame* the proper particle is *ni*. But this postposition is not infrequently omitted; e, g., with *mae*, *aida*, *kaka*, *kawari*, *tame*. Quasi-postpositions may be used as predicates:

*Yama no mukō desu ka, temae desu ka.*

It is beyond the mountain or on this side?

*Mon no soto desu ka, uchi desu ka.*

It is outside the gate or inside?

1. *Ue* (in some connections *kami*) on, over, above. Besides the ordinary sense, *ue* often means "in regard to":

*Bumpō no ue de wa tadashū gozaimasu ga.....*

It is correct so far as the grammar is concerned, but.....

*Kotoba no ue kara mireba.....* Literally.....

For expressions like *tetsugakujō no* philosophical, *rigakujō no* pertaining to physics, etc, see p. 120. In counting, etc., "over" or "above" is usually to be rendered *ijō*: *hachi jū yen ijō (no ue)* over eighty yen; *reiten ijō* above zero; *chūjū ijō no hito* the middle and upper classes.

The Chinese equivalent of *naka* is *chū*, used mostly with Chinese words:

- O keiko chū desu ka.* Are you in the midst of a lesson?  
*Mada shiken chū desu.* We are still having examinations.  
*Yasumi chū (ni)* during the vacation.  
*Gozen chū (ni)* in the forenoon, or, at dinner.

This *chū* enters into numerous compounds: *kan-chū* season of greatest cold, *sho-chū* season of greatest heat, *dō-chū* journey, *shi-chū* the city, etc.<sup>c</sup> The same word in its nigoried form *jū* meaning "entire" (p. 341, top) is used largely with words of native origin: *uchijū* the whole house, *murajū* the whole village, *yojū* the whole night, etc. *Konnichijū (ni)* before the day is over.

16. *Uchi*<sup>b</sup> is unlike *naka* in that it may be used also of time:

- Hito tsuki no uchi (ni)* within a month.  
*Chikai uchi (ni), sono uchi (ni)* within a short time, soon.

Note that in the sense of "among" *uchi ni* cannot be used except when the existence of a thing is in question, that is, when a word like *aru*, *oru*, *ōi* or *sukunai* is the predicate. Compare:

- Kono uchi de douata mo sonjimasen.*  
 I don't know any one among these people.  
*Kono uchi ni sonjite oru hito wa hitori mo gozaimasen.*  
 Among these people there is not one that I know.  
*Kono uchi de o ki ni iranai no wa dore desu ka.*  
 Among these which is it that you don't like?  
*Kono uchi ni o ki ni itta shina wa arimasen ka.*  
 Among these is there no article that you like?

With Chinese words *nai* or *dai* may take the place of *uchi*: *itchō-nai* within a *chō*, i. e., the whole street; *shi-nai* the city *tei-nai* the grounds (of a dwelling), *kei-dai* the enclosure.

17. *Soto* outside. The Chinese equivalent is *gwai*: *kai-gwai* over the sea, foreign countries, *an-gwai* beyond expectation.

18. *Hoka* besides, except: *sono hoka (ni)* or *sono ta (ni)* besides that; *omoi-no-hoka (ni)* beyond expectation.

a The word *jochū* maidservant, from *jo=onna*, was originally a collective term. Compare *ningen* human being from *nin=hito* and *gen=aida*, and *kanai* wife (or family), from *ka=ie* and *nai=uchi*.

b The word is identical with *uchi* house. We don't say *uchi no uchi ni*, but *ie no uchi ni*. *Uchi ni orimasu*. He is at home.

19. *Kawari* instead: *sono kawari (ni)* instead of that.

20. *Tame* for (final or causal): *kuni no tame (ni)* in behalf of one's country; *nen no tame (ni)* to avoid mistakes (lit. for the sake of attention); *yō-jō no tame (ni)* for the sake of health; *bō-fū no tame (ni)* on account of the typhoon. *Sei de (sei=ibioi)* is synonymous with *tame ni* in its causal sense:

*O tenki no sei de zutsū ga shimasu.*

I have a headache on account of the weather.

Note such combinations as: *ue-shita*, *kami-shimo*, *jō-ge*; *atosaki* before and after, or reversal of the other; *zen-go* before or after, about; *chū-gwai* or *nai-gwai* home and abroad.

There are other words which might properly be included in the above list of quasi-postpositions.

## Vocabulary

*itoko* cousin.

*kuma* bear.

*mushiro* matting woven of straw.

*ruri* blue flycatcher (from *ruri* emerald).

*tsuge* boxwood.

*chikara-mochi* athlete.

*hana-gami* paper for wiping the nose.

*hashi-sen* bridge toll.

*koma-dori* robin.

*ko-ya* small house, hut, pen, stable.

*sa-tsuki* azalea. <sup>a</sup>

*shiro-ato* ruins of a castle.

*suzuri (sumi-suri)* ink-stone.

*uki-yo* the world. <sup>b</sup>

*kō* merit, achievement.

*bu-ke* military caste (in feudal times).

*ku-ge* nobility formerly attached to the Court.

*bum-pō* grammar.

*dō-ro* road, street.

*ge-raku* fall (of prices).

*ken-kō* health (*kenkō desu* is healthy).

*mom-ban* gatekeeper, porter.

*shi-hei* paper money (p. 269b).

*shū-kwaku* harvest, crop. <sup>c</sup>

*kei-satsu-shō* police station.

<sup>a</sup> Blooms later than the ordinary *tsutsuji*. The name, originally *satsuki-tsutsuji*, is derived from a classical designation of the fifth month. This again is derived from *sanae-tsuki* (*sanae* sprouts of rice).

<sup>b</sup> From *uku* float, the idea being that of inconstancy or change. Another etymology derives the word from the adjective *nshi*, *uki* sorrowful.

<sup>c</sup> Also *shūkwaku-daka*, *deki-daka*, *tore-daka*.

*hankechi* handkerchief.  
*naka ga ii* be on good terms.  
*saezuru, saezutte* sing, chirp,  
 twitter, warble.

*ninzuru, ninjite* appoint.  
*at-tō suru* subdue, crush.  
*chin-chō suru* prize.  
*an-gwai (ni)* unexpectedly.

## Exercises

*Usuitōge<sup>a</sup> no mukō ni Oiwake to iu mura ga arimash'te, soko kara yoku Asamayama ni noborimas'. Angwai ni hayaku me ga yoku narimash'ta. Ts'kue no ue ni aru suzuribako wo molte oide. Kono hoka ni (wa) nani mo gozaimasen. Usuitōge no temae ni Sakamoto to iu mura ga arimas'; kōban wa soko ye tomarimashō. Go monsen wo tōrimash'ta kara, chotto ukagaimash'ta. Nenshi (no rei) ni wa matsu no uchi ni ikaneba narimassen.<sup>b</sup> Matsu no uchi to iu no wa Tōkyō de wa shōgwatsu no nanuka made no koto de kadomatsu no tatete aru aida wo iu no des'. Taikō no Chōsen-seibats'wa sambyaku nen hodo mae no koto des'. Mukashi no shiro no mawari ni wa ishigaki ga tsuite atte f'kai hori ga hotte arimash'ta. Ueno no kōen no uchi ni dōbutsuen ga arimas'. Watakushi ga Asamayama no ue ye nobotta toki ni wa taisō kumotte ite tōku no hō wa ikkō mienakatta. Saikyō no miyako ni naita no wa nambyaku nen zen no koto des'ka. Sayō sa, karekore sen hyaku nen mae no koto des'. Fukuro no naka no nezumi.<sup>c</sup> Samurai wa meiyō no tame ni wa yoku inochi wo s'temash'ta. Kōmori mo tori no uchi.<sup>d</sup> Yononaka ni neru hodo raku wa nakere-domo; ukiyo no baka wa okite hataraku.<sup>e</sup> Are wa san nin kyōdai no uchi de naka no koto des'. Hōken jūdai ni wa kuge ga buke no tame ni attō sarete imash'ta. Eu no sh'ta no chikaramochi.<sup>f</sup> Kido san wa kuni no tame ni kō ga atta, ii*

a A pass on the Nakasendō, leading from the province of Kōtsuke to Shinano.

b Within the pines, i.e., while the pines (*kadomatsu*) still stand at the gate. In some localities the *matsu* stand until the 15th.

c A proverbial expression indicating a being under restraint and at the mercy of others.

d The above expression may be used jocularly when a person finds himself in a company to which he has hardly a claim to be admitted.

e A comic poem; *roku*=*roku na koto*.

f This proverb is applicable when a person's exertions are not noticed or appreciated by others, just as an athlete under the veranda might vainly strive to lift the horse and no one would be the wiser for it.

*yaku ni ninzerare* *wash'ta*. *Bumpō no ue de wa wachigai de wa arimasen ga, amari sō wa iimasen*. *Momban no uchi wa jiki mon no soba ni arimas'*. *Semmai no dara (dollar) no uchi (ni) hachi jū mai nise ga atta*. *Sensui no gururi ni shiba wo itte (245) tokorodokoro ni sats'ki ya tsuge wo uemash'ta*. *Me no mae ni oru mono ni sonna koto wo itcha shitsurei des'*. *Dai Nihonshi wa<sup>a</sup> oyoso ni hyaku nen mae ni Mito de dekimashita hon des'*. *Kōmei teunō no tsugi ni ima no tenshi sama ga kurai ni ts'karemash'ta (o ts'ki ni narimash'ta)*. *Kawa no mukōgawa de hito ga tsuri wo sh'ite imas'*. *Sono ori no naka ni kuma ga sambiki orimas', os'ga ni hiki ni mes'ga ippiki*. *Ni jū nen mae ni wa kempōjō no giron de gotagota sh'ite imash'ta*. *Giron no ue de wa makete mo jissai ni oite wa kachimash'ta*. *Kono yama no kage ni mizuumi ga arimas'*. *Osandon ga ido no hatu de o shaberi wo suru no wo idobutakwaiji to mōshimas'*. *Hashi no kiwa ni koya ga tatte ite soko de hashisen wo torimas'*. *Ano onna no byōki wa mattaku ki no sei des'*. *Tōkyō de mo Shinjuku atari ye iku to, mō inaka ni narimas'*. *Tatami no omote ni nani ka ji ga kaite arimas'*. *Ano futari wa shinrui de ari nagara taihen naka ga waru<sup>b</sup>*. *Fufu no naka ni mada hitori no ko ga nai*. *Chichi no hoka (wa) mina korasaremash'ta*. *Chichi no hoka (ni) kodomo ga futari korasaremash'ta*. *Konna ni honeotte hataraitte orimas' (no) mo kono tsubure-kakatta ie wo okosō ga tame de gozaimas'*.

By the *torii* there is a good hotel. He gave (*s'teru*) his life for his country. About twenty years ago it happened that (*koto ga aru*) paper money was below par (the market price of paper money fell). The crop of rice for (*oi*) one year in the whole of Japan amounts to (*is*) over forty million *koku*, it is said. Have you served in a foreigner's house before (*made*) this? Are you busy (in the midst of business) just now? When did you return from America? It was (*is*) about seven years ago. *Hibachi* are injurious to (*for*) the health. Among singing birds those most prized in Japan are the blue flycatcher and (*ni*) the robin and the bush warbler. The blossom of the: *fuki* comes out in winter from under the snow. It is said that it was (8) [in] 287 (7) A. D. (6) that (*no wa* 5) Chinese books (1) first (2) came (4) to Japan (3). Put the clothes all (*sukkari*) into the (inside of the) trunk. There are many fleas under

a A famous historical work. *Mito* was the castle town of the *daimyō* of the province of Hitachi on the east coast north Tōkyō. See p. 89 g.

b With *naka* in this idiom compare *aida* in *go'u shitshii aida* a very intimate relation.



these *tatami*. Take the clothes out of [the inside of] the closet. Formerly straw matting was laid in the prisons instead of *tatami*. Now one can go from Yokohama to San Francisco within two weeks. The Japanese use paper instead of handkerchiefs and put (*ireru*) it into their sleeves. Shall we look at (*kembutsu suru*) the inside of the temple? The streets in (*nai*) Tōkyō city are not very good. The post office is just (*jiki*) opposite the police station. There are ruins of a castle on this mountain. Willow trees grow (*sodatsu*) well by the water. Who is the person that stood beside you? He is my cousin.

## CHAPTER LXXXI

The subordinatives of certain verbs correspond to English prepositions or expressions resembling prepositions :

*ni kakete* until.

*wo motte* with, by means of. <sup>a</sup>

*Kusari wo motte tsunagu* fasten with a chain.

*ni mukatte, ni muite* over against, vis-a-vis, facing, toward.

*wo nozoite (wo nozoku no hoka)* except.

*ni oite* in, at, on (formal).

*wo (ye) sashite* toward, in the direction of, with reference to.

*Tōkyō wo sashite iku* go toward Tōkyō.

*Taiin<sup>b</sup> to iu no wa tsuki (no koto) wo sashite iu no desu.*

The name *taiin* has (is said with) reference to the moon.

*ni shitagatte (ni shitagaeba)* in accordance with (formal).

*ni shite (wa), to shite (wa)* for, as (p. 216).

— *sugite (sugi), — tatte (tattara)* after.

*wo wōshite* through (Anglicism).

*ni totte* for.

*Sore wa watakushi ni totte taihen shiawase na koto desu.*

That is a very fortunate thing for me.

*ni tsuite* concerning, regarding, about, with, under (a teacher).

*Kyōkwasho-jiken ni tsuite* concerning the text-book affair.

<sup>a</sup> *Motte* is sometime used pleonastically with *de* (p. 198a).

<sup>b</sup> The word *tai-in* corresponds to *tai-yō* sun. The Chinese word *yō* and *in* denote respectively light and shade, or positive and negative, or male and female. Compare *San-yō-dō* the region south of the mountains and *San-in-dō* the region north of the mountains.

*Gwaikoku no sensei ni tsuite* under a foreign teacher.

*ni yotte* (*ni yoreba, yoruto*) according to, by the aid of  
*ni kwan shite* = *ni tsuite*.<sup>a</sup> [(formal).]

*ni tai shite* = *ni mukatte*.

*ni ōjite* in accordance with.

To this list might be added *nakute* (or *naku*) without. For *nakute* one may substitute *nashi ni* (p. 98b). To either form *wa* may be added when a negative verb follows: *nakucha, nashi ni wa*.

More polite forms may be substituted in some cases; e. g., *ni okimashite, ni tsukimashite*.

Some of these subordinatives may be used attributively: *kore ni tsuite no o hanashi* the talk about this; *Shina ni tai shite no* or (*tai suru sei-ryaku*) the policy in regard to China.

Some are used with clauses, like conjunctions; e. g., *toshū wo toru ni shitagatte* (*ōjite*) with increasing age.

## Vocabulary

*kura* saddle.

*okite* law, statute, precept.

*tsuru* }

*katsura* } vine.

*shinai* a stout foil made of bamboo.

*ii-wake* }

*mōshi-wake* } excuse. b

*me-ue, meue no hito* person of higher rank.

*me-shita, meshita no hito* person of lower rank.

*nakōdo* }

*bat-shaku-nin* } go-between.

*sashi-zu* directions, instructions (*sashizu wo suru* direct, instruct).

*te-gara* }

*hō rō* } meritorious deed.

*te-suri* hand-rail, banisters.

*tsuri-bashi* hanging or suspension bridge.

*han* fief, clan, daimiate.

*nō-gyō* agriculture. c

*gan-kwa* ophthalmology.

*hatsu-on* pronunciation.

*is-shu* one kind.

*kan-kwa* influence.

*ken-jutsu* art of fencing.

*ki-kin* famine.

*seki-jun* order of seats.

*shō-doku* disinfection.

*shu-moku* wooden hammer used in striking a bell.

*so-shiki* organization, system.

*taku-hatsu* (lit trusting bowl) begging (of monks), mendicant.

a *Kwan suru* forms an exception to the rule given on p. 214, 7.

b *Mōshiwake ga gosaimasen*. My behavior has been inexcusable. I can't say anything in my defence.

c Compare *kō-gyō* manufactures, *shō-gyō* commerce. In former times there were four classes: *shi* = *samurai*, *nō*, *kō* and *shō*.

<i>toku-ten</i> special favor, privilege.	<i>isamashii</i> brave, intrepid.
<i>un-chin</i> charges for freight.	<i>jiki</i> pity, benevolence.
<i>denshin-ryō, dempō-ryō</i> cost of a telegram.	<i>jiki-bukai</i> merciful.
<i>ik-ka-jō</i> one article, one item (comp. p. 86, 5).	<i>shirizoku</i> retreat.
	<i>hiki-korosu</i> kill by drawing asunder, or by running over.
	<i>hai-suru, hai-shi</i> abolish.

### Exercises

*Nihon zentai ni sō iu fūzoku ga atta to wa iemasen; han han ni yotte chigatte orimash'ta kara.*<sup>a</sup> *Sore wa mesh'tsukai ni mukatte iu no des' kara, teinei ni iwanak'te mo yō gozaimas.* *Oya-kōkō ni tsuite Shina ni ni jū shi kō no (p. 233c) hanashi ga arimas'.* *Go enryo naku (nashi ni) oshatte kudasai. Mukō no ume no eda ni kami ga tsuite imas' ga, are wa dō iu wake des' ka. Sayō, are wa ume no hana ni tsuite yonda uta ga kaite aru no des'.* *Tomodachi ni tsuite shirazushirazu tōi tokoro made ikimash'ta. Jibiki nashi ni wa kotoba no keiko wa dekimas'mai. Seiyōjin mo ima de wa ryokōmenjō nashi ni naichi wo tabi suru koto ga dekimas'.* *Me ga waruku natta kara, megane ga nak'cha hon ga yomemasen. Mō ippai o agari nasai. Arigatō, watakushi ni sh'te wa tak'san itadukimash'ta. Nihon no onna no ko wa hagoita to iu mono wo motte hane wo ts'kimas'.* *Nihonjin wa shinai to iu mono wo motte kenjutsu no keiko wo suru. Okabo to iu no wa isshu no ine de, komugi no yō ni mizu nashi ni ts'kuremas'.* *Anata ni tai sh'te mōshiwake ga gozaimasen. Meue no hito ni tai sh'te wa teinei ni iwanakereba narimasen. Ieyas'kō no o dashi nasaimash'ta hyakkajō no okite<sup>b</sup> ni yotte mukashi wa zainin wo ushi de hikikorosh'ta mon'aa ga, sono nochi o haishi ni narimash'ta. Go isshin go wa ittai ni mesh'ta no mono ni mukatte iu kotoba ga taihen kirei ni narimash'ta. Bukkyō no kankwa ni yotte hito no kokoro ga taisō jilibukaku narimash'ta. Seitō no sekibun wa benkyō to fubenkyō to ni yotte kimemas'.* *Saigō san wa*

a Inversion of the usual order in the case of a cause occurs not infrequently in conversation.

b Also called "Laws of Ieyasu." They have been variously translated.

*oya no tegāra ni yori tok'ten wo motte kwampi de Seiyō ye ryūgaku wo meizeraremash'ta. Sendai wa Tōko'u ni oite ichiban ōkii tokwai des'. Kinura san wa Amerika ye itte kara jū nen bakari sugite kaette mairimash'tu. Chokusetsu ni wa hanashinikū gozaimas' kara, tomodachi wo tōsh'te sōdan itashimash'tu. Sore wa kimi ni totte furieki de wa nai ka. Watakushi wa K'ris'tokyō ni kwan sh'te wa ikkō fuannai de gozaimas' (ikkō zanjimasen). Aizu no Byakkotai wa jū roku shichi no wakai samurai de soshiki sarete arimash'ta ga, taisō isamash'ku tatakatta ato de, iki-nokotta mono ga jū hakku nin Bentenyama made shirizoite kite, hitori wo nozoku no hoka (wa) mina seppuku sh'te shinde shimaimash'ta.<sup>a</sup>*

The child came with (*ni tsuite*) its mother. I can't ride a horse without a saddle. You can't practice penmanship without a model. Toward guests its impolite. In Japan one can't marry without a go-between. Lately I heard an interesting story about Count Katsu.<sup>b</sup> The pronunciation of this word varies (*chigau*) according to locality. This is very well written for a child. Some begging priests go about (walk) striking a bell with a *shūmoku*. The hand rail of this hanging bridge is made of wistaria vines. That gentleman writes characters well with his left hand. Where (*doko wo sash'te*) are these pilgrims going? They are probably going to Zenkwōji. The cost of a telegram depends on (varies according to) the number of *kana*. Shipping charges (*funachin*) depend on the size of the freight. According to Japanese law foreigners may not engage in (*suru*) agriculture in the interior. In accordance with the directions of the physician the whole house was disinfected. Japanese children say *otottsān* (or) *okkasan* to (*ni mukatte*) their parents. Ac-

a Aizu is a famous valley in Iwashiro between Nikkō and the volcano Bandaisan. Its capital is Wakamatsu. The *Byak-ko-tai* (White Tiger Company) distinguished itself at the time of the Restoration, when the clan of Aizu held out against the Mikado's army. *Benten-yama*, from *Benten*, one of the *shichi fukujin* (p. 204a). Note that *wa* may not be used with a noun when it is modified by a numeral following. Reversing the order we might say *jū hakku nin no ikinokotta mono wa*.

b *Katsu Awa* (*no Kami*) was an official of the *Bakufu* at the time of the Restoration. By his prudent negotiations for peace he averted the destruction of Edo by the imperial forces.

according to a letter just received (*todoite*), he will arrive tomorrow evening (it is said). Under whom did you learn German? He studied ophthalmology under a famous physician in (of) Berlin. As for the apples, put all except the rotten ones into this box. This year there is a famine in Tōhoku. After about a month come again and see.

## THE CONJUNCTION <sup>a</sup>

### CHAPTER LXXXII

Conjunctions also are divided into two classes, conjunctions proper and quasi-conjunctions. The latter are simply substantives used in lieu of conjunctions. In general it is to be noted that the essential conjunctions belong to the words or clauses which they follow rather than to those which they precede. Further it should be remembered that where the English loosely connects coördinated clauses by means of such conjunctions as "and" or "or,"<sup>b</sup> the Japanese language usually by means of verbal inflections subordinates one clause to another (p. 162,1); e.g.,

*Atsui kimono wo kinakereba kaze wo hikimashō.*

I must put on heavier clothing, or I shall catch cold.

1. *To* is used (a) in the sense of "and" with nouns, pronouns and numerals, but never to connect indicative verbs.<sup>c</sup> It is in order when all the items in a series are enumerated. It is repeated after each word except the last, but in formal speech, as in the literary language, it follows the last also. To the final *to* case-particles and postpositions may be added:

*Shōyu to mirin to suto (wo) sambai mazete sambaizu to iimasu.*

A mixture of soy, *mirin*, and vinegar is called *sambaizu*.<sup>d</sup> On asyndetic constructions see p. 225a.

---

a *Setsu-soku-shi*, from *setsu* join (compare *hito ni sessuru* associate with a person), *soku*=*tsuukeru*.

b The student needs to be on his guard against the tendency to carry English conjunctions over into Japanese. Foreigners often disfigure their speech by excessive use of *sō shite*, etc.

c This does not apply to substantivized verbs: *Fusaku de atta no to sumi ga yasukatta no de konnen wa yama no mono ga taihen komatte imasu*. The harvests having been bad and charcoal cheap, the mountaineers are in great distress. Another apparent exception is: *Sō shiyō to omae no katte da*. It is for you to decide whether you will do so or not.

d To vary the expression one may also substitute *ni* for *to*: *Su ni mirin to shōyu wo mazete*, etc. *Mirin* is a sweet kind of *sake*.

(b) *To* after a verb in the present tense may mean "if," "when," "so soon as" (in the last sense also, *to sugu ni*). It expresses the idea of immediate sequence, either in a hypothetical or in an actual case. Note that the present tense is required even when the principal verb of the sentence is past:

*Taikutsu shite kuru to, omoshiroi hon ga yomitaku narimasu.*

I begin to want to read an interesting book when I get weary.

*Kodomo ga seichō suru to, haka no tetsudake ni narimasu.*

When children grow up they are helpful to their mothers.

*O kyaku san ga kuru to, sugu ni shokujī wo shimashō.*

We will eat as soon as the guests come.

*Yokuchō ni naru to, mina dete ikimashita.*

The next morning all went away.

*Sō suru to* in that case, then.

(c) *To* in the sense of "that" connects dependent clauses with verbs meaning to say, promise, hear, believe, etc. It is the only mark of quotation, direct or indirect, and it may not be omitted as "that" may be in English. "I think I'll go" is always *Ikō to omoimasu*. Not infrequently the principal verb is omitted and the *to* alone indicates the indirect character of the clause. Sometimes the verb of the dependent clause is omitted, so that the *to* immediately follows a noun or an interrogative pronoun:

*Honto (da) to omoimasu.* I think it true.

*Honto to wa omoimasen.* I do not think it true.<sup>a</sup>

*Hirata to iu hito* a man called Hirata.<sup>b</sup>

*Kore wa Eigo de nan to mōshimasu ka.*

Note the double conjunction in:

*Asu kaette kureru yō ni to tanomaremashita.*

I was asked to return to-morrow.

*Kiku, to ka ajisai to ka nani ka hitotsu uemashō.*

I will plant chrysanthemums or hydrangeas or something.

<sup>a</sup> Mark the position of *wa*.

<sup>b</sup> The idiom *to iu* corresponds to a simple apposition in English; e.g., *Mikado to iu kotoba* the word "mikado"; *ten to iu ji* the character "heaven." For *to wa* = *to iu no wa* see p. 272d. For *to iu to* = *to* see p. 245, bottom: *Wata-kushi ga dekakeru to iu to, kitto ame ga furimasu*. Whenever I go out, it is sure to rain. *Sō suru to iu to* if we do that.

*To* may also stand between an indirect question and the verb :

*Asu kuru ka to kikimashita.*

I inquired if he would come to-morrow.

In, *Ikō ka to omou*, I think probably I'll go, the *ka* simply expresses doubt about going.<sup>a</sup> Often *ii ka to omou* is practically equivalent to *ii to omou*. On the other hand *ka* may stand between a dependent clause with *to* and the principal verb, giving to either or both a sense of doubt or uncertainty :

*Kuru to ka iimashita.* He said, I think that he'd come.

2. *Dano* (*de aru no?*) serves to connect nouns when the series is not closed and one might proceed further in the enumeration. It must follow every word in the list, including the last. It may also be translated "or." An expression like *iroiro* usually follows the last *dano* :

*Bara dano, ajisai dano, tsubaki dano, iroiro arimasu.*

There are various kinds, roses, hydrangeas, camellias etc.

3. *Ka* is ordinarily a particle of interrogation. It is joined to dependent as well as to principal clauses, and is much used in double questions :

*Dekiru ka dō ka wakarimusen.*<sup>b</sup>

I don't know whether it is feasible or not.

*Niru ka yoku ka dochira ka ni shimasu.*

We either boil or bake [it.]

*Dō ka kō ka shiagemashita.*

We got it done after a fashion.

*Ka* may serve the same purpose as the English "or" with nouns, clauses or numerals :

*Kono heya wa hachi jō ka jū jō desu.*

This room has eight or ten mats.

*Hairu ka hairanai ni mimashita.*

He saw it the moment he came in.

<sup>a</sup> The idiom *to omou to* is used in the sense of "when I am about to." Note also the elliptical construction : *Miru to wa nashi ni mimashita.* I happened to see it unintentionally.

<sup>b</sup> Note that while one says *dō desu ka*, in familiar talk there is a tendency to omit *da* in the expression *dō da ka*, for the sake of euphony. *Sore mita koto ka. Do you see?* (=I told you so). Note also that after a principal clause *ka* may be omitted when the clause contains an interrogative word (p. 178) : *Dō desu*, but *Dō desu ka sonjimasen.*



A list of items connected by means of *to ka* may end with *iu yō na mono* or similar words.

4. The particle *ya* is in classical language used like *ka*. In the colloquial it appears in the idiom—*ya ina ya, ina* being a classical form—*nai*: *Kiku ya ina ya tobidashite itta*. He rushed out the moment he heard it. Note also: *Nani ya ka ya to torikonde imasu*. I am busy with all sorts of things. *Ya* is also used like *dano*, but is omitted with the last noun; which is often followed by *nado* or *nazo*. A case-particle may then be attached:

*Kujaku ya kiji wa keiro ga utsukushii*.

Peafowls and pheasants (etc.) have beautiful plumage.

*Aramonoya de wa hōki ya sumi ya tsukegi nazo wo urimasu*.

At coarse-goods-shops they sell brooms, charcoal, matches, etc.

5. *Yara* too was originally interrogative. Its uses are analogous to those of the interrogative particles explained above:

*Ima wakarete itsu au koto yara*.

We part now: when shall we meet again?

*Doko ni oru (koto) yara watakushi ni wa ikkō wakarimasen*.

I have n't the faintest idea where he is.

*Ōkuma to yara (iu hito) ga korosarekakemashita*. An attempt has been made to assassinate some one—*Ōkuma*, I think.

*Ano o kami san wa rambō de otoko yara ouna yara wakaranai hodo desu*. The woman is so unruly that one would hardly be able to tell whether she is a man or a woman.

*Shishi yara tora yara iroiro no dōbutsu ga orimasu*.

6. *Aruiwa* is largely used as an adverb in the sense of "in some cases", "possibly": especially common is its use before alternatives:

*Ōmu wa aruiwa warattari aruiwa naitari iroira hito no mane wo itashimasu*. A parrot now laughs and again weeps and in various ways imitates people.

*Nihon no rekishi ni mo aruiwa sō iu rei ga nai to mo kagirimasen*.<sup>a</sup> In Japanese history too there may possibly have been such instances.

<sup>a</sup> *Kagiru* limit. I do not assert that there are no such instances. One may substitute *wa* for *mo*, or say *nai to wa iemasen*.

*Aruiwa kuru ka mo shiremasen.* He may come possibly. *Aruiwa* also serves as a simple conjunction in the sense of "or":

*Ushi aruiwa uma nado ga nai to shita naraba...*

If there were no oxen or horses...

Note that *aruiwa* does not connect clauses except when the verb is in the alternative (or inconclusive) form.

7. *Matawa* is synonymous with *aruiwa* as a conjunction, not as an adverb, and in a series is often for the sake of variety substituted for *aruiwa*. It is used like the English "or," at the beginning of a sentence which ends in a question or expression of doubt:

*Matawa kondo no hakurankwai no koto de mo hanashimashō ka.* Or shall I speak of the recent Exposition?

8. *Moshikuwa* simply connects nouns, like *aruiwa* or *matawa*. It is more formal.

9. *Shi* is a disjunctive particle marking the transition from one to another of two coördinate clauses (p. 14d):

*Niwa ni wa momo no ki mo aru shi, sakura no ki mo aru.*

In the garden there are both peach and cherry trees.

10. *Ga* is mildly adversative:<sup>a</sup>

*Habakari desu ga* (p. 279,6), *sono fude wo totte kudasai.*

I am sorry to trouble you, but would you hand me that *fude*?

The second clause is often understood (p. 161e). Not infrequently *ga* is a mere connective without any adversative sense:

*Kesa shimbun wo mite imashita ga, futo myō na koto wo miidashimashita.* I was reading the paper this morning when I happened to see a strange bit of news.

At the beginning of a sentence *da ga* may mean "nevertheless (= *sore de mo*), or it may mean nothing.

11. *Keredomo*, originally the concessive form of the classical auxiliary *keri*, is more strongly adversative.

12. *Shikashi*, *shikashi-nagara*, or *sari-nagara*, is the strongest adversative.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Like *ga*, the particles *ni* (*no ni*) and *wo* (*mono wo*) are used as adversative conjunctions (pp. 149, 273.)

<sup>b</sup> *Shika* is the classical equivalent of *sō*; *shikari*=*sō desu*. In formal speech variants taken from the literary language are much used; e.g., *shikaru ni*, *shikari to iedomo*, etc. Comp. *shika mo* moreover. Another equivalent is *to wa in mono ni*.

13. *Nara* (*ba*) or, more rarely, *nareba* (p. 246b), the conditional form of the classical verb "to be," shows its original sense in such idioms as *o iriyō nara* if you need it, *Sayō nara* Good bye!<sup>a</sup> (lit. if it is so...). Note *naze naraba* "for" (p. 224b). In addition to *nara* (*ba*) or a conditional inflection the hypothetical character of a clause may be made more prominent by the use of an anticipative *moshi* or *man-ichi*.

14. *Moshi, moshi mo, moshi ya* if.<sup>b</sup>

*Moshi dare ka o kyaku ga attara...*

If a visitor should come...

*Moshi go yō ga arimasu nara...*If you need [me]...

*Moshimo no kotoga atta toki ni...*If anything should happen.

15. *Man-ichi* (lit. ten thousand to one) = italicized "if."

16. *Mo* in the sense "even if", "although", "though only," may follow the subordinative (pp. 167, 172) or, rarely, the indicative. With the indicative *to mo* is more common.

*Shinu to mo koko wa ugokanai.*

I'll not budge though I die for it.

When repeated, *mo* is to be rendered "whether—or":

*Atte mo nakute mo onaji koto desu.*

It doesn't matter whether it is there or not.

On *mo—mo* in the sense of "both—and", "either—or", "neither—nor," see p. 354. It is thus used, not only with substantives, but also rarely with verbs:

*Iku mo ikanai mo watashi no katte da.*

I am free to go or not, as I please.

Compare: *Iku to mo ikanai to mo* whether he goes or not.

Concessive clauses may be emphasized by prefixing *moshi*, *man-ichi*, *tatoi*, or *yoshi*.

17. *Tatoi*:

*Tatoi shinu to mo yatte minakuchā narimasen.*

I must attempt it even if it costs my life. [*atte mo...*]

*Jissai sonna koto wa nai, shikashi tatoi sonna koto ga*

In reality there is no such thing, but even if there were...  
*Tatoi ika ni bimō ni nareba tote...*No matter how poor one becomes ..

18. *Yoshi* (*ya*), *yoshimba*.

*Yoshi ya samui hi ga atte mo hi wo taku hodo no koto wa*

<sup>a</sup> Instead of *sayō nara*, people sometimes say: *Sore ja* (*o wakare mōshimasu*, or *shikkei itashimasu*).

<sup>b</sup> *Moshiya go zonji wa arimasen ka*. Don't you know perhaps?

*arimasumai.* - Even if we have cold days it will scarcely be so cold as to make it necessary to have a fire.

*Yoshiya kore kara yōjin shita tokoro ga, mō naorumai.*

Even if he should be careful hereafter he'll hardly recover.

19. *Tote, 'tte (=to itte).* The idiom — *ta tote* or — *ta 'tte* without *mo* has a concessive sense: *sō itta 'tte=sō itte mo*; *shinda 'tte=shinde mo.* Note also:

*Gakkō ni haittareba tote amari dekiru yō ni wa narumai.*

Even if he enters school he will not amount to very much.

Compare *sareba tote* nevertheless. *Tote* may indicate purpose:

*Ano ko ga kono sakana wo anata ni agetai tote jibun de ryōri wo itashimashita.* The little girl cooked the fish herself with the intention of giving it to you.

20. *Nagara (mo)* "while", "though," is used after the stems of verbs (p. 279, 6) or Chinese compounds. In some connections it has a slightly adversative sense, as in *habakari nagara*:

*Go kurō (mendō) nagara...*I am sorry to trouble you, but...

*Shitsurei nagara...*Pardon me, but...

*O kinodoku nagara...*I am very sorry for you, but...

21. *Shidai* as soon as (p. 281b):

*Konnichi gakkō ga sumi shidai agarimashō.*

I will come to-day as soon as the school closes.

22. *Kara* with an indicative verb is causal:

*Sore da kara (shite)...*For that reason...

Following a subordinative *kara (ni)* means "after":

*Uchi ye kaette kara (ni) tegami wo kakimashita.*

I wrote a letter after I got home.

23. *Yori* after, since:

*Hito me miru yori shitawashiku omoimashita.*

I felt attached to him from the time I saw him.

*Haha ga byōki ni kakatte yori konokata chitto mo soto ye deru hima ga arimasen.*

Since mother became sick I have not had time to go out.

24. *Made* or *made ni* until, before (p. 379):

*Sensei ga kuru made shitaku shite imashō.*

I will study until the teacher comes.

*Sensei ga kuru made ni shitaku shite okimashō.* [comes.  
I will have my lesson prepared by the time the teacher

## Vocabulary

- kamo* wild duck.  
*hariko* papier-maché.  
*hi-deri* drought.  
*ko-sode* wadded silk garment.  
*(o) shūto* parent-in-law.  
*namari* } dialect.  
*ben* }  
*baieren* (Portuguese *padre*)  
 Christian missionary of the  
 XVI. Century.  
*ō (sama)* king.  
*ba-sho* place.  
*doku-ritsu* independence (—  
*suru* be independent).  
*fukujū* submission, obedience.  
*fū-seitsu* rumor.  
*geki-sen* hard fighting.  
*gu-soku* accoutrements.  
*hyō-gi* consultation.  
*ji-shu* voluntary confession.  
*kak-ke* beriberi. <sup>a</sup>  
*kam-byō* nursing the sick.  
*ki-hei* cavalry. <sup>b</sup>
- seki-tō* stone monument.  
*shin-seki* relative (elegant).  
*ik-ka-chū* (*ka* house) the body  
 of a feudal lord's retainers.  
*kai-shaku-nin* assistant, sec-  
 ond (in *harakiri*).  
*tsū-shin-ja* correspondent (of  
 a newspaper).  
*kurushimu* suffer (tr. *kuru-*  
*shimeru*).  
*naderu* stroke, rub.  
*susumeru* administer (medi-  
 cine).  
*tonaeru* call, name, recite,  
 declare.  
*utsuru* remove (of residence),  
 pass (of time), catch (of  
 fire, disease, etc.), be re-  
 flected.  
*ami wo utsu* cast a net.  
*gwan* = *negai* request, prayer.  
*gwan wo kakeru* make a vow.

## Exercises

*Kono dekimono ga moshi ōkiku nareba, zehi kiranakereba naranai. Itsu mo no o isha san no tokoro ye itte sugu ni kite kudasaran ka kiite koi.* <sup>c</sup> *Nikkō no Gammangafuchi to iu tokoro ni* <sup>d</sup> *Amida no zō ga tak'san tatte orimas'*; *ikura sono kazu wo kazoete mite mo kanjō ga chigau to iimas'*. *Shūtō*

<sup>a</sup> From *kaku=kyaku=ashi* leg, and *ke=ki* in *kyōki* illness. *Kakke* is a disease affecting the nerves and heart and resulting in partial paralysis or numbness of the limbs. See Chamberlain, "Things Japanese."

<sup>b</sup> Compare *ho-hei* infantry (*ho=aruku*), *hō-hei* artillery (*hō=gun*), *kō-hei* engineers.

<sup>c</sup> *Itsu mo no o isha san* may be translated "family physician."

<sup>d</sup> The name of a pool (*fuchi*) in the Daiya River near Nikkō. On the bank stand the statues of Amida alluded to above.

wo sh'te moratta 'tte tennentō ni kakaranai koto wa nai. Kō iu baai ni wa wo to iu ji ga atte mo nak'te mo onajikoto des'. Kanai ga ii to, teishu ni shimpai ga nai. Seppuku no toki ni wa tōnin ga hara wo kiru to, soba ni kaishakunin ga otte sugu ni kubi wo kiriotosh'ta mon'des'. Nihon ni nagaku ite mo benkyō shinai to, hanashi ga dekimasen. Watakushi wa suke wo nomu to, sugu ni kao ga akaku narimas'. Ha wo nuite morau to, sugu ni itami ga tomarimash'ta. Anata hodo dekimasureba, Doits'ye oide nas'tte ichi nen mo tattara, tassha ni hanashi ga dekimashō. Tōkyō ye kite ni san shūkan tats'to, hai-byō ni narimash'ta. Shinu ka ikiru ka f'tatsu ni hitotsu.<sup>a</sup> Nezumi-kozō wa<sup>b</sup> dō sh'te mo ts'kamaeremasen deshi'ta kara, oya wo rō ni iremash'ta; sō suru to, oya no kurushinde iru no wo kiite tsui ni jishu sh'te deta sō des'. Nezumi-kozō no haka no gurui ni furui sekiō ga yama no yō ni tsumiagate arimas'; sore wa tomi ni ataru yō ni haka ye kite gwan wo kakete, mōshi ataru to, sono o rei ni atarashii sekiō wo motte kite furui no wo waki ye tsunde oku kara des'. Dōmo, kuruma ni natte itte mo ma ni aimas'mai. Mukashi samurai wa ichi mon no zeni wo nusunde mo ikkachū ga hyōgi sh'te hara wo kirasemash'ta. Iroiro kaimono ga aru kara, hima nara, issho ni itte kuren ka. Nani wo o motome ni narimas'ka. Chikai uchi ni Seiyō ye kaeru kara, iroiro mezurashii mono wo miyage ni katte ikō to omou; shikashi hitori de iku to, taisō kakene wo iu kara, dōzo, issho ni itte kure. Sono matsu no furi wa shizen ni ā iu n' des'ka, matawa teire wo sh'te ts'kutta n' des'ka. Morau mono nara, natsu de mo kosode.<sup>c</sup> Kosode to wa kinu no wataire no koto de fuyu no mono des'. Satsumajin wa seinan no ik'sa ni<sup>d</sup> shinu ka ikiru ka f'tatsu ni hitotsu to kesshin sh'te hijō ni gekisen shimash'ta. Tenka to iu no to tenga to iu no to dō chigaimas'ka.<sup>e</sup> Ano hito wa ano uchi no shinseki des'ka.

a *Futatsu ni hitotsu* expresses the idea of a dilemma. It is a matter of life and death. Compare the saying: *Ichī ka bachi ka yatte mimashō*. I will try, it come what may (*bachi*=*hachi* eight).

b Lit. rat-fellow (p. 15a), a notorious robber in the Tokugawa era. His grave is behind the temple Ekōin in Tōkyō.

c As a gift costs nothing, one is glad to accept it even if there is no immediate use for it. The proverb is also applied to a case of blind avarice.

d From *sei* west, *nan* south; commonly called the Satsuma Rebellion.

e The word *tenka* (lit. under heaven) by *nigori* becomes *tenga*. The Shōgun, used to be called *Tenga Sama*.

*Betsu ni shinseki to iu wake de mo arimasen ga, nandemo taisō kokoroyas'ku sh'te oru yō des'. Ano hen ni shimu ga aru to miete tori ga taisō tachimas'. Kore de manzoku sureba ii ga, shikashi sō wa ikimas'mai.<sup>a</sup> Sō iu ka mo shiremasen ga, made kiita koto wa arimasen. Ame no furu no wo osorete soto ye denai to, sono hito wo hariko no yō da to iimas'. Motoyori to mochiron to wa goku wasuka na chigai des'. Itsu ame ga yamu koto yara. Ame ga futte imas'ka. Furu koto wa futte imas'ga, kakubetsu no koto wa arimasen. Doits' no kihei wa karada ga ōkii kara, gusoku wo kiru to, taisō hittatte niemas'. Tsūshinja wo shimbun no tane ga nakute komaru no de, sonna fūsets'wo koshiraeta no ka mo shirenai. Yoshimune kō wa<sup>b</sup> sesshō kindan no basho ni ami wo uchimash'ka, Ōoka ni totts'kamaeremash'ta. Nihonjin wa amari sō iu fū ni iimasen ga, zehi iwanakereba naranai baai ni wa sō iu yori hoka ni sh'kata ga arimas'mai. Kono ike wa sesshō-kindan no basho de dare mo torimasen kara, gan ya kamo ga tak'san orite imas' (p. 163,5). Hanashi'ka to iu mono wa omoshirōi mono de gozaimas'ka. Sayō sa, jōsu heta de taisō chigaimas'. Koko kara Yushima Tenjin<sup>c</sup> ye mairimas'ni wa dō ittara goroshū gozaimashō ka. Kore kara san chō saki ni hidari ye inagaru yokochō ga arimas'ga, soko ye haitte sore kara mata miya ye magatte massugu ni iku to, sugu soko des'. Kusunoki Masatsura wa chichi Masashige ga Minatogawa de uchijini sh'te kara Kawachi ni kaerimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Sekkaku honeotte koshiraeta no da ga, ima ja (de wa) yaku ni tatanaku narimash'ta. San nen saki no koto wo iu to, karas'ga warau. Kuni ye kaeru ya inaya byōki ni narimash'ta. Mukashi Satsuma-ben no mono to Ōshū-namari no mono to ga hanashi wo*

<sup>a</sup> *Shikashi* often follows *ga* pleonastically.

<sup>b</sup> The eighth and one of the most famous of the Tokugawa shōguns. He lived in the first half of the XVIII. Century. *Sesshō-kindan*, from *setsu*=*korosu*, *shō* life, *kin* forbid, *dan*=*kotowaru*, means the prohibition to kill animals.

<sup>c</sup> A famous Shintō temple in Tōkyō. *Tenjin* or *Temmangū* is the name by which Sugawara Michizane is worshipped; *Yushima* is a district in Hongō, Tōkyō.

<sup>d</sup> *Kusunoki Masashige*, father of the *Masatsura* named above, suffered defeat and killed himself on the bank of the Minato River near Hyōgo. The son after he became of age raised another army in behalf of the Emperor and likewise perished in battle. He is set before Japanese youths as a model of knightly virtue.

*sh'ta tokoro ga, ryōhō tomo sappari wakaranakatta sō des'.*  
*Kusuri wo susumeru yara, senaka wo naderu yara, hotondo ne*  
*mo nenu gurai ni kambyō itashimash'ta. Nani ya ka ya*  
*s'koshi no hima mo naku hatarakimash'ta. Hontō ka uso ka*  
*shirimasen. Hyak'shō ka chōnin no ie ye yōshi ni yaritai.*  
*Hyak'shō no mus'me darō to mo kwazoku no mus'me darō to*  
*mo, yome ni ittara, shūto ni fukujū shinakereba narimasen.*

As soon as I arrive in Japan I will send you (*sashiageru*) a letter. The physician said that, as it is not at all a serious (*tai sh'ta* illness, he would come (coming sec) again after two or three days. When English is literally translated into Japanese it becomes hard to understand. Is that gentleman a relative of yours (*go shinseki*)? He is not a relative, but he is from (a person of) the same province [as myself]. The disease called *kakke* is apt to (*yoku*) break out (*okoru*) when summer comes (it becomes summer). From (*kara wa*) this house Mount Fuji can be seen and also the ocean (can be seen —subord.); the scenery is very fine. Since I removed to Tōkyō there has not once been (pres.) a large fire. He said that if he did not return by half past eleven, we need not wait. It will be some time (there is still an interval) before (*made ni*) spring comes. As the *daimyō* formerly were almost independent, the *padres* called them (the *dainyō*) kings. These days it ought (*hazu da*) to rain, but on the contrary the drought continues. If it doesn't rain soon there will hardly be any crop of rice (rice will hardly be taken) this year. If the tree is dead (*karete iru*), dig it out (digging out finish). He wouldn't be in such distress if he had saved (saving put) money previously. If there is any book that you need (*go nyūyō no hon*) for the study of Japanese, send me word (so saying send), [and] I will very soon buy [it] and send [it to you]. If you are in the midst of business, attend to it (*yarū*) without paying any attention to me (*o kamai naku*). When (*no ni*) it was better to leave it as it was (p. 22), why did you mend it? As *Tenjin sama* was fond of plum blossoms, plum trees are often planted around [his] shrine. A man who is irritable and easily (*yoku*) gets angry is called *mukappara* (*tachi*).<sup>a</sup> If I don't take notes (*hikki sh'te oku*), I forget everything. When a young man goes (past cond.) to a place like Tōkyō he is apt to be ruined (*shippai suru*) if he is not careful (*chūi suru*).

<sup>a</sup> From *mukau* oppose, and *hara ga tatsu* (*hara wo lateru*) get angry.



## CHAPTER LXXXIII

In many cases an English conjunction has to be rendered in Japanese by means of a substantive, the accompanying clause being in the attributive position (Ch. XIX.). Many of these substantives have been treated under the heads of The Adverb and The Postposition. The most common are :

1. *Mae* (*ni, wa*) before : *kuru mae ni* or, rarely, *konai mae ni* before he comes. For the use of *ni* and *wa* see p. 155. *Izen* may be substituted for *mae*, especially in speaking of historical events.

2. *Nochi* (*ni, wa*) after. Compare :

*Watakushi ga detu nochi ni kimashita,* He came after I  
*Gakkō kara kaetta nochi de ii.* [left:  
 It will do after you return from school.

3. *Saki* (*ni, wa*) before : *gakkō ni hairu saki ni* before he entered the school : *wasuren saki* before I forget it. Compare :

*Oya ga shinda saki wa dō shite ittara yokarō ka.*  
 How shall we manage after father is dead ?

4. *Ato de* after. Compare :

*Kisha ga deia ato de kimashita.*  
 He came after the train left.  
*Gozen wo tabeta ato ni (ye) kyaku ga kimashita.*  
 After we had eaten, visitors came.

5. *Ue de* after, until after (with negatives). *Ue ni* means "and in addition."

*Mita ue de kau ka mo shiremasen.*  
 I may possibly buy it after I have seen it.  
*Mita ue de nakereba kawaremasen.*  
 I can't buy it until after I have seen it.  
*Makesashita ue ni kai mo shinaide itte shinaimashita.*  
 He made him reduce the price and then went off without buying anything.

Note also *ijō wa* :

*Makesashita ijō wa kawanakereba narimasen.*  
 After you have beat down the price you ought to buy.

6. *Aida* (*ni, wa*) while, as long as : *matsuri no aru aida* as long as the festival lasts.

7. *Uchi (ni, wa)* while, as long as, until (with negatives) :

*Inaka ni oru uchi ni* while I was in the country.

*Yome ni ikan uchi* until he is married.

8. *Kagiri (ni wa or wa)* as long as, unless, without (with negatives, p. 155) :

*Gessha wo osamenai kagiri wa kyōjō ni iru koto wo yurushimasen.* [Students] are not permitted to attend the classes (class-rooms) as long as they are in arrears with the tuition.

9. *Toki (ni, wa, ni wa)* when, as, if :

*Chōdo neyō to omou toki ni jishin ga yurimashita.*

There was an earthquake just as I was about to retire.

For the present tense the past may be substituted. In translating the English pluperfect the past is required :

*Ame ga yanda toki ni yadoya ye tsukimashita.*

We arrived at the hotel after the rain had stopped.

*Toki wa* and *toki ni wa* are often used hypothetically, especially with a preceding *moshi* or *manichi* :

*Moshi tegami ga nakunatta toki ni wa dō itashimashō ka.*

If the letter should be lost, what shall I do?

Substantives or adjectives may take the place of verbs with *toki* ; e. g., *kodomo no toki ni* when I was a child, *wakai toki ni* when I was young.

Various substantives denoting time may be substituted for *toki*, such as *ori*, *koro*, *tsuide*, *setsu*, *ji-bun*, *kyō-shi* : *watakushi ga Amerika ni iru (ita) jibun ni* when I was in America.

*Rondon ye tegami wo dasu tsuide ni o tanomi no hon wo chūmon shimashō.* When I write to London I will order the book for which you have asked.

10. *Tabi (tambi) ni, tabi-goto ni* as often as, whenever : *jishin ga suru tabi ni* every time there is an earthquake.

11. *Tokoro* is often to be rendered "just when", "just as." <sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Tokoro desu* is often to be rendered "just": *Ima dekakeru tokoro desu.* I am just going out (to a visitor). *Tadaima okita tokoro desu* I have just gotten up. In the literary style *tokoro* is used like *koto*: *Kore waga hossuru tokoro mari.* This is what I desire. The learned sometimes use *tokoro* in this sense even in the colloquial. Such expressions as the following are quite common: *Koronda tokoro wa minakatta.* I didn't see the fall. In speeches *tokoro no* is freely used to connect adjectives or attributive (relative) clauses with the substantives which they modify.

It may take various particles and postpositions according to the nature of the principal verb of the sentence :

*Gosen wo tabete iru tokoro ye hito ga kimashita.*

A person came just as I was eating.

*Kirō to suru tokoro wo hito ga tomemashita.*

Just as he was about to strike (cut), some one interfered.

For the idioms *tokoro ga* and *tokoro de* as adversative conjunctions see pp. 212c and 365a. The latter has three distinct uses :

*Makeru (maketa) to shita tokoro ga...*

Supposing that we are defeated...

*Maketa tokoro de nigemashita.*

When defeated they at once fled.

*Shōbai wo shiyō to itta tokoro de, motode ga nakereba dame desu.* You may attempt to do business, but it is of no use without capital.

*Watakushi ga mita tokoro de wa...*

According to my observation...

The peculiar idiom *dokoro ka* or *dokoro ja nai* indicates that something that has just been said is very wide of the mark :

*Ano hito wa uta ga dekimasu ka : Utaeru dokoro ka : yūmei na ongakusha desu.*

Can he sing? Sing! Why, he's a noted musician.

*Kuru made matenai dokoro ja arimasen to mo.*

There's nothing at all to prevent my waiting till he comes.

*Sore dokoro ja nai.* That's not the worst of it.

12. *Kawari (ni)* but instead :<sup>a</sup>

*Kono ryō san nichi wa kumotte imashita kawari ni kon-nichi wa sukkari haremashita.* It has been cloudy the last two or three days, but to-day it is clear.

13. *Tōri (ni)* just as, as :

*Naze iitsuketa tōri ni shinai ka?*

Why don't you do as I told you?

*Mae ni mo mōshita tōri desu.* It is just as I said before.

14. *Tame (ni)* in order that, that : *wasuren tame ni* that I

---

<sup>a</sup> "Instead of" is usually to be rendered by means of the negative subordinate: *Ki wo tsukemu ni hoka no koto wo kangaete orimashita.* Instead of paying attention I was thinking of something else.

may not forget. In formal speech the literary idiom of the future tense with *ga* is occasionally heard: *shiran ga tame ni* that we may know.

15. *Yō (ni)* in such a manner that, so that, as if:

*Subette koroban yō ni ki wo o tsuke yo.*

Be careful not to slip and fall.

*Sono ki wo kaze ni fukitaosarenai yō ni yoku sasaete kure.*

Support the tree so that the wind will not blow it over.

Especially common are the idioms *yō ni suru* (p. 216, top) and *yō ni naru*:

*Okurenai yō ni shitai mon' desu.*

I should like to arrange so as not to be late.

*Shina mo chikagoro wa dandan gwaikoku to majiwaru yō ni narimashita.* Recently China too has gradually come to have intercourse with foreign countries.

*Jigoku de hotoke ni atta yō ni ureshū gozaimashita.*

It was as delightful as if I had met a buddha in hell.

*Rampu no abura ga tsukita yō ni miemasu.*

It looks as if the oil in the lamp were exhausted.

*Aru yō ni iimashita.* He spake as if he had it (p. 134d).

*Yō ni* is frequently joined with *mieru*<sup>a</sup> and verbs of saying, as above. With verbs of hearing, thinking, etc., it is usually to be rendered "that":

*Nani ka sō iu koto ga aru yō ni uketamawarinashita.*

I have heard that there is something of the kind.

16. *Hodo (ni)* so that (of result or degree):

*Ano ki wa otona ga jū nin kakaranakereba kakae-kirenai hodo futoi.* The tree is so stout that it takes ten grown men to encircle it (if ten grown men do not take part, they cannot completely embrace it).

*Ano yama wa ten ni todoku hodo takai.*

That mountain is so high as to reach the sky.

<sup>a</sup> With *mieru* the conjunction *to* may also be used, especially in the form *miete*: *Tabako ga suki da to miete taisō nomimasu.* He appears to be fond of tobacco and smokes a great deal. *Are wa kinō sugu ni kane wo kaesu yō na koto wo itte ikimashita ga, hon no nōshiwake to miete ima ni mada motte kimasen.* He promised yesterday to return the money at once, but it must have been a mere excuse; he has n't brought it yet. On *yō desu* in the sense of "it is as though," "it seems that," see p. 117g.

*Kutabireru hodo sampo shinakereba narimassen.*<sup>a</sup>

You must walk enough to tire yourself.

In these sentences *gurai* may be substituted for *hodo*.

17. *Yue (ni)* for the reason that because, accordingly. *Yue* belongs to formal speech. Note *sore (ga) yue ni* therefore. In narratives the verb of the clause may be omitted so that words like *mono, koto*, etc., immediately precede *yue*:—*to iu yō na ko yue* on the ground that.

### Vocabulary

<i>chinami</i> connection, blood-relation.	<i>in-kyo</i> retiring from active life and from the headship of the family.
<i>saji</i> spoon.	
<i>ama-gaeru</i> tree toad ( <i>ame</i> rain).	<i>ryō-shi</i> = <i>karyūdo</i> hunter. <sup>b</sup>
<i>fumi-kiri</i> railroad crossing.	<i>san-dai</i> going to the Palace for an audience or to pay one's respects.
<i>furu-mai</i> (originally : behavior) entertainment, banquet (also <i>kyō-ō</i> ).	<i>shuku-hō</i> a salute of guns.
<i>ko-ba</i> } shingle.	<i>tsū-hō</i> ( <i>tōri-yuki</i> ) passage.
<i>yane-ita</i> }	<i>kōen-chi</i> = <i>kō-en</i> park.
<i>yani</i> exudation, gum.	<i>mom-bu-shō</i> Department of Education.
<i>matsu-yani</i> turpentine, resin.	<i>en-gi no ii</i> of good omen (often pronounced <i>ingi</i> ).
<i>me-kiki</i> judging the character of a curio, a connoisseur.	<i>awateru</i> lose presence of mind, become excited.
<i>kan-tei</i> = <i>me-kiki</i> judging the quality of an article.	<i>yuwaeru, iwaeru</i> = <i>yuu</i> bind, fasten.
<i>uranai</i> divination, fortune-telling.	<i>kujiku</i> crush, sprain.
<i>uranai-ja</i> diviner.	<i>kuruu</i> act irregularly, be out of order, be in a frenzy.
<i>uttai-goto</i> lawsuit.	<i>wazurau</i> suffer ( <i>yamai wo</i> ).
<i>hatoba</i> wharf, pier.	<i>hasukashimeru</i> insult.
<i>ei-gyō</i> avocation, business.	
<i>han-dan</i> decision, judgment.	

<sup>a</sup> Compare: *Kutabireru hodo* (or *dake*) *ii*. The more tired you are the better. For *naru dake* and *dekiru dake* see p. 112d.

<sup>b</sup> *Ryō-shi* may also mean 'fisherman.'

## Exercises

*Danna sama, go shuttatsu no o sh'taku wa itsugoro made ni sumash'te okeba yoroshū gosaimashō ka. Itsu de mo tateru yō ni sh'te oke. Ano kata wa giron wo suru tãmbi ni hidoku okorimas'. Ano kata wa dekiru dake benkyō suru tsumori da to mōsh'te imash'ta ga, chikagoro wa nandaka asonde (asunde) bakari iru yō des'. Watakushi wa san jissai ni naru made ichi do mo (yamai wo) wasuratta koto ga nakatta yō ni omoimas'. Ha ga waruku naranai yō ni matsuyani wo kamu hito mo arimas'. Tonari no heya de samisen no oto ga shite iru uchi wa dō sh'te mo nemuremasen. Ashi wo kujiite arukenai yō ni narimash'ta. Kazoekiren hodo tak'san arimas'. Mukashi Ieyas' kō ga Edo ni bakufu wo hiraite kara mansai mo dōkoku no chinami de (wo motte) Mikawa kara Edo ni dete eigyō wo suru yō ni natta ga, kō mo kokyō no mono yue betsudan sore wo kinzerarenakatta. Ano seito wa Eigo wo narau tame ni mainichi ni ri hodo zutsu aruite gakkō ye kayotte imas' sō des'. Koko ni wa sō iu hon wa gosaimasen kara, Amerika ye tegami wo das' tsuide ni sō itte yatte yokosh'te moraimashō. Yūbinsen no ma ni au yō ni kono tegami wo kaite shimawana-kereba narimasesen. Watakushi wa hataraite oru uchi wa tabako wo nomimasesen. Ame ga furidash'ta jibun ni chōdo yadoya ni ts'kimash'ta. You hodo sake wo nonde wa ikemasen. Ano hito wa soba de kiite orarenu hodo no warukuchi wo iimas'.<sup>a</sup> Chi no deru hodo inu ni kamaremasht'ta. Hito ni damasaren yō ni chūi senakereba naranai. Watakushi wa jishin ga suru tãmbi ni itsu mo awatemas'.<sup>b</sup> Sensei ga irasharu mae ni anshō sh'te okimashō. Fuki no tō wa mada yuki no kienai uchi ni demas'. Ōoka Echizen no kami wa mutsukashii uttaegoto wo kiku toki ni wa shōji no uchi de cha wo hiki nagara kikimash'ta ; sore wa hito no kao-katachi wo miru to, sore ni ugokosarete shirazushirazu handan wo ayamaru koto ga aru no to, mata ki ga tatte kuru to, te ga kurutte cha ga*

a *Hodo* with the attributive clause belonging to it is governed by *warukuchi*. Such constructions occur not infrequently with ordinary conjunctions (see the end of the sentence beginning with *Ōoka*, below).

b *Itsu mo* is pleonas'tic.

*araku demas' kara des'.<sup>a</sup> Go kigen yō to wa hito ni au toki ni mo wakareru toki ni mo iu kotoba des'. As'ko ni hito ga oru yō ni niemas'. As'ko ni ki ga uete aru yō ni niemas'. Kono katana no mekiki wo nas'ite kudasai. Watakushi no kantei (suru tokoro) de wa Bisenmono no yō ni omowareinas'.<sup>b</sup> Washi no itta tōri ni shiro. Watakushi no kiisu tokoro de wa saki ni Mombudaijin de atta Mori Yūrei shi wa Ise no taibyō de burei wo sh'ta to iu koto des'. Watakushi ga mita tokoro de wa shirō gozaimash'ta. Amagaeru wa ame ga furu toki ni nakimas'. Sampo suru toki ni wa shijū tsue wo motte ikimas'. Ryōshi ga sh'ka no hashitte iru tokoro wo uchimash'ta. Kōenchi no hana wo totte iru tokoro wo junsu ni mits'keraremas'h'ta. Chōdo neyō to suru toki ni tonari kara hi ga demash'ta (broke out). Kisha ga kuru tokoro ye kodomo ga dete hikikorosaremas'h'ta. Dekakeyō to suru tokoro ye o kyaku ga kimash'ta. Mukashi wa, moshi samurai ga chōnin ni hoshukashimerareta toki ni wa sugu ni kirizute ni shimash'ta.<sup>c</sup> O kyaku wo suru (surumai wo suru)<sup>d</sup> toki ni wa ryōriya ni iits'keru to, nani mo ka mo motte kimas'. Kyaku ga kima-sh'ta toki wa chōdo hon wo yomiagete shimatta tokoro desh'ta. Yuki ga, michi mo wakarazu kuruma mo tōranu hodo ni tsumorimash'ta. Oisha sama mo saji wo oite kubi wo kata-mukeru gurai ni narimash'ta.<sup>e</sup> Ore no ikite iru uchi wa sonna koto wo sasemasen. Sore wa anata no naotta ato de yō gozaimashō.<sup>f</sup>*

I get headache every time I smoke tobacco; so I will quit America by the time (*made ni wa*) you return (to America) will probably be changed in many respects (*banji*). As (*tokoro ga*) I was going to the pier, a man-of-war entered the harbor and fired a salute of three guns (*sampatsu*). If you walk enough to tire yourself, you will probably be able to sleep.

a *Cha wo hiku* pulverize tea with pestle and mortar for the ceremony of *cha-no-yu*; *ki ga tatte kuru* become agitated; *te ga kuruu* the hand becomes unsteady.

b *Bisen*, a province in Chūgoku, opposite Shikoku, was noted for its manufacture of swords.

c *Kirizute ni suru* cut the offender down with a sword (*kiru*) and let him lie, giving himself no further concern (*suteru*).

d Have company to dinner.

e The physician was nonplussed.

f Compare: *Atomawashi ni shimashō*.

When you go out, shut (shutting put) the door tight. Europeans could not live in the interior of Japan before the treaties were revised (*kaisei ni naru*). I should like to meet you once more before I leave. If you study Japanese diligently (*benkyō shite*) [for] even one year, you will probably learn to speak (it will become that you can speak) a little (*wa*). I have written it (writing put) just as I heard it. Do just as you were ordered. In order that the shingles may not be blown off (fly) when the wind blows, stones are placed upon them. Ieyasu, after he went into retirement (became *inkyo*), moved to Sumpu<sup>a</sup> and made that his residence (*o sumai ni naru*). Rub (*hiku*) camellia oil on the swords to keep them from rusting (that they may not rust). Take care that the rice does n't burn. I will make a note of it (*kakits'kete oku*) so as not to forget. The Japanese in order not to forget a thing tie a finger with a paper string. The Japanese don't talk much at meal time. The fog is so thick (deep)<sup>b</sup> that one can't see well, but I think (*omowareru*) that (*yō ni*) there is an island there. When a train is passing it is a dangerous thing to go over (*kosu no wa*) the railroad crossing. Go and say (saying come) that he shall come without fail. Ōkubo Toshimichi was assassinated as (*tochū de*) he was going to the Palace. As Kiyomori was going to Aki,<sup>c</sup> a fish jumped into the boat, and (*ga*) a diviner said that it was a good sign (thing of good omen). I should like to have (*yō ni sh'tai mon'des'*) you get well soon. I should like to have it finished by to-morrow. See to it (*sh'te oke*) that the fire does n't go out.

a *Sumpu* is the old name of Shizuoka (p. 96e).

b A verb may without *kodo* express result or degree when a subordinative precedes (p. 101,2).

c *Kiyomori*, of the clan of *Taira (Hei-ke)*, was in the second half of the XII. Century *Da-jō-daijin* (prime minister) and the most powerful man in the country. *Aki* is a province on the main island west of *Bizen*. Its chief city is *Hiroshima*.



# THE INTERJECTION<sup>a</sup>

## CHAPTER LXXXIV

Interjections may be divided into two groups. The first consists of mere sounds expressive of emotion :

1. *Ā* Ah—of a sudden perception or recollection, delight, admiration, alarm, weariness, etc.

*Ā, ii koto.* Ah how fine!

*Ā, shimatta* Ah, too bad! (p. 248d).

2. *Ō* Oh—of fright or pain.

3. *Ei*—of displeasure or contempt :<sup>b</sup>

*Ei, imaimashii.* Pshaw! Hard luck!

*Ei, urusai ko da nei.*

Don't bother me (you are an annoying child).

4. *Mā*, Well—of pleasure, satisfaction, amazement, hesitancy, exhortation, etc.

*Mā, mā, yoku irasshaimashita.*

Well, well, I'm glad you've come.

*Mā, yokatta.* Well, that was fine.

*Mā, dō shita mon' darō.* Well, what shall we do?

*Mā, sonna imi deshō.* Well, it means something like that.

*Mā, ippuku o agari nasai.* Come, have some tea (or, a

5. *Sa, sã* Come—urging, inciting, encouraging : [smoke].

*Sã, ikimashō.* Come, let's go.

*Sã, sã.* Come (or go) on!

6. *Ya, yã*—of surprise, delight, alarm.

*Yã, o kuma san.* Well, is that you Kuma?

7. *Yai*—calling, reproaching :

*Yai, nani wo suru n' da.* For shame! what are you doing?

8. *Oi, oi* Hello! (used mostly by men in trying to get the attention of others, especially inferiors).

9. *Oya, oyaoya*—of surprise :

*Oya, sō desu ka* Indeed! you don't say?

*Oyaoya, taihen na fukiburi desu.*

Whew! it's a dreadful storm.

*Oyaoya, o cha wo koboshimashita.*

Oh dear, I've spilled the tea.

---

a *Kan-tō-shi*, from *kan*=*aida*, i.e., "inter-" and *tō*=*nageru* throw, i.e., "-ject."

b *Hei* (p. 356) is often pronounced *ei*: *Ei, nan to osshaimashita ka.* What did you say?

10. *Dokkoi, dokkoisho*—encouraging, warning.

The second group consists of interjections which seem to have been derived from other words:

1. *Kore, kora*,—rebuking.
2. *Sore, sora* look at that!
3. *Are, ara*—of surprise:  
*Are, ni ji ga dekimashita.* See! there's a rainbow.  
*Ara, taihen na koto ga dekimashita.*  
Oh! a terrible thing has happened.
4. *Nani, nāni* what! Oh no! Nothing at all.
5. *Dore, dōre, dore dore.* Well! (p. 42b, 207b).
6. *Hate (na)*—of perplexity,  
*Hate, myō na koe ga suru.* That's a queer sound.  
*Hate, komatta na.* Dear me! What a fix!
7. *Moshi, moshimoshi.* Hello! Say! (p. 207b).
8. *Yare, yareyare*—of relief, pleasure:  
*Yareyare, go kurō deshita.*  
It is too bad to have burdened you so.  
*Yareyare, shiken ga sumimashita.*  
At last the examination is over.
9. *A-ita* (from *ā, itai*) Ouch! That hurts.
10. *Dō-mo*—of perplexity:  
*Dōmo, ikemasen.* Pshaw! it's of no use.  
*Nakanaka, dōmo* (= it's exceedingly difficult).  
*Oya, mā, dōmo, mā omoigakenai.* Well, I'm amazed.

11. *Naru-hodo* I see, quite so, very true, indeed. *Naruhodo* may indicate the sudden perception of a new thought. It may also take the place of the *ha's, he's, ei's, um's*, etc., with which polite people punctuate a conversation to which they are listening attentively. *Sō desu ka* may be used in the same way. Older men or provincials say also *ikanimo* or *ikasama* (p. 354a).

From the English have been imported *hiyahiya* (Hear, hear) and *nōnō*, exclamations indicating respectively approval and disapproval of a speech. Another expression is *kin-chō = tsusushinde kiku* I listen respectfully.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> While the speech of the average Japanese is more refined than that of the average foreigner, execration and the abuse of sacred words are by no means unknown. Vulgar people express their detestation of a person by saying *Kutabare* (*kutabaru* die), or *Shinde shimae*, or *Shini-sokenai-me* (lit. one who has failed to die). Old people express gratification by saying *Namu Amida Butsu* (*Namu* I adore, from the Sanscrit), just as the Germans say *Gott sei Dank*. *Namusambō*=Great heavens! *Sambō* are the three [Buddhist] treasures *bup-pō-sō*, i.e., *butsu* Buddha, *hō* law or doctrine and *sō* priest.

With the interjections should be classed the imperative particles *na* and *yo* (p. 150,2)<sup>a</sup> and *ya* (vulgar, p. 249f); the interrogative particles *ka*, *ya* and *yara* (pp. 397-8), and the familiar vocative *ya* (classical *yo*, p. 34f). *O Hana san* may be called *Hana ya* by her superiors. A mother in calling her boy will say *Bō ya*. An aged servant may be addressed *Jii ya* (or *Bū ya*).

In this connection note the particles of emphasis :

1. *Ne* or *nei* at the end of a sentence indicates agreement or an appeal for assent :

*Nikkō no o tamaya wa kekkō desu ne.*

The ancestral shrines of Nikkō are splendid, are n't they ?  
*Sō desu ne.* That's so (but see p. 134a).

*Ne* may also follow any word in a sentence to draw attention to it or simply to fill out a pause, like the English "You know." It is thus used in explaining things to a dull hearer. *Ne* is especially common in Tōkyō. It characterizes the speech of children ; e. g.,

*Tonari no o bā san ga ne, sakuban kite ne, kyō wa ne, Shintomiza ye ne, tsurete iku to itta n' da kara ne, watasha ne, matte iru n' da yo.* The old lady next door said last evening that she would take me to Shintomiza<sup>b</sup> to-day ; so I am waiting for her.

*Ano ne*, or simply *ne*, like the English "I say," attracts attention to what is to be said.

2. *Na*, *nā* is used like *ne* in Kyōto ; in Tōkyō only by men.

3. *No*, *nō* is becoming obsolete in most parts of the country.

4. *Sa* occurs after words like *sayō* and *nani* and is very common with elliptical constructions :

*Ikanai to sa.* He says he won't go.

*Nani sa, sonna wake wa nai.*

What do you mean ? That's not the case.

A story often ends with *to sa*.

5. *Wa* : *Mā, honto ni iya da wa.* I certainly do dislike it.

6. *Wai* : *Kore wa migoto da wai.* This is surely handsome.

7. *Ya* : *Yare, ureshii ya.* How delightful !

8. *Ye* may follow a question : *Sō ka ya.* That so ?

9. *Yo* at the end of a sentence indicates a positive assertion. It is used very much more by women than by men.

<sup>a</sup> *Na* and *yo* may follow even regular imperatives of the second conjugation : *Ippai agare yo. Kudasai na.* Note also : *Chōdai na* (said by a woman).

<sup>b</sup> The name of a famous theater in Tōkyō (*shin new, tomi wealth*).

*Kono jibiki ni wa arimasen yo.*

It isn't in this dictionary, I tell you.

*Abunai yo.* Look out; that's dangerous.

Girls have a fashion of substituting the subordinative with *yo* for the indicative:

*Watakushi mo itte yo.* I am going (or, went), too.

10. *Zo* often follows sentences which contain a command or prohibition. It is the harshest of the interjections of emphasis:

*Sonna koto wo shicha naranai zo.*

You must n't do anything like that, do you hear?

11. *Ze* is vulgar except in some provinces.

*Mono* may occur at the end of a sentence, especially when it has a tone of complaint:

*Itte mo kikanai n' desu mono.*

Though I tell him he won't listen.

*Koto* following an adjective or a verb expresses surprise, wonder or admiration:

*Kono hana no nioi no ii koto.* How fragrant this flower is!

*Samui koto.* How cold it is!

*Yoku mawarimasu koto.* How it spins!

*Kitai no yōsu da koto.* How extraordinary!

## Vocabulary

(In addition to the interjections)

*toga* fault, transgression.

*makanai* (from *makanau*)  
housekeeping, a steward,  
board.

*fusuma* sliding doors covered  
with wall paper forming  
partitions between rooms.

*te-bukuro* glove.

*mō* (lit. hair) one tenth of a  
*rin*.<sup>a</sup>

*gyū-nyū* (*ushi no chichi*) milk.

*kan-nin* forbearance.

*ge-shuku-ya* boarding house.

*omo-datta* chief.

*wasure-gachi na* forgetful.<sup>b</sup>

*ai-mai na* vague, ambiguous.

*tondemonai* = *tohōmonai*.

*kibamu* turn yellow.

*sha suru* thank, apologize.

*kippari to* distinctly, definitely.

*saka-sama ni, sakasa ni* upside  
down.

<sup>a</sup> The term *rin* denotes the tenth part not only of a *sen*, but also of a *bu* (unit of interest, p. 80, or one tenth of a *sun*) or of a *fun* (one tenth of a *momme*, p. 69). *Bu*, *bun* and *fun* are variant readings of the same character.

<sup>b</sup> Compare *ari-gachi* in: *Kō iu baai ni wa arigachi na (no) koto desu kara, sō fukaku togameru ni wa oyobimasen.* You need not censure [him] severely; for in such a case [a blunder like that] is very apt to occur.

Exercises<sup>a</sup>

*Ne! anata choite sono fusuwa wo tatete kudasaimashi na. Mā, yoku dekimash' ta koto nei. Oya, Matsubara san! yoi tokoro de o me ni kakarimash' ta. Dochira ye irasshaimas' ka. Nāni, chotto sampo ni itte kimash' ta tokoro sa. Yareyare, mendok' sai kotta (=koto da) nā. Aita, omae wa hidoi koto wo suru ne; nandatte (=naze) hito wo utsu n' da.<sup>b</sup> Ara, utta n' ja gosaimasen yo; kyotto attata n' des' kara, kannin sh' te kudasaimashi. Dōmo, nan to mo ienai iya na kokoromoehi ni natte kita; dō sh' ta n' darō. Ikasama, sayō na wake de gosaimas' ka nā. Sonna koto wo osshatte wa anata go muri de gosaimas' wa, watashi wa nani mo zanjimasen mono.<sup>c</sup> Ā, ii koto! kore wo watashi ni kudasaimas' no.<sup>d</sup> Moshimoshi! Kanda ni deru ni wa dō ittara yoroshū gosaimashō. Mā, mā, sonna koto wo iwanaide shibaraku o makase nasai; watashi ga yoi yō ni sh' te agemas' kara. Oya, mā, taisō kirei na kansashi des' koto nei. Bō ya! kore kara (=kara wa) sonna warusa wo suru to, yurushimasen zo. Sore de mo yokutte yo. Ōsaka ye itte hakurankwai wo go kembutsu nasai; taisō omoshirō gosaimas' ze. Ei, sonna tsumaran' koto ka. Oi, nei san! hayaku gozen wo dash' te kurenja komaru ja nai ka.<sup>e</sup> Nāni, ore datte kane no hyaku ryō ya ni hyaku ryō wa koshiraerarenai kotā (=koto wa) aru mon' ka.<sup>f</sup> Sa, kimi! yari tamae; guzuguzu sh' te oru to, hi ga kurete shimanu zo. Ara, koto ni oita kamiine wa dō sh' tarō. Sora, ōki na ringo wo yaru za. Ano ne, Ojime san (=o Ume san) wa ne, okkasan ni mo hanasanai de kindō Tōkyō oe itta n' des' to. Dōmo, komatte shimaimas' wa; ikura itte kikasete mo wakaranai n' des' mono. Sore wa*

a The purpose of these exercises is to enable the student to understand what is being said in his presence, not to furnish models for imitation. Until one has become very fluent, great caution must be exercised in using the words described in this chapter. It is very difficult for foreigners to use even *ne* gracefully so as not to give offense.

b A gentleman resents being hustled in a crowd. The answer follows.

c A lady protests against being blamed for something she knows nothing about.

d *Kudasaimasu no=kudasaimasu ka* (p. 273, middle).

e *Nei san*, from *one* elder sister, is used in addressing a waitress or servant at a hotel.

f The old word *ryō* is still used in the sense of *yen*.

*dai s'ki des'kara, watashi ni mo hitotsu chōdai na. Ano hito no hanashi to kite wa (kitara) bakak'sakute kikareta mon' ja arimasen yo.*<sup>a</sup> *Mina buji ni kurash'te orimas'kara, anjinai yō ni kotosukeke kudasai na. Mā, tonda shitsurei wo itashimash'ta; dōso, go men nas'tte kudasaimashi. Kessh'te machigai wa arimas'mai ne.*<sup>b</sup> *Iya, dō itashimash'te, rin mō de mo ehigai ga gozaimash'tara sugu ni o torikae mōshimashō. Oi, sonna ni minna de waiwai itta tokoro de sh'kata ga nai kara, omaetachi no uchi kara omodatta mono ni san nin erande yokose: sō sureba, yoku sōdan wo sh'te kimeite yarō. Oi, kimi! ano koto wa dō narimash'ta ka. Ā, are des'ka; mada kimarande orimas'. Are wa, dōmo nanigoto ni tsuite mo kippari sh'ta koto wo iwazu ni itsu mo aimai na henji bakari sh'te komatta mon'des'. Kore kara Ueno ye hanami ni ikō to omoimas'ga, mina san wa ikaga des'ka. Oya, sō, watashi mo itte yo, dōso, tsurete itte chōdai na. Sakuen Ueno ye itta jibun wa omoshirokatta yo. Sō desk'ta ne, ano toki wa watashi mo nei san to issho ni itte yo. Anna hito ni shasanakereba (o wabi wo shinakereba) naranai nante (=nado to itte), sorya tondemonai kotta ne, nan no toga mo nai no ni sa. Yā, odoroi ta. Oyaoya, mā, yō koso o tazune kudasaimash'ta. Okka san! ano ningyō wo katte kudasai na. Otonash'ku sae sureba katte agemas'yo. Kora, igo kessh'te sonna itazura wo sh'te wa wa naranai zo. Narukodo, o hanashi wo ukagatte mireba, go mottomo na shidai de gozaimas'. Oi, kurumaya! chotto soko made yatte kure. Oi, kimi! sampo ni deka kenai ka. Yare-yare, kore de dekiagarimash'ta. Tebukuro wo nakusanai yō ni ki wo ts'kenakucha ikenai yo. Ā, wasureta koto wo sh'ta. Kora, sonna baka na koto wo sh'cha naran. Watashi wa gyūnyū wa dai kirai des'yo. Boku no gesh'kuya wa makanai ga warukute komaru kara, utsuritai to omou ga, doko zo yoi tokoro ga arimas'mai ka nā. Mā, go ran nasai, as'ko no shōji ni hito no odotte iru kage ga utsutte imas'. Kono mikan wa yohodo kibanda kara, taigai juku sh'tarō yo. Tokaku wasuregachi de komarimas'yo. Dokkoi, sō wa ikenai. Ā, sonna bin wo sakasa ni sh'te wa mizu ga koboremas'. Are, are, atchi ni kirei na chō ga tonde iru yo; hayaku itte ts'kamae na yo.*

<sup>a</sup> The peculiar idiom *to kite wa* or *to kitara* is an emphatic equivalent of *wa*.

<sup>b</sup> A gentleman inquires of a shopkeeper if he is sure that there has been no mistake in measuring the goods he has bought. The answer follows.

## REMARKS ON APPELLATIONS

It is a peculiar feature of the language that in addressing a person or speaking of members of the family of that person or of one's own family, the terms employed vary according to the relative rank of those concerned. These distinctions are due to the careful grading of social classes and to the strict subordination of the members of a family one to another. Frequently a polite term differs from a common one only in having the honorific prefix *o* or *go* or a suffix such as *sama* or *san* or *go*. In other cases the polite term is a special word.

In calling a person one adds *san*<sup>a</sup> to the family name or says *anata*. Teachers, superiors in a profession or an art and older men of culture whom one wishes to treat with regard may well be addressed by the title *sensei*. Soldiers in addressing superior officers add *dono* to the title. Among equals or those who are on familiar terms, such as students, officials, merchants, etc., *kun* takes the place of *san*. Teachers and officers may address students and soldiers by their family names without *san* (a practice called *yobi-sute*). The master of the house usually calls coolies and his own servants by their personal names, which may even be abbreviated (p. 257c); but others in the family add *san*. In talking about persons the same distinctions hold good.

For the titles of persons of high rank see p. 311d. The following are the most important appellations:

### I. Master of the house.

*Go zen* Your Grace, His Grace.<sup>b</sup> [rank].

*Tono sama* (of former feudal lords and other people of high rank).  
*Danna sama, danna san* (to the lady of the house by an inferior, to a servant of the person in question, by a servant to his master).<sup>c</sup>

*Go tes-shu* the master of the house, your husband.

*Go shu-jin* (to a subordinate at a store or a hotel).

*Shu-jin* (by a clerk to a customer).

"Husband" is *otto*, but among equals a lady commonly speaks of her husband by his surname or personal name without *san*,

---

a The younger generation does not use the unabbreviated and very formal *sama* with surnames.

b Note the homonyms in the nonsensical sentence: *Go zen wa gonen ni gonen wo gonen meshiagarimashita*. His Grace ate five bowls of rice before noon.

c Shopkeepers usually address a gentleman customer as *danna (sama)*.

while her friends use his surname with *san*. A wife may also use such terms as *yado* or *taku* (p. 365b) or *shujin*. To a caller a servant may speak of his master as *danna*.

2. Lady of the house.

*O ue sama* Your Grace. *Oku gata* Her Grace.

*Oku sama, oku san* (corresponds to *danna sama*).

*Go shin-zō sama, go shin san* (*shin*=*atarashii*, *zō*=*tsukuru*, from a former custom of a new couple's building a new house for their dwelling).

*Sai-kun* your wife, his wife (among familiar friends).<sup>a</sup>

*O kami san* (among shopkeepers and laborers).<sup>b</sup>

"My wife" is *tsuma, sai, gu-sai* (foolish wife), *ka-nai*. A man of the lower classes may say *kakū*. The word *nyō-bō*, originally elegant, is now used only in speaking familiarly of the wife of a third person or of one's own wife.

3. Parents.

*Go ryō-shin sama* your parents.

"My parents" is *ryōshin, oya*,<sup>c</sup> *futa-ya* or *fu-bo* (*chichi-haha*).

4. Father.

*Go som-pu sama* (son honorable) your honored father.

*Go shin-pu sama* (*shin*=*oya*) your father.

*Oya-go sama* your father.

*O tō sama, ottosan* (from *toto*), your father, papa!

"My father" is *chichi, chichi-oya* or *oya-ji* (p. 58b).

5. Mother.

*Go som-bo, go bo-kō* your honored mother.

*Haha-go, haha sama* your mother.

*O kō sama, okk sama* (from *kaka*) your mother.

*Okka san* your mother, mamma!

"My mother" is *haha*, or *haha-oya*. People of the older generation say *o fukuro*, but this is in most cases a vulgar word.

a A man must not speak of his own wife as *saikun*.

b E. g., *kurumaya no o kami san*. In Kyōto *o kami san* is also used by polite people. Expressions like Mrs. Taguchi, Miss Taguchi, must be paraphrased: *Taguchi san no oku san, Taguchi san no o jō san*, etc.

c *Oya-kata* means the leader of a gang of coolies or the master of a small inn. Distinguish *ō-ya* (great house) the owner of a rented house.



6. Grandfather : *Go so-fu (sama), o jii san (jii for jiji).*<sup>a</sup>  
 "My grandfather" may also be *so-fu* or *jiji, jii*.
7. Grandmother : *Go rō-bo (sama) o bā san (bā or baba).*  
 "My grandmother" : *so-bo* or *baba*.
8. Elder brother.  
*Go son-kei (sama), go rei-kei (sama)* your elder brother.<sup>b</sup>  
*O ani sama, o ani san, nii sama, nii san.*  
*Ani san, nii san* (by younger brothers and sisters).  
 "My elder brother" is *ani*. *Ani-ki* is vulgar now.
9. Younger brother.  
*Go sha-tei (sama) go rei-tei (sama)* your younger brother  
 (*sha* house).  
*Otōto san, otōto-go* (to inferiors).
10. Elder sister : *O ane sama* your elder sister.  
*Ane san, nei san* (by younger brothers and sisters).
11. Younger sister : *O imoto san* your younger sister.  
*O imoto-go, imōto-go* (to inferiors).
12. Son, daughter, child.  
*Go shi-soku (san), go reisoku o musuko sama (san)*  
 your son.  
*Musuko* your boy (to inferiors), my boy.  
*Segare* my boy, son.  
*O bō san, bō san, botchan* (p. 232b).  
*Go chō-nan* your eldest son.  
*Go ji-nan* your second son. *Go san-nan* your third son.  
*Go rei-jo* your daughter.  
*O jō san* your daughter, miss!  
*O musume san, o musume-go* your (or his) daughter.  
*Musume* your daughter (to inferiors), my daughter.  
*Go chō-jo* your eldest daughter.  
*Go batsu-jo (matsu-jo)* your youngest daughter (*batsu* end).  
*O ko san* your child.

a *O bā san* and *o jii san* are also used in addressing old ladies and gentlemen in general.

b From *re'* excellent and *kei* elder brother. *Kei=ani*; *tei=otōto*, *Kei-tei*, more commonly pronounced *kyō-dai*, designates a brother (or a sister, older or younger. "Your brother (or sister) is *go kyōdai*. Compare *shi-mai (shi=ane, mai=imōto)* sister.

*Go sō-ryō* your eldest child (*sō* all, *ryō* govern).

*O chiisai no* your baby.

“Father-in-law” or “mother-in-law” is (*o*) *shūto*. *Shūto-me* for “mother-in-law” is a literary word. Strictly speaking *shūto* are the husband’s parents. A man may speak of his wife’s parents as *kanai no chichi*, *kanai no haka*.

A groom, or a husband from the point of view of the wife’s family, is called (*o*) *muō* (*san*); a bride, wife, daughter-in-law, sister-in-law, is (*o*) *yome* (*san*). “Bride” and “groom” in the strict sense are *hana-yome*, *hana-muō*. A wedded pair are (*go*) *fūfu*: *Tanaka san go fūfu* Mr. and Mrs. Tanaka.

13. Grandchild.

*O mago* (*san*) your grandson, grandchild.

*O mago-musume* your granddaughter.

14. Uncle, nephew, etc.

*O-ji sama* (*san*) your uncle, Uncle!

*O ba sama* (*san*) your aunt, Aunt!

*Oi-go sama* (*san*) your nephew.

*O mei-go sama* (*san*) your niece.

*O itoko san* your cousin.

# SYNTAX

## CHAPTER LXXXV

The order of words in a clause is rather more simple than in European languages. It is the same in affirmative and in interrogative sentences, in principal and in dependent clauses.

1. The main rule is that all modifying words and clauses precede the governing word. A modifying word is sometimes separated by an intervening modifier from the governing word; e. g.,

*Nadakai daigaku no kyōju* a famous university professor,  
or, a professor of a famous university (p. 113a).

*Furui hyakushō no ie* an old farmhouse (farmer's house).

Likewise an adverb precedes the verb, adjective, or adverb which it modifies: *taihen osoi* very late, *goku hayaku* very soon.

*Chotto oide.* Come just a moment.

There are a few apparent exceptions to this rule:

*Shirimasen yoku.* I don't know—at least not well.

*Shitsurei shigoku.* You are exceedingly rude.

Numerals, together with the numeratives, are not modifiers of nouns as in English (p. 341).<sup>a</sup>

2. Case-particles and postpositions follow their substantives.<sup>b</sup> All the conjunctions, except the auxiliaries *moshi*, *manichi*, *tatoi* and *yoshi* (which stand at the beginning of clauses) follow their verbs.

3. The order in a complete sentence is ordinarily the following: (1) subject, often understood; (2) indirect object or adverbial modifier; (3) direct object, and (4) verb.

---

a Numerals are used as substantives occasionally. Like adverbs (p. 352) they may also with *no* take the attributive position.

b Such words as *made*, *to*, *ka*, *nado*, etc., may separate case particles from their nouns. Words like *kurai bakari*, may be brought under the same rule, except that they take the place of *ga* and *wo*. But they may also follow *ni*. *Watakushi ni bakari kurete tomodachi ni wa yaranai.* He gave only to me, not to my friend. Compare: *Shinu bakari ni natte imasu.* He is at the point of death. See also p. 357c.

An indirect object or an adverbial modifier, with or without *wa*, may take the first position for the sake of emphasis:

*Sono hito ni wa nani mo yaranakatta.*

I did n't give anything to HIM.

*Sukoshi mo shimpai ga arimasen.*

I have n't the LEAST anxiety.

*Taihen ni hito ga ō gozaimasu.*

There are very many people.

The indirect object or adverbial modifier may also stand more naturally between the direct object and the verb: *Tokei wo shichi ni okimashita.* He pawned his watch. In many cases more depends on the stress of the voice than on the position of the words. Thus we may say either *Inochi wo kuni no tame ni sutemashita* or *Kuni no tame ni inochi wo sutemashita*: He gave his life for his country. Compare p. 57a. Ordinarily words denoting time precede words denoting place.

*Myōnichi Yokohama ye ikimas'.*

I will go to Yokohama to-morrow.

It is a universal rule that the general precedes the particular.

*Ashita no asa go ji ni* at five to-morrow morning.

*Reido ika go do* five degrees below zero.

Interrogative words do not necessarily take the first place as in English.

4. The order in a subordinate clause is just the same as in an independent sentence, the only difference being that the principal verb is followed by a conjunction or inflected so as to show the relation of the clause to what follows. All dependent clauses precede the principal clause. In careless speech, however, it often happens that a subordinative or a dependent clause, conditional, concessive or causal, lags behind the rest of the sentence (pp. 85c, 392a) The same construction is sometimes chosen for the sake of emphasis.

5. While, as has been said, the construction of simple sentences or clauses in themselves is not so difficult, the foreign student ambitious to master the colloquial will find that it is his most serious problem to join clauses together so as to form a connected, and to the Japanese mind luminous, whole. Japanese poetry is sententious and fragmentary, but colloquial narratives and addresses must be thoroughly coherent. When listening to a Japanese speech or story one need not be surprised to find no conclusive verbs and no period until the end of the whole is reached. In reading connected pieces like

the following selections it may be a good exercise for the student (1) to rewrite the story, breaking it up into as many short sentences as possible, and then (2) to recombine them so as to make, if possible, one continuous narrative of the whole.

6. Ellipses are very common. Often a verb or auxiliary must be supplied :

*Yoku ki wo tsukete.* Take good care ! (p. 164, 8)

*O medetō.* Congratulations !

*Dō itashimashite.*

Why, how can you? Don't mention it ! (p. 218d).

*Senjitsu wa (shitsurei itashimashita).*

I was rude the other day.

*Kore wa dōmo* may mean almost anything, *shitsurei itashimashita*, or *arigatō gozaimasu*, or *o mezurashii* (you are quite a stranger), being understood.

Ellipses are especially common in proverbs ; e. g.,

*Naki-tsura ni hachi.*

Bees sting a crying face (Misfortunes never come singly).

## STORIES

### *Ichiban Tsuyoi Mono*

Aru nezumi no fufu ni taiken utsukushii onna no ho ga deki-mash' ta kara, sekaijū de ichiban tsuyoi mono ni katasukete shusse saseyō to omoimash' ta. Soko de taiyō no tokoro ye itte, "Dōka, watakushidomo no mus' me wo yome ni sh' te hudasai" to tanomimas' to, taiyō wa sono wake wo kiite mōs' ni wa: "Sekikaku tōi michi wo oide nas' te arigatō gozaimas' ga, mada hoka ni watakushi yori tsuyoi mono ga arimas'. Tatoeba, kumo ga deru to, watakushi ga ikura terasō to omotte mo kakusarete teru koto ga dekimasen." Nezumi wa sore wo mottamo to omotte kumo no hō ye itte tanomimas' to, kumo no mōs' ni wa: "Naruhodo, watakushi ni wa taiyō no hikari wo kakus' chikara wa arimas' ga, kaze ga watakushi yori tsuyoi des'." Soko de nezumi ga hondo wa kaze no hō ye itte tanomimas' to, mata kaze no mōs' ni wa: "Naruhodo, watakushi wa kumo yori tsuyoi des'. Shikashi kabe wa motto tsuyoi des'. Watakushi ga sore wo fukitaosō to omotte mo, taaremasen."<sup>a</sup> Sore kara nezumi ga kabe ye itte tanomimas' to, kabe wa: "Kaze no itta tōri, watakushi wa yotsu no uchi de wa ichiban tsuyoi des'. Shikashi nezumi wa watakushi wo kajitte ama wo akemas' kara, watakushi yori nao tsuyoi des'." Soko de nezumi ga sekai ni jibun yori tsuyoi mono wa nai to wakatte, tōtō mus' me wo onaji nezumi no uchi ye katasukemash' ta.

### *Nomi to Shirami<sup>b</sup>*

Nomi to shirami ga Kyōto ye itte Tenshi Sama ni o memie wo shiyō to yak' soku sh' te tabidachi wo itashimash' ta. Nomi wa haneru kara, hayakute yoppodo saki ye itte shirami wo matte imash' ta. Shikashi shirami no kuru no ga amari osoi kara, waki ye yorimichi wo sh' te omashiroi mono wo mi, utsuts' wo nukash' te<sup>c</sup> imash' ta. Sono uchi ni shirami wa narok' te mo yasumazu ni iku kara, saki ni Kyōto ye tsuite Tenshi Sama no

a Note the change of the subject.

b This fable is not generally known to the Japanese. It is given a place here for the sake of its originality.

c *Utsutsu wo nukasu* forget the world of reality; *nukasu* (causative of *nukeru*) allow to escape.

*o ts'kue no ue ni haiagarimash'ta. Tenshi Sama wa sore wo go ran asobasarete, "Kore wa mezurashii mushi da" to osshatte motte irassharu o fude de shirami no senaka ni sumi wo o ts'ke nasaimash'ta. Shirami wa sono sumi wo<sup>a</sup> kurai wo itadaita no da to omotte kaette kuru tochū de nomi ni deaimash'ta. Nomi wa taisō odorote, "Watashi wa omae wo matte ita no ni, doko ye itta no ka" to tazunetara, shirami wa, "Omae wa ashi ga hayai kara, sadamete saki ye itta darō to omotte watashi wa hitori de o memie wo sh'te kono tōri kurai made itadaite kaette kita" to kotaemash'ta. Soko de nomi wa jibun ga yudan wo sh'te okureta no wo taisō hajiite makka ni narimash'ta.*

Itazura Kozō<sup>b</sup>

*Aru tera ni taisō kechi na oshō ga arimash'ta. Aru hi hoka kara ankoromochi wo moraimash'ta ga, kozō ni misezu ni sotto shimatte oite soto ye dete yukimash'ta. Kozō wa rusu no aida ni sore wo nusunidash'te tabete shimaimash'ta. Sō sh'te an wo s'koshi bakari honzon sama no kuchi no atari ni ts'kete oite jibun wa shiran kao wo sh'te imash'ta. Yagate oshō ga kaette kite ankoromochi wo tabeyō to sh'ta ga, hitotsu mo nakunatte imash'ta. Sore de kozō ga tabeta ni chigai (ga) nai to omotte kozō wo yobi, "Ankoromochi wa dō sh'ta ka" to tazunemash'tara, kozō wa: "Watakushi wa chitto mo zanjimassen; shikashi senkoku hondō no hō de nani ka oto ga skimash'ta kara itte go ran nasai" to mōshimash'ta. Soko de oshō wa hondō ye itte honzon sama no kuchi no atari ni an ga tsuite iru no wo mite, kore de wa honzon sama ga nusunde kutta ni chigai nai to hara wo tatete honzon sama wo buchimas'to, kanabuts'wa K'WAN, K'WAN<sup>c</sup> to narimash'ta. Oshō wa, "Konna ni kuchi no atari ni an no tsuite oru no ni k'wan koto ga aru mon'ka" to kanabuts'wo idobata ye hikizuridash'te ido no uchi ye nagekomimash'ta. Suru to, kanabutsu mo<sup>d</sup> KUTTA KUTTA to hakujo sh'te shizumimash'ta.*

<sup>a</sup> Note that the logical subject of a clause dependent on a verb like *omou* may take *wo*. In such a case *wo* may be rendered "in regard to."

<sup>b</sup> A well known anecdote. *Itazura kozō* a mischievous young priest, a naughty acolyte.

<sup>c</sup> *Kuwanu* I did (do) not eat. *K'wan* also represents the sound made by the metallic idol when struck. So also below: *kutta* is an imitation of the bubbling sound of the water, also the preterit of *kuu* eat.

<sup>d</sup> *Mo* after *kanabutsu* indicates agreement on the part of the idol (see p. 429d).

## Kaketori

*Aru hito ga karits'ke no mise ni kake wo sh'te okimash'ta ga, ts'kizue ni naru to, akindo ga kake wo tori ni kuru darō to omotte o kami san ni: "Moshi kake wo tori ni kitara, washi ga uchi ni inai to ie" to iits'kete okimash'ta. Sō suru to, an no gotoku akindo ga mairimash'ta. Soko de o kami san wa teishu no iits'kedōri ni: "Kyō wa shujin ga rusu des'kara, mata kite kudasai" to mōshimash'ta. Suru to, akindo wa irikuchi no shōji no yabure kara<sup>a</sup> uchi wo nozoite, "O kami san go shujin wa o uchi no yōs'des'"<sup>b</sup> to mōshimash'ta. Teishu wa sore wo kiite kami de sono ana wo fusaide, "Kore nara,<sup>c</sup> rusu no yō ni mieru darō" to iimash'ta. Soko de akindo mo sh'kata naku<sup>d</sup> waratte kaette shimaimash'ta.*

## Tsūben no Kiten

*Go isshin mae no koto des'ga, aru hi Nagasaki bugyō ga<sup>e</sup> norimono ni notte soto wo tōrimas'to, tockū de uma ni notte iru Orandajin ni deaimash'ta. Sono jibun ni wa dare de mo tockū de meue no hito ni au to, uma kara orite aisats'wo suru shūkwan desh'ta kara, bugyō wa tsūben ni, sono koto wo Orandajin ni hanash'te uma kara orose to iits'kemash'ta. Shikaru ni sono tsūben wa yoku gwaikoku no jijō wo sh'tte ite totemo Orandajin ga uma kara orimai to omotta kara, kiten wo kika-sh'te Orandajin ni mukai: "Watakushi no shujin ga anata no o uma wo taisō homete kaitai to mōshimas'kara, dōzo o ori nasatte shujin no mae made uma wo kiite kite kudasaimesen ka" to mōshimash'ta. Orandajin wa nani mo shirimasen kara, kore wa ii shōhō da to omotte sugu ni uma kara orite teinei ni bugyō no mae ye kite aisats'wo sh'ta to iu koto des'.*

<sup>a</sup> *Yabure* a rent in the paper on the sliding door, from *yabureru* be torn; *kara* through.

<sup>b</sup> Elliptical for *uchi ni oide ni naru yō desu*.

<sup>c</sup> *Kore nara*=*kō shūlara* if ore does this way.

<sup>d</sup> *Shikata naku* modifies *kaerimashita*. The *mo* after *akindo* is untranslatable, faintly indicating that the shopkeeper assented to what the man of the house said.

<sup>e</sup> *Bugyō* here means the governor of a city owning direct allegiance to the Shōgun. Compare p. 358a. Nagasaki, though in the fief of the daimyō of Omura, was immediately subject to the Shōgun



Tekiyaku<sup>a</sup>

Aru nadakai isha no uchi ye ba san ga kite, "Watakushi no mus'ko wa byōki des'kara, dōka, kusuri wo kudasai" to mōs'no de, isha ga, "Nan no byōki da" to kiku to, bā san ga, "Mus'ko wa dorobō wo suru byōki ga arimas'"; dōka, kusuri wo itadaite sono byōki wo naosh'tō gozaimas'" to tanomu to, isha ga nani ka kusuri wo dashi'te yarinashi'ta. O bā san ga yorokonde kaetta ato de, deshidomo ga, "Sensei! byōki no nai hito ni kusuri wo kuremashi'ta no wa dō iu wake des'ka" to kiku to, isha no kotae ni, "Watakushi wa yoi omoits'ki ga deta kara, kusuri wo yatta. Are wa hai no sō wo kawakas'mon da. Moshi tōnin ga shijū seki wo suru to, dorobō no shigoto ga dekinai darō to iu no de, deshidomo wa, "Sasuga wa sensei da" to itte mina kanshin itashimashi'ta.

## Saikun no Share

Saikun: Hana ya! konnichi wa o tenki ga yoi kara, s'koshi sentakumono wo sh'te o kure. Hana: Hei. S. Shabon wa aru ka. H. Hei, mada shōshō gozaimas'. S. Sakujitsu jissen<sup>b</sup> katta n' da kara, mada aru darō. H. Hei. S. Danna sama no o shiroji no hitoemono wo samnai to shats'wo yo mai to tsuide ni watakushi no yumaki wo ni mai to nemaki wo go mai, sore kara..... H. Oyaoya, shōshō sentaku wo sh'te kure to wa kiite akiremas'. S. Nani wo iu ka. H. Iie.<sup>c</sup> S. Sore kara danna sama to watakushi no tabi wo shichi soku. H. Oya—ja nai —hei, hei—de wa shabon ga tarimas'mai. S. Tarinak'te mo, s'koshi sutsu ts'katte araba, tariru darō. H. De mo, go shinjō sama, totemo totemo dekimas'mai. S. Sore wo sore dake de aran ga onna no tsumashii tokoro da. H. De mo..... S. De mo, de mo, nan de mo, sore de aramas'. H. Dō itashimashi'te. S. SEKKEN<sup>d</sup> sh'te ts'kau n' da.

## Baka Muko

Mukashi aru tokoro ni baka muko<sup>e</sup> ga arimashi'ta. Aru hi yome no sato ye mimai ni ikimashi'tara, dango wo dashimashi'ta.<sup>f</sup> Baka muko wa taisō umagatte tak'san dango wo tabete,

a Appropriate medicine, a specific (*tekito na kusuri*). Compare *ryū-yaku*.

b *Jissen*=*jissen no bunryū* ten cents' worth.

c =*Iie nani mo mōshimasen*.

d The word *sekken* may mean either "soap" or "economy."

e A recently married husband and wife are called *muko* and *yome*.

f *Dasu* set out, offer, give to eat.

"Kore wa makoto ni kekko na mono des'ga, nan to iu mon des'ka. Na wo uketamawatte, kaettara, kanai ni koshiraesemashō" to iimash'ta. Shujin ga, "Sore wa dango to iu mono de gokaimas'" to kotaemas'to, baka muko wa sono na wo wasurenai yō ni sugu ni itomagoi wo sh'te kuchi no uchi de shijū "dango dango" to ii nagara kaette kimash'ta. Uchi no mae ni kimas'to, soko ni chiisai misutamari ga arimash'ta. Sore wo tobu hyōshi ni hitokuchi "dokko!"<sup>a</sup> to iimas'to, kajime no "dango dango" wo wasurete "dokko dokko" to itte uchi ye hairimash'ta. Sugu ni yome ni, "Omae no uchi de kyō dokko to iu mono wo tabete kita ga, taisō oish'katta kara, kore kara koshiraete kure" to iits'kemash'ta. Yome wa fushigi na kao wo sh'te, "Watakushi no sato de sonna mono wo anata ni das'kasu wa arimasen. Sonna mono wo watakushi wa ichido mo mita koto mo tabeta koto mo arimasen" to kotaemash'ta. Sō suru to, baka muko wa taisō hara mo tatete, "Kisama no sato de dash'ta mono wo kisama ga shiranai to iu kasu ga nai" to itte soko ni aru f'toi bō wo totte yome no hitai wo nagurimash'ta. Yome wa hittai wo osaete, "Aita, aita! Anata wa hidoi hito des'; go ran nasai, dango no yō na kobu ga dekimash'ta" to iimash'tara. baka muko wa, "O, sō da, sō da! Sono dango no koto da" to mōshimash'ta.<sup>b</sup>

## Dorobō to Bimbōnin

Aru bimbōnin no uchi ye dorobō ga hairimash'ta tokoro ga, bimbōnin no uchi no koto des'kara, nani mo totte kaerō to omou meboshii mono mo arimasen. Sō suru to dorobō ga, "Koryā shikujitta; konna koto to sh'tta nara, hito no me wo shinonde haitte ki wa shinai; imaimashii koto da" to kogoto wo itte kaette ikimash'ta. Ushirokage wo miokutte bimbōnin no shujin wa toko no naka kara yobikakete im ni wa, "Oi, dorobō! boku no tame ni sono to wo tatele kuren ka" to. Sasuga no dorobō mo. "Sō ka na, shikashi ore mo kisama ni tazunetai koto ga aru. To wo tatete nan no yaku ni tats'ka."

a In such a case one may say *dokko* to gather one's self together for the effort. *Tobu=tobikosu* · *hitokuchi* with *io* conveys the idea of an ejaculation.

b *Sono dango no koto da*. *Dango*—that's the very thing I was talking about!

Hizakurige<sup>a</sup>.

*Nihon ni Dōchū Hizakurige to iu kokkei no hon ga arimash'te, Yajirō to Kidahachi to iu mono ga futari de Edo kara Kyōto made iku koto ga okash'ku kaite arimas'. Sono uchi ni kō iu omoshiroi hanashi ga arimas':*

*Yajirō to Kidahachi ga Shioigawa to iu kawa ni kita toki, sono mae no hi ni dame ga futte hashi ga ochimash'ta kara, ōrai no hito ga mina kono kawa wo kachi de watatte orimash'ta. Soko ye Kyōnōbori no zatō de<sup>b</sup> Inuichi to Saruichi to iu no ga futari kite tazuneru no ni: "Moshi! mizu ga hiza made gozaimas'ka." Kidahachi no kotae ni: "Sayō, sayō, shikashi mizu ga hayai kara, abunai. Yōjin sh'te watari nasai." Inuichi; "Hā, narukodo, mizu no oto ga yokodo hayai," to ii nagara ishi wo hirotte kawa no naka ye nagekonde kangae te orimash'ta ga: "Kokora ga asai yō da. Koryā, Saruichi! futari nagara kyakan wo toru no wa mendō da kara, omae wakai yaku de<sup>c</sup> washi wo obutte kure. Saruichi; "Hā, zurui koto da. Ken de mairō<sup>d</sup> Maketa mono ga obutte wataru no da. Yoi ka." Inuichi: Kore wa omoshiroi. Sā, omae! "Soko de, "ryan go sai, ryan go sai" to katate de ken wo utte, sōhō kara migi no te wo dash'te tagai ni hidari no te wo nigiraimash'ta.<sup>e</sup> Inuichi: "Katta zo, katta zo." Saruichi: "Ei, imaimashii." Sonnara kono furosh'kizutsumi wo omae ni yaru zo. Sā, koi, koi" to obuu sh'taku wo sh'te se wo mukemash'ta. Yajirō wa kore wo yoko kara mite Inuichi no kawari ni Saruichi ni obuwareru to, Saruichi wa zatō to omotte sassa to kawa no naka ye haitte mukō ye watarimash'ta. Inuichi wa konata no kishi*

a This incident is from a humorous work of Ikku (died 1831). See Aston's, *History of Japanese Literature*, p. 371. The book describes the adventures of two worthies, Yajirōbei and Kidahachi, as they tramp over the Tōkaidō. The name *Hizakurige*, from *hisa* knee and *kuri-ge* chestnut-colored fur, is an allusion to the "shank's mare" that they rode.

b Blind men going up to Kyōto.

c *Yaku* means here role; *wakai yaku*, the role of the young man.

d We will decide the matter by means of a game of *ken* (p. 196a). The players repeat as a signal the formula *ryan go sai*. *Ryan* is "two" (*itō-on*); *go* is five; the meaning of *sai* is not known. The blind are very fond of games of chance.

e They played with their left hands, and each used his right hand to feel the movements made by the other.

ni nokotte ite, "Yoi, Saruichi yo! dō suru ka. Hayaku kawa wo wataranai ka." Saruichi wa sore wo mukō kara kiite hara wo tatete: "Korya okashi na yatsu da. Tadaima watash'ta no ni, mata sotchi ye kaette watakushi wo naburu n'da." Inuichi: "Baka wo ie. Omae hitori de watatte futoi yatsu da." Saruichi: "Iya, futoi to wa sotchi no koto da." Inuichi: "Korya anibun ni muhatte gongodōdan. Hayaku kite watasan ka," to shirome wo dash'te hara wo tatemash'ta kara, Saruichi ga sh'kata naku mata kotchi ye watatte kaette, "Sā, sonnara obusari nasai" to itte senaka wo dashimash'ta. Sō suru to, Kidahachi wa shimeta to omotte<sup>a</sup> obusarimash'ta kara, Saruichi wa mata sassa to kawa ye hairimash'ta. Soko de Inuichi wa taihen sekikonde, "Saruichi, doko ni oru ka" to ōki na koe de iu to, Saruichi wa kawa no naka de, "Koitsu wa dare da" to Kidahachi wo mizu no naka ye domburi otoshimash'ta. Kidahachi wa, "tas'kete kure, tas'kete kure" to te ashi wo mogaitte nagarete oru kara, Yajirō wa tobikonde hikiagemash'ta ga, Kidahachi wa atama kara ashi no saki made bisshori nurete: Ei, zatōme ga tonda me ni awaseta." Yajirō wa, "Hā, hā, hā, mazu kimono wo nuide shibotte yarō" to itte, Kidahachi ga hadaka ni natte gatagata senshinfurue, kimono wo shibotte iru uchi ni, zatō wa kawa wo wattate tōrisugimash'ta.

<sup>a</sup> Shimeta may be an exclamation of joy: "I've got it."

## ANECDOTES

### *Hanawa Hokiichi*<sup>a</sup>

*Hanawa Hokiichi to iu sensei wa shichi sai ni naru to, gambiō ni kakatte mekura ni narimash'ta. Sore kara biwa ya amma no keiko wo shimash'ta ga, amari omoshiroku nakatta kara, Edo ye dete Wakan no gakumon wo benkyō sh'te yumei na gak'sha ni narimash'ta. Aru ban shosei wo atsumete Genji Monogatari no<sup>b</sup> kōshaku wo sh'te imas' to natsu no koto des' kara,<sup>c</sup> kaze ga fuite kite akari ga kiemash'ta. Shosei ga soko de sensei ni, "Shōshō o machi nas'tte kudasai! akari wo ts'keneba narimasen" to mōshimas'to, sensei wa, "Me no aru mono wa fujiyū na mono da" to itte waraimash'ta.*

### *Ōoka no Sabaki*

*Aru onna ga nuka no naka ye kakush'te oita kane wo nusumaremash'ta no de Ōoka ni uttaedemash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Soko de Ōoka wa sono hi onna no uchi ni otta hitobito wo mina yobidash'te: "Izure nusunda mono no te wa mada nukak'sai<sup>e</sup> ni chigai ga nai kara, kore kara ichiichi<sup>f</sup> kaide miyō" to mōshimash'ta. Sō suru to, sono uchi no hitori ga sotto jibun no te wo hana ni atete kaide mita no de, yakunin ga sugu ni sore wo mit's'ete, sono mono wo toraete gimmi wo shimash'ta tokoro ga, an no go'oku sono mono ga nusunda no de arimash'ta.*

### *Shosei no Kōkatsu*

*Rai Sanyō ga<sup>g</sup> katsute aru uchi ye kyōō ni manekareta toki te.shu wa hanashiaite ni tote shosei wo mo hitori yobimash'ta.*

a A noted scholar and author, died 1821 at the age of 76.

b A classical romance written about the year 1009 by a lady of the Court, Murasaki Shikibu. See Aston, *History of Japanese literature*, p. 92.

c The *shōji* were pushed aside to admit fresh air.

d For *Ōoka* see p. 358a. *Uttae-deru* is transitive, though the second part of the compound is the intransitive verb *deru*. So also *mōshideru*, *ukagaideru*, etc. (p. 285).

e Rice bran has an unpleasant odor.

f *Ichi-ichi* one by one.

g The famous author of the work *Nihon Gwaishi*, a history of Japan (*gwaishi* external history, i. e., history of the leading families, as distinguished from the official history of the Court) from the times of *Masakado* (X. Century) on, published in 1837.

Sate, iyoiyo gozen ni narimash'ta ga, mireba Sanyō no yakizakana wa shosei no yori s'koshi ōkii no de shosei wa haru wo tate issaku wo<sup>a</sup> kangaedash'te Sanyō ni mukai: So Tōba no So no ji wa uo no ji wo migi ni kaku ga yō gozaimas'ka, hidari ni kaku ga yō gozaimas'ka" to tazunemash'ta.<sup>b</sup> Sanyō wa nanigenaku, "Sore wa migi de mo hidari de mo onaji koto da" to kotuemash'ta. Suru to, shosei wa sugu ni, "Sore nara kore mo yakari migi de mo hidari de mo onaji koto deshō" to itte yakizakana wo torikaemash'ta.

## Mōshi no Haha

Mōshi wa<sup>c</sup> kodomo no toki ni aru tera no soba ni sunde orimash'te mainichi sōsh'ki wo miru mon' des' kara, sono mane wo sh'te asobimash'ta. Soko de haha wa koko wa kodomo wo sodateru tokoro de wa nai to omoimash'te, aru ichiba no yoko ni tenkyo shimas'ta. Suru to, Mōshi wa kondo wa akindo no mane wo sh'te asobimash'ta. Soko de mata haha wa koko mo ko wo sodateru tokoro de wa nai to kangaemash'te, kondo wa aru gakkō no soba ye hikkoshimash'ta. Sō sh'ta tokoro ga, Mōshi wa mainichi gakkō de keiko wo suru mane wo sh'te asobimash'ta kara, haha wa koko ga ko wo sodateru basho da to omotte yōyaku anshin itashimash'ta.

Sono nochi Mōshi wo shugyō no tame aru empō no gakkō ye okurimash'ta tokoro ga, Mōshi wa benkyō ga iya ni natte uchi ye kaette kimash'ta. Sono toki haha wa chōdo hata wo orikakete imash'ta ga, Mōshi no tochū de gakumon wo yamete kaette kita no wo mite jibun no orikakete ita hata wo hasami de nakahodo kara kittle misemash'ta. Sō sh'te Mōshi ni mukatte iu no ni wa, "Omae ga ima chūto de gakumon wo yamete shimau no wa chōdo orikaketa hata wo kono tōri kittle shimau yō na mono de nan no yaku ni mo tatanai" to itte iken wo shimash'ta. Soko de Mōshi wa hijō ni osoreitte kokoro wo torinaoshi mata saki no gakkō ye kaette isskhōkemmei ni benkyō wo itashimash'ta.

a From *ichi one, saku* scheme.

b The name of a famous Chinese literateur (*bunshōka*). In the character so (蘇 or 蘇), "fish" (魚) may be put either on the left or on the right side.

c The famous philosopher *Meng-tse* or Mencius (Japanese *Mō-shi*) lived B.C. 371-288. Having lost his father at an early age, he was educated by his mother. The stories here told illustrate the great solicitude with which she watched over her boy's education. She is commonly referred to as *Mōdo* (*bo=haha*). A version in the form of the written language may be found in Chamberlain's "Romanized Japanese Reader."

*Sō sh'te tsui ni wa Asei<sup>a</sup> to iwareru yō na rippa na hito ni narimash'ta. Sore yue ima de mo hito ga Mōshi no hāha wo honete yoku kodomo wo kyōiku suru michi wo sh'te ita hito da to mōshimas'.*

Aoto Saemon no Keizai

*Mukashi Aoto Saemon Fujitsuna<sup>b</sup> to iu hito ga hashi wo tōrikakatta toki ni, jū mon no zeni wo kawwa ye otosh'te, sore wo hiroiageru tame ni ninsoku wo yatotte kite kawwa wo sagasasete go jū mon no hiyō wo haraimash'ta. Tokoro de, aru hito ga waratte Aoto ni inukatte, "Jū mon no zeni wo hiroiageru no ni go jū mon no zeni wo karatte wa sashihiki shi jū mon no son ga iki wa shinai ka" to tazunemas'to, Aoto ga kotaete, iu no ni, "Moshi jū mon no zeni wo kawwa ye utchatte okeba, iisu made mo tenka ni jū mon no zeni wo ushinai;<sup>c</sup> moshi hiroiageta naraba, ninsoku ni go jū mon wo karatte mo dochira mo yakari tenka ni tsūyō suru wake yue, betsu ni tenka no keizai ni wa son ga nai" to iimash'ta.*

Ōta Dōkwan no Hanashi

*Mukashi Ōta Mochi's'ke<sup>d</sup> to iu daimyō ga Edo ni orareta<sup>e</sup> toki aru hi Tots'ka no hen de takagari wo sare mash'ta. Sono toki kyū ni ame ga futte kita no de, hyak'shō no ie ni haitte, "Mino wo ichi mai karitai" to iware mash'ta. Sō suru to, komus'me ga hitori dete kite yamabuki no hana wo sashidash'te*

a A-sei next to the sage, i. e., the greatest philosopher next to Confucius "the Wise" (*sei-jin*). This title was first given to Mengtse by one of his commentators and was officially confirmed by the Chinese Emperor Wan-tsung in the year 1330.

b Aoto Saemon, a high official in the second half of the XIII. Century, is famous for his just decisions and his wise and economical administration. *Aoto* is the family name; *Saemon*, originally a title (*sa-e-mon no jō* head of the left gate guard), has become a part of his name; *Fujitsuna* is the given name. The anecdote here related is very well known and is frequently referred to. For this and other stories of Aoto Saemon see Chamberlain's *Japanese Reader*."

c Translate by means of the passive: Ten *mon* are lost to the Empire,

d This story is well known in Japan. It is found, for instance, in *Edo Meisho Zue* (p. 281f). The hero is better known now by the name Ōta Dōkwan. In ancient times a man might have besides the family name two or three names: a true name (*nanori*), a popular name (*tsū-shō*) and perhaps still another. Since the Restoration it has become the rule to have only one name. In 1456 Ōta Dōkwan founded on the present site of Tōkyō a fortress, which was later transformed by Ieyasu into the great castle of Edo.

e For the honorific inflection of the verbs see p. 268.

mono mo iwazu ni obu ye haitte shimaimash'ta. Ōta wa nan no koto da ka wakaranai kara, taisō okotte kaette kinju no mono ni sono koto wo hanasaremash'ta. Soko de hitori no kerai ga iu no ni, "Sore wa koka ni,"<sup>a</sup>

'Nanae yae hana wa sakedomo yamabuki no

MI NO hitotsu dani naki zo wabishiki'<sup>b</sup>

to arimas'kara, MINO ga nakute ainiku des'to iu tsumori de gozaimashō" to kotaemash'ta. Ōta wa sore wo kiite naruhodo to gaten ga ikare jibun no mugaku wo hajite sore kara taisō benkyō sh'te nochi ni wa yūmei no utayomi ni narimash'ta.

## Ikkyū no Tonchi

Ikkyū ga<sup>c</sup> kodomo no toki ni Daitokuji<sup>d</sup> de gakumon wo sh'te imash'ta. Aru hi sensei ga yoso kara<sup>e</sup> kwashi wo moraimash'ta. Ikkyū wa jibun ni mo sore wo wakete kuresō na mono da to omotte ita keredomo, morau koto ga dekinasen desh'ta. Sore de waza to tobokete sensei ni, "Sono hako no uchi ni nani ga arimas'ka" to tazunemash'ta. Sensei wa, "Sore wa doku da kara, taberu koto wa naran" to iikikasesh'ta. Sono yokujitsu sensei no soto ye deta ato de Ikkyū wa sono kwashi wo mina tabete shimatte soko ni aru sensei no daiji na hanaike wo kowash'te okimash'ta. Sensei wa kaette kite odorote, "Kono hanaike wo dare ga kowash'ta ka. Shōjiki ni kakujō sureba yurush'te yaru ga, sa mo nakuba kikanai zo" to iimas' to, Ikkyū wa buruburu shi nagara dete kite, "Watakushi ga sosō de sono hanaike wo kowashimash'ta. Sensei ni mōshiwake ga gozaimasen kara, shinō to onoinash'te, saiwai soko ni arimash'ta doku wo tabete shimaimash'ta. Shikashi mada shinemasen kara, mada hoka ni doku ga arimas'nara, chōdai itash'tō gozaimas'" to kotaemash'ta.

a Connect koka ni with arimasu (=kaite arimasu).

b This poem is by Prince Kaneaki and is found in the collection called *Gō-shū-i-shū* the "Second Gleaning" (go later, shū=hirou, i=nokori, shū=atsumeru). The meaning is: Yamabuki wa hana ga yae ni saku keredomo, mi ga hitotsu mo nai no ga zannen desu. Nanae yae (p. 64) sevenfold and eightfold, of the double blossoms (compare yae-zakuwa double cherry blossoms); sakedomo =saku keredomo (p. 265d); zo after naki (=nai) is emphatic; wabishiki sad (variant reading kanashiki).

c Ikkyū, a priest of the XV. Century, is noted for his ready wit and is the hero of many interesting tales.

d A Buddhist temple in Kyōto.

e Yoso kara from some place or other, from some one.



*Mata Ikkyū ga kyaku no mae ni deta toki kyaku ga tawamure ni tsuitate no tora uo yubizash'te,*<sup>a</sup> "Omae wa genki da ga, ano tora wo ts'kamaete go ran"<sup>b</sup> to *Ikkyū ni mōshimash'ta. Ikkyū wa sugu ni tatte tora no hō ye muki te wo hirogete, "Dzō, anata oidash'te kudasai" to mōshimash'ta.*

#### *Ikkyū no Mondō*

*Ikkyū oshō ga Hitachi no Kashima<sup>c</sup> no miya ye saukei wo sareta to'i ni tochū no mori no kage kara mi no take shichi shaku bakari no aru yamabushi ga dete mairimash'te oshō ni totsuzen, "Buppō wa ika ni"<sup>d</sup> to tazunemash'ta. Oshō wa sugu ni kotaete, "Mune ni ari" to mōsaremash'ta. Tokoro ga, yamabushi wa surari to katana wo nuite, "Sore nara mune wo watte miyō"<sup>e</sup> to itte kirikakarimash'ta. Oshō wa s'koshi mo sawagazu kogoe de,*

*"Harugoto ni naru ya Yoshino no yamazakura ki wo warite miyo hana no arika wo"<sup>e</sup> to iu koka wo tonaeraremash'ta. Yamabushi wa kore wo kiite ōi ni kanjimash'te sugu ni katana wo saya ni osame do'bo to mo naku nigete shimaimash'ta.<sup>f</sup>*

#### *Taishoku no Hanashi*

*Aru hi hitori no horaf'ki ga<sup>g</sup> Ikkyū ni mukatte, "Watakushi wa konaida mochi wo itto tabemash'ta; amari hara ga harimash'ta kara, hara wo hes'tame ni karwa no fuchi wo aruite<sup>h</sup> orimash'ta. Sō suru to, soko ni fune ga issō tsunaide*

a Pointing with a finger. For *tsuitate* see p. 36ta. On this screen was painted a tiger.

b This is more familiar than *go ran nasai*. So also *oide nasai* may be abbreviated to *oide*.

c A famous Shintō shrine. For Hitachi see p. 389a.

d *Ika ni=ika ni arimasu ka, ni* being equivalent to *de* in the colloquial: *mune ni ari=mune no naka ni arimasu*. The dialogue is after the classical style.

e According to the usual order *Yoshino no yamazakura* would stand before *harugoto ni saku, miyo*, after *arika wo*. *Ya*=an exclamation mark; *warite*=the colloquial *watte*, with *ari-ka* compare *sumi-ka* dwelling place. The simple blossoms of the cherry trees (*yama-sakura*) of Yoshino in Yamato are famous all over Japan.

f The end of the tale has been altered somewhat. According to the original Japanese text, the hermit is metamorphosed into a wood sprite.

g From *hōra wo fuku* blow a conch, i. e., blow one's horn, brag.

h For *fuchi wo aruku* and *ma'subari a'wo aruku* see p. 362.

arimash'ta kara, sore wo motte kawa no mizu wo sukkari kaedashimash'ta" to jimangao wo sh'te hanashimash'ta. Ikkyū wa sore wo kiite majime na kao de kotaemas'ni wa, "Watakushi no tomodachi ni yamabushi ga hitori arimash'ta ga, sono yamabushi mo anata no yō ni taishoku wo suru hito de, aru hi mochi wo ni to kuimash'ta. Sore de hara ga hatku karu, haragonashi ni matsubara wo aruite imash'ta. S'koshi ashi ga kutabireta kara, matsu no taiboku wo ippon hikinnuite sono ue ni koshi wo kakete yasunde iru to, chiisai hebi ga kite ōki na kaeru wo nonde kurushinde ita ga, yagate sono waki ni aru minarenu<sup>a</sup> kusa wo kutta tokoro ga, tachimachi konarete shimaimash'ta. Yamabushi wa sore wo mite, 'Kore wa ii hara wo herasu kusa<sup>b</sup> da' to omotte hebi no mane wo sh'te sore wo taberu to, sore wa hito mo kaeru no yō ni tokeru<sup>c</sup> kusa desh'ta kara, yamabushi wa tachimachi tokete shimatte ato ni wa ni to no mochi ga yamabushi no shōzoku no mama de nokorimash'ta" to mōshimash'ta.<sup>d</sup> Horaf'ki wa sono kotue ni hajite f'tatabi Ikkyū no tokoro ye kaodashi wo shimasenda sō des'.

## Sorori Shinzaemon

Sorori Shinzaemon<sup>e</sup> to iu hito ga Hideyoshi kō no goten ye dete hanashimas'ni wa: "Watakushi ga Kiyomizu Kwannon<sup>f</sup> ye mairimash'tara, Otowa no taki de mi no take<sup>g</sup> ichi jō go rok'shaku hodo aru bakemono ni deaimash'ta. Suru to, sono bakemono ga ōki na kuchi wo aite (=akete) watakushi wo nomō to itashimash'ta kara, watakushi wa bakemono ni, 'Omae wa taisō ōkii ga, chiisaku bakeru koto wa dekinai ka'to iimash'ta. Sō itashimash'tara, bakemono wa, 'Ikura de mo chiisaku bakete miseyō'to mōshimash'ta kara, 'Sonnara umeboshi ni natte miserō'to iimash'ta. Soko de bakemono wa chiisa na umeboshi ni natte hisa no mae ni korogete mairimash'ta kara, watakushi wa sore wo totte hitokuchi ni nonde shimaimash'ta.

- a Such as one is not accustomed to see, rare, peculiar.  
 b *ki* and *hara wo herasu* are both attributive (p. 423, t).  
 c *Tokeru* melt may be rendered here "evaporate" or "vanish."  
 d The subject of *mōshimashita* is *Ikkyū*, at the beginning of the story.  
 e Sorori Shinzaemon, an official attached to Hideyoshi, (1536...1598), noted for his shrewd sayings and wise counsels.  
 f A famous temple in Kyōto. In the vicinity there is a waterfall called *Otowa*.  
 g *Mi no take* length of body. The particle *ga* is understood.

*Sore giri,*<sup>a</sup> *bakemono wa denaku narimash'ta.*" *Kono hanashi wa*<sup>b</sup> *Hideyoshi kō ga tenka no kwambaku*<sup>c</sup> *de ari nagaru kwattatsu na hito yue, tomo mo tsurezu ni hitori de yoru so'ō ni deru koto ga arimash'ta kara, moshi*<sup>d</sup> *teki no mono ni de mo deatte korosareru yō na koto no nai yō ni chūi wo shikakereba naranai to isameta no de arimas'.* *Hideyoshi no ikioi wa chōdo ōki na bakemono no yō na mono des'keredo, tada hitori de soto ye dete wa, chiisa na umeboshi dōyō ni dare ni de mo korosarete shimau to iu kokoro (koto) wo omoshiroku tatoete mōsh'ta no de arimas'.*

#### Katō Kiyomasa

*Hideyoshi kō wa taihen chunoyu ga s'ki de atta kara, shodaishō no uchi ni wa*<sup>e</sup> *tabitabi sono seki ni makēkareru no de shizen sono shiki wo kuwash'ku kokoroete oru mono ga ō gozaimash'ta.* *Hitori Katō Kiyomasa*<sup>f</sup> *nomi wa cha wo konominasen desh'ta kara, amari sono seki ni deta koto ga arimasen desh'ta.* *Tokoro ga, aru hi Hideyoshi kō kara wazawaza manekareta no de yamuwoezu cha no kwai ni demash'ta.* *Yagate Katō wa,*<sup>g</sup> *dō suru mono yara, cha no nomikata wo shiranai no de, chawan wo motte gūgūgū sh'te imas'to.* *Hideyoshi kō wa,* "Katō! *hayaku noude chawan wo mawase*<sup>h</sup> *to mōsaremash'ta.* *Soko de Kiyomasa wa hitokuchi ni*<sup>i</sup> *cha wo nomikosh'te yubi de chawan wo guruguru mawashimash'ta.*<sup>i</sup>

a *Sore giri* only that and no more; i. e., that was the end of the ghost.

b *Kono hanashi wa* has for its predicate *isameta no de arimasu*: This story was [intended as] a warning to the effect that.....

c For *kwambaku* (*kwampaku*) see p. 78a.

d *Moshi* is to be construed with *nai yō ni*: translate: "lest perchance."

e *Shodaishō*, from *shō* many (p. 1) and *tai-shō* general; we may translate, "his generals." *No uchi ni wa* is to be construed with *ō gozaimashita*.

f One of the two generals who commanded the expedition to Korea at the end of the XVI. Century.

g In the course of a narrative either the family name or the personal name may stand alone. Here Kiyomasa also would be correct. In the ceremony of *koi cha* it is the custom to take only a sip and then pass the cup along (*mawasu*). For the distinction between *koi cha* and *usucha* see p. 106.

h At one gulp.

i He spun it (*mawasu*), like a top.

## Tsuru no Suimono

*Mukashi Tokugawa no hatamoto<sup>a</sup> ni Ōkubo Hikosaemon to iu rikō na hito ga arimash' ta ga, kono hito wa chūgi to omoeba donna ni iinikui<sup>b</sup> koto de mo kamawazu shōgun ni mōshiage o kami no heigai wo tamenaoshima<sup>h</sup> ta kara, dare de mo Ōkubo no jiji to ieba kowagaranai mono wa arimasen desh' ta. Aru toki shōgunke ni tsuru no suimono no go chisō ga<sup>c</sup> arimash' te, go tairō ya go rōjū wo<sup>d</sup> kajime Ōkubo sono hoka amata no hatamoto ga go shōtai ni azukarimash' ta. Ōkubo wa amari-jōseki no hito de nakattu mono des' kara, Ōkubo no suimono ni wa mawarikaneta to miete tsuru no niku wa hito kire mo haitte inaide na bakari haitte imash' ta. Ōkubo wa sore wo fushin ni omoi tameshi ni ippai kaete<sup>e</sup> mimash' ta ga, yahari tsuru no niku wa hito kire mo arimasen desh' ta. Sore de (o) ryōriban no fusei na koto ga wakarimash' ta. Sono ban wa sono mama<sup>f</sup> kaette kite, yokujitsu ni naru to, kerai ni iits' ke: e na wo tak' san kago ni ire tomo ni motase go ten ni mairimash' te annai wo koimash' ta. Sono toki shōgun wa ni san no (go) kinju to niwasaki no yuki wo nagamete irassharu tokoro desh' ta ga, Ōkubo no koto yue<sup>g</sup> sassoku, "Kochira ye mairi" to o yurushi ga arimash' ta. Ōkubo wa magatta koshi de tokko-tokko aruite shōgun no irassharu tsugi no ma no engawa no tokoro made susunde uyayuyash' ku ryōte wo tsuite<sup>h</sup> go kigen wo ukagaimash' ta. Shōgun wa Ōkubo ga rōtai de ari nagara*

a *Hata-moto* (lit. under the banner) were immediate vassals of the Shōgun who held fiefs yielding from 300 to 10,000 *koku* of rice. The *hatamoto* of higher rank had immediate access to the Shōgun and held important offices. One of these was *Ōkubo Hikosaemon*, of whom various quaint stories are told. For his biography see *Ōkubo Ichidaiki*.

b *Ii-nikui* unpleasant to say.

c The meat of the crane is highly prized. *Shōgunke ni* at the Shōgun's palace.

d The *go rō-jū* (lit. elders' assembly) were five or six daimyō who were entrusted with the government of the country, like the present ministers of state. At times, as, for example, during the reigns of the fifth Shōguns of the Tokugawa family, the *go rō-jū* had a president called *go tai rō* (lit. great elder).

e He had them bring him another bowl.

f In that condition, i. e., without uttering a word of complaint. See below: *sono mama sashidashimashita*.

g Seeing it was *Ōkubo*.

h Kept both hands on the floor in a polite attitude, as is the custom when exchanging salutations in the house.

yuki ni mo kamawazu sanden sh'ta no wo kidoku ni oboshimesare koto ni o kotoba wo yawaragerarete, "Jijii, sazo sanukatta de arō. Yoku kite kureta. Chikaku yore, chikaku yore; yurus', yurus'" to ōseraremask'ta. Soko de Ōkubo wa na wo susumete sakuya no go chisō no o rei wo<sup>a</sup> nobe, mata o niwa no nagame no ii koto ya sono hoka yomoyama no hanashi wo mōshiageto orimas'to, shōgun wa sasuga no<sup>b</sup> meikun de iraseraremas'kara, Ōkubo ni mukai. "Jijii, kyō wa betsu ni nani ka yō ga atte kita no ka;<sup>c</sup> moshi yō ga areba, enryō naku hayaku itta ga ii" to ōseraremask'ta. Ōkubo wa, "Sayō de gozaimas', jijii<sup>d</sup> kyō wa betsu ni tai sh'ta yō mo gozaimasen ga, saiwai ōki na tsuru ga te ni irimash'ta kara, sonran ni sonaetō zanjimash'te<sup>e</sup> wazawaza jisan ts'kamatsurimash'ta. Go shōno asobash'te kudasarimasureba, arigatai shiatwase ni zanjimas'"<sup>f</sup> to mōshi nagara na wo ireta hako wo sono mama sashidashimash'ta. Shōgun ga kinju no hito ni sono f'ta wo akesasete go ran ni narimas'to, tsuru de wa nakute tada ōki na na bakari hatte orimash'ta. Soko de shōgun wa hen ni oboshimesarete, "Jijii, sochi wa ima tsuru da to itta ga, sore wa tsuru de wa naku na to mōsu mono de wa nai ka" to ōseraremask'ta. Ōkubo wa o kotae wo sh'te, "Sayō de gozaimas'; shikashi goten de wa na no koto wo tsuru to mōs'ka to zanjimas'. Sakuya, 'Tsuru no suimono wo kudasaru yue, sanjō seyo' to (no) ōse ga gozaimash'ta kara, ukagaimash'te o suimono wo chōdai itashimash'ta ga, sono o suimono ni wa tsuru no niku wa hito kire mo nakute tada na bakari de gozaimash'ta. Jijii mo hen ni omoimash'te ippai kaete itadakimash'ta ga, yahari tsuru wa hito kire mo naku mae no yō ni na bakari de gozaimash'ta kara, sate goten de wa na no koto wo tsuru to mōs'koto ka to zanjimash'ta" to mōshiagemash'ta.

a *Sakuya no go chisō no o rei* thanks for the feast of the previous evening.

b For *sasuga* see p. 323b.

c *Kita no ka* is familiar for *oide nasaimashita ka*.

d Ōkubo speaks of himself as *jijii*.

e *Son ran ni sonaeru* is very formal for *niseru* and means here to offer as a gift (*son=tattoi* honorable, *ran* look—in *go ran*). Notice the very respectful language employed by Ōkubo in speaking to the Shōgun.

f Another expression indicative of profound respect: if your Highness deigns to accept it (*shō=warau* laugh, i. e. laugh disdainfully, *nō=uketaru* receive).

*Shōgun wa Ōkubo no iu koto wo mottomo no koto to oboshimesarete sassoku sakuya no ryōriban no mono wo gimini seraremas'ta, o maneki ni azukatta hito ga amari ōkatta yue, Ōkubo no suimono ni wa tsuru no niku ga mattaku yukiwataranakatta<sup>a</sup> ko'o ga wakarimash'ta kara, sono ryōriban no kashira wa sassoku yaku wo go men ni natte hōchiku saremash'ta.*

---

<sup>a</sup> *Yuki-wataru* extend to details (compare *yuki-todoku*). Here *yukiwataranakatta* means did not go around, did not reach, in serving the supper (compare *mawari-kaneru* above).

YUME NO GOKE<sup>a</sup>

"Tanoshimi wa haru no sakura ni aki no ts'ki  
fufu naka yoku san do kuu meshi"<sup>b</sup>

Go fufu naka no yoi to iu no wa makoto ni kekkō de gozaimas'ga, shikashi, dōmo, go fujin no o yakimochi wa tsutsushimanakereba narimasen. Kono o yakimochi ni tsuite wa zuibun o hanashinikui koto ga ikura mo gozaimas'.

Sai:<sup>c</sup> Danna sama wa, mā, taihen ni yoku netsuite irassharu koto! Oya, nani ka, unasarete..... moshi, danna, anata dō nas'ita ka. O mebame ni narimasen ka. O kaze wo meshimas'yo. Danna, danna!

Otto: Ō, ā, dōmo, sukkari nete shimatta.

Sai: Nan des'ka. Taihen ni negoto wo osshaimash'ta. Ano ne, "Makoto ni naganaga o kokoroyas'ku shimash'ta ga, izure ni san nichu no uchi ni o me ni kakarimas'" to osshaimash'ta ga, nan no yume wo go ran nasaimash'ta ka.

Otto: Nani, sonna koto wo ii ya shinai.

Sai: Iie, watakushi wa chanto kikimash'ta.

Otto: Nani, chōnai no mujin ni itta<sup>d</sup> kaerigake ni aisais'wo sh'ta yume wo mita n' da yo.

Sai: Sore wa ikemasen; mujin no o kaeri ni "Nagaraku o kokoroyas'ku itashimash'ta" to iu no wa okashii jā gozaimasen ka. Fufu no naka de kakus'to iu no wa dō iu wake de gozaimas'.

Otto: Mattaku sono yume ni chigai nai kara, sh'kata ga nai.

Sai: Sh'kata ga nai to osshatte mo..... yō gozaimas'. Anata o kakushi nasainashi! Kitto anata dare ka ii hito ga

a The "Dream Widom," by En-yū. This is a good example of the stories told by *hanashika* in the amusement-halls called *yose*, and will give the student some idea of the language used in families of a certain class.

b A humorous poem (*kyō-ka*). There are three great joys, namely, cherry blossoms, the autumn moon and the daily life of a happy wedded pair.

c The situation is: A recently married young shopkeeper has been taking a nap on the floor and has been talking in his sleep. His wife (*sai*) overhearing what he says, is stirred to jealousy.

d Certain men in the *chō* (p. 95e) have formed an organization called *mu-jin* (literally: inexhaustible) or *mu-jin-kō*. Each member pays a certain sum monthly and every month the proceeds are given to one member, the order of the distribution determined by lot. The husband pretends that the words which his wife has heard were spoken to one of his men friends as he was parting from him.

*dekite sono yume wo go ran nas'tta n' deshō. O to'san wa watashi no yō na mono de mo fubin to omotte kudas'tte s'ki na sake da ga, san nen kinjiru kara, dozō, shimbō wo sh'te kure to anata ni o tanomi ni natta de wa arimasen ka.<sup>a</sup> Sore wo anata wa nan to mo oboshimesazu ni nani ka mata onna no koto de mo omotte irassharu kara, sono yume wo go ran nas'tta n' deshō.*

*Otto: Ahā, dōmo, koits'wa yowatta ne. Nani ka sore wa machigai darō.*

*Sai: Iie, tash'ka ni osshaimash'ta. O Chō mo O Hana mo kiite ita nei.*

*Otto: Dōmo, osoreitta ne. Iya, sonnara iu ga, omae, yume da kara, okotcha ikenai yo.*

*Sai: Anata ga hontō no koto wo osshatte kudasareba, nan de watashi ga okoru mono des'ka.*

*Otto: Sore jā hana's'ga, jits'wa ne, Ōiso no kaisuiyoku ye<sup>b</sup> itta yume wo mita no sa. Yume to iu mono wa myō na mon'de tonarizash'ki ni oru onna wa toshigoro ni jū go roku no oisu na onna de..... omae okotchā ikenai, okoru to, hanashi ga dekinai, yume da kara, ne..... sore kara, mā, kokoroyas'ku natte ore wa kaerō to iu to, sono onno mo yappari Tōkei ni kaeru to iu kara, ni tō no kisha no fujinshitsu ni futari de notta.*

*Sai: Ara, mā, dōmo, anata kesh'karan'de wa arimasen ka. Dai ichi fujinshitsu de wa tabako wo nomu koto ga dekinakutte ikenai to kanete anata osshatte iru jā arimasen ka.*

*Otto: Mā, sa, sore ga yume nan da kara, sō muki ni natte okotchā ikenai. Sore kara tsuide ni Enoshima ye ikō to iu no de zutto Enoshima ye itte.....*

*Sai: Hontō ni anata wa uchi no koto mo omowanai de kiraku jā arimasen ka.*

*Otto: Iya, sa, yume da yo. Suru to, kondo Yokos'ka ye iku koto ni natta.*

*Sai: Yokos'ka ye anata o hitori de irasshaimash'ta ka.*

*Otto: Sore ga kondo Hashidategō<sup>c</sup> to iu shinzōsen no shin-suish'ki ga aru no de kippu wo moratta kura, dekakeyō to omou*

a The father of the young man, knowing the weaknesses of his son and desiring to influence him to mend his ways, in order that he may bring no distress to his wife, has vowed to abstain from *sake*, of which he himself is very fond, for three years.

b *Oiso*, a well known bathing resort on the Tōkaidō.

c A man-of-war named Hashidate.



to, sono onna mo issko ni ikō to iu kara, mā, issko ni itte shinsui-sh'ki wo mita ga, nakanaka ii mono da nā. Fune ga zutto deru toki ni, gak'tai ga ii kokoromochi ni ongaku wo sō suru. Makoto ni tsutsuga naku fune wa umi ye deru. Kore wo mite kaerigake ni Yokohama de yōtashi wo sh'te sōre kara kiska ni notte kaerō to suru to, sono onna ga s'teishon de matte orimas' to itte ittō no machiai de ichi jikan bakari matte ite kureta.

Sai: Namaiki na onna des'ne; anata no yō wo tas'aida matte iru nante.

Otto: Yume da kara, sh'kata ga nai. Sore kara Yokohama kara Shimbashi ye kuru to, sono onna ga "Watashi no taku wa jiki Kobikichō ku chome no shimmichi de gozaimas'kara, zeki o tachiyori wo negaimas'" to iu kara, issko ni itta tokoro ga, chot-to ii uchi da yo. Soko no uchi wa ni ken<sup>a</sup> ni ken kan no shimat-ta kura mo ari, nakaniwa mo ni jū tsubo bakari atte, oku ga jū jō ni hachi jō ni roku jō. Hanare ga atte chashitsu nado mo ari, nakanaka otsu na sumai yo.<sup>a</sup> Ore ga yoru to, wasawaza tai sh'ta go chisō, sake nado wa Masamune ga ippon ts'kete ari,<sup>b</sup> cha ga s'ki to miete dōgu ga yoku totonotte ite bonsai mo tak'san aru kara, dōmo, kono o dōgu ya bonsai wo oyaji ni misetō gozaimas' to iu to, mukō de wa sh'kiri ni teats'ku sh'te, dōzo, kaette kureru na to iu no ni, izure kinjitsu o me ni kakarimas' to itte kaette kita tokoro wo, omae ni okosareta n' da ga, marumaru yume no koto de ore ga kontō, ni itta wake ja nai kara, shimpai wo shi nasanna.

Sai: Ara, mā, kontō ni hidoi ja arimasen ka. Nandatte anata sono uchi ye ikimash'ta. Ammari des'yo. Kitto fufuyak'-soku ka nan ka nasatta n' deshō.

Otto: Baka na koto wo ii nasanna; yume da yo.

Sai: Tatōe yume de mo kokoro ni sō iu koto wo omotte iras-sharu kara, yume ni miru n' des'. Kono koto wo otot'san ni mōshiyagete go shinruijū ye furemawashimas'kara, sō omotte oide nasai. Ei, kuyashii.

Otto: Kore, sa, naitcha komaru yo. Yume da no ni, sō hara wo tatete naichā shiyō ga nai.

Sai: Sonnara nan de anata kakoinono nanzo o oki nasaimash'ta?

<sup>a</sup> *Shimatta* here means small: the storehouse measured 12 feet by 15. The *naka-niwa*, a court surrounded by rooms, is rather large. A *hanare*, separated room, is either a little house standing apart or a room connected with the end of the house. A *cha-shitsu* is a special room for the ceremony of *chanoyu*.

<sup>b</sup> *Tsukete ari*=zen ni nosele atta. *Masamune* designates the best *sake*, said to be named after Okazaki Masamune, a famous sword-smith.

Otto: *Oki ya shinai. Yume da yo.*

Sai: *Iie, ikemasen.*

Otto: *Mittomonai yo. - Yume wo hontō ni sarecha komaru.<sup>a</sup>*

Sai: *Ā, watak' sha hontō ni kuchioshū gozaimas'. Kore kara sono onna no tokoro ye itte te wo kitte moraimas'.<sup>b</sup>*

Otto: *Sonna koto wo itte mo yume da kara, doko da ka, wakaranai yo.*

Sai: *Tōkyōjū guruguru matwarimas'. O Chō ya, gonimbiki<sup>c</sup> no kuruma wo<sup>c</sup> yonde kite o kure.*

"*Bakabakashii na*" *to wakadanna mo komatte imas' tokoro ye o tof'san ga kaette kite.*

Chichi: *Mata kenkwa ka.*

Sai: *O tof'san, irasshaimashi!*

Chichi: *Nan da, bakabakashii fufugenkwa wa inu mo kuwanai.<sup>d</sup> Yoi kagen ni suru ga yoi. Mata nani ka yome ni shimpai wo keketa n' darō.*

Otto: *O tof'san, watakushi wa shimpai mo nani mo kakeyā shimasen.*

Chichi: *Sore datte nan da kono sawagi wa..... yome ga naite sawaideru jā nai ka.*

Sai: *Danna ga kakoimono wo okimash'ta.*

Chichi: *Nani! Kakoimono..... toudemonai yatsu da. Kore, segare! Yōku kike! Tenaē ga dōraku wo sh'te kono yome ni shimpai wo kakeru no ga kinodoku da kara, ore ga s'ki na sake wo san nen tatte kisama wo maningen ni shiyō to omou ni, kisama wa sore wo nan to kokoroete kakoimono wo oku ka. Sonna yatsu da kara, anshin wo sh'te shindai ga yuzurarenai n' da.<sup>e</sup> Doko ye kakoimono wo oita. Ore ga itte sugu ni te wo kitte kite yaru. Doko da, uchi wa .....*

Otto: *O tof'san, makoto ni, dōmo, osoreirimash'ta nā. Yume nan de.*

Chichi: *Nani, yume da to iu no ka.*

Otto: *Hei, watakushi ga sono yume wo mita bakari da no ni, nandemo kokoro ni omotteru kara, yume ni miru n' darō kara, Tōkyōjū atooshits'ki no kuruma de garagara norimawas' to iu n' des' ga, dōmo, komarimas'.*

a It is distressing to have my dream made an actuality.

b *Te wo kiru* sever the relation.

c A riksha with five coolies is of course an exaggeration.

d A proverb. A quarrel between husband and wife is such poor stuff that not even a dog will eat it.

e *Anshin wo shite* is governed by the negative: I can't with ease of mind transfer my property to you.

*Chichi*: Um', sore wa komaru; dōmo, omae bakabakashii ja nai ka. Segare wa yume da to itte oru ja nai ka

*Sai*: Iie, anata made sonna koto wo osshaimas'ga, kokoro ni nai koto wa yume ni mimasen. Wakadanna wa kitto watakushi wo dasō to iu koto wo osshatta ni chigai nai; mukō no onna mo onna des'. Hito no danna same wo nusumitorō to sh'te chik'shō.....

*Chichi*: Kore, kore, sonna koto wo itte wa komaru; mise no mono ni kikoete mo gwaibun ga warui.<sup>a</sup>

*Sai*: Nandemo sono onna no te wo kitte kudasaranakereba, watakushi wa ido ye tobikonde shinde wakadanna ni totts'kimas'.

*Otto*: Sonna koto wo sarechā taihen da.

*Chichi*: Yoshi, yoshi. Sonnara ore ga kore kara itte te wo kitte kite yaru. Segare, uchi wo shitteru ka.

*Otto*: Yume da kara, tada mōrō to sh'te Kobikichō no yō na kokoromochi mo sureba, Negishi no yō na ki mo suru shi; mata Honchōdōri no yō ni mo omou n' de.<sup>b</sup>

*Chichi*: Sore wa ikan nā.

*Sai*: O to! san, dōzo, hayaku te wo kitte kite!

*Chichi*: Tonda meiwaku na hanashi da. Sh'kata ga nai. Yume no koto da kara, ore mo nete yume de kotowari ni ikō. Dōka, makura wo motte ki na? *A*, bakabakashii onna to iu mono wa tsumaran'koto wo ki ni suru mono da nā, Ima ore ga hitoneiri<sup>c</sup> nete yume de pittari kotowatte kite yaru kara, shimpai shi nasanna! Sā, s'koski shizuka ni shi na yo! Neru n' da kara,

*Otto*: O to! san, dōmo, o kinodoku sama.

*Chichi*: Tondemonai koto wo shoikonda; kore, shizuka ni shinai ka.

*Sai*: Sā, hayaku itte kudasaimashi yo!

*Chichi*: Sawagi nasanna! Shizuka ni shi na yo!

*Sai*: Hayaku itte kudasai! Watakushi wa kuyashū gozamas'!

*Chichi*: Shizuka ni shi na, shizuka ni shi na!

*Sai*: *A*, kuyashii.

*Chichi*: Shizuka ni, shizuka ni..... gōgō.

*Sai*: Oya, mō oyotta yo!

*Chichi*: Gōgō.

<sup>a</sup> If the clerks in the shop hear this, people will talk and our reputation will suffer.

<sup>b</sup> The three places that the son names are in entirely different sections of the city.

<sup>c</sup> *Hitoneiri* a nap.

*Sai: Itte irasshaimashi!*<sup>a</sup> *Choito O Hana! O tot'san wa go jōbu da kara, nets'ki no hayai koto!*

*Hana: Ara, munyamunya itte irasshaimas'yo. Kitto kuruma no ne ka nani ka ts'kete oide nasaru n' des yo.*

*Chichi: Ā, Kobikichō ku chōme no Shimmichi to iu to, kokora darō. Koko ga, nani da ka, hanashi no yō na uchi da na. Ni ken ni ni ken han de kura ga atte niwa no yōs'ga, dōmo, sōrashii, O jochū, chotto mono ga ukagaitō gozaimas'.*

*Onna: Nan de gozaimas'.*

*Chichi: Kono go kimpēni ni Ōiso no kaisuiyoku ye oide ni natta go fujin no o taku..... to itte mo o wakari ni wa narimas'-mai ga.....*

*Onna: Ā, taku de gozaimas'ga..... anata wa.....*

*Chichi: Watak'shi wa Honchō kara mairimash'ta ga.....*

*Onna: Ā, Fukuzumi no ōdanna<sup>b</sup> de gozaimas'ka. Mā, yoku oide nasaimash'ta. Anata no go shisoku sama ni Ōiso de kochira no go shinzō ga taihen ni o sewa wo itadaita sō des'. Go shin san, go shin san! Honchō no danna sama no o tot'san ga irasshaimash'ta.*

*Shu:<sup>c</sup> Mā, mā, ureshii koto! Dōzo, kochira ye!*

*Chichi: Kore wa, dōmo, kekkō na o sumai de..... doko kara doko made ikitodoita tokoro wa makoto ni osoreirimash'ta.*

*Shu: Mā, dōmo, o tot'san! Kochira ye..... ano, nan de gozaimas', iroiro Ōiso de wakadanna ni go yakkai ni natte kontō ni fushigi na go en da to iu no de, uchi ye kaette maitte mo shijū o uwasa bakari itash'te orimas'no. O kage sama de Enoshima wo kembutsu shi, Yokos'ka de Hashidategō to iu fune no shinsuisk'ki wo haiken sh'te taihen ni hoyō wo itashimash'ta ga, dōmo, wakadanna no o yasashii koto! Go yōs'no ii koto! Donna ni oyago sama wa go yōs'ga ii darō to onnadomo to mōsh'te orimash'ta ga, kontō ni ikiutsushi des'nei.*

*Chichi: Segare ga iroiro o sewa ni natta sō de..... mā, ōyorokobi de nā. Tokoro ga, sono segare ni wa kanai ga gozaimash'te kanai ga, hei..... anata fukai naka ni de mo.....*

a Good bye!

b Ō-danna the elder master of the house, as contrasted with waka-danna.

c Shu=*shu-jin* the mistress of the house, a young widow.

*iya..... sonna baku na koto wa ari wa sen ga, anata ga o hitor. de irassharu koto wo kiite kanai ga tsumaranai shimpai wo sh'le ..... nani, sonna koto wa aru wake no mono de wa nai ga, shikashi ki no semai onna de..... akā..... nyōbo no yaku kodo teishu mote mo sezu de<sup>a</sup> ..... wakai mono yue, ki ni suru mo nuri no nai tokoro de, dōzo, are ni wa kanai ga gozaimas'kara, hitotsu sono tokoro wo o fukumi nas'tte kudasaru yō ni negaimas.'*

*Shu: Ara, mā, o tof'san, watakushi wa sonna koto nado wa ari yā shimasen yo. Watakushi mo kō yatte ite betsu ni shinrui to iu mono mo gozaimasende, s'koshi bakari zaisan ga arimas' kara, shikarubeki otoko ga attara, kwaitai no koto wo tanonde ichi nen ni ichi do zutsu mo mimawatte itadaite uchi no shimari wo ts'kete itadakō to onotte otta tokoro ga, wakadanna ni o me ni kakarimash'te, a, kō iu go shinsetsu na o kata ni uchi wo o makase mōsh'tara, watakushi mo kontō ni anskin darō to onnagokoro ni omotta tokoro kara fukusō naku o hanashi wo sh'le makoto ni shitsurei wo itashimash'ta. Ano, o tof'san wa taiken ni o chazuki de kottō ga taisō o s'ki da sō de irasshaimas'nei. Mā, dōzo, konnichi wa go yukkuri to nas'tte !*

*To, kore kara o cha wo ippuku das'. Chōdo Masamune no kuchi wo akeru tokoro de atta kara.*

*Shu: Hayaku go sen wo ! O tof'san, dōzo, hitokuchi !*

*Chichi: Iie, watakushi wa go shu no tokoro wa shisai atte<sup>b</sup> s'koshi mo itadakimasen kara.*

*Shu: Sonna koto wo ossharazu ni.*

*Chichi: Iie, dōka, go shu wa o azuke ni itashimas'.<sup>c</sup> Sore de wa kore de go men wo kōmurimas'.*

*Shu: Mā, o tof'san, mā, ii jā arimasen'ka<sup>d</sup> ..... Sō des'ka. Dōzo, mata kinjitsu zehi..... wakadanna mo, dōzo, ichi nen ni ichi do de mo yoroshū gozaimas'kara.*

*Chichi: Hai, kitto yokoshimas'; dōmo, makoto ni izure mata kinjitsu.*

a A poetical reminiscence. The more jealous the wife is, the less is her husband loved by other women. *Moteru* here means to be loved.

b For a certain reason.

c I will leave it with you for the next time (a frequent idiom).

d Can't you stay? The following *sō desu ka* indicates the perception that the visitor has made up his mind to go.

Sai: *Moshi, o tot'san, o tot'san!*

Chichi: *Ō, ā.*

Sai: *O tot'san, o mezame ni narimash'ta ka. Dō nasaimash'ta. Te wo kitte kite kudasaimash'ta ka.*

Chichi: *Ā, yōyaku uchi ga shireta yo.*

Sai: *Ō, shiremach'ta ka.*

Chichi: *Sayō, sono onna ni atta ga, nani, omae no aru no wo shitteru yo; sō sh'te nyōbo nazo ni naru to iu kokoromachi wa nai. Segare ga nen ni ichi do de mo ii kara, kite kudasaru yō ni to itte..... kottōmono wo misete tonda hoyō wo sh'te kimash'ta..... Ā, yume de atta ka. Yume wa gozō no wazurai<sup>a</sup> to iu ga, kitai na mono da na. Shikashi Masamune wa ippon ts'kerareta ga, ā, yume da to sh'tte ottaraba, ano sake wo nomeba yokatta.*

---

<sup>a</sup> A proverb: A dream is a disease of the five organs of the body.

## SHITAKIRI SUZUME<sup>a</sup>

*Mukashi mukashi aru tokoro ni jii san to bā san ga arimash'ta to sa. Jii san wa makoto ni yoi hito de, kanegane ichi wa no susume wo katte orimash'ta ga, motoyori kodomo mo nai koto des'kara, kono susume wōba waga ko mo dōzen ni chō yo hana yo to kawaiigate orimash'ta.*<sup>b</sup>

*Aru hi no koto<sup>c</sup> jii san wa itsu mo no tōri kama to kago wo motte yama ni shiba-kari ni mairimash'ta ga, sono rusu ni bā san wa idobata ye dete sentaku wo hajime, yagate kore ni nori wo ts'keyō to omotte daidokoro ye tori ni kite mimas'to, ko wa ika<sup>d</sup> ni,<sup>a</sup> sekkaku kesa kara koshiraete oita nori ga maru de nakunatte shimatte tada hachi bakari nokotte orimas'.*

*"Oyaoya, mā, sekkaku watashi ga tansei sh'te nite oita mono wo dare ga totte itta no darō. Hontō ni nukurashii yatsu da yo. Da ga, saki kara dare mo kita yōs'ga nai no ni, naku-naru, to wa, dōmo, fushigi da" to kokubi wo katamuke nagara atari wo mimawashimas'to, chōdo mukō ni oite aru kago no naka kara rei no susume ga<sup>e</sup> koe wo kakemash'te, "O bā san! nani wo sagash'te irassharu."*

*"Nani, imashigata made koko ni atta nori ga minna nakunatte shimatta kara, dōmo, fushigi de naranai no sa."<sup>f</sup>*

*"Ā, sono nori des'ka."*

*"Ā."*

*"Sore nara, watakushi ga minna itadaite shimaimash'ta."*

a Tongue-cut Sparrow. A well-known fairy tale. This version, by Mr. Iwaya, is reproduced, with minor alterations, by the kind permission of the *Hakubunkwan*, Tōkyō. The style is not altogether colloquial.

b *Woba=wo wa; waga ko mo dōzen ni=waga ko to dōyō ni*, *no* being frequently used like *to* with *o-aji* or *dō*. In *chō yo hana yo to*, the *yo* is an interjection; the combination may be translated "as if it were a butterfly or a flower."

c *Aru hi no koto=aru hi*. This expression is very common in stories.

d *Ko wa ika ni=kore wa dō shita no ka* has become a parenthetical expression, or interjection, and may be rendered "to his (or her) astonishment."

e *Rei=itsu mo*. Compare *rei no tōri=itsu mo no tōri* as always. Here *rei no susume* might be rendered "the same sparrow of which I have been speaking."

f For such expressions as *fushigi de naranai*, *kimyō de naranai*, etc., see p. 158b.

"E, omae ga tabeta? Ano noti wo?"

"Hei, jitsu wa sonna o daiji na mono to wa zanjimasezu, itsu mo watakushi no e wo irete itadaku ano hachi no naka ni gozaimash'ta kara, tabete mo yoi no ka to omoimash'te, tsui nokorazu itadaite shimaimash'ta ga, dōmo, tonda koto wo itashimash'ta. Dōka, go kamben nas'tte kudasaimashi" to, suzume wa shōjiki des',<sup>a</sup> waga sosō wo tsutsumazu hakujō shi, hitai wo kago no soko ye surits'kete sh'kiri ni ayamaimash'ta ga, ne ga tsumuji no magatte iru bā san,<sup>b</sup> fudan kara kono suzume wo ammarikawai garazu kaette jama ni omotte iru yasaki<sup>c</sup> des' kara, tachimachi me wo muite okoridashi, "Onore nikkui chik-shōme,<sup>d</sup> hito ga sekkaku tansei sh'te koshiraeta nori wo yoku yoku mo minna tabete shimai otta na<sup>e</sup> Sā, dō suru ka usete iro" to, oku kara hasami wo motte kite, nao mo nani nagara wabite iru suzume woba ikinari kago kara ts'kamidashi, "Onore kono sh'ta de name otta ka;" to, muzan ni mo suzume no sh'ta wo nemoto kara putts'ri kiris'te, "Kore de yōyō mune ga suita. Sā, doko ye de mo useyagare"<sup>f</sup> to, sono mama oidash'te shimaimash'ta.

Konna koto no atta to wa yume ni mo shiraga no jii san g yama de shiba wo tak'san katte, kore de kyō no shigoto wa sunda, dorya,<sup>h</sup> hayaku uchi ye kaette kawai suzume no kao wo miyō ka to, nani yori mo sore wo tanoshimi ni<sup>i</sup> sono hi no kuregata

a *Suzume wa shōjiki desu* is parenthetical. We might substitute *da kara* for *desu*.

b *Tsumuji* the whirl of hair on the head; it is proverbial that one whose *tsumuji* is on one side of the head is cross; *ne ga* (*ne* root) modifies the whole, having practically the force of the adverb *ganvrai* naturally.

c *Yasaki* a point of time, junction.

d *Onore=kisama*. *Me* is often added to contemptuous epithets.

e *Yoku mo yoku mo* makes the verb emphatic; how dared you eat it? Compare: *Yokuyoku baka da*. You ARE a fool. *Shimai otta=shimatta*.

f *Use agare=usete shimae* get out—very vulgar.

g *Shiraga* means of course "gray hair," but is intended here to suggest *shiranai*. Such plays on words are very common. With *yume ni mo* compare: *Yume ni mo oboe ga gozaimasen*. I don't know anything at all about it. One may also say *yumeyume*, which, being derived from *yumu* or *imu* shun, meant originally "God forbid," and is now equivalent to *kesshite*.

h *Dorya*, like *dore*, is commonly used as an interjection. It may be translated "now."

i *Tanoshimi ni* with the expectation of enjoying.



isoide waga ya ye kaette mimas'to, dō sh'ta mono ka, kago wa karappo de daiji na suzume wa kage mo miemasen. Jii san wa f'shin ni omoi, "Oi, bā san ya, ano suzume wa doko ye itta" to tazunemas'to, bā san wa shirabakurete, "Doko ye itta ka skirimasen yo." ㊦

"De mo kago no naka ni inai ze"

"Sō des'ka. Sonnara dōkka ye nigeta n' deshō" to, ikkō sumash'ta kao de orimas'kara, jii san wa naosara sekikonde, "Nani, ano narekutte iru suzume ga dō sh'te jibun kara nigeru mono ka. Kore wa nandemo washi no rusu no ma ni omae ga oidash'ta ni sōi nai. Sā, kak'sazu ni ii nasai" to hoshi wo sasareta no de,<sup>a</sup> bā san mo ima wa kakus'ni kak'sarezu, "Jitsu wa omae san no rusu no ma ni watashi ga nite oita daiji na nori wo minna tabete shimatta kara, sh'ta wo kittle oidash'te yarimash'ta" to aritei wo hanash'te kikasasemas'to, jii san wa nagekumai koto ka,<sup>b</sup> "Yareyare, kawaisō ni, tatoi nori wo tabeta kara to itte, taka ga<sup>c</sup> chik'shō no wasa, warugi de sh'ta wake de mo nakarō kara, kannin sh'te yareba ii no ni, sh'ta wo kittle oidas'to wa nasakenai koto wo sh'te kureta. Washi ga sono toki ita naraba, nan to de mo sh'te yurush'te yatta mono wo, washi ga rusu na bakari de tondu sesshō wo sh'te noke-ta.<sup>d</sup> Kore ga nakazu ni orareyō ka"<sup>e</sup> to maru de waga ko ni wakare de mo sh'ta yō ni koe wo mo oshimazu naite orimash'ta ga, yokuyoku nats'kash'ku omotta mono ka, sono yokujitsu wa shigoto mo sotchinoke ni (sh'te) bā san no tomeru mo kikasazu, asa hayaku kara uchi wo dete suzume no yukue wo sagashi ni mairimash'ta.

"Shitakiri suzume! o yado wa doko da, shitakiri suzume! o yado wa doko da, chū, chū, chū" to ii nagara tazunete ikimas'to, suzume mo naganen go on wo uketa shujin no jii san no

a Hoshi wo sasu hit the target; in the passive form, be found out.

b Nagekumai koto ka is parenthetical; =taisō nageite.

c With taka ga (taka amount) compare ne ga p. 441b; translate "merely," or "after all."

d Noke'ta has the sense of shimatta, but is rather impersonal. The old man did not wound the sparrow himself, but reproaches himself for allowing it to be done. Hence the causative nokesashita might also be used.

e A very common idiom. It may be expanded: Kore ga nakazu ni orareru yō na koto ka.

*koe des'kara, hayaku mo sore to<sup>a</sup> kikit's'kete jibun no yado wo tobidashi tochū made o mukae ni demash'ta, "Kore wa, kore wa, o jii sama, yō koso tazunete kite kudasaimash'ta" to iimas'to, jii san mo yorokonde: "Ō! koko ni ite kureta ka. Washi wa omae ni wakarete kara koishikutte koishikutte tamaranai no de wazawaza kyō wa tazunete kita yo."*

*"Sore wa, makoto ni arigatō gosaimas'. Shikashi koko wa tochū, musakuroshū gozaimas'ga, dōzo, watakushi no yado made oide kudasaimashi" to shiorash'ku mo jii san no te wo totte jibun no yado ye to annai shimash'ta.*

*Motoyori suzume no yado no koto des'kara, o sadamari no yabu no naka de, take no hashira ni take no yane to wa ii ka-gara nakanaka rippa na s'mai des'.*

*Suzume wa saki ni tatte, "Sā, dōzo kochira ye" to jii san wo kami no ma ye tōshi, "Sate, konnichi wa yō koso o tazune kudasaimash'ta. O bā sama no o nori woba o kotowari mo naku itadaite shimau nado to iu furachi-mono no watakushi yue, sazo go rippuku no koto to zanjimash'ta no ni, betsudan o shikari mo naku kaette kō sh'te wazawaza o tazune kudasaimas'to wa nan to o rei wo mōshimash'te yoi yara, makoto ni uresh'kute ureshinamida ga deru hodo de gozaimas'" to aratunete rei wo nobemas'to, jii san wa te wo sayū ni futte, "Nan no, nan no,<sup>b</sup> shikaru nado to wa yoso no jijii no koto. Kono oyaji wa omae ga kawaiikute kawaiikute ko yori mo daiji ni omotte iru mono wo, taka ga nori wo nameta gurai no sosō de mugotarash'ku sh'ta wo kütte oidas'to wa uchi no baba koso furachi shigoku na yatsu, kinō mo sanzan sh'katte yarimash'ta. Da ga, kō sh'te buji na kao wo mite washi mo konna ni ureshii koto wa nai" to hokuhoku yorokonde orimas'.*

*Suzume wa daiji na onjin ga wazawaza tazunete kite kureta koto des'kara, nan to ka sh'te sono kokoro wo nagusanetai mono to,<sup>c</sup> sore kara kanai no suzume ni iit's'ke dekiru dake no go chisō wo sh'te jii san wo motenashi, mata sakana ni wa jibun-tachi no o tokui no suzumeodori nado wo sh'te misemash'ta kara, jii san wa ōyorokobi, washi wa kono toshi ni naru made konna*

a *Sore to=jii san no koe da to.*

b Translate *nan* no "Never!"

c Here *omotte* is understood

*omoshiroi me ni atta koto wa nai to, maru de gokuraku ye de mo itta kokoromochi, kotonohoka no go kigen des'.*

Sono uchi ni hi mo kurekakatte kimash'ta kara, jii san wa ki ga tsuite, "Yareyare, o kage de kyō wa junyō ya nobita. Shikashi mō hi ga kureru kara, kyō wa kore de o itoma to shi-yō" to iimas'to, suzume wa nakanaka kaesō to mo sezu: "O jii sama, nani wo osshaimas'. Tatoi hi ga kuremaskō to mo, o tomari asobaseba yoi de wa gozaimasen ka. Konna kitanai tokoro de wa gozaimas'ga, o iya de nakuba, iku nichi de mo go tōryū kudasaimashi. Ima made o sewa ni narimash'ta go on wo omoeba, ichi nichi ya futs'ka go chisō itashimash'ta kara to itte nakanaka mambu ichi mo o kaeshi wa dekimasen. Dōzo, komban wa o tomari wo....."

"Iya, sono kokorozashi wa ureshii keredo, washī mo uchi wo akeru wake ni wa ikanai kara, kyō wa hitomazu kaeru to shimashō. Sono kawari kono nochi wa tabitabi asobi ni kuru kara, sono toki ni wa mata kyō no yō ni omoshiroi koto wo sh'te misete o kure yo.

"Sore de wa dō de mo kyō wa o kaeri de gozaimas'ka. Sore wa, mā, o nagori-oshu<sup>a</sup> gozaimas'ne. Shikashi sō iū koto nareba, shōshō o machi kudasaimashi" to, yagate oku no kura no naka kara tsuzura wo f'tatsu motte kimash'te: "Sate, o jii sama, sekkaku no oide ni nan no o aisō mo naku kono mama o wakare mōshimas'no wa makoto ni hoinai koto de gozaimas'. Ts'kimash'te wa<sup>b</sup> koko ni karui tsuzura to omoi tsuzura ga gozaimasu'ga, dochira de mo o ki ni meshimash'ta<sup>c</sup> hō wo miyage ni o mochi kudasaimasen ka."

"Nani, o miyage wo? Go chisō ni nattari o miyage wo morattari sore de wa, dōmo, sumanai ne. Shikashi sekkaku no kokorozashi da kara, enryo naku moratte ikō."

a *Nagori*, from *nami* wave and *nokoru* be left, waves still swelling after the wind has gone down, or water left on the beach by waves, has come to mean the state of one who is separated from a friend (or has lost a treasure). It is also written *nanokori*, the idea being that the name only is left. *Nagori too oshimu* be sorry to part; *nagori-oshii* hard to part.

b *Tsukimashite wa*, which is here translated "so," might be classified as a conjunction. Other subordinatives used as connectives are *motte*, *shitagatte*, *yotte* (see Ch. LXXXI.).

c More polite than *ki ni itta* or *ki ni atta*.

"Sore de wa kono omoi hō wo o mochi kudasaimas'ka."

"Iyaiya, washi wa kono tōri toshi wo totte iru kara, omoi hō wa totemo shoenai. Karui hō de tak'san da yo."

"Sore de wa karui hō wo o mochi kudasaimashi."

Soko de jii san wa karui tsuzura wo senaka ni showash'te morai, kadoguchi made okurare nagara: "Sore de wa iroiro arigatō. Mata sono uchi ni asobi ni kuru yo."

"Kitto o machi mōsh'te orimas'. Ki wa ts'kete o shizuka ni irasshaimashi. Go kigen yoroshū" to miokuru suzume ni mikaeru jii san tagai ni nagori wo oshimi nagara sono hi wa wakarete shimaimash'ta.

Hanashi kawatte, bā san wa tada hitori de rusuban wo sh'te imash'ta ga, jii san no kaeri no osoi no ni haya butsubutsu to kuchikogoto, "Da kara, iwanai koto ja nai. Anna itazuramono no suzume no yukigata nanzo tabunete nan no yaku ni tatsu n' darō. Honto ni ki no shirenai o jii san da yo" to sh'kiri ni warukuchi wo ii nagara kadoguchi made dete matte imas'to, yagate mukō kara jii san wa tsuzura wo shotte kaette kimash'ta.

"Nan da nei, omae san, imajibun ni kaette kite sa" to shikaru yō ni iimas'to, jii san wa ase wo fukifuki, "Bā san! sō kogoto wo itte kureru na. Kyō wa susume no uchi ye itte honto ni omoshiroi omoi wo<sup>a</sup> sh'te kita ze. Sore ni kore kono tōri o miyage made moratte kita" to senaka ni atla tsuzura wo oroshi, "Omoi no to karui no to dash'te dochira ga ii to itta kedomo, omoi no wa shotte kuru no ga taihen da kara, karui hō wo moratte kita. Ittai nani ga haitte iru n' darō. Hayaku akete miru ga ii" to iwarete bā san wa niwaka ni nikoniko, "Sō des'ka, sore wa, mā, ii koto wo sh'te ki nas'tta. Dore, o miyage wo haiken shiyō" to tōmichi wo aruite kite kutabireteru jii san ni wa shibucha ippai kunde mo yarazu, sugu ni tsuzura no f'ta ni te wo kake, akeru ma ososhi to, naka wo mireba, sā, aru koto, aru koto, kingin shugyoku wa iu ni oyobazu, rippa na kimono ya kirei na takaramono ga afureru bakari haitte imas'.

Kore wo mite jii san wa sakki mite kita suzumeodori no o

<sup>a</sup> Omoi here means feeling, experience.

sarai de mo kajimeta yō ni odoriagatte ureshigaru to, bā san wa nani omotta ka, fusoku-sō ni<sup>a</sup> hō wo fukurashi: "Omae san mo ki ga kikanai nei. Konua ni ii mono ga haitteru nara, naze sono omoi hō wo uoratte ki nasaranai. Honto ni yoku wo shiranai o jii san da yo."

"Kore sa, nani baka wo iu u' da. Kore dake areba tak'san ja nai ka. Yokubari mo ii kagen ni suru ga ii."<sup>b</sup>

"Sore de mo mis'mis' omoi no ga aru no ni, karui hō wo moratte kuru nante honto ni omae san wa baka na hito da yo. Ii sa, kore kara watashi ga itte sono omoi hō wo moratte koyō" to haya tachiagarimas'kara, jii san wa sh'kiri ni tomete, "Yoshi na, yoshi na, omae ga itta'tte muda da kara" to itte mo, bā san wa mimi ni mo iresu, sugu ni shiri wo hashotte jii san no tsue wo sono mama ts'ki, "Shitakiri suzume, o yado wa doko da, chū, chū, chū" to onnaji koto wo ii nagara suzume no yado ye to isogimash'ta.

Sate, mata suzume no yado de wa jii san wo okuridash'te kara, sugu ni omote wo shimete shimai, ato ni wa kanai no mono ga yoriatsumatte, "Honto ni ano jii san wa ii kata da. Kondo mata oide ni nattara nan no go chisō wo sh'te ayejō ka shira. Sore ni hikikaete ano o bā san no iji no warusa, taka ga nori wo nameta gurai no toga ni sh'ta wo kittle oidas'to wa honto ni nasake wo shiranai ni mo hodo ga aru"<sup>c</sup> nado to sh'kiri ni uwasa wo sh'te oru tokoro ye kusame wo shi nagara<sup>d</sup> kadoguchi wo tataite, "Moshimoshi, shitakiri suzume no o yado wa kochira ka e"<sup>e</sup> to tazuneru mono ga arimas'kara, dara ka to omotte akele miru to, uwasa wo sureba kage<sup>f</sup> to yara, sh'ta wo kitta bā san des'.

Suzume wa sore to mite, sh'ta wo kirareta urami wa arimas'ga, nanishiro<sup>g</sup> naganen kawareta on mo arimas'kara,

a From *fu-soku* insufficiency. For *sō* see p. 107, top.

b For *yoku-baru* see p. 284a; *ii kagen ni suru* moderate, *ka-gen* being derived from *ka* increase, *gen* decrease: *Kagen ga aru*. There must be just so much, no more, no less.

c The idiom *ni mo hodo ga aru* indicates an excessive degree.

d *Kusame*=*kushami*. See p. 219f.

e *Ka e* is a vulgar equivalent of *desu ka*.

f *Uwasa wo sureba kage ga sasu* is a proverb. Compare the English: "Speak of an angel and he appears at the door."

g *Nanishiro* (lit. do what you will) at any rate.

teinei ni jigi wo sh'te, "Kore wa, kore wa, o bā san, yō koso-  
aide kudasaimash'ta. Sā, dōzo, kochira ye" to saki ni tatte  
annai shikakemas'to, bā san wa sore wo uchikesh'te: "Iya,  
mō kessh'te kamatte kudasanna. Washi wa chitto isogu no da  
kara, sugu ni o itoma ni shiyō yo."

"Sore de mo sekkaku oide ni natta no des'mono, chotto de  
mo o agari kudasaimashi."

"Iie, mō sō sh'te wa irarenai. Sugu ni kaeranakereba  
naranai no da kara, go chisō mo suzumeodori mo nuki ni  
sh'te<sup>a</sup> hayaku sono o miyage wo moratte ikō" to kotchi kara o  
miyage no saisoku des.

Suzume wa nan to iu yokubari-babā darō to kokoro no uchi  
de akire nagara mo: "Sō de gozaimas'ka. Sore de wa o mi-  
yage wo sashiagemashō. Shikashi karui hō wo sakihodo o jii  
sama ga o mochi ni narimash'ta kara, nokotte orimas'no wa  
omoi hō bakari de makoto ni o kinodok'sama de gozaimas'  
ga....."

"Iya, washi wa o jii san to chigatte made toshi mo waka-  
shi, chikara mo aru kara, omoi hō ga kaette kekkō da. Dore,  
hayaku dash'te kudasai."

"Sore de wa tadaina motte mairimas'" to suzume wa ōku  
no hō kara ōki na tsuzura wo sa mo omotasō ni motte demas'to,  
bā san wa sore wo ukelotte, kore sae moraeba mō yō wa nai,  
"Dore, suzume san, go men nasai yo" to aisatsu mo roku ni  
wa sezu, dokkoisho to shoidashimash'ta.

Tokoro ga, sono tsuzura no omoi no omoku nai no'tte uchi  
ni aru takuan no omoshi<sup>b</sup> yori wa ni sōbai mo omotai kara,  
sasuga no bā san mo odorote yudama no yō na ase wo hitai  
kara takutaku nagashi nagara unun itte aruite kimash'ta ga,  
sore de mo kokoro no naka de wa kono onomi nara sazo tak'san  
haitteru darō to, sore wo dai ichi no tanoshimi ni isshōkemmei  
ni natte yatte kimash'ta ga, nanibun omotakutte tamaranai no  
to mata hayaku naka ga mitai no to de, uchi ye kaeru made

a Nuki ni suru omit, from nuku.

b Omoshi=omoi ishi used to keep daikon or na under the brine in the process  
of pickling, as is done also in making sauerkraut. For omoi no omoku nai no'tte  
see p. 133, top.

*machikiresu, mama yo,*<sup>a</sup> *kokora de akete yare to, yagate tsuzura wo michibata ye oroshi, ase wo fuki nagara f'ta wo totte miru to, ko wa so mo ika ni, ko wa ika ni, naka wa takaramono to omoiohoka mitsumekozō ni gama no nyūdō,*<sup>b</sup> *aruiwa mamushi ni kemushi ni kamakiri nando iu sa mo osoroshii bakemono ga ujauja tsumatte imas' kara, bā san wa kimo wo tsubushi, kya-tto*<sup>c</sup> *itte hikkurikaeru to, naka no bakemono wa sono koe wo kikits' kete sorosoro atama wo mochiage, mamushi ga nūtto kubi wo nobash'te bā san no teashi ni makits' keba, gama wa berobero sh'ta wo dash'te hoppeta wo namemawasu to iu sawagi ni bā san wa mō kyūshi-issō,*<sup>d</sup> *"Tas' kete kure, tas' kete kure" to naki nagara korogaru yō ni nigedashimash'ta ga, yatto no koto de uchi ye kaette jii san ni kono hanashi wo suru to, jii san wa kaette odorokazu: "Sore da kara iwanai koto ja nai. Amari yokubaru to, sonna mono da" to dandan itte kikasemash'ta no de, bā san mo hajimete me ga same, sore kara nochi wa zenshin ni tachikaette jii san to onashi yō na makoto ni yoi hito ni narimash'ta to sa. Medetashi, medetashi!*<sup>e</sup>

a An interjection indicating acquiescence or indifference.

b *Mitsu-me-kozō* a bugaboo with three eyes; *gama no nyūdō*, from *gama* toad and *nyūdō* monk, likewise a bugaboo in the shape of an enormous toad.

c The sound of *a* in the exclamation *kya* is like the English short *a*. In *kana* such sounds are indicated by adding *tsu*.

d For *kyū* nine, *shi* death, *ichi* one, *shō* life, there being one chance in ten of escaping.

e Fairy tales usually end with these words.

ADDRESS BY MARQUIS ITŌ<sup>a</sup>

*Shokun!* *Watakushi wa senjitsurai Hōchiku<sup>b</sup> kakuchi manyū no kokoroe de dekakemash'ta tokoro ga, itaru tokoro ni oite yūshisha no kwangei ni azukari, kakuchi ni oite gusets'wo kikitai to iu yōkyū ni aimash'ta yue ni, shosho ni oite konnichi mokuzen ni yokotawatte iru<sup>c</sup> mottomo hitsuyō to mitomeru tokoro no kotogara wo hanash'te maitta shidai de arimas'.* *Konnichi wa sude ni kakuchi no junkwai wo owatte masa ni Kyūshū no chi wo saran to suru ni nozonde,<sup>d</sup> mata tōchi no yūshi shokun no go kontoku naru o maneki ni yorimash'te nani ka hanashi wo seyo to no go seikyū ga arimash'ta.*

*Tōchi no keisei wo ichi ran shimasuru to, jū nen isen ni watakushi ga yoki shinakatta tokoro no hankwa wo sh'te oru yō ni miukemas'.* *Hikkyō kore (wa) tōchi no kōtsū no bengi naru<sup>e</sup> to mata tankō no kaihats'to tetsudō no fusets'to ni yotte tennen no ryōkō ga riyō serareru ni itatta kekewa da to zonjimas'.* *Wazuka jū nen mae ni wa tōchi wa mukō no Shimonoseki ni hi sureba, irikomi ga yoku umi ga fukai tokoro*

<sup>a</sup> Marquis Itō, whose given name is Hirobumi or Hakubun, the most influential of modern Japanese statesmen, in the year 1899 undertook a journey through Kyūshū. The address here reproduced, with a few modifications, was delivered at Moji, the port opposite Shimonoseki or Bakan, on May 21st of that year, as he was returning from his tour. See the collection of addresses of Marquis Itō, published by the Nichinichi Shimbu. The student will feel a great contrast between the sprightly narratives of the preceding pages and this grave discourse. The style is not purely colloquial, quite a few classical forms being used. The selection also contains over one hundred Chinese compounds that have not hitherto occurred in this book, practically all of which are much used in discussions of political and economic subjects. To understand them satisfactorily some knowledge of the elements of the classical Chinese is needed. As in the study of arithmetic, here comes a time when it is best to substitute the algebraic method for the arithmetical, so in the study of the colloquial there comes a time when it is best to leave *romaji* and *kana* and study the ideograms.

<sup>b</sup> *Hō* indicates the provinces *Bu-sen* and *Bun-go*; *Chiku* stand for *Chiku-sen* and *Chiku-go*. *Hō* is an alternative reading of the character pronounced *bu* in *Busen* and *Bu(n)go*.

<sup>c</sup> Construe with *kotogara*.

<sup>d</sup> Translate: being about to leave the land of *Kyūshū*. For *saran to suru* see p. 180. The form *nozonde* is from *nosomu* approach.

<sup>e</sup> Understand *koto*.



*kara*<sup>a</sup> taikan no ôrai no sai shibaraku kikô suru gurai no yô ni kyô serarete otta<sup>b</sup> ni suginai ga, kinkin jû nen no aida ni taikin wo tsuiyash'ta to iu koto mo naku kaku no gotoki seidai wo kitash'ta no wa kore (wa) mattaku ryôkô no shikarashimuru tokoro de arô to kangaeru.<sup>c</sup> Sude ni konnichi no seikyô wo motte miru to, shôrai no jû nenkan ni oite hijô naru shimpo wo nasubeki koto wa utagai wo irenu tokoro de arô to sasserareru.<sup>d</sup> Tsumari kaisei-jôyaku no jissai boeki no hattats'tô ni gotte koko no ôrai wa masumasu himpan to nari, onosukara sempaku shutsunyû no kasu wo mash'te kuru de arô to kangaeru ga, shokun no go chûi ni narubeki koto wa kônai ni oite nizumi hikiage no ben wo hakari, rikujô ni oite wa ryokaku ôrai no ben wo hakari, narubeku tsûshô bôeki ni bengi wo ataeru yô ni ts'tomerareru no ga hitsuyô to sasseraremas'. Mochiron korera no koto ni tsuite wa shokun no go keikwaku mo aru yue ni, oioi hattats'wo nasubeki dôri de wa arimashô ga, izure ni sh'te mo sono hanjô wa jû nen wo hete jissôbai ni naru ni sôï nai to omou. Tsumari kono Hôchiku kakuchi no sekitan no sanshutsukaku ra wo uketamawatte miru to, tanzan wa hotondo Hôchiku no sanya wo usumete oru to itte mo yoroshii sô des'. Go roku nen mae ni watakushi no uketamawatta tokoro de wa kono chihô no sude ni hirakete aru tanzan wa nagakute san jû nen, mijikakute jû go nen gurai de ts'kiru de arô to iu koto wo Seiyôjin nado mo tonaete orimash'ta ga, konnichi kakuchi wo mawatte sono gyômu ni jûji sh'te oru hito no sets'wo uketamawatte miru to, sono yô na urei mo nai to iu koto de aru. Kore wo motte miru to, shôrai hanjô wo kiwamern<sup>e</sup> koto wa utagai nai.

Sore de konnichi ni atari shôrai no tame ni nizumi no bengi ya rikUAGE no bengi nado wo hakatte yuku to iu koto wa jikan-wo tsuiyas'koto wo s'kunaku sh'te keiki wo habuku wake de arimash'te motoyori dandan kakuchi ni oite mo kôwan no kaichiku aruiwa tetsudo no fusetsu ra wo keikwaku shi tsutsu

a The word *irikomi* here has reference to the indentations of the coast. Translate: because the coast is good and the sea is deep.

b Translate: opportunity was afforded (p. 261a).

c *Shikarashimuru* cause to be so (p. 254a). The good harbor accounts for the prosperity of Moji.

d Translate: I judge that it is a point admitting no doubt. Compare the potential inflection in *sasserareru* with *omocareru*. The polite termination *masu* is more readily omitted in speaking to an assembly than in speaking to a single person.

e Translate: will be very prosperous (p. 345a).

*arimas'*: *Kono haikyō wa Keisets'kan<sup>a</sup> oyobi Tōkyō no hō ni tsūkō suru sempaku no shuitsunyū suru monko de arimas'kara, takō ni yoru yori wa kono minato ni kikō suru hō ga benri ga ōi no de aru to kangaeru. Murota no minato mo oioi hirakemu de arimashō ga, mottomo bengi wo ete aru tōkō ni tai sh'te wa tōtei hitteki wa dekinai to omou. Kore ni tsuite wa onozukara gishi nado no kangae mo arimashō ga, watakushi no miru tokoro de wa tōkō wa tsūkō no shō ni attate ite kakubetsu fune wo ukawai sh'te kikō senkereba naranu to iu urei no nai tokoro de arimas'kara,<sup>b</sup> s'koburu bengi ni sōi nai, yue ni ōku wa kono minato ni yoru koto de arō ga, kore ni yotte tōchi no eikyū no rieki wo hakari, katsu masumasu hanjō wo kuwaeyū to iu naraba, mae ni mōsh'ta tokoro no bengi wo ts'keru koto ga hitsuyō to kangaeru.*

*Masu tōchi ni oite miru tokoro no taiyō wa kaku no gotoku de arimas'ga, kakuchi ni oite hanash'te maitta gotoku, ittai Nihonkoku ga kono kyokutō ni oite shimete iru tokorō no ichi kara kangaeru to, hompōjin wa shōrai masumasu susunde kokka no seiryoku wo soto ni oyoboshi;<sup>c</sup> mata kokka no bōgyoryoku wo kenrō ni narashimete takoku no shiuryaku wo ukenu yō ni suru koto; mata Nihon kokumin ga kempōjika ni oite<sup>d</sup> eru tokoro no kenri; kore ni tai suru tokoro no gimu; mata ishin no kokuze, sunawachi kaikoku shinslu no hōshin ni yotte konnichi no shimpo wo nashikitatta<sup>e</sup> koto; sh'tagatte mata shōrai masumasu kore wo shimpo seshimete, sō sh'te itsu ni shō'san kōgyō no hattats'wo mo masumasu hakari; kaigwai no tsūshō wo kwakuchō shi, sunawachi jikoku no shōgyō ni nomi yasunuru no kyū-kwannen wo uchiyabutte, gwaikoku to tsūshō bōeki wo nasu no kwannen wo tsuyokarashimuru koto, korera no koto wo jikkō suru shudan hōhō wo kangaeru no ga hitsuyō de aru to omou.*

*So sh'te kaiseijōyaku no jikkō mo mokuzen ni sematte iru kara, kono jōyakukaisei no kekkwa to sh'te gwaikokujin ga*

a The region about Kyōto and Ōsaka. *Kei* is the *kanon* for the character *kyō* in *Kyōto*; *setsu* is the first of the name of the province *Settsu* in which Ōsaka lies; *kan*=*aïda*.

b There need be no anxiety about inducing vessels to call; for the port lies right in their path.

c This inconclusive form is correlative with *suru koto*, etc. The expression *oyoboru koto* might be substituted for it.

d Translate: under the constitution. The suffix *jika*, from *shika*, is used as a substantive.

e *Nashikitatta*=*shite kimashita*.

waga kuni ni kitatte kyojū shi, ōrai shi, mata shōgyō kōgyō wo itonamu tō no jōyakujō ni kwakushū sh'taru kenri wo jikkō suru ni tsuite wa Nihonkokumin wa dai naru doryō wo motte kore ni tai sh'te narubeku emman ni jikkō suru no michi wo kangaenak'te wa naranu. Mata kyōiku no fukyū wo hakatte jimmin no bunkwa no teido wo takaine, masumasu Nihonkokumin no ichi wo ugeru to iu koto ni tsuite mo isson nari, itchō nari, ichi gun nari, sono chihōteki dantai no ue ni oite wa<sup>a</sup> chihō no yūryok'sha ga tomokaku sono shiryō wo tsuiyasanakereba naranu koto to kangaeru. Korera no daitai no yōryō ni tsuite wa itaru tokoro ni hanashi wo sh'te okimash'ta kara, shimbun sono ta ni yotte onozukara shokun no ichi ran wo heru de arimashō, aete koko ni chōfuku shi kurikaesh'te mōsu made no hitsuyō mo nakarō to omou ga, nani ni sh'te mo konnichi no Nihon no ryōchi, Nihon no keisei, mata ai-tai-suru tokoro no Tōyō nō keisei, Yōroppa no shōgyō no hattatsu, kōtsū no masumasu himpan ni sh'te jinsoku wo kiwametaru koto yori kangaete miru to, jitsu ni konnichi wa ichi jitsu to iedomo<sup>b</sup> makura wo takaku sh'te aminin suru toki de nai to kangaemas'. Yotte seifu mo kokumin mo tsubusa ni narubeku itchi sh'te kokka no shinro wo ayamaru koto naku shimpo suru yō ni aritai<sup>c</sup> to iu no ga watakushi no kibō de atte shokun no nozomu tokoro mo sono hōshin ni suginu no de arimas'.

Kwajiisurai shosho ni oite chinjutsu sh'ta uchi ni wa motto seimitsu ni watatta koto mo arimas'ga, shugan to suru tokoro wa ika naru seifu to iedomo..... aete sono seifu no shurui wo towazu..... narubeku sono seifu no keizoku sh'te konnichi sude ni keikwaku sh'te aru tokoro no seifu no jigyō, oyobi minkan no keisaijō ni kwankei suru kakushu no jigyō no gotoki wo kotogotoku jikkō sh'te ikeru<sup>d</sup> yō ni naran koto wo kibō suru no de aru. Ikan to nareba, seifu ga kawari, hito ga kawareba, hitobito no kangae to iu mono wa ichi yō ni deru mono de nai kara, sono keikwaku wo jikkō suru ue ni oite kanarazu sono juts'wo aratane, chichū suru koto ga shōsuru no de aru. Kore wa ta no koto ni hirei sh'te mite mo wakarū. Tatoeba, kikaiteki no shigoto ni sh'te mite mo gishi ga kawareba, onozukara kangae ga kawatte keikwaku wo henkō suru ni itaru to iu no to onaji koto de aru kara, konnichi no keisei ichi jitsu mo yurū sube-

a Translate: with reference to the local communities.

b Translate: even a single day.

c Desiderative of *aru*: would like to have it so.

d Potential of *iku*, making the expression stronger than *jikkō suru* would be.

e Adverbial form of *yurin*: must not make conditions unstable.

*karazu*<sup>a</sup> to iu kangae yori sureba, sunawachi seifu no eisoku sh'te sono keikwaku no chakuchaku ho wo susumete kyokō ni naran koto wo kibō sezaru wo enu no de aru.<sup>a</sup> Sore kara mata seitō ya nado ni tai sh'te nozomu tokoro wa, watakushi wa mizukara seitō no naka ni atama wo tsukkonde wa oramu.keredomo, kempō-seiji ga okonawarete kakuchi ni oite iwayuru daigishi naru mono wo<sup>b</sup> senshutsu sureba, sono daigishi wa kokka no keikwaku to shōrai ni keikwaku subeki koto oyobi minkan no keizaijō no mondai shok'san-kōgyō-jō no koto wo seifu ga yūdō shi, kore wo tas'kete yuku mondai no gotoki ni tai sh'te wa narubeku kūron wo sakete jijitsuteki no mondai to sh'te kore wo kōkyū shi, sh'tagatte seitō mo mata subete jijitsuteki no mondai ni tsuite rongi suru yō ni kairyō suru koto wo kibō suru no de aru.

Sorera no shūi no taiyō wa kakuchi ni oite mo nobete okimash'ta kara, onozukara shokun ni mo shimbun ya rasshi ni yotte go ran ni naru koto ga dekimashō.

Yue ni, koko ni wa kasanete chinjuts'wa itashimasen. Kwajitsurai kakuchi ni oite hanahada gekibō naru ryokō wo itash'te shōshō konnichi wa ts'karete orimas'kara, kantan ni taii wo nobete shokun no kōi wo sha suru kotoba ni kaemas'.<sup>c</sup> Kore kara mata Bakan no hō ye watarimas'yue ni, kore de gomen wo kōmurimas'.

(Hak'shu kassai.)

a This is a very emphatic way of saying *kibō-suru*: one cannot but hope. Idioms like *sezaru wo enu* are very common in literary compositions.

b The expression is somewhat contemptuous: the so-called representatives.

c I offer these brief remarks in lieu of thanks for your kindness.

## VOCABULARY-INDEX\*

*ã* Ah! 414.

*ã* in that manner 351a; *ã iu*  
(*yõ na*) such.

*abareru* become fractious.

—*wo abiru* bathe in.

*abisaseru* have—bathe.

*abiseru* pour (water) over.

*abunai* dangerous.

*abura* fat, oil, blubber.

*aburakkoï* fatty.

*abura-mi* fat, suet, lard.

*achi* there.

*achi-kochi* here and there.

*achira*=*achi* 337.

*ada* injury, foe 247.

*adakamo* just about 328a.

*aete* daringly (formal) 348b.

*afureru* be full, overflow.

*agaru* go up 121c; take 310.

—*agaru* 286.

*age-ku ni* finally, besides all.

*ageru* lift up, give 84f, 116c,

286c, 308; praise 178a.

—*ageru* 286.

*age-shio* flood tide.

*ahiru* duck (domestic).

*ai*=*hai* yes, all right.

*ai*=*ayu* trout.

*ai*-174d, 302.

*aida* interval, relation 67c,  
389b; between, during 358,  
406. [ing.

*ai-kawarazu* without chang-

*ai-mai na* vague, ambiguous.

*ai-naru*=*naru* become (for-  
mal)

*ai-narubeku* 174d.

*ainiku*=*ayaniku*.

*Ainu* native of Yezo.

*ai-satsu* salutation, answer.

(*o*) *ai-sõ* entertainment.

*aita* vacant (past of *aku*).

*a-ita* Ouch! that hurts.

*ai-te* partner, opponent.

*aitsu* that thing (vulgar).

*Aizu* 393a.

*aji* taste 215.

*ajisai* hydrangea.

*aka* dirt, filth.

*aka san*=*akambõ*.

*aka-gaeru* a brown frog.

*aka-gane* copper.

*akai* red.

*akambõ* baby, infant 232b.

\* This list of Japanese words that occur in the text has been abridged as much as possible, omitting all easily understood words, such as easy onomatopoes, derivatives, compounds, foreign terms, etc. The definitions are curtailed, to save space. When fuller explanations are to be found in the body of the book the page is indicated; the letters then refer to footnotes.

- aka-mi* reddish tinge 21.  
*aka-nasu* tomato 106.  
*akari* light;—*wo tsukeru* light a lamp. [light.  
*akari-tori* opening to admit [light.  
*akarui* light, clear.  
*ake-banasu* leave open 228.  
*Akechi Mitsuhide* 264b.  
*akemashite* 317b.  
*akeppanasu* = *akebanasu*.  
*akeru* open (tr.), vacate, come to a close; *yo ga* — day dawns.  
*aki* autumn.  
*Aki* 413c.  
*aki-ma* vacant room.  
*akinai* trade.  
*akindo* trader, shopkeeper.  
*akippoi* easily tired, fickle.  
*akiraka na* clear, evident.  
*akirameru* give up hope 288b.  
*ak.reru* be surprised, amazed, dumbfounded.  
*akiru* be surfeited 142.  
*Akō* 187d.  
*aku* open (intr.), get empty; *ana ga aite iru* there is a hole.  
*aku* = *akiru* be surfeited.  
*aku* evil.  
*akubi wo suru* (*ga deru*) yawn.  
*aku-made* to the utmost 379.  
*akuru hi* the following day 144.  
*akyūdo* = *akindo*.  
*ama* nun.  
*ama-do* wooden sliding door.  
—*ni amaeru* take advantage of.  
*ama-gaeru* tree toad.  
*ama-gasa* rain umbrella.  
*ama-goi wo suru* pray for rain.  
*amai* sweet; *shio ga* — not salty enough; 106.  
*ama-mori* leak in the roof.
- amaneku* at large (formal).  
*amanzuru, amanjiru* relish.  
*amari* exceedingly, too, so much.  
*amaru* be in excess.  
*amasu* leave over.  
*amata no* many (formal).  
*Amaterasu* 121h.  
*amayakasu* pet, indulge.  
*am-bai* temper, manner.  
*ame* rain;—*ga furu* it rains.  
*ame* heaven (classical).  
*ami* net;—*wo utsu* cast a net.  
*Amida, Amidagamine* 377a.  
*amina* shampooer 223a.  
*animari* = *amari*.  
*an-min* peaceful sleep.  
*anu* braid, knit, crochet.  
*an* sweet bean paste.  
*an* thought, expectation, plan.  
*an no gotoku* as expected 344a.  
*ana* hole.  
*anata* you (polite) 28, 420.  
*an-don* lamp (old style).  
*ane* older sister 422.  
*an-gwai* (*ni*) unexpectedly.  
*ani* older brother 422.  
*ani-bun* one who deserves to be treated like an older brother, a superior.  
*ani-ki* older brother (vulgar).  
*an-koro-mochi* a cake of *mochi* rolled in *an*.  
*anna* such 39. [173b.  
*an-nai* guidance, knowledge  
*annai-ja* (*annai-sha*) guide.  
*annai-jō* letter of invitation.  
*ano* that (yonder) 36.  
*ano hito*, etc., 7a, 7b, 28.  
*ano ne* I say 416.  
*ano tōri* 347e.  
*an-satsu* assassination.  
*Ansei* 74.  
*an-shin* peace of mind.

*an-shō* hidden rock, reef.  
*an-shō* memorizing.  
*anzuru, anjiru* be anxious  
 214b.  
*aogu fan* 236c.  
*aoi* blue, green, pale.  
*ao-mono* vegetables.  
*Aoto Saemon* 436b.  
*ara* offal (of fish), defect 106b.  
*ara* (interjection) 415.  
*arai* rough, coarse.  
*arakajime* beforehand (formal).  
*ara-mono* coarse goods 374.  
*arashi* storm;—*ga fuku* it  
 storms.  
*aratamaru* be amended 276a.  
*aratameru* renew, review.  
*aratamele* again, anew.  
*arau* wash.  
*arayuru* all.  
*are* that one (person or thing).  
*areru* be rough, refractory.  
*ari* ant.  
*ari-au, ari-awaseru* happen to  
 be on hand 286e.  
*ari-gachi na* 417b.  
*ari gatai* rare, precious 25b,  
*ari-ka* place where a thing  
 is.  
*ari-sama* state, condition.  
*ari-tei* the truth of the matter.  
*aru* be 191; (in existence or  
 possession) 20b, 41a; (in e-  
 numerations) 63b; *o ari na-  
 saru* 118b; *koto wa, no wa*  
 54a, 274a.  
*aru* a certain, some 1.  
*aru hi (no koto)* one day.  
*aruiwa* in some cases, or 398.  
*arukōru* alcohol.  
*aruku* walk 122b.  
*asa* hemp.  
*asa* morning.  
*asa-gao* morning-glory.

*asahaka na* superficial.  
*asa-han* breakfast.  
*asai* shallow, thin.  
*Asakusa* 18e.  
*Asama* 185a.  
*asa-meshi* breakfast.  
*asa-ne wo suru* sleep late.  
*asane-bō* a late sleeper.  
*asa-se* shoal, ford.  
*asatte* day after to-morrow  
 345b.  
*ase* perspiration;—*ga deru,*—  
*wo dasu (kaku)* perspire.  
*Asei* Mencius. 435c.  
*aseru, asette* hurry.  
*(o mi) ashi* foot, leg, step.  
*ashi-ato* footprint.  
*ashida* wooden clog 91b.  
*ashii* evil (formal) 105a.  
*ashi-kafen* inclusive 78b.  
*ashi-moto* what is under or  
 about one's feet.  
*ashita* to-morrow.  
*asobasu* deign 310.  
*asobu* play, amuse one's self.  
*asoko* there 337.  
*assari shita* plain, simple 130a.  
*asu* to-morrow.  
*asuko* = *asoko* there.  
*ataeru* grant, bestow.  
*atai* value.  
*atama* head.  
*atarashi* fresh, new.  
*atari* = *hen* vicinity 385, about.  
*atari-mae no* usual, ordinary.  
*ataru* strike 370.  
*atatakai* warm.  
*atchi* = *achi*.  
*ate ni naranai* unreliable.  
*ate-hamaru* be suited, appli-  
 cable. [ply.  
*ate-hameru* assign, adjust, ap-  
*ate-na* address (of a letter).  
*ateru* apply, hit, guess.

- ato track, trace, succession;—  
*wo katazakeru* clear away things;  
 things;—*wo tsukeru* follow in another's track;—*wo tsugu* become heir;—*de* after, afterwards 112c, 338, 406;—*ni* behind 385;—*kara* after 257a;—*no* the remaining, the other.  
*ato-getsu* last month.  
*ato-jimai* clearing away things.  
*ato-katazuke* " "  
*ato-oshi* one who pushes a vehicle.  
*ato-oshi-tsuki no kuruma* a riksha with extra coolies to push it.  
*ato-saki* 387.  
*atsui* hot, thick (of flat things).  
*atsukau* manage, treat.  
*atsumaru* assemble (intr.).  
*atsumeru* gather, assemble.  
*atsuraeru* order (goods) 380.  
*attakai*=*atataakai* warm.  
*attaka na* warm=*attakai*.  
*at-tō suru* subdue, crush.  
*au* meet 371, 373; *tokei ga atte iru* 160b.  
*-au* mutually, together 58, 286.  
*aware na* pitiful.  
*awareppoi* pathetic.  
*awase* lined garment. [just.  
*awaseru* join, introduce, ad-  
*-awaseru*=*-au*.  
*awateru* lose presence of mind.  
*ayamaru* err, apologize.  
*ayamatsu* err 195.  
*ayame* sweet flag 192a.  
*ayaniku* unfortunately.  
*ayashii* doubtful, suspicious.  
*ayu* trout.  
*azukaru* take charge of 184b.  
*azukeru* entrust, deposit.  
*ba* place; *sono—de* on the spot.
- (o) *bā san* grandmother, old lady 422a.  
*ba-ai* occasion, case. [lady.  
*baba*, *babā* grandmother; old  
*bachi* plectrum, pick, drumstick.  
*bachi*=*batsu* punishment.  
*bai*=*nisōbai* double 80.  
*baiorin* violin.  
*bai-shaku-nin* go-between.  
*bai-u* early summer rain 241a.  
*baka* fool, dunce, nonsense 250a.  
*baka na*, *bakabakashii*, *bakarashii* foolish; *bakarashiku omou* consider foolish.  
*bakari* only, just, about 48b, 340, 350c, 357c;—*de naku* 146a.  
*baka-su (ru)* befool, bewitch.  
*bake-mono* ghost, sprite.  
*bakeru* be metamorphose b.  
*Bakin* 319a.  
*bakkari*=*bakari*.  
*bak-kin* fine.  
*bakuchi* gambling 196b.  
*Baku-fu* shogunate.  
*baku-rō* jockey, horse-dealer.  
*bam-ban* certainly 68a.  
*bamme* 93.  
*ban* number 70, 93.  
*ban* checker-board 207.  
*ban*=*man* myriad 1, 68a.  
*ban* evening, night 64, 339.  
*ban-cha* coarse tea 76d.  
*ban-chi* street number.  
*ban-gata*=*bakata*.  
*ban-hodo* in the evening.  
*ban-ji* in every respect 340.  
*ban-kata* in the evening.  
*ban-kei* in the evening.  
*ban-koku* all countries.  
*ban-zai* Hurrah! 68a.  
*bappai* cup drunk for a forfeit.



- bara* rose. [ing]. *bettari* (of sticky things).  
*barari*, *barabara* (of scatter-  
*baru* 284a. *betō* groom, hostler.  
*ba-sha* wagon, carriage. *bi* unit 83.  
*ba-sho* place. *bifuteki* beefsteak XIII.  
*bashō* banana tree. *biidoro* glass XIII.  
*bas-shi* youngest child. *bi-jin* a beauty.  
*bassu* (*ru*) punish. *bi-jutsu* fine arts xv. [318c.  
*bateren* Christian priest 402. *bikkuri* (of a fright or shock).  
*batsu* punishment;—*wo kōmu-ru* be punished. *bikubiku* (of hesitating fear).  
*batsu-jo* youngest daughter. *bin-bō* poverty 103a.  
*battari to* unexpectedly 326b. *bimbō-nin* poor person.  
*bawai*, *bayai*=*ba-ai*. *bin* bottle 64.  
*-be*=*ken* vicinity 288a. *bin* convenience, opportunity  
*Beikoku* America 122a. to send a message, mail.  
*-beki* III. *Bingo* XXVII. [hers].  
*bek-kō* tortoise-shell 144a. *bishibishi* (of creaking tim-  
*ben* eloquence; *ben no ii* elo- *bi-shō* smile 247c.  
quent. *bisshori* (of a soaking).  
*ben* dialect. *biwa* musical instrument.  
*ben* conveniences, facilities. *Biwako* 126h.  
*ben-gi na* convenient. *Bizen* 412b.  
*beni* rouge;—*wo sasu* (*tsuke-ru*) apply rouge. [420d] *bō* pole, club, beam, line (in  
*beni-sashi-yubi* ring finger writing) 116d.  
*ben-kyō* diligence;—*suru* study. *ō* hat, cap.  
*ben-ri* convenience;—*no ii*,— *bō*=*tsuchinoe* 367a.  
*na* convenient. *bō san* Buddhist priest.  
*ben-shi* speaker, orator. (a) *bō san* boy.  
*Benten* 282g, 393a. *-bō* 232b.  
*ben-zetsu* eloquence. *bō-chigiri* 242b.  
*berabō* fool, nonsense. *bō-eki* trade, commerce.  
*berobero* (of movement of the *bō-fu* typhoon.  
tongue). *bō-gyo* defense.  
*besshite* especially 345. *bo-in* vowel xxiva.  
*bes-shitsu* another room. (go) *bo-kō* your honored mother.  
*bes-sō* villa. *boku* servant, 27, 117a.  
*betabeta* (of sticky things). *bombon* (of ringing) 331.  
*betsu no* another 50. *bombon-dokei* clock that strikes.  
*betsu ni* specially, particularly *bommatsuri* festival of the dead.  
*tetsubetsu ni* separately. (a) *bon* tray 32.  
*betsu-dan* (*ni*) specially, par- *bon* festival of the dead 76b.  
ticularly. *bon-sai* potted plant. [215.  
*bonyari*, dimly, perplexedly  
*borori*, *boroboro* (of raggedness  
or crumbling).

- bō-saki wo kiru* take a percentage in purchasing 116d.  
*bōshi* hat, cap. [130c.  
*bota-mochi* ball of rice 129,  
*boian* peony (shrub).  
*botchan* = *bōsan* boy.  
*bōto* boat.  
*bōtto* (of beclouded vision or unconsciousness).  
*bōzu* priest 111b, 282f.  
*bu* traction 80.  
*bu* unit of interest 417a.  
*bu* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *sun*.  
*bu* set (of books) 87.  
*bu* =  $\frac{1}{2}$  *ryō* (old coin).  
*bu* not 124, 213.  
*buchi* 304.  
*budō* grape.  
*budō-shu* wine.  
*bu-gyō* governor 429c.  
*bu-ji na* safe.  
*bu-joku* insult, contempt.  
*bu-ke* military caste.  
*bu-kiryō na* homely.  
*bukkuru* (*buchi-kiru*) hack.  
*Buk-kyō* Buddhism.  
*Bukkyō-to* Buddhist.  
*bun-pō* grammar.  
*bun* sentence, composition.  
*bun* fraction 80.  
*bun* thing 44d.  
*bun-gakushi* A. B. 208a.  
*Bungo* xxvii.  
*bun-ko* library.  
*bun-kuwa* enlightenment, civilization.  
*Bunkyū* 74. [drub.  
*bunnaguru* (*buchi-naguru*)  
*bun-ryō* amount, quantity.  
*bun-seki* analysis (chemical).  
*bun-shō* composition, sentence.  
*bun*
- Buppōsō* 415a.  
*burari*, *burabura* (of dangling or idling).  
*bu-rei* rudeness; — *na* impolite.  
*-buru* 284a.  
*buruburu* (of trembling).  
*(go) bu-sata wo suru* fail to keep up communication with a friend 337a.  
*bu-shi* samurai 304b.  
*buta* pig (domestic).  
*bu-ō* = *buyu* a venomous insect.  
*Butsu* Buddha.  
*butsu* = *utsu* strike 195.  
*butsubutsu*, *butsuributsuri* (of bubbling or grumbling).  
*Butsu-dō* Buddhism.  
*butsu-ri-gaku* physics.  
*buttsukaru* collide.  
*buttsukeru* nail on, throw at.  
*bu-yōjin na* careless, unsafe.  
*buyu* name of a venomous insect.  
*Byakkotai* 393a.  
*byō* second (of time).  
*go byō* ancestral sepulcher.  
*hyō-bu* folding screen 316a.  
*hyō-in* hospital.  
*byō-ki* illness; — *ni kakaru* get ill.  
*byō-nin* sick person, patient.  
*(o) cha* tea 32. [ively.  
*chokuchoku* steadily, progress-  
*chan* = *san* 232b.  
*cha-no-yu* ceremonial tea 90d,  
 106, 207c, 412a.  
*chantō* precisely, properly.  
*cha-wan* tea-cup, bowl for rice.  
*cha-ya* restaurant.  
*chi* ground, place.  
*chi* blood.  
*chibichibi* in dribblets.  
*chichi* milk.  
*chichi* father 421.

*chichi-oya* father 421.  
*chi-chū* hesitation.  
*chi-darake no* bloody.  
*chie* wisdom, sagacity.  
*chifusu* typhus, typhoid.  
*chigaeru* make different.  
*-chigaeru* 287.  
*chigai* difference, mistake;—  
*ni (wa) chigai (ga) nai* c.ve  
 tainly.  
*chigau* differ 373.  
*-chigau* 287.  
*chigiri-ki*=*bō* club 242b.  
*chi-hō* locality, province.  
*chiisa na* small.  
*chiisai* small; *o*—*no* baby 423.  
*chi-ji* governor.  
*chijimeru* shrink (tr.)-  
*chijimu*, *chijimaru* shrink.  
*chika-goro* lately 340c.  
*chikai* near;—*uchi (ni)* soon.  
*chika-jika (ni)* in the near  
 future.  
*chikara* power.  
*chikara-mochi* athlete.  
*chiku-shō* beast.  
*Chikuzen* 266c.  
*chimba* lameness, lame person.  
*chi-mei* geographical name.  
*chin* hire, fare. [lation.  
*chinami* connection, blood-re  
*chinchin* (of ringing).  
*chin-chō suru* prize.  
*chin jutsu suru* state, declare.  
*chirachira suru* flicker, flutter  
*chirakasu* scatter about.  
*chirakeru* be scattered about  
*chirari to* with one glance.  
*chirasu* scatter (tr.) 200.  
*chiri*, *chiri-gaku* geography.  
*chirinchurin* (of ringing).  
*chiru*, *chitte* disperse, fall.  
*chi-ryō* medical treatment.  
*Chishima* Kuriles 61.

*chi-ako* lot of ground.  
*(gō) chi-sō* treat, feast 262.  
*chitto* a little.  
*chi-zu* map.  
*chō* unit 87. [324a.  
*chō* street, town 51a, 95e,  
*chō*=60 *ken*.  
*chō*, *chō-bu* - 10 *tan*.  
*chō* senior, head 164b.  
*chō* butterfly.  
*chō-chin* lantern XII.  
*chō-chō* butterfly.  
*chō-chō* Burgess.  
*chō-dai suru* receive from a  
 superior 12b, 213a, 309; *chō-*  
*dai* please give me.  
*chō-do* exactly, just.  
*chō-fuku* reiteration.  
*chō-hō na* useful, valuable.  
*choichoī* occasionally.  
*choito* just a moment;—*shita*  
 brief, easy 328b.  
*chō ja* wealthy person xxxi.  
*chō-jo* oldest daughter.  
*chō-jō* summit.  
*chō-ka* merchant's house.  
*chotochoko* (of short intervals  
 or steps).  
*chokusetsu ni* directly, immedi-  
 ately 321c.  
*choku-yaku* literal translation.  
*chō-men* note-book, record  
 228b.  
*chō-nai* within the town 51a.  
*chō nan* oldest son 422. [class.  
*chō-nin* one of the trading  
*chōrem-ba* parade ground.  
*chō-ren* drill.  
*chō-ro* morning dew 295a.  
*chorocho* (of the flowing of a  
 brook or of toddling).  
*Chōsen* Korea.  
*Chō-sha* elder, superior xxx.  
*Chōshū* 31a.

- chotto* = *choito* just a moment.  
*chōsuru* be expert 371. [386.  
*chū* = *naka* middle 94a, 218h,  
*chū* loyalty.  
*chū-bu* paralysis.  
*chū-gakkō* middle school 55a.  
*chū-gi* loyalty, fidelity.  
*Chūgoku* 277c, 412b,  
*chū-gwai* home and abroad.  
*chū-i* attention, heed, care.  
*chū-kai* note, commentary.  
*chū-mon* order (for goods).  
*chū-shin* loyal subject 155.  
*Chūshingura* 187d.  
*chū to* = *tochū* midway.  
*chū-tō* medium class 71a.  
*-dachi* = *tachi* (plural ending) 1.  
*dai* price 164a.  
*dai* generation 70, 97a.  
*dai* unit 87.  
*dai* order 93; *dai ichi* 97a.  
*dai* great 117e.  
*-dai* = *uchi* 386.  
*dai-bu*, *dai-bun* very, rather.  
*dai-butsu* large statue of Bud-  
 dha.  
*dai-chō* ledger 228b.  
*dai-dokoro* kitchen.  
*dai-fuku-chō* day-book 228b.  
*dai-gakkō*, *dai-gaku* universi-  
 ty.  
*Dai-gaku* 258b. [parliament.  
*dai-gi-shi* representative in  
*dai-hyō-sha* representative.  
*dai-ji na* precious; *dai-ji ni*  
*suru* take care of 33a.  
*dai-jin* minister of state.  
*dai jōbu na* secure, all right  
 138b.  
*dai-ka* price 164a.  
*dai-kon* large radish.  
*dai-ku* carpenter.  
*dai-mei-shi* pronoun 27a.  
*dai-myō* feudal lord 71b.
- Dai Nihonshi* 389a.  
*Daishi (sama)* 30i.  
*dai-shō wo suru* wear two-  
 swords 233.  
*dai-sū* algebra 341a.  
*dai-tai* in the main 340.  
*dai-tan* boldness.  
*Daitokuji* 437d.  
*Daiyagawa* 402d.  
*dajōdaijin* 413c.  
*Dake* quantity, only, just, about  
 165a, 340; (with *dore*) 43.  
*daku* hold in the arms.  
*da-kyū* game like tennis 245.  
*damakasu* deceive, impose  
 upon.  
*damaru* be silent 184e.  
*damasu* deceive, impose upon.  
*dame na* useless, impossible.  
*dam-pan* conference.  
*dan* baron 76c. [333.  
*dan-dan (ni or to)* gradually  
*dan-go* [Japanese] dumpling.  
*dani* even 353.  
*danna* master 421c.  
*dan-nen* giving up 356.  
*Dannouru* 265d.  
*dano* and 397.  
*dan-shi* boy, male, man.  
*dan-tai* body, organization.  
*dara* dollar.  
*-dar.ike* 233a.  
*darari*, *daradara* sluggishly.  
*dare* who? 42, 45; — *sore* 47.  
*daredare* (plural) 42b.  
*dassu (ru)* escape from.  
*dasu* put forth, bring out, give.  
*dasu* 287.  
*Dazaifu* 266c.  
*de* at, with, by means of, on  
 the part of 363; *de mo* 46,  
 354; *de aru* 191; = *de atte*  
 89c, 113, 197g.  
*de-au* meet on the way.

*de-bana* first infusion 76d.  
*de-guchi* way out, exit.  
*de-iri* inclusive 78b.  
*de-iri no* family-, house- 269c.  
*de-iri-chō* day book 228b.  
*de-kakeru* start out, go out.  
*dekasu* accomplish, finish 255a.  
 (o) *deki*=*dekimono*.  
*deki-agaru* be finished.  
*deki-au* be ready made 286e.  
*deki-daka* harvest, crop 387c.  
*deki-mono* sore, ulcer, boil.  
*dekiru* 285b, 118b, issue, result, be possible 48e, 59b, 146d, 160f, 267.  
*dekiru* capable 127b. [112d.  
*dekiru dake* as—as possible  
*dem-pō* telegram 115b;—*wo utsu* (*kakeru dasu*) send a telegram.  
*dempō-ryō* cost of a telegram.  
*den* biography 319a.  
*den-ka* His Highness 311d.  
*den-kyō-shi* missionary 208a.  
*den-shin* telegraph 115b.  
*denshin-ryō* cost of a telegram.  
*den-wa* telephone.  
*deppuri* (of fullness) 325a.  
*deru* issue forth; (with *kara* or *wo*) 146e; *dete kuru* come out 162; *de-yō* 146h.  
*-deru* 287.  
*de-shi* apprentice, disciple.  
*Deshima* 264e.  
*deshite* 86a.  
*desu, deshita, deshō* 13, 101.  
*do* degree (in measurements) 70.  
*do* unit of time 80.  
*dō* how? what? 42; *dō jū* (*yō na*), *dō shita* what sort of? 43, 54a; *dō shite* how? why? 212b, 351e; *dō itashimashite* 426, 309; *dō shite mo, dō de*

*mo* anyhow 345; *ka dō ka* 397b; *dō ka kō ka* with difficulty 46a; *dō ni ka naru* 360b.  
*-dō* road, district 306d.  
*dō*=*onaji* same 38.  
*dō-bei* garden wall 129a.  
*dō-butsu* animal.  
*dōbutsu-en* zoological garden.  
*dōbutsu-gaku* zoology.  
*dochi* (*ru*) which? (of two), where? 40c, 42, 337;—*mo* both;—*do mo* either 327a, anywhere.  
*dō-chū* journey.  
*do-dai* foundation.  
*dōde* at any rate, after all.  
*dō-dō* same road, accompanying.  
*dō-gi* motion (in a meeting) 305a.  
*dō-gu* utensils, furniture.  
 (go) *dō-han* accompanying 41b.  
*dō-i* same opinion.  
*Doitsu* Germany 119a.  
*dō-ji*=*ji-dō* child.  
*Dōjikyō* 264c.  
*do-jin* native, aborigine.  
*dō-ka* somehow, please! 47a.  
*dokka* (*doko ka*) somewhere.  
*dokkoī, dokkoisho* (interjection) 415, 431.  
*doko* where? 42a, 46, 337.  
*dō-koku* same province.  
*dokoro* 408.  
*Doku* Germany 122a.  
*doku* poison;—*ni naru* poisonous, noxious.  
*doku-ja* poisonous snake.  
*doku-ritsu* independence.  
*dokushin-mono* bachelor, widower, spinster.  
*doku-shin* celibacy.  
*dō-kwa* copper coin 269b.

- dō-kyū-sei* classmate.  
*dō-maki* money belt.  
*domburi* headlong (of a fall into the water).  
*-domo* (plural ending) 1, 28.  
*dō-mo* (of perplexity) 46a, 415.  
*dō-mon* tunnel.  
*don* noon gun.  
*don = dono* 298a.  
*donata* who? (polite) 30e.  
*dondon* in rapid succession (or of the sound of a drum).  
*dō nen* same year,  
*donguri* acorn xxxvii.  
*donna* what kind of? *donna ni* how?  
*dono* (title) 298a, 420.  
*dono* which? (adjectival) 42.  
*dontaku* holiday xiiii.  
*don to* (of a loud noise). [gacy.  
*dō-raku* debauchery, profligate  
*dore* which? (substantival);  
*dore dore* (interjection) 42b.  
*dōre* 207b.  
*doredore* (plural) 42b.  
*dō-ri* reason, truth, right;—*de-su* is natural 252c;—*de* quite right 365.  
*doro* mud;—*darake no* muddy.  
*dō-ro* road, street.  
*dorobō* robber;—*wo suru* rob.  
*doru* dollar.  
*dorya* (interjection) 453.  
*dō-ryō* capacity, generosity.  
*dō-se* at any rate, after all.  
*dō-sen* same ship.  
*dō-setsu* same opinion.  
*dō-shi* verb.  
*dō-shi* among themselves 58.  
*Dōshisha* 295b.  
*Dōshō* 257b.  
*dossari* abundantly, largely.  
*dotchi = dochi*.  
*dote* dyke, road on a dyke.
- dotto* (of laughter, applause).  
*dō-yō* dog days.  
*dō-yō (bi)* Saturday.  
*dō-yō* same manner.  
*dō-zen ni* in the same way 452b.  
*dō-zō* storehouse, "godown."  
*dōzo* somehow, very much, please 47a, 177f.  
*e* (interjection) 453.  
*e* picture.  
*e* food (for animals).  
*-e -fold*; *futa-e* double 64.  
*ebi* shrimp.  
*Ebisu* 225c.  
*Echigo* 188a,  
*Echizen* 358a.  
*eda* branch.  
*Edo* 18d, 73a, 281f, 427a.  
*e-gaku* draw (a picture).  
*ei* (interjection) 414.  
*Ei* England 122a.  
*Ei-go* English.  
*ei-gyō* avocation, business.  
*Ei-koku* England.  
*ei-kyū no* eternal, perpetual, permanent.  
*Ei-ryō Indo* British India.  
*ei-sei* hygiene, sanitation.  
*ei-zōtu* long continuance.  
*e-kaki* painter, artist.  
*Ekōin* 283a, 403b.  
*em-bi-fuku* swallow-tailed coat 173c.  
*Emma (sama)* 204b.  
*em-man ni* completely.  
*em-pitsu* lead pencil.  
*em-pō* distant place 338.  
*emu* smile (classical)  
*En no Shōkaku* 183c.  
*en* veranada.  
*en* relationship.  
*en-gawa* veranada.  
*en-gi no ii* of good omen.  
*en-kaku* development.

- en-ki* postponement.  
*en-kwai* banquet.  
*en-nichi* monthly festival day at a Buddhist temple.  
*e-no-gu* pigments for painting. *Enoshima* 73a.  
*en-ryo* reserve; — *suru* feel diffident; (*go*)—*naku* frankly.  
*en-san* hydrochloric acid.  
*en-zetsu* address, oration.  
*enzetsu-ka* orator.  
*enzetsu-kwai* lecture-meeting.  
*erabu, eramu* choose.  
*erai* great, eminent.  
*eri* collar,  
*eri-nuku* choose out, select.  
*eru* get 259a.  
*eru* choose.  
*esa* bait.  
*eta* [Japanese] pariah 335b.  
*ete* dexterity. [siderately].  
*ete-katte ni* selfishly, incon-  
*e-to=jikkan* 367a.  
*Ezo-jin*=Ainu native of Yezo.  
*e-su* drawing, picture 281a.  
*fu* prefecture 44c, 324a.  
*fu* a kind of food made of wheat gluten.  
*fu-* not 124, 196c, 213.  
*fū* custom, manner, style 321.  
*fū* unit 87.  
*fu-anshin* uneasiness.  
*fu-ben na* inconvenient.  
*fu-ben na* not eloquent 124a.  
*fu-beuri na* inconvenient.  
*fu-bin na* pitiable.  
*fu-bo* father and mother.  
*fū-bun* rumor.  
*fuchi* rim, border.  
*fuchi* pool.  
*fuda* card, label, placard.  
*fu-dan (ni, kara)* usually, generally.
- fude* writing-brush, style 289d.  
*fue* flute;—*wo fuku* play the flute.  
*fueru* increase (intr.).  
*fū-fu* man and wife 422.  
*fu-hei* dissatisfaction.  
*fu-i ni* suddenly.  
*fū-ja* a cold.  
*fuji* wistaria.  
*fu-jin* lady; — *shitsu* ladies' compartment.  
*Fujisan* 26b.  
*fu-ji-yū, fu-jū na* restricted 121a.  
*Fukagawa* 282g.  
*fukai* deep.  
*fukasu* smoke (tobacco).  
*fukeru, fukete* become late, get old 260b. [to].  
 —*ni fukeru, fukette* be addicted  
*fuki* an edible plant.  
*Fukiage* 229a.  
*fuki-buri* tempest.  
*fuki-dasu* burst out laughing.  
*fu-kiryō na* homely.  
*fuki-tsukeru* blow against.  
*fu-kō* unhappiness 225a.  
*fuku* luck, felicity, wealth;—  
*no kami* gods of luck 204a.  
*fuku* unit god.  
*fuke suru* take (medicine).  
*-fuku* clothing.  
*fuku* blow; *fue wo*—play the flute; *kaze ga*—a wind blows.  
*fuku* roof, thatch 294a.  
*fuku* wipe.  
*fuku-biki* (a game) 327b.  
*fuku-jū* submission, obedience.  
*fukumu* contain, understand.  
*fukurasu* distend.  
*fukuro* bag, sack.  
*o fukuro* mother 421.  
*fuku-shi* adverb 314a.  
*fuku-shū suru* review (a lesson).

- fuku-sū* plural 341a.  
*Fukusuke* 312d.  
*fuku-bō* reserve;—*naku* without reserve,  
*fu-kwai* displeasure, indisposition.  
*fu-kyū* prevalence, diffusion.  
*fum-betsu* discrimination 127c.  
*fumi* letter, literature.  
*fumi-kiri* railroad crossing.  
*fu-moto* foot (of a hill or mountain).  
*fumi-patsu* putting forth one's energies, enthusiasm.  
*fun* minute (of time) 75.  
*fun* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *monme*.  
*funa* a fish like a carp.  
*fu-nare* na inexperienced 196c.  
*funé* ship, boat; *ni you* get seasick.  
*furachi* na vicious.  
*fureru* touch, infringe, let be known 371.  
*furi* air, appearance 203b, 284a;—*wo suru* act as if 219b.  
*furi* unit 83a.  
*furi*-302.  
*furi-dasu* shake out, remit.  
*furi-hanasu* break loose.  
*furi-kaeru* turn around.  
*furi-kakeru* fall upon, happen.  
*furi-kakeru*, *furi-kakuru* begin to fall (of rain).  
*furi-kiru* sever forcibly.  
*furi-suteru* abandon.  
*furo* bathtub, bath 109c.  
*furo-shiki* cloth used as a wrapper for a bundle.  
*furu* fall down from above 62a; *ame ga*—it rains 261.  
*furu* shake, wave, scatter.  
*furu-dōgu* second-hand goods, curios.
- furuuru* shake, tremble.  
*furu-hon* second-hand book.  
*furu* ancient, old.  
*furu-kusai* trite, antiquated, obsolete.  
*furu-mai* behavior, entertainment 412d.  
*furu-sato* birthplace, home.  
*fū-ryū* na tasty, elegant, aesthetic.  
*fusagu* shut up, obstruct.  
*fu-saku* bad harvest.  
*fusegu* ward off.  
*fu-sei* na dishonest.  
*fū-sen* balloon.  
*fuseru*, *fusette* go to bed.  
*fu-setsu* construction.  
*fū-setsu* rumor.  
*fushi* knot, knob (as on a tree).  
*fu-shi-gi* na mysterious, marvelous, queer 158b, —*koto ni wa* strange to say.  
*fu-shimatsu* na badly managed 233a.  
*fu-shin* inability to comprehend, doubt, suspicion;—*ni omou* be puzzled. [373b.  
*fu-shin* building, repairing xi.  
*fu-shinja* unbeliever 124b.  
*fu-soku* insufficiency, dissatisfaction; *nani-ga nai* be well off.  
*fu-soroi* na (no) not uniform 196c.  
*fusuma* sliding partition 417.  
*futa* cover, lid.  
*futa e* double.  
*futa-go* twins.  
*futa-oya* parents.  
*futari* two persons;—*de* two together;—*to mo* both.  
*futa-tabi* twice, a second time.  
*futatsu* two;—*ni wakareru* disagree; *futatsu hitotsu* 403a.



- futo* (of a breath).  
*fu-to* unexpectedly 326c.  
*futoi* thick (of round things) impudent.  
*futokoro* bosom.  
*fu-ton* wadded quilt, cushion.  
*futoru* get stout; *futotta* fleshy 325a.  
*Futsu* France 122a.  
*fu-tsū na* usual, general.  
*fu-tsuyō na* inconvenient, improper.  
*futsuka* two days, second day.  
*fu-tsuri-ai na (no)* out of proportion 196c,  
*fuito* = *futo*.  
*fu-un na* unlucky.  
*fuyasu* augment, multiply.  
*fu-yō na* not needed, useless.  
*fu-yōjin na* careless, unsafe.  
*fuyu* winter 23c.  
*fuyu-fuku* [European] winter clothing. [ing.  
*fuyū-gi* [Japanese] winter clothing.  
*fū-zoku* manners and customs.  
*fūsuru* seal (a letter).  
*ga* 3, 12d, 12c, 153d; (with interrogatives) 20c, 42c; = *no* 13, 53; = *wo* 176, 268.  
*ga* but 399, 149.  
*ga-gen* classical language.  
*gai* injury; — *ni naru* injurious.  
*-gake ni* 321.  
*gak-ki* term (of school).  
*gak-kō* school, XIX, 55a.  
*gak-kwa* lesson, curriculum.  
*gaku* hanging tablet, framed picture.  
*gak-mon* learning.  
*gaku-sei* student.  
*gaku-shi* university graduate 208a.  
*gaku-sha* scholar, learned man.
- goku-tai* musical band.  
*gama* toad; — *no nyūdō* 460.  
*ga-man* endurance.  
*-gamashii* like 110.  
*gam-byō* disease of the eye, ophthalmia.  
*Gammangafuchi* 402d.  
*gam-pi-shi* a kind of paper.  
*gan* wild goose.  
*gan-kwa* ophthalmology.  
*Ganu* 233c.  
*-gara* kind, quality 217a.  
*garari, garagara* (of clatter ing noise).  
*garasu* glass.  
*-garu* 284.  
*gasagasa* of rustling sound.  
*Gasshūkoku* 358d.  
*gasu* gas, fog 268c.  
*-gata* (plural ending) 1, 28.  
*-gatai (katai)* hard 110.  
*gatari gatagata* (of banging, shivering).  
*ga-ten* understanding; *ga iku* perceive.  
*-gawa (kawa)* side 385c.  
*ge* lower (in composition) 94a.  
*-ge* appearance; *oshi-ge-mo-naku* ungrudgingly 315;  
*nani-ge-naku* nonchalantly.  
*gebiru* be vulgar.  
*gei* accomplishment, entertaining performance.  
*gei-sha* singing girl 317d.  
*ge-jo* maidservant 113c, 298a.  
*geki-bō na* strenuous.  
*geki-sen* hard fighting.  
*ge-kwa-i* surgeon.  
*gem-bun it-chi* XIV.  
*gen* = *hiku* subtract 79.  
*ge-nan* manservant XXVIII.  
*gen-an* original motion.  
*gen-in* cause.  
*Genji* 74, 95b.

Genji Monogatari 434.

*gen-ka* = *genkwan* vestibule.

*gen-ki* vitality, liveliness; — *no ii*, — *na* vigorous, vivacious.

*gen-kin* ready money 120a.

*gen-kwan* vestibule, main entrance.

*geragera* (of laughter).

*ge-raku* fall (of prices).

*geshinaru* retire 310.

*ge-shukuya* boarding house.

*ges-sha* monthly tuition.

*geta* wooden clog.

*getageta* (of laughter).

*getsu* month 74.

*getsu-yō* (*bī*) Monday 75.

*gi* righteousness, trustiness.

*gi suru* discuss 305a.

*gi-an* bill (in an assembly); — *wo teishutsu suru* introduce a bill.

*gi-chō* president.

*gi-in* member of an assembly,

*gi-ji* parliamentary business.

*giji-dō* legislative hall.

*gi-ketsu suru* take a vote.

*gi-kwai* deliberative assembly.

*gin-mi* investigation, trial.

*gi-mu* duty.

*gin* silver.

*gin-kō* bank.

*gin-kwa* silver coin 269b.

*Gin-za* 95a.

*gin-zai-ku* silverware.

*giri* = *kiri* merely, only, just.

*gi-ri* right, obligation; — *aru kyōdai* step-brother, brother-in-law 127c.

*gi-ron* debate, argument.

*gi-shi* loyal samurai 304b.

*gi-shi* expert, engineer.

[bers.

*gishigishi* (of creaking timber)  
*gi-shiki* formality, ceremony.

*go* game like checkers; — *wo utsu* play checkers.

*go* (honorific) 31.

*go* five.

*go* = *nōchi* after, later 385; *sono go* after that.

*gō* number, suffix to the name of a ship.

*gō* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *shō* 69a.

*ga-ban* checkerboard 359d.

*go-bō* burdock.

*Godaigo* 343b.

*go-fuku* dry goods.

*ga-gaku* linguistics.

*gō-gi ni* enormously,

*go-go* = *hiru-sugi* afternoon.

*gōgō* (of snoring).

*go-han* boiled rice, a meal.

*go-hei* Shintoistic symbol 129, 189a. [sou.

*gohei-katsugi* superstitious per-

*go-hō* noon gun 222b.

*go-ishi* checkers 359d.

*gō-jō* stubbornness; — *wo haru* be obstinate.

*go-jū-on* syllabary XXI.

*go-ke* widow 245b, 247a.

*goku* = *kiwamete* very.

*goku-raku* heaven.

*gom-ben* 367b.

*go men* (see *men*).

*gomi* dirt, dust, rubbish; — *ga tatsu* dust rises.

*gomu* gum, rubber.

*Gongen* 78c.

*gon-go-dō-dau* (*gon-go* speech, *dō* way, *don* cut) unspeakable, monstrous.

*gongon* (of the sound of a bell).

*go-on* XI.

*go ran* (see *ran*).

*goro* (*ni*) = *koro* about (of time).

*gorori*, *gorogoro* (of a rumbling sound 335c.

- gorōzuru, gorōjiru* = *go ran na-saru* see 310.  
*go-sekku* five festivals 94g.  
*go-sho* imperial palace.  
*Goshūishū* 427d.  
*gotagota* (of disorder).  
*go-ten* palace.  
*-goto ni* every 321.  
*gotoku* = *yō ni* as, like; *an no gotoku* as expected 315.  
*gotoshi* is like 295a.  
*gazaimasu* 24.  
*gozaru* = *aru* be 191c.  
*go zen* Your (His) Grace 420b.  
*go zen* boiled rice, a meal.  
*go zen* = *hiru-mae* forenoon.  
*go-zō* the five organs; heart, lungs, stomach, liver, kidneys.  
*gū* stupid, my.  
*-gu-ai* xxvi adjustment, condition; —*ga warui* be out of fix.  
*gu-chi* silliness, twaddle; —*wo kobosu* grumble.  
*guchiru* be silly xb.  
*gudaguda ni you* get dead drunk.  
*gūgū* (of snoring).  
*gun* = *kōri* county 324a.  
*gun-kan* war vessel. [ernment.  
*gun-ken-seido* prefectural gov-  
*gun-zei* military force, army.  
*gurai* = *kurai* about 22b; (with  
*dore*) 43.  
*gururi, guruguru* round and  
round; *no gururi ni* around.  
*gu-sai* my (foolish) wife.  
*gu-soku* accoutrement.  
*guzuguzu* (of loitering, daw-  
dling or grumbling).  
*gwa* picture, drawing.  
*gwai* outside, beyond 386.  
*gwai-bun* reputation.  
*gwai-koku* foreign country 84e.
- gwaikoku-go* foreign language.  
*gwaikoku-jin* foreigner, Euro-  
pean 18g.  
*gwai mu-shō* Foreign Office.  
*gwai-shi* external history.  
*gwai-tō* overcoat.  
*gwan* = *negai* request, prayer;  
—*wo kakeru* make a vow.  
*gwan-jitsu* first day of the  
year.  
*gwan-kin* capital, principal.  
*gwan-nen* first year of a period.  
*gwan-rai* originally, in reality.  
*gwan-sho* petition (in writing).  
*gwatsu* month 74.  
*gyo* = *go* (honorific) 31.  
*gyō-kei* (of Empress or Crown  
Prince) 310.  
*gyō-kō* (of Emperor) 310.  
*gyoku* jewel 89d.  
*Gyokuhen* (dictionary) 89d.  
*gyō-mu* business. [official.  
*gyō-si-kwan* administrative  
*kyō-shin ni naru* retire 310.  
*gyō-sho* a style of writing 173a.  
*gyotto* (of consternation).  
*gyū-niku* beef.  
*gyū-nyū* cow's milk 90e.  
*ha* leaf.  
*ha* tooth.  
*haba* breadth; —*ga hiroi* is  
wide (opp. *semai*).  
*habakari nagara (desu ga)*  
247b, 399.  
*habakaru* be afraid, feed back-  
ward 247b.  
*habuku* reduce, abridge.  
*ha-butae* a kind of thin silk  
cloth.  
*hachi* bee.  
*hachi* pot, bowl; *o hachi* vessel  
to hold cooked rice 32.  
*hachi* eight.  
*Hachiman* 175a.

- hachi-ue* potted plant.  
*hada* naked body, skin;—*wo nugu* expose the shoulders.  
*hada-gi* undergarment, undershirt 380b.  
*hadaka no (na)* naked.  
*hadashi de* barefooted.  
*haeru* sprout, grow; *ta ni kusuga*—weeds grow in the paddy-field 366b.  
*ha-gaki* postal card. [236a.  
*hageru* be stripped off, get bald  
*hageshii* violent.  
*hagi* bush-clover.  
*hago* shuttlecock.  
*hago ita* battledore.  
*hagu* patch together. [236a.  
*hagu, hagasu* peel, strip off  
*(o) ha-guro* black tooth-dye 356.  
*haha* mother 421.  
*haha-oya* mother 421.  
*hai* have heard, yes, all right 356, 17h, 30d, 134a, 207b.  
*hai* ashes.  
*hai* housefly.  
*hai suru* abolish.  
*hai* unit 90.  
*hai, hai no sō, hai-sō* lungs.  
*hai-byō* consumption, phthisis.  
*hai-fuki* bamboo spittoon.  
*haikara* (high collar) a foreignized Japanese.  
*hai-ken suru* look at 309, 229a.  
*hairi-kireru* all go in.  
*hairu, haitte* enter 285b; *haitte kuru* come in; *haitte iru* be inside 44e.  
*hai-shaku suru* borrow 309.  
*hai-shi* abolition.  
*hai-tatsu* distribution, delivery.  
*haji* shame. [ed.  
*haji-iru* be very much ashamed  
*hajimaru* begin (intr.).
- hajime* beginning;—*ni (wa, ni wa)* at the first.  
*hajimemashite* 96b.  
*hajimeru* commence (tr.);—*wo hajime* 280.  
*hajimete* for the first time 162, 345;—*no* the first 97a.  
*hajiru* be ashamed; *kotae ni*—be shamed by the answer; *mugaku wo*—be ashamed of ignorance.  
*haka* grave.  
*hakama* loose trousers, divided skirt 124c.  
*hakanai* transient. [326c.  
*hakarazu (mo)* unexpectedly  
*hakaru* count, weigh, consider, contrive.  
*hakase*=*hakushi* doctor 208a.  
*Hakkenden* 319a. [clear.  
*hakkiri* distinctly;—*shita*  
*hako* box, case 82b.  
*hakobu* carry, transport, make progress; *hakobi ga tsukanai* progress is slow 241c.  
*Hakodate* 318a.  
*Hakone* 342c.  
*haku* vomit, spit. [etc.).  
*haku* wear (shoes, trousers, haku count 76c.  
*haku-butsu-kwan* museum.  
*haku-jō* confession.  
*haku-rai no* imported 374a.  
*haku-ran-kwai* exposition, fair.  
*haku-shi* doctor 208a.  
*haku-shu* clapping of hands.  
*hama* beach.  
*hama-be* seacoast.  
*hama-guri* clam.  
*ha-maki (tabako)* cigar 25a.  
*ham-bun* half.  
*hameru* insert, fit.  
*ham-mai* half a sheet, i. e., page.

- han* plate (for printing) edition.  
*han* half.  
*han* fief, clan, daimiate.  
*hana* flower. XXXIIA.  
*hana* nose, snout.  
*hana-ayame* variety of iris 192a.  
*hana-bi* fireworks.  
*hana-gami* paper used as a handkerchief.  
*hanakada* very, very much.  
*hanakadashii* extreme.  
*hana-ike* vase.  
*hana-mi* viewing the flowers.  
*hana-muko* groom 422.  
*hanareru* be separated 372.  
*hanashi* speech, conversation, story; *no—wo suru* speak of; —*wo shikakeru* address.  
*hanashi-ka* professional storyteller.  
*hana-shōbu* variety of iris 192a.  
*hanasu* separate 199.  
*hanasu* speak 199; *hanashite kikaseru* tell.  
*hanatsu* let loose, shoot 195.  
*Hanawa Hokiichi* 434a.  
*hana-yome* bride 422.  
*han-dan* decision, judgment.  
*hane* feather, wing, shuttlecock; —*wo tsuku* play shuttlecock.  
*haneru* bounce, leap.  
*Hanfu* 264c.  
*han-ji* judge 341b.  
*han-jō* prosperity.  
*hankechi* handkerchief.  
*han-kiri*, *han-kire* letter paper.  
*han-kuwa* prosperity.  
*han-shi* white native paper.  
*han-shō* fire bell, fire alarm.  
*han-tai* opposition, reverse 371.  
*ha-ori* [Japanese] coat.  
*hap-pu* hair and skin 348b.  
*hap-pu* promulgation.  
*hara* plain, moor, prairie.
- kara* abdomen, stomach; —*ga heru* (*suku*) get hungry 102a; —*ga tatsu*, —*wo kiteru* get angry.  
*harai-sageru* dispose of (public property) 271b, 381c.  
*kara-kiri* suicide by cutting the abdomen 186f.  
*harasu* clear off, dispel.  
*harau* clear away, sweep, pay.  
*hareru* clear off (of the sky).  
*hari* needle, sting.  
*hari-ko* papier-mache.  
*hari-tsuke* crucifixion 304a.  
*haru* spring 23c.  
*haru* stretch, extend, be distended; *kōri ga*—ice forms; *gō-jō wo*—be obstinate.  
*haru* spread, paste, cover.  
*harubaru* from a distance.  
*haruka no* far.  
*haru saki* early spring. [rain.  
*harusame* (*haru, ame*) spring  
*hasami* shears 22.  
*hasamu* pinch, put between, cut with shears.  
*ha-sen* shipwreck; —*suru* be wrecked (of a ship); —*ni au* be shipwrecked 89h.  
*haseru, hasete* go fast, run.  
*hashi* bridge; —*wo kakeru* build a bridge.  
*hashi* chopsticks.  
*hashi* extremity, end, beginning, margin.  
*hashira* post, pillar, unit 82.  
*hashiru, hashitte* go fast, run.  
*hashi-sen* bridge toll.  
*hashoru* (*hashi, oru*) tuck up (skirts).  
*hassuru* start, be produced.  
*hata* flag.  
*hata* side 385; —*kara* 378.  
*hata* loom; —*wa oru* weave.

- katashi* twenty years old 61.  
*katogo, katago-ryō, katago-sen*  
 price of lodging.  
*katake* field, garden.  
*kata-moto* 441a. [126a.  
*kataraku* work; work cheaply  
*katashite* after all, really 344a.  
*kate* interjection 415.  
*katasu* put an end to, complete.  
*kateru* end, be concluded.  
*-kateru, -katasu* 287.  
*kato* dove, pigeon.  
*katoba* wharf, pier.  
*hatsu-* 176a.  
*hatsu* unit for discharges of a  
 gun 197.  
*hatsu-datsu* = *hattatsu*.  
*hatsuka* twenty days, twentieth  
 day 61.  
*hatsuka-nesumi* mouse 2a.  
*hatsu-on* pronunciation. [year.  
*hatsu-yume* first dream of the  
*kat-tatsu* development xxix.  
*hatto* (of surprise) 329d.  
*kau* creep, crawl.  
*hayai* swift, early.  
*kayaru* prevail, be in fashion;  
*hayari no* fashionable.  
*haya-se* rapids.  
*kayashi* forest 186a.  
*kayasu* allow to grow long.  
*hazu* fitness; *hazu desu* ought  
 III, 193a. [116a.  
*hazukashii* ashamed, shameful  
*hazukashimeru* insult; *hazuka-*  
*shinne wo ukeru* be insulted.  
*hazure* end (of a town) 246c.  
*hazureru* be displaced, fail 372.  
*hazusu* displace, miss, avoid.  
*hebi* snake. [off 236a.  
*hegu, hegasu* = *hagu* peel, strip  
*hei* = *hai* yes, all right.  
*hei* fence, wall 120a.  
*hei*-soldiery.
- hei* = *hinoe* 367a.  
*hei-eki* military service.  
*hei-gai* evil, nuisance.  
*hei-hō* square 72b. [311d.  
*hei-ka* His (or Her) Majesty  
*Heike* 95b.  
*hei-ki* equanimity, indifference.  
*hei-min* common people, plebe-  
*hei-sotsu, hei-tai* soldier. [ian.  
*hei-zei* usually, ordinarily.  
*hen* region, vicinity 338.  
*hen* unit (of time) 80.  
*hen* left hand radical 367b.  
*hen na* strange, peculiar.  
*hen-ji* reply.  
*hen-kō* change.  
*hen-kwa* change, inflection.  
*hen-kyaku* returning (a borrow-  
 ed article).  
*herasu* = *hesu* decrease (tr.).  
*heru, hete* pass through.  
*heru, hette* decrease (intr.).  
*hesu* decrease (tr.).  
*heta na* unskilful 117b.  
*heya* room, apartment.  
*hi* sun, day, fire, burning coals;  
 —*ga kureru* the sun sets; —  
*ga deru* the sun rises; —*ni*  
*san do zutsu* three times a  
 day; —*ga tsuku* fire catches;  
 —*wo tsukeru (taku)* kindle  
 fire; —*wo dasu* start a conflag-  
 ration.  
*hi suru* compare.  
*hi-bachi* fire-box 37a.  
*hi-bana* spark.  
*hibari* skylark.  
*hibi ni, hibihibi* every day.  
*hibiku* resound, sound.  
*hi-bun* epitaph.  
*hidari no* the left.  
*Hidari Jingorō* 198d.  
*hi-deri* drought.  
*hi-dō ni* unjustly, cruelly.

*hidoi* cruel, dreadful; *xb* — *me ni au* have a dreadful experience.

*hieru* become cool, be cold.

*hi-gasa* parasol.

*higashi* east.

*hige* beard.

*hi gure* evening, twilight 232d.

*hiiki suru* favor, be partial to (with *wo* or *ni*).

*hi-jō ni* extraordinarily.

*hikaeru* be moderate.

*hi-kaku* comparison.

*hikari* light.

*hi-keshi* fireman.

[305a.

*hi-ketsu* rejection (of a motion)

*hiki* unit 83.

*hiki* = 2 *tan* (of cloth).

*hiki* 303.

*hiki-age* discharging (a cargo), unloading. [pare.

*hiki-awaseru* introduce, compare.

*hiki-dashi* drawer.

*hiki-kaeru* be contrary; *sore ni*

*hikikaete* on the contrary.

*hiki-homoru* stay at home (on account of mourning or sickness).

*hiki-korosu* kill by running over or by drawing asunder.

*hiki-nuku* pull up by the root.

*hiki-shio* ebb tide.

*hiki-tateru* favor, encourage.

*hiki-tatsu* improve; *hittatte mieru* look better.

*hiki-ukeru* take over, make one's self responsible for.

*hiki-suru* drag.

*hik-kaeru* return (intr.).

*hik-kakeru* suspend.

*hik-ki* memorandum, note.

*hik-komu* draw in, retire.

*hik-kosu* remove (residence)

203a.

*hik-kurikaeru* be overturned. *hik-kyō* after all.

*hiku* draw, pull; deduct, subtract 79; *te ni*—lead 370; *cha wo*—grind tea 412a; *kaze wo*—take cold; *koto wo*—play the *koto*; *kuji wo*—draw lots; *tatoe wo*—give an example; *jibiki wo*—consult a dictionary; *nedan wo*—reduce the price; *su wo*—draw a plan.

*hikui* low.

*hima* leisure; *ni*—*wo yaru* discharge;—*wo mite* finding time 276c.

*hi-mashi ni* day by day.

*hi-mawari* sunflower.

*hi-mei* sepulchral inscription.

*himojii* hungry.

*hi-moto* origin of a conflagration.

*him-pan ni naru* become bustling, busy.

(o) *hina* (*san*) doll, puppet 94b.

*hi-nan* censure, criticism

*hinata* sunny place, sunshine.

*hineru*, *kinette* twist.

*hi-no-de* sunrise 232d.

*hi-no-e*, *hi-no-to* 367a.

*hipparu* (*hiki-haru*) pull and stretch, bring along xxxi.

*hira-gana* syllabary xiv 186d.

*hirahira* (of waving motion).

*hirakeru* be opened, become civilized; *hiraketa* civilized.

*hiraku* open, begin, clear 222a.

*hirame* flounder, flatfish.

*hirari* like a flash.

*hirattai* flat.

*hire* fin.

*hi-rei* comparison, proportion.

*hirogaru* be spread abroad, extend.

*hirogeru* spread out, enlarge.

- hiroi* broad, spacious; *haba ga* —wide.
- hiromaru* be spread, propagated.
- hiromeru* spread, promulgate.
- Hiroskima* 413c.
- hirou* pick up, find.
- hiru* leech.
- hiru* noon, day-time, by day.
- hiru* dry, ebb.
- hiru-han* noonday meal.
- hiru-mae* forenoon.
- hiru-meshi* noonday meal.
- hiru-ne* midday nap 124b.
- hiru-sugi* afternoon.
- hi-ryō* fertilizer, manure 374b.
- hisashi* small roof over a door or window.
- hisashi-buri de* after a long interval 375e.
- hisashii* long continued.
- hisoka na* secret.
- Hitachi* 389a.
- hitai* forehead.
- hitaru* be immersed.
- hitasu* immerse, soak.
- hito* person, man; somebody 47; another 50; character 104d.
- hitobito* people.
- hito-e* single 64.
- hitoe-mono* unlined garment.
- hito-gomi* crowd.
- hito-goroshi* murder, murderer.
- hito-jini* violent death, loss of life.
- hito-kuchi* a bit, a little 321c; —*ni* at a mouthful, in a word 64, 434a, 436e.
- hito-mazu* once, for a while.
- hito-me ni* at a glance 64b.
- hito-omoi ni* on the impulse of the moment.
- hitori* one person 65a; *hitori de* alone; *hitori-de (ni)* spontaneously 321d, 338b.
- hitori-goto wo iu* talk to one's self. [240d.
- hito-sashi-yubi* index finger
- hito-suji ni* earnestly.
- hito-tōri* in the main, in a general way 64a.
- hitotsu* one; once 61. [one.
- hitotsu hitotsu* one by one, every
- ki-tsuke* incendiary.
- hitsu-yō no* necessary, essential.
- hit-tatsu* = *hikitatsu*.
- hit-teki* suru rival.
- hit-tsukamaeru* catch (vulgar).
- hi-uchi-gane* steel for striking fire. [fire.
- hi-uchi-ishi* flint for striking
- (o) *hiya* cold drinking water.
- hiyahiya* hear, hear 415.
- hiyakasu* cool, make a fool of 202a.
- hiya-mizu* cold water.
- hiyasu* cool.
- hiyayaka na* cool.
- hi-yō* expense, outlay.
- hiza* knee; —*wo kuzusu* 116b.
- Hisakurige* 432a.
- ho* ear (of grain). [sails.
- ho* sail; —*wo kakeru* spread
- ho* step; —*wo susumete* step by step.
- hō* cheek xxxi; —*wo fukurasu* puff out the cheeks (in anger).
- hō* = *hau* creep.
- hō* = *kata* direction, side, region, person; (in comparison) 132, 136, 113a, 153f; *kono*—I; *somo*—you 28. [137f.
- hō* law, teaching of Buddha
- hō* cannon 222b.
- ho-bashira* mast.
- (go) *hō-bi* reward 32. [where.
- hō-bō* several directions, every-



- ho-bune* sailboat.  
*hō-chikū suru* expel, dismiss.  
*Hōchikū* 460a.  
*hō-chō* kitchen knife.  
*kodo* quantity 340; (with *dore*) 43; (of result) 101, 409, 1971; (of degree) 136, 411a; as 329a; *ni mo —ga aru* 458c; —*no ii koto* flattery 357c.  
*kodo (mo) naku* in no time.  
*kodo yoku* agreeably, moderately 318b.  
*koeru* bark, howl.  
*(go) hō-gyo ni naru die* (of Emperor) 271c.  
*ko-hei* infantry xxv, 402b.  
*hō-hei* artillery.  
*kō-hō* method.  
*koko-emu* smile 247e. [will.  
*hoinoi (hou-i nai)* against one's  
*Hōjō* 165b, 343b.  
*koka* another place, thing or person; others 187e; —*no* other, else; —*ni* besides; *no* —*ni* besides, except, beyond 338a, 386; *souo—ni* besides that; —*de mo nai* 51.  
*ho-kake-bune* sailboat.  
*Hokēkyō* 248f.  
*hō-ken* feudalism; —*seido* feudal system 324a.  
*hōki* broom.  
*Hokkaidō* 306d, 318a.  
*Hokke* 248f.  
*hō-kō* domestic service. [rises.  
*hokori* dust; —*ga tatsu* dust  
*hoku* = *kita* north 107b.  
*hokuhoku* (of joy).  
*hon-bako* bookcase.  
*homeru* praise.  
*(go) hō-mon* visit, call 216, 247d.  
*hom-pō* our country.  
*hōmuru* bury.  
*hon* book.  
*hon* unit 83, 87. [317a.  
*hon-* the chief, the said, this  
*hon no* real.  
*hon dana* bookshelf.  
*Hondō, Hondo* 81e.  
*hon dō* chief hall (of temple).  
*hone* bone; —*wo oru* exert one's self.  
*hone-ori* effort.  
*honuori* (of redness).  
*hon-tō ni* true, real xxv.  
*hon-yaku* translation.  
*hon zōn* chief idol.  
*hoppeta (hō, heta)* cheek.  
*hora* conch.  
*hora-fuki* braggart 433g. [by.  
—*ni hore-komu* be captivated  
—*ni horeru* fall in love with.  
*hori* ditch, canal, moat.  
*hori-dasu* dig out, unearth.  
*Horikiri* 192d.  
*hori-mono* carving, engraving, tattooing 197a.  
*hō-ritsu* law, statute.  
*horobiru* be overthrown.  
*horobosu* overthrown.  
*horori, horohoro* (of teardrops).  
*horu* dig, carve.  
*hōru*, throw; *hotte oku* let alone, be indifferent.  
*hoshi* star; —*wo sasu* hit the target 454a.  
*hoshigaru* desire 152a.  
*hoshii* desiring 152a.  
*hō-shin* direction, aim, policy.  
*ho-shu-tō* Conservative Party.  
*hō-sō* small-pox.  
*hosoi* thin, narrow, fine.  
*hoso-nagai* slender, slim.  
*hoso-nawa* cord, twine 240c.  
*hos-shin* [Buddhist] conversion.  
*hossuru* desire 407a.  
*hosu* dry, ventilate; *hi ni—* dry in the sun.

*hō-*tei** court (of justice).  
*hō-tō* prodigality.  
*hotoke* a buddha; —*ni naru* be made a saint, die.  
*hutoondo* almost, very much.  
*hotori* beside, near 385.  
*hotologisu* cuckoo.  
*hot-tan* beginning.  
*hoya* (*hi-ya*) lamp chimney.  
*ho-yō* recreation.  
*hō-yū* friend.  
*kyakkwasensho* cyclopedia 88b.  
*kyaku* hundred; —*man* million.  
*kyakushō* peasant.  
*kyō-ban* reputation, popularity, rumor; *no* —*wo suru* talk about.  
*kyō-dai* title (of a book).  
*kyō-gi* consultation.  
*Hyōgo* 404d.  
*kyoi* to suddenly, accidentally; *kyoikyoi* to 329a.  
*kyō-men* surface, exterior.  
*kyorohyoro* (of staggering).  
*kyō-satsu* doorplate.  
*kyō-shi* beat, time, occasion; *tohu*—*ni* in the act of leaping.  
*kyō-tan* gourd, flask for liquor.  
*kyotto* = *kyoi* to.  
*i* stomach.  
*i* 129b.  
*i-baru* be haughty 284a, 267c.  
*ibiki* *wo kaku* snore.  
*i-butsu* = *yui-motsu* legacy, relics 380a.  
*i-butsu-ron* materialism 380a.  
*i-byō* dyspepsia.  
*ichi* market.  
*ichi* one, a whole 70; —*ji* one o'clock, for a while 70a; *ichi no jō* first volume, first part.  
*i-chi* position, situation, standpoint, xxix.  
*ichi-ba* market place.

*ichi-dō* as a whole, all 341.  
*ichi-ichi* one by one 433d  
*ichi-men* (*ni*) all over the surface.  
*Ichinoseki* 188c.  
*idasu* = *dasu* 287.  
*ideru* = *deru* 190a.  
*ido* well.  
*ido bata* brink of a well.  
*ie* house, family, 198f, 386b.  
*ie-gara* lineage, rank 217a.  
*ieie ni* in every house.  
*Ieyasu* 78c, 392b.  
*i-gaku* medical science.  
*i-gakushi* graduate in medicine.  
*Igirisu* England.  
*i-go* afterwards 385b.  
*i-gon* = *yui-gon* will 380a.  
*ii* = *yoi*.  
*ii-dasu* utter, begin to speak.  
*iee* no 356, 193c.  
*ii-haru* insist.  
*ii-kaeru* say in other words.  
*i-in* committee; —*ni ageru* appoint as a committee.  
*ii-tsukeru* command, tell.  
*ii-tsumeru* silence (in debate).  
*ii-wake* excuse.  
*i-ji* disposition, temper, obstinacy; —*no warui* ill-natured, obstinate.  
*ijiru, ijitte* meddle with, tease.  
*i-jō* over 383; alter 406.  
*i-jū suru* emigrate.  
*ika* cuttle-fish.  
*ika ni* how? 354a; *ika naru* (classical) = *dō iu*.  
*i-ka* under 384.  
*ikaga* (*ika ni ka*) how? 351; —*desu ka* how are you? I don't know 330a. [ary.  
*ikan-to-nareba* because (liter-  
*ika-ni-mo* indeed, very 415.  
*Ikao* 184g.

*ika-sama* very true 415.  
*ike* pond.  
*ike-dori ni suru* take alive.  
*ike-gaki* hedge 129a.  
*i-ken wo suru* reprove.  
*ikenai* (potential of *iku*).  
*ikeru* keep alive (a flower),  
 put into a vase.  
*iki* breath.  
*iki-atari* 326b.  
*iki-chigau* go in opposite direc-  
 tions without meeting.  
*iki-kaeru* revive, be refreshed.  
*iki-nari* abruptly, on the spur of  
 the moment 326b. [rate 364.  
*ikioi* power; *sono—de* at that  
*ikiru* survive; *ikita* alive.  
*iki-sugiru* go too far, exceed ;  
*ikisugita* concealed.  
*iki-todoku* = *yukitodoku*.  
*iki-tsumaru* get to a place  
 where one can go no further.  
*iki-utsushi* a copy true to life.  
*iki-wataru* = *yukiwataru*.  
*ik-ka* how many days? 65 ;  
 which day? 43.  
*ik-ka-chū* the body of a feudal  
 lord's retainers.  
*ik-kō* entirely, at all.  
*ikku* 432a.  
*ikkyū* 434c.  
*iku* go 221, 123a; *ikanai* it  
 won't do; *ikenai* it's of no  
 use 29b; *-te wa ikenai* must  
 not 102, 167; *wake ni wa*  
*ikanai* 369b.  
*iku-bun-ka* somewhat.  
*ikura* how much? [war.  
*ikusa* war; *—wo suru* make  
*ikutari* how many persons?  
*ikutsu* how many? 63, 69; *o—*  
 how old? 30g.  
*ima* now 36a; = *mō* more 34Ca;  
*—no* the present 72d; *—ni*

until now, soon 366e; *—de*,  
*—ni natte*, *—ni shite* under  
 present circumstances 364b.  
*ima-gata* a moment ago.  
*ima-goro (ni)* about this time  
 340a.  
*imaimashii* unlucky, disgusting,  
 confounded. [a time.  
*ima-sara* no longer, after so long  
*imashigata* a moment ago.  
*i-mi* meaning, purport.  
*imo* potato 80a.  
*imōto* younger sister 422.  
*in* shade, negative, female 390b.  
*in wo musubu* make magical  
 signs.  
*ina* = *-nai* 398.  
*ina-bikari* lightning; *—ga suru*  
 it lightning.  
*inaka* country (opp. city).  
*ina-zuma* lightning 137e.  
*in-chō* superintendent, presi-  
 dent (of a hospital) 164b.  
*Indoyō* Indian Ocean.  
*ine* rice plants; *—wo karu* har-  
 vest the rice.  
*in-kyo* retirement 410.  
*inochi* life.  
*inoru* pray 370.  
*inu* dog; *—chikushō* 41d.  
*inukoro* pup 8b.  
*inuru* return 240.  
*ip-pai* one vesselful 90c, 135c;  
*—yarakasu* take a drink  
 342d; *sei—(ni)* with all one's  
 might; *—haitta* full.  
*ip-pan ni* generally, at large.  
*ip-po* one step. [90d.  
*ip-puku* a smoke, a cup of tea  
*i-rai* since, hereafter 378a.  
*i-rai* request.  
*irassharu (iraserareru)* be, stay,  
 come, go (polite) 189, 268,  
 310, 191a.

- ire-kaeru* put in afresh; *kororo wo*—repent.  
*ireru* put into; *irete aru* be in 44e; *go ran ni*—show.  
*-ireru* 287.  
*ire-zumi* tattooing 197a.  
*iri-kawaru* enter by turns.  
*iri-kuchi* entrance.  
*iri-kunda* complicated 128b.  
*iri-mame* roasted beans.  
*iri-yō* need 37b.  
*iro* color, kind 64.  
*i-ro-ha* syllabary xxxi.  
*iro-iro no (na)* various; —*ni* or *to* in various ways 209b.  
*ironna* = *iroiro na*.  
*iru, ite* be (of living things), live 20b, 41a, 157b; (with subordinative) 9, 89b, 163; *shita ni iro* 152c.  
*iru, itte* enter be needed, set; *te ni*—be received; *ki ni*—be liked; *iri ga aru (ōi)* attendance is large.  
*iru, itte* parch, roast 245.  
*-iru* 287.  
*i-sai (ni)* minutely, in detail.  
*isamashii* brave, intrepid.  
*isameru* admonish.  
*isamu* be bold.  
*Ise* 348.  
*i-sha* physician; —*ni kakaru* consult a physician; —*wo tanomu* call a physician; —*ni mite morau* be examined by a physician.  
*ishi* stone; checker 359d; —*ken* (a game) 196a.  
*i-shi* will, volition.  
*ishi-gaki* stone wall.  
*Ishikawa Goemon* 358c.  
*i-shin* renovation, reformation.  
*i-shō* clothes xxix, 358e.  
*isogashii* busy.
- isogu* hurry.  
*is-sai* altogether, at all. [day.  
*is-sakujitsu* day before yester-  
*is-sakunen* year before last.  
*is-setsu* entirely, at all 350a.  
*go is-shin* the Restoration.  
*is-shō* one's whole life; = *kem-  
 mei ni* with all one's might  
 71d; *kyūshi*—460d.  
*is-sho ni* in the same place, to-  
 gether; *to—ni* with 372; *go  
 —itasu* go along.  
*is-shu* one kind.  
*isso (no koto)* rather 350b.  
*is-sō* doubly, more.  
*is-sun*  $\frac{1}{10}$  *shaku*, a little bit.  
*isu* chair.  
*ita* board.  
*ita-bei* board fence 129a.  
*itadaki* summit.  
*itadaku* receive with respect  
 213a, 227, 308.  
*itai* painful.  
*itameru* injure, afflict.  
*itami* pain.  
*itami-irimasu* 193g.  
*itanu* ache, be hurt.  
*itaru* reach;—*tokoro* every-  
 where.  
*itasa* pain 22a. [of necessity.  
*itashikata (mo) naku* perforce,  
*itasu* do 309; *dō itamashite*  
 426.  
*itatte* exceeding, very. [428b.  
*itazura wo suru* be in mischief  
*it-chi* union xxix.  
*it-chō-me* 95e.  
*ito* thread, raw silk 240c.  
*Itō-Hakubun* 461a.  
*itoko* cousin.  
*itoma* leisure, leave; (o)—*mōsu*  
 take one's leave.  
 (o) *itoma-goi* leave-taking;—  
*ni deru* pay a parting call.

- itonamu* do, work at *itsu*=*ichi* one;—*ni* chiefly, particularly.
- itsu* when? 42a,—*ka* at some time; *itsu no wa ni ka* no one knows when 329c;—*tabe-te mo* whenever I eat it 169b;—*mo* every time 411b;—*mo no o isha san* family physician 402c;—*mo no tōri* as usual;—*de mo* at any time always, never.
- iitsu-goro* about when?
- itsu-ka* five days, fifth day.
- itsu-nari to=iitsu de mo* 327.
- itsutsumi* five.
- it-tai* (one body)=*sentai* 350.
- it-tan* once 70a. [*iu yan*] 245.
- itte* (subordinative of *iku*, *iru*,
- it-ten no* (one point) a single.
- it-tō* first class 71a.
- iu* say 245; *iwaba* 245; *iu made mo nai* 379; *itte oku*, *itte yaru* tell 227, 248e; *kō iu*, etc., 39b; *sō iu n' ja nai* 273a; *to iu*, *to iu to* 54, 396b; *to iu mono*, *to iu koto* I, 126b; *to iu koto desu* 275b; *to iu no de* 246a; *to ii*, *to wa ii nagara* 280; *to itte* (*tote*, 'tte) 167, 401; *to iedomo* 171; 'ttau 246; *nan to mo ienai* 342b.
- iwa* rock.
- iwaeru*=*yuwaeu* bind, fasten.
- iwai-bi* holiday.
- iwashi* sardine.
- iwanu* celebrate.
- iwayuru* so-called.
- iya na* disagreeable 91e; *o—de nakuba* 100a.
- iya* (classical) more and more.
- iya-garu* dislike.
- i-yaku* breaking a promise 70a.
- iyoiyo* increasingly, after all, certainly.
- Isanagi*, *Isanami* 121h.
- i-sen* previously 348, 385b, 406.
- isumi* fountain.
- isure*=*nani*, *dore*; *isure* (*ni shite mo*) at all events, anyhow 305b.
- ja*=*de wa* 35e; 191b.
- ja* serpent (large).
- jaga-imo*=*jagataraimo*.
- jagatara-imo* Irish potato 80a.
- ja-kō* musk.
- ja-ma* 218e, hindrance; *no—wo suru* be in the way of; *o—wo suru* disturb.
- janjan* (of a firebell).
- jan-ken* 196a.
- ji* character, ideogram, letter, word;—*wo hiku* look up a word 88c.
- ji* hour 70, 75.
- ji-biki* dictionary 88c;—*wo-hiku* consult a dictionary 160d.
- ji-bun* self 57, 338b.
- ji-bun* time 84c, 407.
- jibun-katte ni* selfishly, inconsiderately.
- ji-chi-sei* self-government.
- ji-dai* age, epoch;—*no aru* antique.
- ji-dō* child 264c.
- ji-dōsha* automobile.
- (o) *jigi wo suru* make a bow.
- ji-gō ji-toku* 57.
- ji-goku* hell.
- ji-gyo* work, undertaking, enterprise.
- jihhi* pity, benevolence.
- jihhi-bukai* merciful, benevolent.
- (o) *iji san* grandfather, old gentleman 422a.

- jiji*, *jijii* grandfather, old man 442d.  
*ji-jitsu* fact.  
*ji-jō* condition, circumstances, special reasons.  
*jika ni* immediately 321e.  
*ji-kan* period of time, time, hour.  
*ji-ken* after, case.  
*jiki (ni)* immediately 321e.  
*jiki-so* direct appeal.  
*jik-kan=eto* 367a.  
*jik-ko* carrying into practice.  
*ji-kō* climate, weather.  
*ji-kōku* time, hour.  
*ji-koku* one's own country.  
*ji-man* pride 57.  
*jim-bō* popularity;—*no aru* popular.  
*ji-men* lot (of ground).  
*jin-min* people.  
*jin* god xxxc.  
*jin=misunoe* 367a.  
*(go) ji-nan* second son 422.  
*jin-dai* age of the gods;—*moji* 277b.  
*jin-ja* Shinto shrine.  
*jin-jō* ordinary grade 55a.  
*jin-ki=ninki*. [ulous.  
*jin-kō* population;—*no ōi* pop-  
*jin-riki-sha* (man power ve-  
 hicle) riksha.  
*jin-sei* human life 295a.  
*jin-shu* race (ethnological).  
*jin-soku* rapidity.  
*jirakasu jirasu* tease, tantalize.  
*jireru* be irritated.  
*ji-san suru* bring, take 231b.  
*ji-satsu* suicide 57.  
*ji-setsu* season;—*gara* 217a.  
*ji-shin* self 57.  
*ji-shin* earthquake, —*gu yuru* (*suru*) there is an earth-  
 quake.
- ji-sho* dictionary 88c.  
*ji-sho* land, lot of ground.  
*ji-shu* voluntary confession.  
*jis-sai* actual conditions, prac-  
 tice, in reality of 356b.  
*jis-shi* carrying into practice.  
*ji-ten* dictionary 89d.  
*ji-ten-sha* (self move vehicle)  
 bicycle 366d.  
*jitsu* day (in composition).  
*jitsu* truth;—*ni* truly, really,  
 indeed;—*wa* to tell the  
 truth.  
*jitsu-mei-shi* noun 1a.  
*jitto* steadily, with concentra-  
 tion.  
*ji-yū na* free 121a, 347d.  
*jiyū-iō* Liberal Party.  
*ji-zen* charity, benevolence.  
*jizen-shi* charity fair.  
*jizō* 204b.  
*jo=onna* woman.  
*jo=waru* divide 79.  
*jō* feeling, affection, passion.  
*jō* lock.  
*jō=kakeru* multiply 79.  
*jō=io shaku* 70.  
*(o) jō san* girl, miss, 422, 421b.  
*jō* article, item.  
*jō* letter, epistle.  
*jō=ba* place (in composition).  
*jō* upper (in composition) 94a;  
 —*jō no* 383.  
*jō-bi-gun* standing army 357a.  
*(go) jō-bu na* strong, robust,  
 healthy.  
*jō-bukuro* envelope 19.  
*jo-chū* maidservant 386a, 298a.  
*jō-dan* jest [down.  
*jō-ge* above and below, up and  
*jō-go* sot 192.  
*jō-ju suru* be accomplished,  
 succeed.  
*jō-ki* steam.

*jōki-sen* steam-boat.  
*jō-mae* = *jō* lock.  
*jō-rei* regulation, rule.  
*jō-seki* upper seat.  
*jō-shi* girl, female, woman.  
*jō-shin* report to a superior.  
*Jōshū* 248g.  
*jō-tō* first class 71a.  
*jō-yaku* contract, treaty; —*wo musubu* make a treaty.  
*jōzu na* skilful 117b.  
*jū* gun, rifle, arms.  
*jū* ten.  
*-jū* 386.  
*jū-bako* set of lacquered boxes; —*yomi* 19, 77b.  
*ju-ban* undergarment.  
*jū-bun na* sufficient.  
*-ni jū-ji suru* work at, be engaged in.  
*jū-ji-ka* cross 304a.  
*jū-jutsu, jū-jitsu* wrestling.  
*juku suru* become ripe, mature.  
*jum-ban ni* in turn.  
*ju myō* life.  
*jū-ni-shi* zodiacal signs 367a.  
*jun-jo* order.  
*jun-kwai* going round, tour.  
*jun-rei* pilgrimage, pilgrim.  
*jun-sa* policeman.  
*jutsu* art, procedure.  
*jū zai nin* felon.  
*ka* mosquito.  
*ka* (interrogative particle) 397, 17g, 45, 47; *to ka* 397, 398; *ka to* 108e, 397, *ka wo* 270c; *ka mo shirenai* 153b.  
*-ka* day 64.  
*ka* house, family (in composition) 16, 87a, 386a.  
*ka* = *kuwaeru* add 79.  
*ka* unit 86.  
*ka* lower (in composition) 94, 311d, 403e.

*o kā sama* your mother 421.  
*kaban* trunk, satchel.  
*kabe* plastered wall 1:9a.  
*kabi* mold; —*ga kaeru* become moldy.  
*kabiru* mold.  
*kabura, kabu* turnip.  
*kaburu* wear on the head.  
*kabuto* helmet.  
*kachi de* afoot.  
*(o) kachin* = *mochi* 232.  
*kado* gate 248b.  
*kado-guchi* door, entrance.  
*kada-matsu* pines placed by the gate at New Year's 388b.  
*ka e* 458e.  
*kae-dasu* bail out.  
*Kaei* 74.  
*kaeru* frog.  
*kaeru, kaete* change, exchange.  
*kaeru, kaete* clear out (a well).  
*kaeru, kaette* return; *kaette kuru* come back; *okaeri* 278a.  
*kaeru, kaette* be hatched.  
*kaeru* be bought, be purchasable 259.  
*-kaeru* 291.  
*kaeshi-kiru* return all.  
*kaesu* return; *ada wo*—take revenge.  
*kaesu* hatch.  
*-kaesu* 291. [exceedingly.  
*kaesugaesu (mo)* repeatedly,  
*kaette* on the contrary, rather.  
*Kaga* 118c.  
*kagami* mirror 120.  
*kage* shadow; *(o)*—*sama*) influence, aid 364; *yama no*—*ni* behind the mountain 384.  
*ka-gen* temper, state 33b; *ii*—*ni suru* moderate 458b; —*ga ii* feel well.

*kagiri* limit;—*no aru* limited; —(*ni wa* or *wa*) as long as, unless, without 407.  
*kagiru*, *kagitte* limit 398a.  
*kago* basket, cage.  
*kagu* smell.  
*kai-hi* maidservant 298a. [to.  
 —*kai ga aru* it's worth while  
*kai* shell, shellfish.  
*kai* sea (in composition).  
*kai-ageru* purchase (of the Government).  
*kai-chiku* improvement, repair.  
*kai-dō* highway.  
*kai-gan* sea-shore, bund.  
*kai-gara* empty shell.  
*kai-gwai* oversea. [ment.  
*kai-hatsu* opening, develop-  
*kai*=*kayui* itchy.  
*kai-inu* house dog.  
*kai-ko* silk-worm 248g.  
*kai-koku* opening the country.  
*kai-kyo* strait. [52d.  
*kai-mono ni iku* go shopping  
*kai-ri* knot 189c.  
*kai-ryō* improvement, reform.  
*kai-sei* revision. [in *harakiri*.  
*kai-shaku-nin* assistant, second  
*kai-sho* square script 173a.  
*kai-sui-yoku* sea bathing.  
*kaji* rudder, helm.  
*kaji-bō* shafts, thills.  
*kajiru*, *kajitte* gnaw.  
*ka-jō* article, item.  
*kaka*=*okka san* mamma.  
*kakā* wife (vulgar) 421.  
*kakaeru* embrace, employ.  
*kak-ageru* hoist, publish 286a.  
*kakari* the one in charge 184d.  
*kakaru* be hung, engaged, involved 306f; *moya ga*—a mist hangs 268c; *kuchi ga*—be in demand; *ni*—371; amount to, take 166d.

—*kakaru* 292.  
*kake* wager, credit. [credit.  
*kake de kau (toru)* buy on  
*kake-dasu* run out.  
*kake-ji*=*kake-mono*.  
*kake-mono* hanging scroll.  
*kake-ne* fictitious price;—*wo iu* (*suru*) ask too much.  
*kakeru* hang (tr.), apply, inflict, multiply; *hashi wo*—build a bridge; *ho wo*—spread sails; *kane wo*—stake money; *misu wo*—sprinkle water; *nasowo*—propound a riddle; *megane wo*—put on glasses; *mekata wo*—determine the weight; *gwan wo*—make a vow; *dempō wo* send a telegram; *o me ni*—show.  
*-kakeru* 292.  
*kakeru* run 168c.  
 —*ni kakete* until.  
*kake-tori* collector of bills.  
*ka-ketsu* adoption (of a motion).  
*kaki* persimmon.  
*kaki* oyster.  
*kaki* fence, enclosure 129a.  
*kaki-gara* oyster-shell.  
*kaki-ireru* write in, mortgage.  
*kaki-kaeru* rewrite.  
*kaki-mono* document 164c.  
*kaki-ne* fence 129a.  
*kaki-nokosu* leave a written message.  
*kaki-tome* registration (postal).  
*kaki-toru* write at dictation.  
*kaki-tsukeru* note down.  
*kak-ka* Excellency 311d.  
*kak-ke* beriberi 402a.  
*kak-kō* shape, form; —*ni suru* sell at a reasonable price 328a.  
*kakoi* enclosure.  
*kakoi-mono* mistress, concubine.  
*kakou* enclose, keep.



*kaku*- every, all 270b.  
*kaku* scratch; *ibiki wo*—snore.  
*kaku* suffer from; *ase wo*—per-  
 spire 133a.  
*kaku* write, draw.  
*kaku*=*kō* thus; —*no gotoki*=  
*kō in yō na*.  
*kaku-betsu* (*ni*) exceptionally,  
 particularly.  
*kaku-chi* various localities.  
*kaku-jitsu ni* every other day.  
*kakureru* be hidden 58a; die  
 77a, 271c.  
*kakushi* pocket.  
*kaku-shu* various sorts.  
*kakusu* hide; *mi wo*—58a.  
*kama* kettle, pot for cooking.  
*kama* sickle.  
*kamai-tsukeru* pay attention to.  
*kamakiri* mantis.  
*Kamakura* 122c.  
*kamau* heed, mind 92a, 135c,  
 169c, 317f, 355, 371.  
*kam-ben* patience, forbearance.  
*kam-bun* Chinese literature.  
*kam-byō* nursing the sick.  
*kame* jar.  
*kame* tortoise, turtle.  
*Kameido* 118d.  
*kame-no-ko* tortoise, turtle.  
*kame-no-kō* tortoise-shell 144a.  
*kami*=*ue* above; —*no ma* up-  
 per room.  
*kami* (*sama*) god 224a.  
 (o) *kami* lord, government 358a.  
*o kami san* wife, mistress of the  
 house 47b, 421b.  
*kami* hair; —*no ke* hair of the  
 head; —*wo yuu* dress the  
 hair; —*wo karu* cut the hair.  
*kami* paper.  
*kami-ii*=*kamiyui* xxv.  
*kami-ire* pocket-book.  
*kami-kudaku* crunch 285.

*kami-makitabako* cigarette 25a.  
*kami-nari* thunder; —*ga ochiru*  
 lightning strikes.  
*kami-shimo* full dress 166a.  
*kami-sori*, *kamisuri* razor.  
*kami-yui*, *kamisi* hair dresser.  
*kamo* wild duck.  
*kamoi* upper groove, lintel.  
*kam-pō-i* old style doctor  
 145a.  
*kam-puku* admiration 370.  
*kamu* chew, bite.  
*kamuru*=*kaburu*.  
*kan*=*aida* interval 75, 385.  
*kan* epilepsy, irritability; —*no*  
*tsuyoi* irritable, peevish.  
*kan* man-of-war.  
*Kan* China x1c, 122a.  
*Kan* Korea 122a.  
*kana* syllabic character x1x.  
*kana-butsu* metallic image of a  
 god or a buddha.  
*ka-nai* household, wife 421,  
 87a, 386a.  
*kana-majiri* xx11.  
*kanamono* hardware xxva.  
*kanarasu* surely, without fail.  
*ka-nari* tolerably, passably.  
*kanashii* sad 437b.  
*kanata* there 337.  
*kana-tsuki* xx11.  
*kanau* accord, suit, obtain;  
*negattari kanattari* 176.  
*kan-chū* cold season 386.  
*Kanda* 17f.  
*kan-dan-kei* thermometer.  
*kan-dō suru* be affected 370.  
*kane* metal 120c, money, bell;  
 =*kaguro* 356a.  
*Kaneaki* 427d.  
*kane-bako* money box xxxa.  
*kanegane* formerly.  
*kane-ire* purse.  
*kane-mochi na* (*no*) rich 120.

- kaneru* at the same time do two (things) or occupy two (positions) 217c.  
*-kaneru* 292.  
*kanete* previously. [68]  
*kane-sashi* carpenter's foot-rule  
*kangae* thought; *no-wo kiku* seek the advice of.  
*kangae-naosu* change one's mind.  
*kangaeru* think, reflect.  
*kangae-tsuku* call to mind, invent. [112a].  
*kan-gakusha* Chinese scholar  
*kan-go* Chinese word 11c.  
*kan-goku*, *kangoku-sho* prison.  
*kan-ja* spy.  
*kan-ji* Chinese character 11c.  
*kanji-iru* feel great admiration.  
*kanjiki* snowshoe.  
*kan-jin na* important, vital.  
*kan-jō* account, bill 246d.  
*kankan* (of the sound of a bell).  
*kan-kwa* influence; *—wo kōmuru* be influenced.  
*kan-nin* forbearance.  
*Kano* 225d.  
*ka-no-e*, *ka-no-to* 367a.  
*kan-on* xi.  
*Kanōsan* 375c.  
*kan-seki* Chinese books.  
*kan-setsu ni* indirectly.  
*kan-shin* admiration 370.  
*kan-shō* interference 372.  
*kan-tan ni* simply, briefly.  
*kan-tei* judging a curio.  
*kan-tō-shi* interjection 414a.  
*kan-yō na* important, essential.  
*kan-zashi* (*kami-sashi*) hairpin.  
*kanzuru*, *kanjiru* be moved 370; *ongi ni*—feel grateful for kindness.  
*kao* face; *—no ii* beautiful; *—wo dasu* show one's face.  
*kap-puku* = *kanndiri* 186f.  
*kan* shell, hull.  
*kara* from, after, since 378, 401; through 429a; (with passive) 261; = *de* 381c.  
*kara* collar (European).  
*kara* empty; *kara ni suru* empty.  
*kara* Chinese, foreign 168a.  
*karada* body.  
*karai* bitter, acrid 106.  
*kara-kami* wall paper, sliding wall paper doors 168a.  
*kara-kane* bronze, [ter] 326.  
*karakara* (of rattling or laugh-  
*kara-kasa* [Japanese] umbrella.  
*karakau* banter 371.  
*karappō* = *kara* empty.  
*karari* completely.  
*kara-shishi* lion.  
*karasu* crow, raven.  
*kare* he, she 28b.  
*kare-kore* about 28b.  
*kareru* wither, perish. [ally].  
*kari ni* temporarily, provision-  
*kari-inu* hunting dog.  
*kariru* borrow, rent 142.  
*kari-tsuke no mise* a store where credit is given.  
*karanzuru* despise 215.  
*karu* cut, mow.  
*karu* hunt.  
*karu* = *kariru* borrow.  
*karu* light of weight.  
*Karuizawa* 185a.  
*karuta wo toru* play cards.  
*karyūdō* hunter 84h.  
*kasa* umbrella 263a; *—wo sasu* hold up an umbrella.  
*kasanaru* be piled up.  
*kasane* unit 83.  
*kasanegasane* over and over.  
*kasaneru* pile one on another.  
*kasanete* repeatedly.

*kasegu* toil, work at.  
*kashi-hon* circulating library book 359f.  
*kashikoi* clever, shrewd.  
*kashikomaru* respectfully acquiesce 208c.  
*Kashima* 438c.  
*kashira* head, chief.  
*-ka-sho* unit 86.  
*kas-sai* cheers, applause.  
*kas-sen* battle.  
*kasu* residue, dregs.  
*kasu* lend, rent.  
*kasuka ni* faintly, dimly.  
*kasumi* haze 268c.  
*kasuteira* sponge cake XIII.  
*kasu-suke* a kind of pickle 108b.  
*kata* shoulder.  
*kata* form, pattern, mold.  
*kata* side, person; *ano* (o) — he, she 7a, 7b, 28.  
*katachi* form, shape. [166a.  
*kata-ginu* shoulder garment  
*katai* hard; *-gatai* 110.  
*kata-kana* syllabary XIX, 186d.  
*kataki* foe.  
*katamukeru* incline, bend.  
*katamuku* incline, lean.  
*katana* sword 83a. [xx, 50.  
*katappō* (*kata*, *hō*) one of a pair  
*kataru* speak, tell.  
*kata-te* one hand.  
*katawa* cripple.  
*katawara* side 385.  
*kata-sukeru* lay aside, put in order, dispose of, marry off (a daughter); *ato wo*—clear away things.  
*ka-tō* low class 71a.  
*Katō Kiyomasa* 440f.  
*katsu* win a victory 371.  
*Katsu Awa* 393b.  
*katsugu* carry on the shoulder.  
*katsuo* bonito.

*katsuo-bushi* dried bonito 202b.  
*katsura* vine.  
*katsuretsu* cutlet XIII.  
*katsute* once before (formal).  
*katte* kitchen.  
*kat-te* one's own convenience; —*ni* selfishly 191d.  
*katte-gamashii* apparently inconsiderate 110.  
*kau* buy 244, 364.  
*kau* keep (animals) 244.  
*kawa* river.  
*kawa* skin, hide, bark.  
*kawa* side 385c.  
*kawai-garu* love, be fond of.  
*kawaii* lovely, charming.  
*kawairashii* = *kawaii*.  
*kawaisō na* pitiable.  
*kawakasu* dry, desiccate.  
*kawaku* dry (intr.).  
*kawara* dry river-bed 133b.  
*kawara* tile.  
*kawari* change, substitute; — *mo nai* unchanging; —*ni* instead 387, 408.  
*kawarigawari* (*ni*) alternately, by turns.  
*kawaru* be changed, substituted; *kawatta* different.  
*-kawaru* 291.  
*Kawasaki* 301.  
*kawasu* exchange.  
*kaya* rush.  
*ka-ya* mosquito net 186e.  
*kayō na* such 39.  
*kayō* go back and forth.  
*(o) kayu* rice gruel.  
*kayui*, *kaii* itchy.  
*kasari* decoration.  
*kasaru* decorate.  
*kaze* wind; —*wo hiku* (*mesu*) take cold; —*ga fuku* a wind blows; —*ga yamu* the wind goes down.

*kazoe doshi* inclusive 78h.  
*kasôeru* count, number.  
*kâ-zoku* household, family 87a.  
*kazu* number.  
*Kazûsa* 375c.  
*ke fur.*  
*-kê* house, family 34h, 87a.  
*ke-byô* feigned sickness.  
*kechi na* stingy.  
*kechinbô* miser 232b.  
*kedamono* beast 346a.  
*kêdo*=*kêredo*.  
*kê-ga* wound 146h, 159a; *te wo*  
*—suru* get a wound in the  
 hand 214.  
*kei-ba* horse race.  
*Keichô* 359c.  
*kei-dai* enclosure 386.  
*kei-ki* expenses. [code.  
*kei-kô* criminal law, criminal  
*kei-ken* experience.  
*kei-ki* appearance, state of  
 trade; *—ga yoi* times are  
 good.  
*kei-ki-kyû* balloon.  
*kei-ko* study, practice 77c.  
*kei-kwaku* plan, scheme.  
*Keiô* 74.  
*kei-satsu* police 208b.  
*keisatsu-sho* police station.  
*kei-sei* state, condition.  
*kei-shokû* scenery.  
*kei tei*=*kyôdai* brother 422a.  
*kei-yô* figuré, metaphor; *—shite*  
*iu* speak metaphorically,  
 magnify.  
*keiyô-shi* adjective 98a.  
*kei-zai* economy.  
*keizai-gaku* economics.  
*kei-soku* continuance. [160c.  
*kekko na* splendid, capital  
*kek-kon* marriage.  
*kek-kwa* result.  
*ke-mari* football 285a.

*kem-butsu* sight-seeing 278b.  
*kemmaku* appearance, counte-  
 nance 370.  
*ke-mono* hairy quadruped 346a.  
*ken-pô* constitution.  
*kemuri* smoke.  
*ke-mushi* caterpillar.  
*ken*=6 *shaku*.  
*ken* unit 86.  
*ken* (a game) 196a.  
*ken* prefecture 44c, 324a.  
*ken-chiku* building 373b.  
*kenchiku-ka* architect.  
*ken-chô* prefectural office.  
*ken-go na* firm, substantial.  
*ken-gome ni* in every house  
 321.  
*ken-ji* public prosecutor 341b.  
*ken-jutsu* art of fencing. [thy.  
*ken-kô* health; *—desu* is heal-  
*ken-kwa* quarrel.  
*ken-kyû* study, investigation.  
*ken-nou na* dangerous, risky  
 121b.  
*ken-ri* rights.  
*ken-rô na* solid substantial.  
*ken-sa* inspection; *—wo ukeru*  
 be inspected.  
*ken-so na* precipitous.  
*ken-son* modesty.  
*ken-yaku suru* economize.  
*ken-suru, kenjiru* offer as a gift.  
*ke-rai* retainer.  
*keredo* (*mo*) but 399, 99, 354b,  
*keru, kette* kick 285a.  
*kesa* this morning.  
*kesa* priest's scarf.  
*kesa-gata, kesâ-hodo* this morn-  
 ing (used later in the day).  
*keshikaranu* improper, unbe-  
 coming, impudent.  
*ke-shiki* scenery. [ance.  
*ke-shiki* expression, appear-  
*kesshite* positively, never 214a.

*kessuru* decide, settle.  
*keshu* extinguish, erase.  
*ketsu*=*chi* blood 300a.  
*ketsu-gi* resolution 214a.  
*ke-tsumazuku* stumble 285a.  
*ket-ten* weakness, fault.  
*ketto* blanket XIXI.  
*ki* tree, wood.  
*ki* spirit, humor; *ki no hayai*,  
 etc., 123; *ki no kiita* smart  
 128c; *ki ga uite iru* be giddy  
 263f; *ki ga au* be congenial;  
*ki wo tsukeru* pay attention;  
*ki ni iru* be liked 456c; *ki ni*  
*sawaru* offend; *ki ni suru*,  
*ki ni naru* be concerned  
 about 368.  
*ki* record, chronicle.  
*ki*=*tsuchinoto*, *mizunoto* 367a.  
*kibamu* turn yellow.  
*kibishii* strict, severe.  
*ki-bō* hope, desire.  
*ki-bun ga yoi* feel well.  
*kichi*-lucky 373c.  
*ki-chigai* lunatic.  
*ki-chū* mourning.  
*Kido* 130d.  
*ki-doku na* praiseworthy.  
*kieru* be extinguished, vanish.  
*ki-gen* temper, spirits; *go-yō*  
 316b, 335d.  
*ki-gen* fixed period 228a.  
*ki-gen* era 228a.  
*ki-hei* cavalry.  
*Kii* 38b. [21a.  
*kii*, *ki-iroi*. *ki-iro na* yellow  
*kiji* pheasant (green).  
*ki-kai* machine, engine. [tion.  
*kiki-awaseru* gather informa-  
*kiki-chigau* mishear.  
*kiki-gurushii* unpleasant to  
 hear.  
*kiki-ireru* assent, grant.  
*kiki-komu* hear, 292c.

*ki-kin* famine.  
*kiki-tsukeru* overhear; *kikitsu-*  
*kete iru* be accustomed to  
 hear.  
*ki-kō* calling at a harbor (*ki*=  
*yoru*, *kō*=*minato*).  
*kikoeru* can hear, can be heard,  
 sound 259, 267c; *mimi ga*  
*kikoenai* be quite deaf.  
*kikoshimesu*. eat, drink 310a.  
*kiku* chrysanthemum.  
*kiku* hear, inquire 221; *kiite*  
*miru* inquire 161a; *kikeru*  
 267c.  
*kiku* be efficacious 128c, 267c;  
*ki no kiita* smart.  
*ki-kwai* opportunity.  
*ki-mae* disposition, nature.  
*kimari* disposition, order;—*ga*  
*warui* be embarrassed.  
*kimaru* become settled, cer-  
 tain.  
*kim-buchi no* gold-rimmed.  
*kimeru* fix, decide 159b.  
*kimi* master, lord.  
*kimi* you 28.  
*ki-mi* yolk of an egg.  
*ki-mi ga yoi* feel well.  
*kimo* liver, courage; *wo tsu-*  
*busu* be terribly frightened.  
*ki-mochi ga yoi* feel well; *yō*  
*na*—*ga suru* feel as if.  
*kimono* clothes.  
*kim-pen* vicinity 338.  
*ki-muzukashii* ill-humored.  
*ki-myō na* strange, wonderful.  
*kin* gold, money 120c.  
*kin*=160 *me*=1½ pounds.  
*kin-chō* Hear! Hear! 415.  
*kin-dan* prohibition 404b.  
*ki-nesumi* squirrel.  
*kin-gin* gold and silver.  
*kin-jitsu* in a few days.  
*kin-jo* vicinity, neighborhood.

- kin-ju* (no hito) attendant, courtier.  
*kinkin* (kin=wazuka) only, scarcely.  
*kin-kwa* gold coin 269b.  
*kin-nen* in recent years.  
*kinō* yesterday. [228c.  
 (o) *ki-no-doku na* regrettable  
*ki-no-e*, *ki-no-to* 367a.  
*ki-no-ko* mushroom.  
*kin-rai* lately, recently 340c.  
*kin-ri* interest on money.  
*kin-rui* metals 241b. [eration.  
*kin-shin* circumspection, mod-  
*kinu* silk.  
*kin-yō* (bi) Friday 75.  
*kin-soku* metals 241b.  
*kinzuru*, *kinjiru* prohibit.  
*ki-oku* memory xxvi.  
*kippari* distinctly, definitely.  
*kip-pu* distinctly, definitely.  
*kip-pu* ticket xxxi.  
*ki-roku* na free from care.  
*kirau* dislike; *kirai desu* 117e.  
*kire* slice, piece, cloth. [ty.  
*ki-rei na* beautiful, clean, pret-  
*kireru* be able to cut, be cut,  
 part, be used up; *yoku* — cuts  
 well; *shibire ga* — be numb  
 (of limbs).  
*-kireru* 292. [foggy.  
*kiri* fog 268c; — *no fukai*  
*kiri* limit, pause xxxi; merely,  
 only, just 350c, 440a; = *ma-*  
*ma* 233d.  
*kiri* (no ki) paulownia 84a.  
*kirigirisu* cricket.  
*kiri-nukeru* cut a way through.  
*kiri-suteru*, *kirisute ni suru*  
 412c  
*Kirisuto-kyō* Christianity.  
*Kirisutokyō-to* a Christian.  
*kiru*, *kite* wear, put on (clothes).  
*kiru*, *kitte* cut, divide.
- kiru* 292.  
*ki-ryō no ii* beautiful.  
*ki-sama* you 28.  
*ki-sen* steamboat.  
*ki-sha* railway train.  
*kishi* bank, shore.  
*Kishū* 38b, 89g.  
*ki-soku* regulation, rule.  
*kita* north.  
*kitai na* extraordinary, strange.  
*Kitakamigawa* 188c.  
*kitanai* dirty, mean, indecent.  
*kitaru* come (literary).  
*kitasu* cause to come, bring  
 about.  
*kitchinto* tightly, precisely.  
*kitchiri* exactly, precisely.  
*kit-chā* favorable sign 373c.  
*ki-ten* readiness of mind; — *wo*  
*kihasu* be quick-witted.  
*kitsui* intense, strong (of liq-  
 uors, odors), tight (of shoes,  
 etc.).  
*kitsune* fox; — *kan* 196a.  
*kitte* stamp, check.  
*-kitte no* 137b.  
*kitto* surely.  
*kiwa* beside, near by 385.  
*kiwaneru* determine, carry to  
 an extreme 345a. [349b.  
*kiwamete* extremely (formal)  
*kiyoi* pure, holy.  
*Kiyomizu Kwannon* 439f.  
*Kiyomori* 413c.  
*kizu* wound, scar 159a.  
*-kke* 275c.  
*ko* child, young offspring, egg  
 (in the last sense only, of  
 fish) 11d; *go-sai-ko* five-  
 year-old 74; *o ko san* 422.  
*ko wa ika ni* 452d.  
*ko-* little 8b, 15.  
*-ko* place 274b.  
*ko* unit 82.

*kō*—old.  
*kō*=*kau* buy; keep xxivc.  
*kō* prince 76c.  
*kō* marquis 76c.  
*kō* merit, achievement.  
*kō* shell, armor.  
*kō* harbor.  
*kō*=*kinoe*, *kanoe* 367a.  
*kō* filial piety 233c, 348b.  
*kō* happiness 225a.  
*kō* fragrance, incense.  
*kō* manufacturing 391c.  
*kō* thus, in this manner 39c;  
*kō iu* (*yō na*) such.  
*ko-ashi* little steps.  
*ko-ba* shingle.  
*ko-ban* ancient gold coin 223b;  
 —*nari no*, —*gata no* elliptical. [94f.  
*kō-ban sho* police sub-station  
*kōbe* head (literary) 186b.  
*kō-bi-gun* second reserve 357a.  
*Kōbō Daishi* 113d, 359a.  
*koboreru* overflow.  
*kobosu* pour, spill. [fish.  
*kobotsu* break, destroy, demol-  
*kobu* protuberance, swelling.  
*kochi* (*ra*) in this direction,  
 here 40c, 337.  
*kō-chi-shi* postposition 362a.  
*kō-chō* head of a school.  
*ko-dai no* ancient. [cent.  
*kō-dai na* immense, magnifi-  
*ko-domo* child 1c; —*rashii*  
 childish; —*meite iru* is child-  
 ish. [215.  
*koe* voice, cry; *no* — *ga suru*  
*kō-en* (*chi*) public garden, park.  
*koeru* become fat, fertile.  
*koeru* pass over, cross.  
 —*koeru* 292.  
*kō-fu* laborer.  
*ko-gai* buying in small lots.  
*kogasu* scorch, burn.

*ko-gatana* penknife.  
*ko-gawa* brook.  
*kō-geki wo ukeru* be attacked.  
*kogeru* be scorched.  
*kō-gi* lecture. [cloth).  
*ko-gire* small piece (as of  
*kogoe-jini* freezing to death  
 65b.  
*kogoeru* freeze.  
*ko-goto* complaint 15.  
*kogu* row, scull.  
*kō-gyō* manufactures.  
*kō-gyō* promoting industries.  
*ko-gyō* theatrical performance.  
*kō-kei* military engineers.  
*kōkai* coffee XIII.  
*koi* carp.  
*koi* thick, dense, strong.  
*koi* (imperative of *kuru*) 23f.  
*kō-i* cordialty, kindness.  
*koi-cha* 106.  
*ko-inu* pup 8b.  
*koishii* beloved, affectionate.  
*koitsu* this thing (vulgar) 28.  
*kōji* (*ko michi*) lane, alley.  
*kojiki* beggar 16.  
*Kojiki* 89c.  
*ko-jin*=*mukashi no hito*.  
*kō-jō* kind feelings.  
*ko-ka* old song.  
*kō-katsu na* cunning, shrewd.  
*kōke* scale (of fish).  
*Kōkijiten* 89d.  
*Kokinwakashū* 188b.  
*kok-ka* state.  
*kok-kei* wit, witticism.  
*kok-ki* flag, standard 94c.  
*kok-kin* national interdict.  
*kok-kwai* diet, parliament, con-  
 gress. [337.  
*koko* (*ra*) this place, here 36a.  
*kō-kō* filial piety xxv.  
 (o) *kō-kō* pickle 168b.  
*koko-chi ga yoi* feel well.

*kokonoka* nine days, ninth day.  
*kononotsū* nine.

*kokoro* heart, mind; sense 270d; — *ni makasetu* contrary to one's preference (of things); — *wo irekaeru* repent.

*kokoro-atari* clew; — *ga aru* happen to know. [tion.

*kokorae* understanding, intention  
*kokoro-eru* perceive, understand.

*korako-misu* try, tempt 174b.

*kokoro-mochi* impression, idea; — *ga yoi* feel well; *yō na — ga suru* 215.

*kokoro-yusui* familiar, intimate;  
*kokoroyasuku negau* 316.

*kokoro-sashi* intention, desire.

*koku* = ten to 70.

*koku* country (in composition).

*ko-kubi* head; — *wo katamukeru* bend the head to one side (in thinking). [ar.

*koku gakusha* Japanese scholar.

*koku-ji-han* political offence.

*koku-min* nation.

*koku-matsu* cereal.

*koku-shi-byō* black plague.

*koku-se* national policy.

*Kō-kwa* 74.

*kō-kwai* repentance.

*kō-kwan* exchange, passing (of trains) 289b.

*ko-kyō* birthplace, home.

*Kōkyō* 348b.

*kō-kyū* study, investigation.

*ko-ma* horse 4a.

*koma* chessman.

*koma-dori* robin.

*ko-mai* old rice. [nute.

*komakai, komaka na* fine, miserable  
*komaru* be perplexed, embarrassed 239a: *kane ni*—369;

*kaku ni*—369; — *te (wa)*—102, 170a, 363a.

*kom-ban* this evening 339.

(o) *kome* rice (raw).

*komeru* force into.

*komi-au* be crowded together.

*komi-itta* complicated 128b.

*komma* colt 8b.

*kōmori* bat [brella.

*kōmori gasa* [European] umbrella.

*komoru* be shut up 239a. [XIII.

*kompeitō* confection, candy

*Kompira* 44f.

*komu* be crowded 239a.

— *komu* 292.

*ko-mugi* wheat. [262, 309.

*kōmuru* receive from a superior

*kon* unit 214c.

*kon-aida* recently, lately 36.

*konareru* be digested.

*konasu* pulverize, digest.

*konata* this side, here 337.

*kon-cho* this morning.

*kon-do* this time, next time.

*ko-neko* kitten 8b.

*kon-getsu* this month.

*kon-i* intimacy; *to — desu* be intimate with; *go — ni negau* I hope we may be friends 209c.

*kon-jō* disposition; — *no yoi* good-natured.

*konkon* kindly, carefully.

*konna* such.

*kon-nan* distress, difficulty.

*kon-nen* this year.

*kon-nichi* to-day; — *wa* How do you do? 52b.

*kono* this (here) 36; — *setsu* in these days; — *ni sau nichi*

334d; — *ne mo nai* unsurpassed; — *uchi* inside this among these.

*kōnō* virtue, efficacy, effect.



- kono-aida* recently, lately.  
*kono-goro* recently 340c.  
*ko-no-ha* = *ki no ha* leaf.  
*kono-hodo* lately; recently.  
*kono-kata* since that time 378a.  
*ko-no-me* = *ki no me* bud.  
*konomu* like, be fond of.  
*kon-rei* wedding.  
*kon-seki* this evening.  
*kon-shū* this week.  
*kon-toku na* cordial.  
*kon-ya* this evening.  
*kon-zatsu* confusion.  
*kora* (interjection) 415.  
*koraeru* endure.  
*kore* this one (person, thing, place, time, etc.) 36; — *de* 96c, 117h, 363a; (literary usage) 348b  
*kōri* ice; — *ga haru* ice forms.  
*kōri* county 324a.  
*kō-ri*, *kori* a trunk made of wickerware 196.  
*kori-hateru* be taught a good lesson.  
*koriru* be warned.  
*kōri-suberi* skating.  
*goro*, *goro* period of time; — *ni* about the time when 312a, 407.  
*kō-rō* meritorious deed.  
*korobasu* roll 200.  
*korobu* tumble 282d.  
*korogaru* roll over (intr.)  
*Koromogawa* 188c.  
*korosu* kill.  
*kōru* freeze 333a.  
*kō-sai* social intercourse 373.  
*kō-saku* cultivation (of land).  
*kosaseru* (causative of *kuru*) 255.  
*kō-shoku* lecture, explanation.  
*koshi* loins, back; — *ga magaru* become bent like an aged person 271a; — *wo kakeru* sit 116b.  
*kō-shi* filial child.  
*Kōshi* Confucious 248c, 329.  
*kō-shi* minister, ambassador.  
*kōshi-kwan* embassy, legation.  
*koshiraeru* make, fabricate, 212a.  
*koso* even 353.  
*ko-sode* wadded silk garment.  
*kossori*, *kosokoso* on the sly, stealthily.  
*kosu* cross, pass over 166b.  
*-kosu* 292.  
*ko-sui* lake.  
*kotaeru* answer.  
*kotatsu* quilt-warmer 37a.  
*kotchi* = *kochi*. [222.  
*koto* (a musical instrument)  
*koto* thing, affair; something 47; what 54; — *ga aru*, — *ga nai* 54a, — 272b; — *ga dekiru* 267a; (exclamation) 417.  
*koto* word 71.  
*koto ni* specially; *koto-no-haka* 338a. [55a.  
*kō-tō* high class, advanced xxv,  
*kotoba* word, language, dialect.  
*koto-gara* nature of the thing, matter, circumstances. [ly.  
*kotogotoku* altogether, entire.  
*koto-no-haka* exceedingly 338a.  
*ko-toshi* this year 36.  
*kotowaru* give notice, refuse.  
*kotowaza* proverb, maxim.  
*kotozukeru* send by a friend. [tion.  
*kō-tsū* intercourse, communication.  
*Kotsudō* 296a.  
*Kōtsuke* 248g.  
*kot-tō* curio.

*ko-ushi* calf.  
*kowa-baru* be stiff 284a.  
*kowai* fearful, terrible.  
*kowai* rigid, unyielding.  
*kō-wan* harbor. [89h.  
*kowareru* be broken, wrecked  
*kowasu* break, destroy.  
*ko-ya* hut, pen, stable.  
*kō-yaku* medicinal plaster 56e.  
*Kō-yasan* 296a.  
*koyashi* fertilizer, manure.  
*koyasu* make fat, fertile.  
*ko-yori* (*kami-yori*) paper  
 string.  
*ko-yubi* little finger 240d.  
*kozotte* all (formal).  
*ko-sō* little priest, acolyte, ap-  
 prentice, errand-boy, fellow  
 15a, 403b.  
*kō-sui* flood.  
*ko-zukai* errand-boy, servant.  
*Kōzuke* = *Kōtsuke*.  
*Kōzukenosuke* 187d.  
*ko-sutsumi* parcel.  
*ku* nine.  
*ku* district, ward.  
*ku* phrase.  
*kū* = *kuu* eat xxive.  
*kubaru* distribute.  
*kuberu* put into (a fire).  
*ku-betsu* distinction, classifica-  
 tion.  
*kubi* neck, head 186b; —*wo*.  
*katamukeru* bow one's head;  
 —*wo*. *kukuru* hang one's  
 self; *no* —*wo kiru* decapi-  
 tate.  
*kuchi* mouth, opening, de-  
 mand; —*ga warui* be sar-  
 castic; —*ga kikeru* be elo-  
 quent; —*ga kakaru* be in  
 demand.  
*kuchi-bashi* bill (of a bird).  
*kuchi-biru* lips.

*kuchi-oshii* sorrowful, disap-  
 pointed.  
*kudakeru* be broken, crushed.  
*kudaku* break, crush.  
*kuda-mono* fruit.  
*kudaranu*, *kudaranai* absurd.  
*kudari* line 64.  
*kudaru* descend; *kudari*. (*no*  
*kisha*) down train 289b.  
*kudasai* please give me; —*na*  
 416a.  
*kudasaru* bestow 92a, 104b,  
 190, 310.  
*kudasu* cause to descend.  
*kū-fuku* hunger; —*ni naru* get  
 hungry 175b.  
*ku-ge* nobility formerly at-  
 tached to the Court.  
*kugi* nail.  
*ku-giri* pause xxxi.  
*kui* post, stake, pile.  
*kui-ru* = *kuyuru* repent of.  
*kui-tsuku* bite (as a dog or  
 snake).  
*kujaku* peafowl.  
*kuji* lot; —*wo hiku* draw lots.  
*kujiku* crush, sprain.  
*kujira* whale. [68b.  
*kujira-zashi* dry goods measure  
*kuki* stalk, stem, trunk.  
*kū-ki* air, atmosphere xxv.  
*ku-ku* multiplication table 79.  
*kukuru* bind; *kubi wo* —hang  
 one's self. ☉  
*kuma* bear.  
*kumi* set, suite, class 64, 83.  
*kumi-tateru* frame, construct.  
*kumo* cloud. [cloudy.  
*kumoru* be clouded; *kumotta*  
*kumu* weave, knit together,  
 frame, compose (type).  
*kumu* draw (water), pour (tea).  
*kun* = *kimi* master, lord 170,  
 172c, 420; you 28.

- kun* Japanese equivalent of a Chinese character 坤, *kuni* country, province; *o* — your country 30a.  
*kuniguni* countries.  
*kunna* = *kure na* 150a.  
*kun-shō* decoration, order.  
*kun-shu* sovereign.  
*kura* storehouse.  
*kura* saddle.  
*kuraberu* compare.  
*kurai* rank, title, throne; — *ni tsuku* (*noboru*) ascend the throne.  
*kurai*, *gurai* grade, about 22b, 23b, 340: so that 410, 334c.  
*kurai* dark.  
*kurasu* pass (time), live, make a living 366e.  
*kurau* eat, drink (*sake*).  
*kuregata* evening, twilight.  
*kuregure* (*no*) repeatedly.  
*kureru* set, become dark, come to a close, be perplexed; *hi ga* — the sun sets; *namida ni* — be blinded with tears.  
*kureru* give; (*o*) *kure* (*na*) 37d, 150a, 151b; *kura tamae* 246.  
*kuri* chestnut.  
*kuri-ageru* move up, carry forward, rearrange. [change.  
*kuri-kaeru* substitute, exchange.  
*kuri-kaesu* repeat.  
*kuro* the black 106.  
*ku-rō* labour, trouble; *go* — *sama* thanks for your trouble 33.  
*kuroi* black.  
*kurombō* negro 232b.  
*kū-ron* vain discussion, impractical theorizing.  
*kuro-shio* the Japan Current.  
*kuru* reed; *nikki wo* — leaf of a diary.  
*kuru* come 230, 261; *to kite wa* = *wa* 419a.  
*kuruma* wheel, vehicle, riksha.  
*kuruma-biki* riksha-man.  
*kuruma-ya* riksha-man.  
*kurumi* walnut, butternut.  
*kurushii* distressing.  
*kurushimeru* afflict, torment.  
*kurushimi* distress.  
*kurukimu* suffer, grieve.  
*kurushisa* distress 22a.  
*kuruu* act irregularly, be out of order, be in a frenzy; *te ga* — hand become unsteady 412a. [lanies 294b.  
*kusa* grass, weeds; miscel-  
*kusagusa no* various.  
*kusai* malodorous, offensive.  
*-kusai* 110.  
*kusame*, *kushami* sneezing; — *wo suru*, — *ga deru* sneeze.  
*kusari* chain.  
*kusaru* decay, be malodorous.  
*kuse* habit, propensity; — *ni* though 250c.  
*kushi* comb.  
*Kusunoki Masashige* 40 d.  
*kusuri* drug, medicine; — *ni naru* curative, nutritious.  
*kusuri-yubi* ring finger 240d.  
*kutabaru* die 415a.  
*kutabireru* be fatigued 258d.  
*kutsu* shoe.  
*kutsu-shita*, *kutsu-tabi* [Euro-pean] sock, stocking.  
*kut-tsukere* attach firmly.  
*kut-tsuku* adhere firmly.  
*knu* eat, devour 245.  
*kuwa* (*no ki*) mulberry tree.  
*kuwaeru* add.  
*kuwashii* minute, detailed, well versed 372.  
*kuyamu* deplore, condole.  
*kuyashii* deplorable.

*kyūru*, *kyūru* repent of.  
*kyūru* go to pieces.  
*kyūru* tear down (a house),  
 change (money); *hisa wo*—  
 116b.  
*kyū-bin* vase (flower bottle).  
*kyū-bin na* too keen, nervous.  
*kyū-dan* flower bed.  
*kyū-hei* coin, specie.  
*kyū* assembly.  
*kyū* unit of time 80.  
*kyū-chū do-kei* watch 47c.  
*kyū-ji* conference, meeting.  
*kyū-jō* circular letter.  
*kyū-kei* finance, account 246d.  
*kyū-kei-kakari* treasurer 184d.  
*kyū-sha* corporation, com-  
 pany.  
*kyū-ji* conflagration, fire; —*wo*  
*dasu* start a fire.  
*kyū-jitsu* a few days ago.  
*kyūku-chō suru* expand.  
*kyūku-shū suru* obtain.  
*kyūam-baku* = *kyūampaku* 440c.  
*kyūam-me* = *kyūan* 69.  
*kyūam-paku* prime minister 78a.  
*kyūam-pi de* at Government ex-  
 pense.  
*kyūan* Government office.  
*kyūan* building 194.  
*kyūan* can xxx.  
*kyūan* = 8½ pounds 69.  
*kyūan* unit 87. [391a.  
 —*ni kyūan shite* concerning  
*kyūan-gai* welcome, hearty  
 reception.  
*kyūan-gun* Government army.  
*kyūan-kei* relation; *ni* — *suru*  
 have relations with 372.  
*kyūan-nen* idea conception,  
 conviction.  
*Kyūannon* 116f, 193e, 439f.  
*kyūan-ri* official.  
*Kyūantō* 137b.

*kyūan-zume* canned goods xxx.  
*kyūa-ryō* small fine 373a.  
 (o) *kyūa-shi* sweetmeats, cakes.  
*kyūa-sō* cremation 256b.  
*kyūat-tatsu na* great-hearted.  
*kyūa-yō (bi)* Tuesday.  
*kyūa-sau* volcano.  
*kyūa-soku* a noble, the nobility.  
*kyūō-gō sama* Empress.  
*kyūō-koku* advertisement.  
*kyūō-kyō* Emperor's residence.  
*kyūō-tai-shi* crown prince.  
*kyūō-tei* Emperor 77a.  
*kyūō-san* mine.  
*kyū-hon* leggings.  
 (o) *kyūku (san)* guest, cus-  
 tomer, passenger; — *ni yuku*  
 be invited out 265e, 368;  
 o — *wo suru* have company  
 412d.  
*kyūaku* unit 87.  
*kyūatto* (of surprise) 443c.  
*kyū* = *konnichi* to-day.  
*kyū* capital 41c, 41f.  
*kyū-suru* supply, afford.  
*kyū-dai* brother 58c, 422b.  
*kyū-gen* comedy, drama, play.  
*kyū-iku* education.  
*kyū-in* teacher 208a.  
*kyū-jō* class-room.  
*kyū-ju* professor 208a.  
*kyū-ju suru* reside.  
*kyū-ka* humorous poem. [out.  
*kyū-kō* performance, carrying  
*kyū-ku* office xxvi.  
*Kyūku-tō* extreme east, the  
 Far East.  
*kyū-kyū-sho* text-book.  
*kyū-nen* = *sakunen* last year.  
*kyū-ō* entertainment, banquet.  
*Kyū-setsu* 463a.  
*kyū-shi* teacher 208a.  
*kyū-sō* competition.  
*Kyūto* 41c, 41f, 282c.

- kyō-yu* instructor 208a.  
*kyū* = *ku* nine 68. [145a.  
*kyū wo sueru* apply moxa  
*kyū na* sudden, urgent.  
*kyū-byō* sudden illness. [372.  
*kyū-dai suru* (an examination)  
*kyū-ka* holidays, vacation,  
 leave.  
*kyū-kō-ressha* express train.  
*kyū-reki* old calendar.  
*kyū-shi-is-shō* 46od.  
*Kyūshū* 81e, 266c.  
*ma* = *aida* interval; unit for  
 rooms 64, 82; *ma ni au* be  
 sufficient, be in time 168e.  
*mā* = *mō* 351d.  
*ma*- true, genuine, pure 299b.  
*mā* (interjection) 414.  
*mabireru* be daubed, smeared.  
*machi* street, town 51a, 324a.  
*machi-ai-sho*, *machini* waiting-  
 room.  
*machi-dōi* long delayed.  
*machigaeru* mistake, blunder;  
*michi wo* — lose the way  
 223c.  
*machigai* error; — *no ōi* inac-  
 curate; — (*mo*) *naku* with-  
 out fail, surely.  
*machigau* err.  
*machi-kaneru* wait impatiently,  
 be unable to wait  
*machi-ga* = *chōka* merchant's  
 house. [199a.  
*mada* still, yet 351b; — *desu*  
*made* until, as far as to, to 378,  
 401; — *ni* before, by.  
*mado* window.  
*mae* what is in front; — *wo tōru*  
 pass in front 89f; — *ni* previ-  
 ously, ago; *no* — *ni* before,  
 in the presence of 384, 406;  
*hitori* — 65a, 198f.  
*Maebashi* 248g.
- mae motte* = *mae ni* previously.  
*magaru* be sent, turn.  
*mage* cue, coiffure; — *wo yuu*  
 put up the hair.  
*mageru* bend. [bamboozle.  
*magirakasu*, *magirasu* confuse,  
*magireru*, *magiru* be mixed up.  
*mago* grandchild.  
*ma-go* hostler, driver.  
*magotsuku* be perplexed.  
*maguro* tunny.  
*ma-hō* magic; — *wo tsukau*  
 practice magic.  
*mai* unit 83; leaf, double page  
 378d.  
*mai*- every 50.  
*mai-do* every time, often.  
*maige* = *mayuge* 357b.  
*mai-getsu* monthly.  
*mai-go* = *mayoigo* lost child.  
*maigo-fuda* 224.  
*mai-jitsu* = *mai-nichi* daily.  
*mai-nen* yearly.  
*mai-nichi* daily. [309.  
*mairu*, *maite* go, come 231,  
*mai-shū* weekly.  
*mai-sō* interment 256b.  
*mai-toshi* yearly.  
*mai-tsuki* monthly.  
*majieru* = *mazeru* 228d.  
*ma-jika no* very nearly.  
*majime na* sober, serious.  
*majiru*, *majitte* = *mazaru* be  
 mixed.  
*majiwari* associate 373.  
*makana*i housekeeping, stew-  
 ard, cook, board.  
*makana*u furnish board and  
 lodging.  
*makari*- 310. [310.  
*makari-ideru* go, be present  
*makaru* be able to come down  
 on the price 267.  
*makasu* defeat, beat down.

- makaseru* commit; entrust; leave 155c; *kokoro ni makaseru* contrary to one's preference (of things).  
*makeru* be defeated, yield, come down on the price 125a.  
*maki-gami* letter paper 232f.  
*maki-mono* roll (picture or writing).  
*maki-tabako* cigar, cigarette.  
*makkai* (*ma*, *akai*) *maka na* deep red.  
*makkurai* pitch dark 299b.  
*makkuroi* jet black 299b.  
*makoto* truth; — *no* true; — *ni* really, indeed.  
*maku* curtain, act 64.  
*maku* roll up, wrap.  
*maku* sow, scatter, sprinkle.  
*makura* pillow.  
*mama* original condition, natural preference 227a.  
*mama yo* (interjection) 460a.  
*mam-bu ichi* a ten-thousandth.  
*mame* bean.  
*mame-iri* = *iri-mame* roasted beans.  
*na-mo-naku* in a moment, soon.  
*nam-puku* satiety xxx.  
*mamushi* viper.  
*man* ten thousand, many 68a.  
*manabu* learn, study.  
*mane* imitation; *no* — *wo suru* imitate.  
*Manen* 74.  
*maneku* invite.  
*maneru* imitate.  
*man-ichi* if, perchance 68a, 400.  
*ma-ningen* a proper sort of person.  
*man-jū* a kind of cake.  
*mannaka* the very midst 299b.  
*Manyōshū* 187c.  
*man-yū* travelling for pleasure.
- man-zai* strolling comic dancer 256c.  
*man-zoku suru* be satisfied.  
*mappira* by all means, earnestly.  
*mari* ball.  
*maru* (*de*) entirely 338b; — *jū shichi nen* full seventeen years 78b; — *yake* 52e.  
*marui* round.  
*masa ni* just.  
*masaka* scarcely 172a.  
*Masakado* 434g.  
*masamune* 445a.  
*masaru* excel 371.  
*mashi desu* is better 200a.  
*mashite* how much more 359e.  
*massakari* full bloom 299b.  
*massaki ni* at the very first.  
*masshiro* perfectly white 299b.  
*massugu ni* straight, forthwith xxix.  
*masu* a kind of salmon.  
*masu* increase 200a.  
*-masu (ru)* 205, 311, 184c.  
*masumasu* increasingly, gradually 335d.  
*mata* again, moreover, 351c.  
*matagu* straddle, step over.  
*matawa* or 399.  
*matchi* match XIII.  
*matomaru* be brought together, settled. [adjust.  
*matomeru* bring together,  
*matsu* (*no ki*) pine tree.  
*matsu* wait, await 194.  
*Matsu* 257c. [pines.  
*matsu-bara* plain covered with  
*matsu-dai* future generations, eternity 275a.  
*matsu-jo* youngest daughter.  
*matsu-kazari* New Year's decoration of pine. [tival.  
(o) *matsuri* local religious fes-

*matsuri-bi* holy day.  
*matsurigoto* government.  
*Matsushima* 218a.  
*matsu-yani* turpentine, resin.  
*mattaku* entirely; — *deshō* 316.  
*mawari* surroundings; *no* — *ni* around 385.  
*maqvari* week 217d. [ous.  
*mawari-dōi* roundabout, tedi-  
*mawaru* turn round, spin, travel  
about.  
*mawasu* turn round, spin, pass  
round 437c.  
*-mawasu* around.  
*mayou* go astray 372.  
*mayu*, *mayuge* eyebrows 357b.  
*masaru* be mixed 228d.  
*maseru* mix 228d, 370, 395d.  
*masu* first of all, on the whole.  
*masui* un savory, disagreeable  
to the taste.  
*me* eye; — *no chikai* near-sight-  
ed; — *ga mieru* be able to  
see 260a; — *ga sameru* wake  
up 91g; — *ni tatsu* be con-  
spicuous; *o* — *ni kakeru* show  
309; *o* — *ni kakaru* meet 96b.  
*me* notch, point 69b, 359d; =  
.13275 oz. 69.  
*me* experience; *omoshiroi* — *ni*  
*au* have a delightful exper-  
ience.  
*me* bud.  
*me*- female 2.  
*-me* (ordinal) 93.  
*-me* (contemptuous) 453d.  
*me-aki no* not blind 223a.  
*me-boshii* showy, attractive.  
*mechamecha* (of confusion).  
*me-datsu* be conspicuous.  
*medetai* fortunate; *o medetō*  
317b; *medetashi* 460c.  
*me-gane* spectacles; — *wo ka-*  
*keru* put on glasses.

*Meganebashi* xxx.  
*megurasu* 209.  
*meguri* = *maqvari* around 385.  
*meguru* = *mawaru* go round.  
*mei* niece.  
*mei* unit 84.  
*mei-butsu* noted product.  
*Meiji* 73.  
*mei kun* enlightened ruler, [49.  
*mei-mei* every one, severally  
*mei-nichi* anniversary of a  
death.  
*mei-shi* visiting card.  
*mei-shi* noun 1a.  
*mei-sho* noted place.  
*meitoru* meter.  
*mei-waku* annoyance.  
*mei-yo* honor, reputation.  
*meizuru* command.  
*me-kata* weight; — *wo kakeru*  
ascertain the weight.  
*me-kiki* judging a curio, con-  
noisseur. [cover.  
*mekkeru* happen to see, dis-  
*mekkiri* (of a fact that suddenly  
becomes noticeable).  
*-meku* resemble, appear 222.  
*me-kura* blind person 223a.  
(o) *me-mie* interview (with a  
superior. [49.  
*mem-men* every one, severally  
*men* mask.  
*go men* your (his) permission;  
— *nasai* beg your pardon  
203c; — *wo kōmurimashu* I  
wish to be excused 238b,  
384a; — *ni naru* be dismissed.  
*men-* female 2.  
*men-dō* trouble.  
*mendō-kusai* vexatious.  
*men-dori* hen.  
*men-eki* exemption from [milit-  
ary] service.  
*men-jō* permit, license.

*men-shokku ni naru* be discharged.

*meski* boiled rice, a meal; — *wo iaku* cook rice 168d.

*meski wo kōmōru* be called 262.

*meski*: 303.

*meski-agaru* take (food, drink, etc.) 92c, 143b, 205a, 310.

*me-shū* blind person 223a.

*me-shita*, — *no hito* person of lower rank.

*meski-toru* arrest.

*meski-tsukai* servant. [vant.

*meski-tsukau* employ as a *mesu* use, eat, wear, ride, etc.

205a, 310a.

*mesu* female 2.

*metta na* heedless 321a. [tives.

*metta ni* seldom (with *negame ue*, — *no hito* person of higher rank,

*me-zame* getting awake 278.

*mezurashii* uncommon, new; *o* — you are quite a stranger 426.

*mi* body, self 58, 293a; — *no take* length of body 439g; — *wo kakusu* hide 58a.

*mi* substance, meat (of fish), fruit, nut; — *ga naru* bear fruit.

*mi-* (honorific) 32.

*-mi* 21.

*mi-* = *mada* not yet 124b.

*mi-ageru* look up to.

*mi-ataru* be found 318a.

*mi-awaseru* look at each other (*kao wo*); forego, give up.

*mi-bun* station in life.

*mi-buri* gestures.

*michi* road, way — *ni mayou*, — *wo machigaeru* lose the way 223c; — *ga tomaru* the road is impassable 382c.

*michi-baido* roadside.

*michi-shio* flood tide.

*mieru* be visible, be seen, appear 259, 260a, 260b.

*migaku* polish.

*migi no* the right.

*mi-gurushii* unpleasant to see.

*mi-katasu* see far; *miharashi ga yoi* the view is fine.

*mi-kon* sample.

*mijikai* short:

*mi-fuku no (na)* not yet ripe 124b.

*mi-kado* Emperor (classical).

*mi-kakeru* catch sight of.

*mikan* mandarin orange 38b.

*mikiri-monō* goods at a clearing sale 295f.

*mi-kiru* abandon, clear off.

*mikka* three days, third day.

*mi-kotonori* imperial rescript.

*mimau* visit (especially to condole or inquire).

*mimi* ear; — *wo sumasu* listen intently; — *ga kikoenai* be quite deaf 260a; — *ga tōi* be somewhat deaf.

*mim-pō* civil law, civil code.

*Min* xii.

*mina* all, all together 50, 340;

— *wa wakaranai* 183e; —

*de* 338b.

*mi-nage wo suru* drown one's self 58.

*minami* south. [439a.

*mi-nareru* be accustomed to see

*mi-nashi-go* orphan 293a.

*minato* harbor.

*Minatogawa* 404d.

*mi-ue* peak:

*min-kan* the people.

*minna* = *mina* all xxiv.

*mi-no* straw rain-coat 434.

*mi-no-ue* personal fortunes 58.



- mi-okuru* follow with one's eyes, accompany (a departing guest or friend).  
*mi-orosu* look down upon 64b.  
*mi-otosu* overlook.  
*mirin* sweet sake 395d.  
*miru* see, examine, read; *isha ni mite morau* be examined by a physician; *-te miru* try to 317e, 365a; *mita yō na* looking like 115.  
*mi-sasagi* sepulcher (of Emperor) 311b.  
*mise* shop, store.  
*miseru* show 254. [bers].  
*mishimishi* (of creaking tim-  
*mi-shinja* unbeliever 124b.  
*miso* a kind of sauce.  
*misoka* thirtieth day 61, 65.  
*mi-sokonau* misjudge.  
*miso-zuke* (a pickle) 108b.  
*misumisu* before one's eyes.  
*mitai na = mita yō na* looking like 115.  
*mito* 389a.  
*mi-toimeru* recognize, regard.  
*mitsu* three 61.  
*mitsu-go* triplets 64c.  
*mitsu-gumi* set of three 64.  
*mi-tsukeru* happen to see, discover; *mitsukete iru* be used to seeing.  
*mitsu-me-kozō* 460b.  
*mittomonai (niitō mo nai)* disgusting 276b.  
*mitsu* = *mitsu* three 61.  
*mi-ukeru* perceive, have the impression.  
 (o) *mi-ya* shrine.  
*mi-ya sama* imperial prince.  
 (o) *miyage*, *miyage-mono* a present 84d, 348c. [248a].  
*miya-ko* capital, metropolis  
 (o) *mi-yuki* (of Emperor) 310.
- miso* drain, ditch, groove.  
*misore* sleet.  
*mizu* water.  
*mizu* (negative of *miru*); — *shirazu, no* 119b.  
*mizu-ire* water holder 151.  
*misukara* = *ibun de* 339a.  
*mizu-no-e*, *mizu-no-to* 367a.  
*mizu-tamari* pool (as in a road).  
*mizu-umi* lake.  
*mo* also, too, on the other hand, even 353; substituted for *wa, ga, wo* 5a, 11; (with *onaji*) 440b; (with adverbs) 321; even if, although, though only 400; (with interrogative and subordinate) 169b.  
*mō* hair,  $\frac{1}{10}$  *rin*.  
*mō* already, by this time, soon, now, still, no more 17d, 351d, 50, 135.  
*mochi* a pasty food made of glutinous rice 129; — *wo tsuku* make *mochi* 322.  
*mochi* 303.  
*mochi-dasu* offer a motion or bill 303a.  
*mochi-gome* glutinous rice.  
*mochiiru* use 285b.  
*mochi-kakeru* try; *ni hanashi wo* — solicit. [property].  
*mochi-kuzusu* ruin (self or *mochi-ron* of course; — *no koto* 352, 146a.  
*modoru* come or go back.  
*modosu* send back, vomit.  
*moeru* burn (intr.).  
*mogaku* writhe, struggle.  
*mogusa* moxa (medicine) 145a.  
*mohaya* already, soon, no more.  
*moji* = *mon-ji* letter, character, ideogram.

*mō-jin* blind person 223a.  
*mo-jū* wild beasts.  
*mōkaru* (potential of *mōkeru*)  
 367, 271b.  
*mōkeru* establish, make, gain,  
 acquire.  
*Mōko* Mongolia.  
*moku* = *me* point on a checker-  
 board, unit for checkers.  
*moku-teki* object, purpose.  
*moku-yō* (*bi*) Thursday 75.  
*moku-zen no* before one's eyes.  
*mom-ban* gatekeeper, porter.  
*mom-bu-daijin* Minister of Edu-  
 cation. [Education.  
*mom-bu-skō* Department of  
*momen* cotton cloth.  
*momeru* be ruffled, troubled.  
*momi* red silk cloth.  
*inom-me* = *me* = .13275oz. 69.  
*momo* peach 234c.  
*momo* thigh.  
*momo-hiki* [Japanese] close fit-  
 ting trousers.  
*Momotarō* 234c.  
*momu* rub 223a, 240; *ki wo* —  
 be distressed, grieve.  
*mon* gate, school 113c.  
*mon* = *rin* 137d.  
*mon-dai* theme, problem.  
*mon-dō* dialogue, conversation.  
*mon-ji* letter, character, ideo-  
 gram.  
*mon-jin* disciple.  
*mon-ko* gate, entrance.  
*mono* thing, person; (concrete)  
 38d; something 47; — *wo*  
*taberu* 177e; — *no iwazu*  
 171; who, what 54; (abstract)  
 54a; — *nara* 158a; — *jan ai*  
 you must n't 273a; — *demo*  
*nai* 355; — *wo* would that  
 149a; (exclamatory) 417.  
*mono-gatari* tale.

*mono-goto* affairs.  
*mono-morai* beggar 16.  
*mono-oki* storeroom 16.  
*mono-sashi* foot-rule 68. [147b.  
*mono-wasure* forgetfulness  
*mono-zuki na* curious, meddle-  
 some.  
*Monotoshū* 113c.  
*moppari* principally, specially.  
*morai-mono* gift 16.  
*morau* receive; *yome wo* —  
 marry a wife; — *te morau* 92h,  
 250.  
*mori* grove 186a.  
*Mori* 348a.  
*mō-rō* dimness, vagueness.  
*moru* leak. [415.  
*moshi*, *moshimoshi* Hello! Say!  
*moshi* (*mo* or *ya*) if (with con-  
 ditional, *to*, *toki wa*, *mo*, etc.)  
 400, 354b; (with *nai yō ni*)  
 428b.  
*Mōshi* 435c. [— 33c.  
*mōshi-ageru* tell 309; *o rei wo*  
*mōshi-awaseru* reach an agree-  
 ment.  
*mōshi-kaneru* hesitate to say.  
*mōshi-komu* put in a request.  
*moshikuwa* or 399. [207a.  
*mōshi-tateru* state, declare  
*mōshi-tsukeru* tell, command  
 264d.  
*mōshi-wake* excuse 391b.  
*mōsu* say, call 31b; (with *o* and  
 stem of verb) 95c, 207a,  
 309a; *mōsareru* 310.  
*motaseru* have one hold, let one  
 carry; *motashite yaru* send  
 254b, 257a.  
*mote-nasu* entertain.  
*moteru* be loved,  
*moto* origin; — *no* original; —  
*kara* from the first, origi-  
 nally, formerly 340.

*moto* base, bottom, foot; *no* — *ni* under,  
*moto-de* capital.  
*moto-kin* capital, principal.  
*motomeru* desire, search for,  
 purchase.  
*moto-yori* originally, in reality.  
 — *ni moto-suku* base upon, be  
 based on.  
*motsu* have, hold; *motte iru*  
 85c, 198c, 366a; *motte kuru*  
 bring 37d, 251b; *motte iru*  
 take 88e.  
*motsu* last, endure:  
*motsureru* be tangled; confused.  
*motte* with, by means of 39b;  
*de* — 390a; then 456b.  
*motte-no haka* very (in bad  
 sense) 345.  
*motto* more 109c; 135, 327.  
*mottomô* most 137.  
*mottomo* but.  
*mottomo na* reasonable 33d.  
*motya* fog. [things 293c.  
*mo-yô* pattern, design, state of  
*mu* not 124.  
*mu byô na* healthy.  
*mu-chû* in a dream; absent-  
 minded, delirious; — *ni arû*  
 become absorbed 368.  
*muda na* vain; of no use.  
*mu-gaku* ignorance.  
*mugi* cereal, barley, wheat.  
*mugoi*; *mugotarashii* cruel.  
*muika* six days, sixth day.  
 — *ni muite* over against, to-  
 ward 390.  
*mu-jinkô*, *mujin* lottery associa-  
 tion 445a.  
*mu-jitsu* *no* untrue, innocent;  
 — *no tsumi* false accusation.  
*mukaeru* meet, welcome, em-  
 ploy 247c.  
*mukai* opposite side 385c.

*mukappara* (*tachi*) irascible  
 person 405a.  
*mukashi* in ancient times; —  
*kara* of old; — *no* ancient;  
*mukashi mukashi* 332b.  
 — *ni mukatte* over against, to-  
 ward 390. [no *hō ni*).  
*mukau* face, oppose (with *ni* or  
*mu-kei* abstract xi.  
*mukeru* turn, send 247c.  
*mukeru* peel (intr.).  
*muki* direction, aspect, manner,  
 fitness, earnestness.  
 (o) *mako* (*san*) groom, husband  
 422, 430e.  
*mukô* what is in front of one,  
 the place opposite or yonder  
 338; — *de* (*wa*) be, they 28,  
 365; — *no* the opposite, yon-  
 der, the other, that 50; *no*  
 — *ni* opposite; beyond 385c.  
*Mukôjima* 52a, 342d. [ly 171.  
*mukô-misu ni* blindly, reckless-  
*muku* face 371.  
*muku* peel, skin; *me wo* —  
 glare in anger *mukuyuru*,  
*mukuiru* requite; *ada iwo* —  
 take revenge.  
*mune* breast; — *ga suku* get  
 relief from a feeling of op-  
 pression.  
*mune* ridge of a roof, unit 82.  
*munyamunya iu* mumble.  
*mura* village, district, township  
 324a. [thet.  
*muragaru* be gathered toge-  
*mura-kumo* cluster of clouds.  
*muri-na* unreasonable, absurd;  
*muri ni* in spite of every-  
 thing.  
*mu-ron* of course.  
*musakuroshii* dirty, nasty.  
*mu-sen-denshin* wireless teleg-  
 raphy xi

*mushi* insect, worm, bug; —  
*ken* 196a. ☉  
*mushimushi atsui* sultry.  
*mushiro* straw matting.  
 (o) *musubi* ball of rice · for  
 lunch 186, 188e.  
*musubu* tie; *miwo* — bear fruit;  
*jōyaku wo* — make a treaty;  
*in wo* — make magical signs  
 with the fingers.  
 (o) *musuko* (*san*) son, boy, 422.  
 (o) *musume* (*san*) daughter, girl  
 422.  
*mutsu* six.  
*mutsukashii* difficult, serious;  
*mutsukashiku ieba* to use  
 precise language.  
*mu tsuki* January (classical)  
 349a.  
*mutsumashii* friendly, intimate.  
*mutsu* = *mutsu* six 61.  
*muyami ni* recklessly.  
*mu-yō na* unnecessary 124b.  
*mu-yoku na* unselfish.  
*mu-san na* pitiless, cruel, pite-  
 ous.  
*musukashii* = *mutsukashii* xxx.  
*myō na* strange, wonderful, ad-  
 mirable.  
*myō-asa* to-morrow morning.  
*myō-dan* to-morrow evening.  
*myō-chō* to-morrow morning.  
*myō-go-nan* year after next.  
*myō-go-nichi* day after to-mor-  
 row.  
*myō-ji* family name XII.  
*myō-nen* next year.  
*myō-nichi* to-morrow.  
*myō-ya* to-morrow evening.  
*n'* = *na* 203d, 272. [famous.  
*na* name; — *no aru*, — *ni ou*  
*na* greens.  
*na* = *de aru* 113, 95a.  
*na* (imperative) 150, 415.

*na, nā* (interjection) 416.  
*na-ate* address (of a letter).  
*nabe* pot, kettle, pan.  
*naburu* tease, meddle with.  
*Nachi* 139c.  
*nada* stretch of rough sea.  
*na-dakai* famous 124, 372.  
*naderu* stroke, rub.  
*nado, naso, nanso* et cetera.  
*nae* young plant, seedling.  
*na-fuda* visiting card.  
*naga-bakama* trailing trousers  
 124c.  
*naga-biku* be protracted.  
*naga-gutsu* boot.  
*nagai* long.  
*naga-iti* long life.  
*nagameru* gaze at, view.  
*naganaga* a long time.  
*Nagano* 265a.  
*nagara* (*mo*) at the same time,  
 while, though 279c, 401;  
*futari* — both.  
*nagaraku* a long time.  
*nagare* current, stream.  
*nagareru* flow, float along.  
*Nagasaki* 429e.  
*nagasu* let flow, banish.  
*Nagato* 31a. [one roof.  
*naga-ya* row of houses under  
*nage-kakeru* throw on or at.  
*nage-komu* throw in.  
*nageku* grieve, lament.  
*nageru* throw, fling.  
*nage-suteru* throw away.  
*nage-tsukeru* throw at, fling.  
*nagori* farewell 456a. [waves).  
*nagu* be calm (of winds,  
*naguru* beat. [fort.  
*nagusameru* cheer, amuse, com-  
*nagusami* diversion, fun.  
*nai* not existent, not possessed,  
 not 100, 191; — *de* 365d; —  
*ja* 171b.

*nai=uchi* 386.  
*nai-chi* interior (of a country);  
 — *sakkyo* 84c.  
*nai-fu* knife.  
*nai-gwai* home and abroad 84e.  
*nai-kaku* cabinet, ministry.  
*nai-koku* home (opp. abroad)  
 84e.  
*nai-mu-shō* Home Office.  
*naka* inside, relationship 385;  
 — *ni* among them; *no* — *ni*  
 in, within, inside, among; —  
*ga ii* be on good terms; *o*  
*naka ga suita* have become  
 hungry 102a.  
*naka-ba* middle.  
*naka-bataraki* housemaid 298a.  
*naka-ma* company, associates.  
*nakanaka* (*ni*) contrary to  
 expectation, very, hardly  
 131b, 241c, 268a, 310a; —  
*dōmo* 415.  
*Nakaseidō* 17i, 242f.  
*naka-yubi* middle finger 240d.  
*naki-dasu* begin to cry.  
*nakōdo* go-between (in mar-  
 riage).  
*naku* cry, sing (of birds), crow.  
*naku* (*m*) *ba* 100a.  
*nakunaku* tearfully.  
*naku-naru* disappear 271c;  
*nakunatta* is lost, dead.  
*naku-su* (*ru*) lose 108a.  
*nakute* see *nai*; without 391.  
*nama no* (*na*) raw, uncooked;  
 — *mama* 227a; *nama* hard  
 cash 120a.  
*(o) namae* name (of person).  
*nama iki na* bold, forward.  
*namakeru* be lazy, neglect.  
*nama-nurui* tepid.  
*namari* lead.  
*namari* dialect.  
*nama-sakana* fresh fish 121g.

*nambo* (*nani-hodo*) = *ikura*.  
*nam-bun* = *nanibun*.  
*namekuji* slug.  
*nameru* lick, taste, eat.  
*nami* wave.  
*nami no* common, ordinary.  
*namida* tears.  
*namidagumu* be moved to tears  
 284.  
*nampito* = *nani hito*.  
*namu* I adore 415a.  
*namu-sambō* 415a.  
*nan* = *nani* what? — *to* how!  
*nan* = *minami* south 107b.  
*nana-e* seven-fold.  
*nanatsu* seven; *nana* 70, 282d.  
*nan-da-ka* without any special  
 reason.  
*nandatte* (*nanda to itte*) = *naze*  
 why?  
*nan-de-mo* probably 355.  
*nando* = *nado* et cetera.  
*nan-gi* hardship.  
*nani, nan* what? 42; *nanibito*  
 what kind of a man? 42;  
 how many? 42, 69; *nan to*  
*iu* what kind of? 43; *nan to*  
*mo nai* 252b; (indefinite)  
 42c, 47; *nani yori* 136, 378b;  
*nan no* whatsoever, never  
 455b; *nani fusoku ga nai* be  
 well off. [415.  
*nani, nāni* (interjection) 281e,  
*nani bun* at any rate, by all  
 means 341.  
*nani-gashi* a certain person 47.  
*nani-ge naku* nonchalantly.  
*nani-goto* = *nani*; — *ni yorazu*  
 360c. [351.  
*nani-hodo, nambo*, how much?  
*nani ka to* = *iroiro* in many  
 ways.  
*nani-shiro* at any rate 458g.  
*nani-to-zo* somehow, please.

- Naniwa* 265a.  
*nani* you (classical).  
*nankin-mame* peanuts 186c.  
*nankin-nesumi* white mouse 2a.  
*nanori* true, personal name 436d.  
*nante*=*nado to itte*.  
*nan-ta-naku* without any special reason 315.  
*nanuka* seven days, seventh day.  
*nanzo*=*nado et cetera*.  
*nao* still more 135.  
*naoru* be mended, healed.  
*nao-sara* all the more 135, 359e.  
*naosu* mend, heal, correct; translate 258e.  
*-naosu* 293.  
*nara (ba)* if 400.  
*naraberu* put in a row, arrange.  
*narabu* be in a row, parallel.  
*narashite* on an average.  
*narasu* cause to produce 201a.  
*narasu* level, grade.  
*narasu* ring.  
*narasu* train, tame.  
*narau* learn, practice 251, 371.  
*nareba* 246b. [tomed.  
*nareru* become tame, accus-  
*nari* form, shape, appearance.  
*onari*=*oide* 258a. [327a.  
*nari*=*desu* 348b; (alternative)  
— *ni nari-kawaru* take the  
place of.  
*nara* sound (intr.).  
*naru* become; *ni* — make 30g,  
63a, 308; (passive) 262;  
(polite) 310; *ni natte oru* be  
191; *to* — 373; *de naranai*  
452f; *-te wa naranai* must  
not 102, 167, 369b.  
*naru* be produced; *mi ga* —  
bear fruit.
- naru*=*de aru* 113.  
*naru-beku* as — as possible, if  
at all possible 111a, 112d.  
*naru-hodo* quite so, very true  
415.  
*naru-take, narudake*=*narube-  
ku* 112d.  
*nasake* kindness, compassion;  
— *nai* unfeeling, too bad.  
*nasaru* do 104c, 189, 308.  
*nasasō* seem not to be 107.  
*nashi* pear. [391.  
*nashi*=*nai* 98b; — *ni* without  
*nasu (bi)* egg-plant 178b.  
*nasu* do (classical) 225a.  
*natsu* summer.  
*natsukashii* homesick 252a.  
*na-tsuku, nazuku* become at-  
tached 252a.  
*nawa* rope 240c.  
*naze* why? 351e; — *naraba, —  
to iu ni* 400.  
*nazo*=*nado et cetera*.  
*nazo* riddle; — *wo kakeru* pro-  
pound a riddle.  
*nazuku*=*natsuku*.  
*ne* root; — *ga tsuku* take root;  
— *ga by* nature 453b.  
*ne* price.  
*ne, nei* (interjection) 416, 418a.  
*ne-dan* price 164a; — *wo hiku*  
reduce the price.  
*ne-doko* bed.  
*negai* request, prayer.  
*negai-sho* petition (in writing).  
*negau* desire, request 370;  
*negattari kanattari* 176.  
*negawakuwa*=*dōzo* 352a.  
*ne-giru* beat down the price.  
*ne-goto wo iu* talk in one's  
sleep.  
*nei san* 418e, 422.  
*nei* (interjection) 416.  
*ne-iru* be asleep.

*nejiru, nejitte* twist, screw.  
*nekasu* put to sleep.  
*neko* cat.  
*neko-go* kitten 8b.  
*ne-ma* bedroom.  
*ne-maki* night dress.  
*nem-matsu* end of the year.  
*ne-moto* root, origin.  
*neimui* sleepy.  
*nemu-ke* drowsiness; — *ga sa-meru* get wide awake 91g.  
*nemuru* sleep, slumber.  
*nen* year 70, 74.  
*nen* thought, attention; — *no itta* thoughtful, painstaking; — *ni — wo irete* taking the greatest pains 367; — *uo tame* to avoid mistakes 387.  
*nen-ga* New Year's congratulations.  
*nen-gen* term of years.  
*nen-gō* period, era 173.  
*nengoro na* cordial. 1  
*nen-kan* period of years.  
*nennen* yearly.  
*nen-shi ni iku* pay New Year's calls 88a.  
*neru, nete* go to bed, sleep.  
*neru, nette* knead, soften, train.  
*neseru* put to sleep.  
*nes-shin* zeal, enthusiasm.  
*ne-tsuku* fall asleep.  
*ne-uchi* worth, value.  
*nezumi* rat, mouse 2a.  
*Nezumikasō* 403b.  
*ni* baggage, freight.  
*ni* two; *ni no jō* second volume, first part.  
*ni* in, by, at, to 365 — 372; (adversative) 399a.  
*nichi* day (in composition).  
*Nichi* Japan 122a.  
*nichi-botsu* sunset 232d.  
*nichinichi* every day.

*Nichiren* 248f.  
*nichi-yō (bi)* Sunday 75.  
*niern* boil (intr.).  
*nie-tatsu, nitatsu* boil (intr.).  
*nigas* bitter.  
*niga-mi* bitterish taste.  
*ni-gao* portrait, likeness.  
*nigasu* allow to escape.  
*nige-dasu* escape, run away.  
*nigeru* flee, escape.  
*nigiri-meshi* balls of rice 188e.  
*nigiru, nigitte* grasp. [lively].  
*nigiyaka na* crowded, bustling.  
*nigori* turbidness; (In euphony) xx, xxx.  
*ni-goshirae* packing.  
*ni-guruma* cart. [Japanese].  
*Nihon, Nippon* Japan; — *no* *Nihon-deki* no made in Japan.  
*Nihongi* 283b.  
*Nihon-go* Japanese language.  
*Nihon-jin* a Japanese.  
*ni san* 422.  
*Niijima* 295b.  
*niji* rainbow; — *ga tatsu (deru)* a rainbow appears.  
*Nijūshikō* 233c.  
*(o) ni-kai* second story 373d.  
*ni-ki* diary; — *ni tsukeru* note in a diary; — *wo kuru* leaf of a diary.  
*Nikkō* 35b, 160c.  
*nikkori, nikanito* (of smiling) 326.  
*nikkui = nikui.*  
*niku* flesh, meat.  
*niku* ink for seals.  
*niku-gan* naked eye.  
*nikui* detestable; *nikui* 110.  
*nikunnu* hate.  
*niku-rashii* odious 109.  
*nim-ben* 367b.  
*ni-motsu* baggage, freight.  
*nin* man, unit 84.

*ninau* carry on the shoulder.  
*nin-gen* human being 386a.  
*nin-gyō* doll 94b; — *shibai*  
 puppet show.  
*ni-nim-biki no* (of a riksha  
 drawn by two men).  
*nin-jin* ginseng.  
*ni-jin* carrot.  
*nin-ki* temper of the people.  
*nin-soku* coolie.  
*nin-tai* patience, fortitude.  
*nin-su* number of people.  
*ninsuru, ninjiru* appoint.  
*nioi* odor, fragrance; *no* — *ga*  
*suru* smell of.  
*Nippon* = *Nikon* Japan.  
*niramu* glare.  
*niru* boil, cook 168d.  
*niru* resemble 371. [feit.  
*nise-mono* imitation, counter-  
*niseru* imitate.  
*nishi* west.  
*nishiki* brocade.  
*nishin* herring.  
*Nisshin Sensō* 122a, 363b.  
*nis-shutsu* sunrise.  
*ni-tatsu* = *nietsu* boil.  
*nite* = *de* or *ni* (classical) 363.  
*ni-tō-dachi no* (of a vehicle  
 drawn by two horses) 85d.  
*niwa* yard, garden 366b.  
*niwaka ni* suddenly.  
*niwa-saki* garden.  
*niwa-tori* barnyard fowl.  
*niyaniya* (of a grin).  
*ni-sukuri* packing. [ing.  
*ni-sumi* shipping (cargo), lad-  
*no* plain, moor, prairie.  
*no* (genitive particle) 7; (expli-  
 cative) 8, 89a; = *ga* 13, 53;  
 (forming adjectives) 119;  
 (with subordinatives) 345,  
 137b; (substantivized adjectives  
 and verbs) 131, 272;

(at end of sentence) 418d;  
 = *mono* or *koto* 272, 112h,  
 113b; *no de* 104h; *no ni* 132,  
 149, 273, 399a.  
*no, nō* (interjection) 416.  
*nō* dramatic performance with  
 chorus.  
*nō* agriculture 391c.  
*nobasu* extend, postpone.  
*noberu* extend, postpone.  
*noberu* express, tell; *o rei wo*  
 — thank.  
*nobetsu ni* continuously.  
*nobi-agaru* straighten up.  
*nobiru* become long, grow, be  
 postponed.  
*nobori* flag 94c.  
*noboru* ascend (with *ni*); *nobori*  
 (*no kisha*) up train 289b.  
*nochi* (*ni, wa*) after, after-  
 wards 385, 406, 112c. 385b.  
*nochi-gata, nochi-hodo* after a  
 little while (within the day)  
 340.  
*nochinochi* after some time, in  
 the future 350. [thirsty.  
*nodo* throat; — *ga kawaku* get  
*nodoka na* calm.  
*nō-fu* agriculturist, farmer.  
*nō-gyō* agriculture.  
*no-kara* plain, moor, prairie.  
*nokeru* remove, exclude 454d.  
*nokorasu* none being left, all  
 50, 171, 346.  
*nokoru* be left over.  
*nokosu* leave.  
*nomi* flea. [de *naku*.  
*nomi* only; — *narasu* = *bakari*  
*nomi-kosu* drain (a cup).  
*nomi-kake* half smoked cigar  
 252d. [stand.  
*nomi-komu* swallow, under-  
*nomu* drink, swallow, smoke  
 (tobacco) 268b.



- nōnō* No! No! 415.  
*nori* paste made of starch, mucilage.  
*nori-kaeru* change cars, etc.  
*nori-ki ni naru* fall in with a proposal.  
*nori-koeru, nori-kosu* ride past, overtake.  
*nori-mono* palanquin, sedan.  
*noroi* sluggish, slow; *ki no* — phlegmatic.  
*noronoro* sluggishly, slowly.  
*noru* (with *ni*) ride, be on, mount, get aboard; *sōdan ni* — 366d.  
*noseru* place on, record.  
*nossori, nosonoso* at a snail's pace, unwieldily.  
*nozote* except 390.  
*nozoku* bend the head down to look, peep at.  
*nozoku* remove, except; *wo* — *no hoka* except.  
*nozomu* hope for, wish for.  
*nozomu* approach.  
*nū* = *nuu* sew.  
*nugu* take off 235; *kada wo* — expose the shoulders.  
*nugu* wipe.  
*nui* embroidering 213.  
*nui-mono* sewing.  
*nuka* rice bran 434e.  
*nukasu* allow to escape 427c.  
*nukeru* be extracted, escape; *shibu ga* — the astringent taste disappears.  
*nuku* draw, extract; *nuki ni suru* omit 459a.  
*-nuku* 293.  
*nurasu* wet.  
*nureru* get wet.  
*nuri-mono* lacquered ware.  
*nuru* paint.  
*nurui* tepid, not hot enough.
- nusu-bito* thief.  
*nusumu* steal. [460.  
*nutto* (of slowly appearing) *nuu* sew.  
*nyō-bō, nyōbo* wife 421.  
*nyū-bai* early summer rain, rainy season 241a.  
*nyū-dō* Buddhist lay monk 460b.  
*nyū-wa na* gentle, amiable.  
*nyū-yō* = *iri-yō* need.  
*o* tail.  
*o* (honorific) 14c, 31, 100.  
*o-* male 2.  
*o-* little 15.  
*o (sama)* king 77a.  
*ō* (interjection) 414.  
*ō* yes (classical) 355b.  
*ō-ashi, owasshi* money xxvi, 32-  
*o-atari* great hit 15.  
*ō-ba (sama)* aunt.  
*ō-ban* (coin) = ten *koban* 223b.  
*obi* girdle, belt, sash.  
*obiru* gird on, wear in the belt.  
*oboe* memory.  
*oboeru* learn, remember 267b.  
*oboezu* unconsciously.  
*oboreru* be drowned.  
*oboshimeshi* thought 310a.  
*oboshimesu* think 205a, 310a.  
*obusaru* be carried on another's back, get an another's back.  
*obuu* carry on the back 263c.  
*ochi* yonder, far (classical) 339a.  
*ochi-au* come together (of rivers, persons).  
*ochi-komu* fall in.  
*ochiru* fall 62a, 165b.  
*ochiru* flee.  
*ochi-tsukeru* compose 222.  
*ochi-tsuku* become composed; *ochitsuita* calm, sane.  
*Oda Nobunaga* 264b.

Ō-danna elder master, old gentleman.

Odawara 165b.

odayaka na calm, tranquil.

ō-dōri main street.

odoroku be astonished 132, 370.

odoru dance.

oeru = owaru end, complete; *te ni oenai* unmanageable.

ō-fuku going and returning.

ō-fuku-gippu excursion ticket.

ogamu worship.

ōgi folding fan 236c.

ogori luxury.

ogoru be extravagant, give a [feast.

Ōhashi 381b.

o-hiya cold drinking water.

oi nephew x.

oi, oioi Hello! Say! 414.

ōi many, numerous 14a.

o-ide coming, going, being in a place 190a, 310, 436a; — *wo negau* 178c; — *no jibun ni* 278.

Ōigawa 183b.

oi-harau drive out.

oi-kakeru, okkakeru pursue.

oioi (ni) gradually.

oira I (vulgar) 27.

oishii delicious 4b.

Ōiso 445b.

oi-tateru drive away, evict.

— *ni oite* at, in regard to 390.

— *ni oi-tsuku*, *ottsuku* overtake.

oi-tsumeru corner.

Ōji 18c.

o-ji (sama) uncle.

ōjiru = ōzuru; — *ni ōjite* in accord with.

oka hill, land.

oka-bo upland rice.

Okame 335a.

ōkami wolf.

okashii, okashi na ridiculous, funny.

okasu violate (law), commit (crime). [ably,

ō-kata for the most part, prob-

ō-kase storm, great wind, typhoon.

oke tub, bucket.

oki the open sea.

Oki 343b.

ōki ni greatly, very.

oki-agaru rise up.

ōkii, ōki na large, great 114.

oki-mono ornament kept in the tokonoma.

okiru awake, get up.

okite law, statute, precept.

oki-zari ni suru abandon. [421.

okka san your mother, mamma

ok-kakeru = oikakeru pursue.

okonai conduct, behavior.

okonau do, perform, practice.

okori origin, etymology.

okorippoi irritable 380d.

okoru arise, break out, get angry.

okosu raise, rouse, waken, start.

okotaru be lazy, neglect.

oku inner part of a house.

oku san madam 421b.

oku set, place, put, employ; (with subordinative) 226,

173d; *ichi nichii oki ni* every other day.

oku a hundred million.

ōku (see ōi); — *wa* for the most part; — *no* many 316;

— *to mo* at the greatest 102.

Ōkubo Hikosaemon 442d.

Ōkubo Toshimichi 265f.

oku-niwa back garden.

okureru be late.

okuri-mono gift 84d.

- okuru send, escort 59a.  
 okuru pass (time), lead (a life).  
 o-mae (*sau*) you 28.  
 omake *ni* into the bargain.  
 omasu (dialectical) xxii, 191c.  
 omi-bin *ni* quietly, in a private way.  
 ombu (*ombo*) suru = obuu 263c.  
 Omi 126h. [65.  
 ō-misoka last day of the year  
 ō-mizu flood; — *ga deru* there is a flood.  
 omo *ni* mainly, chiefly.  
 omocha toy.  
 omo-datta chief.  
 omoi heavy, grave.  
 omoi feeling, experience 457a.  
 omoi-chigau misapprehend 287.  
 omoi-dasu call to mind, recall.  
 omoi-gake (*mo*) naku unexpectedly 315.  
 omoi-kiru cease to think; omoi-kitte decisively, resignedly.  
 omoi-komu get an impression.  
 omoi-megurasu reflect 200, 203a.  
 omoi (*mo*) yoranu unexpected.  
 omoi-no-hoka beyond expectation, very 338a.  
 omoi-tsuku happen to think of.  
 omompakaru cogitate xxvi.  
 omonsuru esteem 215.  
 omoshi stone weight 459b.  
 omoshirogaru feel interested in.  
 omoshiroi interesting; omoskiro hambun half in jest.  
 omoi-i heavy.  
 omote front, surface 384.  
 omou think, intend 144, 245; *kito nokoto wo* — 362; *wata-kushi no* — *ni wa* 369a.  
 omowareru it seems to me 262.  
 omowazu unintentionally 171.
- omo-ya main house.  
 ōmu parrot.  
 ō-mugi barley.  
 on (honorific) 31, 313a.  
 on- male 2.  
 on favor, kindness, benefits.  
 on Chinese reading of an ideogram xiii.  
 onaidoshi same year 39a.  
 onaji same; — *mono*, — *koto* 38d.  
 o-naka abdomen, stomach.  
 o-nari = oide 258a.  
 Onarikaidō 258a.  
 onashi = onaji same.  
 on-do temperature.  
 on-doku reading aloud.  
 on-dori cock.  
 on-gaku music.  
 on-gi obligation, favors.  
 oni demon, devil 76d, 234a.  
 on-jin benefactor.  
 onna woman, female; — *shū* (of servants); — *no ka* girl.  
 onna-buri *ga yoi* handsome 284a.  
 onnaji = onaji same xxix.  
 onore self (classical) 27; = *ki-sama* 453d.  
 onozukara = *jibun de* (classical) 339a; of itself, naturally.  
 on-sen, onsem-ba hot spring, sanitarium.  
 Ontakesan 139b.  
 Ōoka 434d.  
 ora I (vulgar) 27. [oughfare.  
 ō-rai going and coming, thor-ōrai-dome closing a street.  
 ore I (vulgar) 27.  
 overu be broken.  
 ori opportunity, time 407; — *wo ete (mite)* 259a.  
 ori pen, cage, box (for food).

*ori-ashiku* inopportunisty.  
*ori-fushi* now and then, just then.

*ori-itte* persistently earnestly.

*ori-komu* weave in.

*oriori* at times, occasionally.

*oriru* descend, alight.

*ori-yoku* opportunity.

*oroski de* at wholesale.

*orosu* let down 179a.

*oru* weave 241d.

*oru* break.

*oru=iru* be (of living things).

*osaueru* repress, hold back.

*Osaka* xxx.

*osamaru* be governed, pacified;

*osamari ga tsuku* be settled.

*osamaru* be paid (of taxes).

*osameru* govern, pacify.

*osameru* put by, sheathe (a sword), store away, pay (taxes).

*o-san-don* servant girl 298a.

*ōse* command; *ōse no tōri* as you said 278.

*ōseru* say (classical) 310.

*ōse-tsukeru* tell, command.

*o-shaberi* chatterbox.

*oski-* 303.

*oski-ageru* push up.

*oski-e* a picture made of stuffed pieces of cloth.

*oskieru* teach.

*oskige (mo) naku* ungrudgingly.

*oskii* prized, regrettable; — *koto ni wa* sad to say 369.

*oski-ire* closet.

*oski-kaesu* have one repeat, refuse to accept (a gift).

*oskimu* prize, deplore, spare, begrudge 282a.

*oski-nabete* on an average.

*o shiroi* face powder 32.

*oski-tsumaru* approach the end (of a year).

*o-shō* Buddhist priest 111b.

*Ō-shū* 198g.

*osoi* slow, late; *osokare hayakare* sooner or later 316.

*osorakuwa* perhaps 352a.

*osore-iru* be overwhelmed by regret for a fault or by another's condescension, be struck with admiration 166c, 193g, 349c.

*osoreru* fear.

*osoroshii* frightful, terrible; — *takai* dreadfully dear 315.

*osou* attack.

*osowaru* he taught, learn 251.

*ossharu* say 181, 189d, 310.

*osu* male 2.

*osu* push, press.

*Ōta Dōkwan (Mochisuke)* 436d.

*Otafuku* 335a.

*o-tama-ya* ancestral sepulcher.

*oto* sound, noise; — *ga suru* 215.

*otodoshi=atotoshi.*

*otoko* man, male 7a; — *no ko* boy. [284a.

*otoko-buri ga yoi* handsome

*otoko-yamome* widower 247a.

*otona* adult.

*otonashii* quiet, well-behaved.

*otoru* be inferior 371.

*otosu* drop, lose, omit, take (a castle); *mayuge wo* — shave the eyebrows.

*-otosu* 297.

*otōto* younger brother 422.

*otōtoi* day before yesterday 339a.

*ototoshi* year before last 339a.

*ototsui=otōtoi* 339a.

*otottsán* papa 421.

*Olowa* 439f.  
*otsu* = *kinoto* 367a. [ing.  
*otsu na* strange, quaint, charm-  
*o-tsuke* soup 32.  
*otte* afterwards, by and by.  
*ottsuke* presently, soon 297a.  
*ottsuku* = *oitsuku* overtake.  
*ou* chase.  
*ou* carry on the back.  
*Ōu* 334b. <sup>th</sup> [ing.  
*owari* end; — *no* last, conclud-  
*Owari* 89g, 224c.  
*owaru* end, finish.  
*owashi* = *oashi* money xxvi.  
*owasu* = *gasaru* 191c.  
*oya* parent.  
*oya, oyaoya* (interjection) 414.  
*ō-ya* landlord 421c.  
*oya-ji* father 421.  
*oya-kata* boss 421c.  
*oya-kōkō* = *kōkō* filial piety.  
*oyami* (*mo*) *naku* incessantly.  
*Oya Shirazu Ko Shirazu* 188a.  
*oya-yubi* thumb 240d.  
*ō-yō suru* put into practice, ap-  
ply, adapt.  
*oyobi* or (classical).  
*oyobosu* cause to reach, extend.  
*oyobu* reach; *ni oyobanai* is not  
necessary 33c, 218d, 371;  
*oyobazu nagara* 279c.  
*oyogu* swim 237b.  
*oyoru* sleep (polite). [352b.  
*oyoso* about, approximately  
*ōyoso* in general 352b.  
*Ōzaka* = *Ōsaka*.  
*ō-zaka-nomi* drunkard.  
*ō-zei* in great number 52f, 340.  
*ōzuru* agree, comply with 355b.  
*pan* bread.  
*pan to* (of a little explosion),  
*pan-dane* yeast xxx.  
*patatto* with a thud.

*patchiri* (of bright eyes).  
*patto* (of quick spreading).  
*peiji* page XIII. [gar] xv.  
*peke* bad, spoiled, useless (vul-  
*perapera* rapidly (of talk).  
*pichipichi* (of floundering fish).  
*piipii* (of a flute, of whining).  
*pikapika, pikaripikari* (of shin-  
ing, glittering, flashing).  
*pimpin* vigorously.  
*pin to* (of cracking crockery or  
glass).  
*pishanto* with a slam, tight.  
*pisskari to* with a slam, tight.  
*pittari* completely.  
*pointo* switch (on a railroad).  
*pokari-pokari* (of tobacco smoke  
or mild heat).  
*pokketto* pocket.  
*potsupotsu, potsuripotsuri* here  
and there, leisurely.  
*pumpun* (of an odor or sullen  
anger).  
*puttsuri* (of cutting).  
*-ra* (plural ending) I, 28; et  
cetera Ib, 265f; *kokora* here-  
abouts 40c.  
*rai* thunder.  
*-rai* since.  
*Rai Sanyō* 434g.  
*rai-getsu* next month.  
*rai-nen* next year.  
*rai-shū* next week.  
*raku na* easy, happy.  
*raku-dai* failure in examination.  
*ram-bō na* unruly.  
*rampu* lamp.  
*ramune* lemonade.  
*ran* orchid.  
(*go*) *ran* look 438b; — *ni ireru*  
show 309; — *nasaru* look  
310.  
*Ran* Holland 122a.  
*rappa* trumpet.

- rappa-shu* trumpeter 255b.  
*rasha* woolen cloth.  
*-rashii* 109.  
*rei* nought, zero.  
 (o) *rei* bow, thanks, politeness, present 33c; — *ni iku* 130b; — *no shiruski ni* 368a.  
*rei* instance, example, usage; — *wo toru* (*hiku, ageru*) give an example 187a; — *no* the said 452e; — *no tōri* as usual.  
*rei* 422a.  
*rei-do* zero (on thermometer).  
*rei-fuku* ceremonial dress.  
*go rei-jo* your daughter.  
*go rei-kei (sama)* your older brother 422a.  
 (go) *rei-kei* your wife.  
*go rei-soku* your son.  
*go rei-tei (sama)* your younger brother.  
*rei-ten* zero (nought point).  
*reki-shi* history.  
*rem-pei* military drill.  
*ren-dai* hand-barrow for carrying people across a river 183.  
*res-sha* railway train.  
*ri* reason, principle, right.  
*ri* = 2.44 miles.  
*ri-eki* profit, advantage.  
*ri-en* divorce. [208a.  
*ri-gakushi* graduate in science.  
*ri-hatsu-ten* barber-shop 232c.  
*ri-kō na* clever, smart 118e.  
*riku* land (opp, sea); — *ni a-garu* land; — *jō* on land; — *de* by land, over-land.  
*riku-gun* army.  
*ri-kutsu* reason, argumentation.  
*rin* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *sen*, *bu* or *fun* 417a.  
*ringo* apple.  
*rippa na* splendid.
- rip-pō* cube 72b.  
*rip-puku* anger.  
*ri-sō* ideal 11A.  
*ri-soku* interest on money.  
*ris-shin* rise in the world, pro-motion.  
*risu* squirrel.  
*ri-sū* number of *ri* 341a.  
*rittoru* liter.  
*ri-yō* use, utilization.  
*-ro* (imperative) 150.  
*Ro* Russia 122a.  
*rō* prison. [ther.  
*go rō-bo (sama)* your grandmo-(*go*) *rō-jū* cabinet minister in feudal times 441d.  
*rō-ka* corridor.  
*roku* six. [(with negatives).  
*roku ni* satisfactorily, fully, well  
*roku-bu* pilgrim.  
*rokuroku* fully, sufficiently (with negatives). [xxiii.  
*rōma-ji* Roman characters.  
*rom-bun* essay, article.  
*ron* argument, debate.  
*ron-gi* discussion.  
*Rongo* 244b, 282b.  
*rō-nin* masterless samurai 187d.  
*ron-seisu* essay, article.  
*Roshin Ginkō* 122a.  
*rō-tai* old body, aged person.  
*rō-ya* prison.  
*-rui* 241b.  
*ruri* emerald.  
*ruri* blue fly-catcher.  
*ru-su* absence; *rusu desu* is not at home.  
*rusu-ban* keeper of the house in the absence of the master.  
*rusu-i* = *rusuban*,  
*ryan go sai* 440h.  
*ryō* (coin) 418f. [311b.  
*go ryō* sepulcher (of Emperor)

ryō unit 87.  
 ryō- both ; — *san* two or three.  
 ryō good.  
 ryō-*chi* domain, estate.  
 ryō-*gae-ya* money changer.  
 ryō-*hi* travelling expenses.  
 ryō-*kō* two sides ; — *tomo* both.  
 ryō-*ji* medical treatment.  
 ryō-*ji* consul.  
 ryō-*ji-kwan* consulate.  
 ryō-*kaku* traveller.  
 ryō-*kō* travelling.  
 ryō-*kō* good harbor.  
 ryō-*kō-menjō*, ryō-*kō-ken*, ryō-*ken*  
 passport 269a.  
 ryō-*ku* power.  
 ryō-*ri* cooking.  
 ryō-*ri-ban* cook.  
 ryō-*ri-ya* restaurant.  
 ryō-*ru* cook xb.  
 ryō-*sen* fishing boat.  
 ryō-*shi* hunter, fisherman 410b.  
 ryō-*shin*=*futa-oya* parents 421.  
 ryō-*shin* conscience.  
 ryō-*yaku* good medicine.  
 ryū grain 80.  
 ryū-*gaku* being abroad for study.  
 ryū-*kō* prevalence, being in fashion.  
 Ryūkyū Loochoo Islands.  
*sa* (interjection) 416.  
*sa*, *sā* come ! 414. [not.  
*sa*=*sō* thus ; *sa mo nakaba* if  
*-sa* 21.  
*sabaki* judicial sentence.  
*sabiru*, *sabi ga deru* rust.  
*sabishii* lonely, dreary.  
*sabi-tsuku* get rusty.  
*sabu*=*san* three 80.  
*sadamaru* be decided.  
*sadameru* fix, decide 159b.  
*sadamete* doubtless 345.  
*sae* even 353 ; *de* — *mo* 354.

*saeru* be bright (of the moon).  
*saesuru*, *saesutte* sing, twitter, chirp, warble.  
*Sagami* 90b.  
*sagaru* descend, return 184d.  
*sagashi-dasu* look up, find out.  
*sagasu* search, inquire for.  
*sageru* let hang, take down 169c ; suspend, carry ; blame 178a.  
*sagi* heron.  
*sa-hai-nin* real estate agent.  
*sa-hodo* (*ni*) so much (with negatives).  
*sai* west 107b.  
*sai* ability ; — *no aru* talented.  
*sai* year 74, 68a, 256c.  
*sai* wife 421.  
*sai* time occasion.  
*sai*=*mottomo* 135d.  
*sai-ban* judicial sentence.  
*saiban-kwan* judge.  
*saiban-sho* courthouse xxx.  
*sai-fu* money bag, purse.  
*Saigyō* 318d.  
*sai-han* second edition 94.  
*sai-han*=*saiban* xxx.  
*sai-jitsu*=*matsuri* festival day.  
*sai-jō* the highest.  
*sai-ku* artificer's work.  
*sai-kun* wife (familiar) 421.  
*Saikyō*=*Kyōto* 41f.  
*sai-nan* misfortune.  
*sai-sen* offering of money.  
*saisai* yearly. [274a.  
*sai-shi* wife and child(ren)  
*sai-sho* the very beginning, at the first ; — *no* the first 97a.  
*sai-shō* prime minister 300a.  
*sai-soku* dun, demand 214.  
*sai-tori* middleman, broker.  
*saiwai na* happy, fortunate ; — (*ni*) 320.  
*saji* spoon.

*saka* slope, ascent, summit.  
*sakai* boundary, frontier.  
*sakan na* flourishing, prosperous.  
*saka-na* fish 107c. [tion.  
*sabari* bloom, prime, culmination.  
*saka-sama ni, sakasa ni* upside down.  
*saka-ya* liquor-dealer xxxa.  
*saka-zuki* wine cup.  
*sake* rice-beer, alcoholic liquor.  
*sake* salmon.  
*sake-nomi* drinker, toper xxxa.  
*sakeru* avoid.  
*sakeru* be torn, ripped.  
*saki* tip, point, front; — *no* former, beyond, ahead 219a; — *ni* previously, ahead 382b; *o*—384a; — *wa* hence, after 384, 406; — *de (wa)* he, they 28, 365; — *kara* since some time ago; — *ye* 382b, 384a.  
*saki-goro* the other day.  
*saki-kodo* a little while ago.  
*saki-ototoi* three days ago.  
*saki-ototoshi* three years ago.  
*sakki* a short while ago.  
*sak-kon* nowadays 340.  
*saku* tear, rip.  
*saku* bloom.  
*saku* produce, yield, crop.  
*saku* plan, scheme 434f.  
*saku-ban* last night.  
*saku-chō* yesterday morning.  
*saku-jitsu* yesterday.  
*saku-nen* last year.  
*sakura (no ki)* cherry tree.  
*Sakura* 156f. [156f.  
*sakura-zumi* good charcoal  
*sakuri* (of easy splitting, of a frank manner).  
*saku-ya* last night.  
*sama* 14c, 420a.

*samasu* cool.  
*samasu* recover from; *me wo* — awake; *yoi wo* — get sober.  
*samatageru, no samatage wo suru* hinder.  
*samazama na (no)* various.  
*sam-bai-zu* 395d.  
*sam-bō* three treasures 415a.  
*sameru* get awake, sober 91g.  
*sameru* become cool.  
*samisen* (a musical instrument).  
*Sammaibashi* 86b.  
*Sam-po* walking; — *suru, — ni deru* go out for a walk.  
*samui* cold, chilly (of weather).  
*samurai* one of the former military class 277.  
*samushii = sabishii* lonely, dreary XIII.  
*san = sama* 14c, 420a.  
*san* mountain (in composition).  
*san* three 80.  
*sanada-mushi* tape-worm.  
*sa-nae* sprouts of rice 387a.  
*sa-naka* the very midst.  
*sanchimeitoru* centimeter.  
*san-dai* going to the Palace.  
*san-den* going to a palace.  
*sane* seed 217b.  
*Sanetomo* 175a.  
*san-gai* third story 373d.  
*Sanindō* 390b.  
*san-jō* making a call 310.  
*san-kei* going for worship 193a.  
*san-kō* consideration, reference.  
*(go) san-nan* third son 422.  
*san-sai* the three powers 95d.  
*san-sei* approval, seconding 259a.  
*san-shuisu* production.  
*sansuktsu-koku* amount of production.  
*sansuke* 298a.



*san-ya* mountains and plains.  
*Sanyōdō* 390b.  
*sanzan* (*ni*) recklessly, severely.  
*sanzuru* = *mairu* go, come 310.  
*sao* pole, unit 82.  
*sappari* clearly, wholly, at all  
 (with negatives); — *to suru*  
 become clear 187b.  
*sara* plate, saucer.  
*sara ni* in addition, again.  
*sara ni* entirely, at all.  
*sa-raigetsu* month after next.  
*sa-rainen* year after next.  
*sarari*, *sarasara* entirely 326a.  
*sarasara* (of a rustling sound).  
*sarasu* expose; *hi ni* — bleach  
 in the sun; *kubi wo* — expose  
 the head (of a criminal).  
*sarau* review, rehearse.  
*sareba tote* nevertheless 401.  
*sari-nagara* = *shikashi* but.  
*saru* monkey. [rid of.  
*saru* leave, depart from, get  
*sasa* bamboo grass.  
*sasaeru* support.  
*saseru* (causative of *suru*) 255.  
*sashi* foot-rule 68.  
*sashi-* 303. [present 309.  
*sashi-ageru* lift up, give, offer,  
*sashi-atari* at present.  
*sashi-dasu* offer, present, send  
 (freight, mail, etc.).  
*sashi-de-gamashii* impertinent  
 110.  
*sashi-deru* intrude.  
*sashi-hiku* deduct.  
 — *ni sashi-kakaru* approach.  
*sashi-ki wo suru* propagate by  
 means of cuttings.  
*sashi-komu* penetrate into, shine  
 into.  
*sashi-mi* fish cut into thin slices  
 to be eaten raw.  
*sashi-shio* flood tide.

*sashitaru* special.  
 — *wo sashite* toward, with ref-  
 erence to 390.  
*sashi-tsukae* hindrance, engage-  
 ment.  
*sashi-tsukaeru* be hindered, em-  
 barassed.  
*sashi-su* directions, instructions.  
*sassa* (*to*) hastily, energetically.  
*sas-soku* very soon; — *desu*  
*ga* 343a.  
*sassuru* conjecture, sympathize.  
*sasu* stick, thrust, sting, wear  
 (in hair, girdle); *hoshi wo* —  
 hit the target 454a; *ki wo*  
 — plant a cutting.  
*sasu* point out, indicate 240d;  
 pour into, drop upon; mea-  
 sure 68; *shōgi wo* — play  
 chess; *kasa wo* — hold up  
 an umbrella; *beni wo* —  
 apply rouge.  
*sasu* grow, rise, penetrate,  
 shine; *shio ga* — the tide  
 rises; *kasa ga* — a shadow  
 appears 458f.  
*sasuga* (*ni*) as one would natu-  
 rally expect 323b.  
*sata* communication, news.  
*sate* so, then, well 352.  
*sato* village, one's parents'  
 home.  
*sa-tō* sugar.  
*satsu* card, note, paper money.  
*satsu* unit 87.  
*sa-tsuki* azalea 387a.  
*satsuma-imo* sweet potato 80a.  
*satsuma-yaki* 92f.  
*sawa* marsh.  
*sawagu* be noisy, agitated.  
 — *ni sawaru* touch. [flict 371.  
 — *ni sawaru* come into con-  
*sawasawa* (of the murmuring  
 of the wind).

- saya* sheath, scabbard.  
*sayō* as you say, yes 365; —  
*na* such 39; — *nara* Good-  
 bye! 400a.  
*sa-yū* left and right.  
*saso* how — you must (with  
 probable form).  
*se* back.  
*se* shoal.  
*se, se-bu* = 30 *tsubo* 68.  
*se-biro* sack coat 173c.  
*segare* my son 422.  
*sei* stature; — *ga takai* tall;  
 — *ga hikui* short 7a.  
*sei* = *ikioi* energy, force; —  
*ippai* with all one's might;  
*no* — *de* on account of 387.  
*sei* = *sai* west XII, 197h.  
*sei* = *yo* generation; *Ed'war'd*  
*shichi sei* Edward VII. 93.  
*sei-batsu* punishing (rebels).  
*sei-bo* present made at the end  
 of the year.  
*sei-chō* growth.  
*sei-dai* prosperity.  
*sei-do* institution, system 324a.  
*sei-fu* the Government; — *de*  
 365; — *kara* 382b.  
*sei-hon* bookbinding.  
*seihon-ya* bookbinder. [ment.  
*sei-ji* political affairs, govern-  
*seiji-ka* politician, statesman.  
*sei-jin* sage 436a.  
*sei-kō* success.  
*sei-kyō* prosperous condition.  
*sei-kyū* request.  
*sei-meī* full name XII.  
*sei-meī* life.  
*sei-nitsū ni* minutely, exactly.  
*Seinan no Ikusa* 197h, 403d.  
*sei-nen* young man.  
*sei-reki* European calendar 74.  
*sei-ryaku* policy.  
*sei-ryoku* power, influence.
- sei-sai ni* minutely, in detail.  
*sei-shi* manufacture of paper.  
*sei-shin* spirit, intent.  
*sei-sho* clean copy; — *suru*  
 make a clean copy.  
*Seisho* Bible.  
*sei-to* pupil, scholar.  
*sei-tō* political party.  
*Sei-yō* the West, Occident  
 155b; — *ryōri* foreign cook-  
 ing; — *kusai* 110; — *suturi*  
*no* built in European style.  
*Seiyō-jin* European 18g.  
*sei-zō* manufacture.  
 (o) *se-ji* civility, flattery; o —  
*wo iu* speak courteously;  
 o — *no ii* obsequious.  
*se-kai* world; — *dai ichi no* the  
 foremost in the world 93a;  
 — *jū de* 137a.  
*se-ken* the world, the public.  
*seki wo suru* cough.  
*seki* barrier 77d.  
*seki* mat, seat, room, party; *is-*  
*seki hanasu* give one recital.  
*seki* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *gō*.  
*seki-ban* slate 294a.  
*Sekigahara* 77d.  
*seki-hi* stone monument.  
*seki-jun* order of seats.  
*seki-komu* be short of breath  
 (as in anger).  
*seki-sho* barrier 77d.  
*seki-tan* coal.  
*seki-tō* stone monument.  
*seki-yu* kerosene.  
*sek-kaku* with special pains,  
 kindly 193d; — *no oboski-*  
*meski* your kind intention.  
*sek-kan* chastisement. [94g.  
*sek-ken* (*seki-ken*) soap.  
*sek-kan* (*setsu-kan*) economy.  
*sek-ku* one of five holidays 66c.  
*sek-kyō* sermon.

*semai* narrow.  
*semaru* be narrowed, straitened; approach, oppress (with *ni*).  
*sem-ban* ten million times 68a.  
*seme-iru* enter forcibly.  
*semeru* attack, assault.  
*semete* at least.  
*semi* cicada.  
*Semmatsu* 328c.  
*sem-mon* specialty xxviii.  
*sem-patsu* ships, vessels.  
*sen* no former; — *ni* formerly.  
*sen* =  $\frac{1}{100}$  yen.  
*sen* line (in writing).  
*sen* thousand.  
*se-naka*, *sena* back.  
*sen cha* infusion of tea.  
*sen-chō* captain of a ship.  
*Sendai Hagi* 328c.  
*sendatte* recently 345b.  
*sen-dō* sailor, boatman.  
*Sengakuji* 187d.  
*sen-getsu* last month.  
*sen-jitsu* the other day; — *wa* 218f, 425.  
*senji-tsumeru* "boil down."  
*Senju* 381b.  
*sen-kō* stick of incense.  
*sen-koku* a little while ago.  
*sen-kyo* election.  
*sen-kyō-shi* missionary.  
*sen-ryū* brief witty poem.  
*sen-sei* master, teacher 420.  
*sen-sengetsu* month before last.  
*sen-shū* last week.  
*sen-shutsu* election.  
*sen-sō* battle, war.  
*sen-sui* artificial pond.  
*sen-taku* washing, laundry.  
*sen-tō* public bath.  
*senzuru*, *senjiru* make a decoction.  
*sep-pō* sermon 137f.

*sep-puku* = *harakiri* suicide by cutting the abdomen 186f.  
*senarumi* (passive of *suru*).  
*seri de uru* sell by auction.  
*seri-uri*, *seri* auction.  
*seru* hold an auction.  
*sesse (to)* energetically.  
*ses-sha* I 27.  
*ses-shō* killing animals.  
*ses-shō-kin-dan* prohibition to kill animals 404b.  
 — *ni sessuru* associate with.  
*Seto* 127a.  
*Seto* 224c.  
*seto-mono* porcelain.  
*setsu* season, period, time 407;  
*kono* — in these days.  
*setsu* opinion. [223.  
*setsu-bun* change of seasons  
*setsu-mei* explanation.  
*setsunai* distressing, oppressive.  
*setsu-yu* advice, reprimand.  
*setsu-zoku-shi* conjunction 395a.  
 (o) *sewa (sama)* assistance; *no*  
*sewa wo suru* take care of;  
*sewa ni naru* be assisted.  
*sewashii* busy.  
*sha suru* thank, apologize.  
*shaberu*, *shabette* chatter, talk.  
*shabon* soap XIII.  
*shachi-hoko* grampus 120b.  
*sha-fu* riksha-man.  
*Shaka* Buddha 329a.  
*shake* = *sake* salmon.  
*shak-kin* borrowing money, debt.  
*shakkuri* hiccup 128d.  
*shaku* = *seki* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  gō.  
*shaku* = 11.93 inches 68b.  
*shaku* degree of nobility 76c.  
*shamisen* = *samisen*.  
*shappo* hat XIII.  
*share* witticism, pun.  
*sha-rei* honorarium, fee.

- shareru* be elegant; *shareta* stylish, witty.  
*sha-shin* photograph 16; — *wo toru* take or sit for a photograph.  
*shashin-jutsu* photographic art. (go) *sha-tei (sama)* your younger brother 422.  
*shatsu* shirt XIII, 380b.  
*shi* (conjunction) 399, 300b.  
*shi* poem 181b; — *wo tsukuru* compose a poem.  
*shi* viscount 76c.  
*shi*=*samurai* 304b, 391c.  
*shi* history (in composition).  
*shi* city 324a.  
*shi* four 70.  
*shi-ageru* finish.  
*shi-asatte* two days after tomorrow.  
*shiawase no ii, shiawase na* fortunate; *shiawase na koto ni wa* happily.  
*shiba* fire-wood.  
*shiba* turf, lawn.  
*Shiba* 35a.  
*shiba-i* theater, drama 133b.  
*shibaraku* for some time 104a.  
*shibari-ageru* tie up.  
*shibaru* tie.  
*shibashiba* at times, often.  
*Shibata Katsue* 60a.  
*shibireru, shibire ga kireru* be numb, asleep (of limbs).  
*shiboru* squeeze, wring out.  
*shibu* juice of unripe persimmons 227c.  
*shibu-cha* poor tea.  
*shibui* astringent, austere.  
*shibu-kaki* unmellowed persimmon.  
*shibu-kami* paper stained with *shibu* 227c.  
*shibushibu* with reluctance.
- shichi* pledge, pawn; — *ni oku* pawn.  
*shichi* seven.  
*Shichifukujin* 204a.  
*shichi-yō* seven planets 75.  
*shi-chō* mayor of a city 164b.  
*shi-chū* the city 386.  
*shichū* stew.  
*shi-dai* order, circumstance; — *ni* gradually, as soon as 279, 281d, 401; — *desu* 281b.  
*shidaishidai (ni)* gradually.  
*shi-dan* division (of the army).  
*shidara no nai* unsystematic, badly managed.  
*shi-gai* corpse.  
*shi-goku* very (emphatic) 349b; *shisurei* — 423.  
*shi-goto* work, task business.  
*shi-hai* government, control.  
*shi-han-gakkō* normal school.  
*shi-hei* paper money 269b.  
*shi-hō* four sides square.  
*shi-hō-kwan* official in the Judiciary Department 341b.  
*shi-hō-shō* Judiciary Department.  
*shi-in* consonant XVIIIc.  
*shi-ireru* lay in (goods).  
*shiiru* force (a thing on one).  
*shiite* compulsorily, importunately.  
*shi-jū* from beginning to end, constantly, always.  
*shika* deer. [tives].  
*shika* only, merely (with *negashika*=*sō* 399b; — *mo* more-over.  
*shikajika* and so on 332a.  
*shi-kakeru* begin to do 295d.  
*shi-kaku na* square. [399b].  
*shikari to iedomo* nevertheless  
*shikaru* scold.  
*shikaru ni* but 399b.

- shikaru-beki* suitable. [404a.  
*shikashi*, — *nagara* but 399,  
*shi-kata* way of doing; — *ga*  
*nai* can not be helped 16a.  
*shika* to firmly, certainly, ex-  
 actly.  
*shi-ke* dampness, storm.  
*shi-kei* the death penalty; —  
*ni sko suru* condemn to  
 death.  
*shi-ken* examination; — *wouke-*  
*ru* be examined.  
*shikeru*, *shikette* be damp,  
 stormy xb.  
*shiki* rite, ceremony.  
*shikii* lower groove, threshold.  
*shiki-mono* rug, carpet.  
*shikiri ni* (or *to*) persistently,  
 constantly 128d.  
*shikkari* firmly, faithfully 128d;  
 — *shita* substantial, trust-  
 worthy 131b.  
*shik-ke* moisture; — *ga aru*,  
*tsuyoi* damp 380d.  
*shik-kei na* disrespectful, rude;  
 — *itashimasu* Good-bye!  
 400a. [form 303a.  
*shik-kō suru* administer, per-  
*Shikoku* 81c.  
*shi-komu* lay in (gooda), teach  
 (something), educate.  
*shiku* spread (mats), lay (a  
 railroad track).  
*shikujiru*, *shikujitte* fail, forfeit.  
*shi-ku-kaisei* city improvements  
 312c.  
*shi-kwan* officer (of army).  
*shikya* = *shika* but, only.  
*shima* island.  
*shimada-nage* 249b. [cluding.  
 (o) *shimai* end; — *no* last, con-  
*shi-mai* sister 422a.  
*shimaru* be tight, be strict,  
 manage.
- shi-natsu* beginning and end,  
 circumstances, economy  
 233a.  
*shimau* finish, close, put away,  
 shut up; *shimatta koto* too  
 bad! 248d; — *te* — 250, 52a.  
 92b, 251a, 293c.  
*Shimbashi* 77b.  
*shim-bō* perseverance.  
*shimbun* (*shi*) newspaper 48a;  
 — *ni kaku*, — *de kaku* 366c.  
*shimeppoi* moist, damp 380d.  
*shimeru*, *shimette* shut.  
*shimeru* occupy, take posses-  
 sion of; *shimeta* I've got it!  
*shimeru*, *shimette* be damp; o  
*shimeri* rain.  
 -*shimeru* 254a. [ingly.  
*shimajimi* thoroughly, penetrat-  
*shimiru* penetrate.  
*shim-mai* new rice.  
*shim-motsu* present 84d.  
*shimo* frost.  
*shimo* = *shita* below.  
*shimo-be* manservant 115c.  
*shimo-me* maidservant.  
*Shimonoseki* 266c.  
*Shimotsuke* 248g.  
*shim-pai* anxiety; — *de nara-*  
*nai* I am very anxious 365;  
*go* — *ni wa oyobanai* 196d.  
*shim-po* progress, advance.  
 (go) *shim-pu sama* your father  
 58b, 421.  
*shin* = *makoto* truth.  
*shin* = *kanoto* 367a.  
*shin* new (in composition).  
 (go) *shin san* lady of the house  
 421.  
*Shin* China 122a.  
*shina* substance, wares 104g.  
*Shina* China.  
*shinai* stout bamboo foil.  
*shi-nai* the city 386.

- Shinajin* Chinese.  
*shina-mono* wares.  
*Shinano* 130b, 365a, 388a.  
*shi-naasu* do over.  
*shin-chiku* no newly built.  
*shin-dai* property.  
*Shinadō* Shinto xxxc.  
*shin-gaku* theology xxxc.  
*Shingon* 359a.  
*shin-iwaseru* die out (of family).  
*shin-i-ue* moment of death.  
*shin-nin* dead person.  
*shin-i-sokonau* fail to die 415a.  
*shin-ja* believer. [124.  
*shin-jin* piety; — *bukui* pious  
*shin-jō itasu* give 309.  
*shin-kei* nerves.  
*shin-nen* New Year 317b.  
*shinobiru* endure 371.  
*shinobishinabi* stealthily.  
*shinobu* = *shinobiru* endure.  
*shin-om* conceal one's self, hide  
from.  
*Shinran* 113c.  
*shin-reki* new calendar.  
*shin-ro* course, line of advance.  
*shin-rui* relatives 241b.  
*shin-ryoku* aggression, plunder,  
pillage.  
*shin-satsu* examining medic-  
ally.  
*shin-seki* relatives (elegant).  
*shin-setsu* na kind, careful.  
*shin-shu* progressiveness, en-  
terprise.  
*shin-sui-shiki* ceremony of  
launching a ship.  
*shin-tai* body 348b.  
*shin-tai itasu* give 309.  
*shin-to* believer 202c.  
*Shintomiza* 416a.  
*shinu* (*ru*) die 240, 261, 77a,  
271c, 363b; — *baari ni*  
*natte iru* 423b; *shinde iru* is  
dead 128a; *shinde shimae*  
415a.  
*go shin-zō sanna* lady of the  
house 421.  
*shin-zō-sen* newly built ship.  
*shin-zoku* relatives 241b.  
*shinzuru*, *shinjiru* believe.  
*shio* salt, brine, tide, current  
xxvi; — *ga amai* not salty  
enough; — *wo tsukeru*, — *ni*  
*tsukeru* 160g.  
*shio-ki* ebb tide.  
*shio-karai* salty, [nals).  
(o) *shi-oki* execution (of crimi-  
*shioppai* salty.  
*shiorashii* tender, delicate.  
*shio-zuke* salt pickle 108b.  
*shippai* failure.  
*shippo* (*shiri-o*) tail.  
*ship-pō-yaki* cloisonne 137g.  
*shira* = *shiran* don't know.  
*shirabakureru* feign ignorance.  
*shiraberu* inquire, investigate.  
*shira-ga shira-ge* gray hair  
xxxv, 453g.  
*shira-ho* white sail 134f.  
*shirami* louse.  
*shiraseru* inform, let one know.  
*shira-uwo* name of a very  
small, white fish.  
*shirazu-shirazu* unawares 171.  
*shireru* be known, be evident,  
be able to know 55e, 260.  
*shiri* bottom, base, buttocks,  
back (of garment) 236d; —  
*wo hashoru* tuck up the  
skirts. [ed.  
*shiri-au* be mutually acquaint-  
*shi-ritsu* no private.  
*shirizoku* retreat.  
*shiro* the white 106; — *no* 119.  
(o) *shiro* castle.  
*shiro ato* ruins of a castle.  
*shiroi* white; *o* — face powder.

- shiro-ji* white ground (of figured cloth).  
*shiro-kane* silver 133c.  
*shiro-mi* whitish color 182b; white of egg.  
*shiroshimesu* govern 310a.  
*shiro-uri* white cucumber 108f.  
 (o) *shiru* juice, soup 227b.  
*shiru*, *shitte* know; *shitte iru* know; *shitte no tōri* as you know.  
*shiru-ko* a dish made of *mochi*, an and sugar.  
*shirushi* sign; *no* — (*made*) *ni* as a token of 379.  
*shiryō* resources.  
*shi-sai* circumstance, cause.  
*shi-sai ni* minutely, in detail.  
*shishi* lion.  
*shi-shutsu* expenditures.  
*shi-sokonau* do amiss, spoil.  
 (g) *shi-soku* your son 422.  
*shita* what is below; ground floor 373d; — *no* the lower; *no* — *ni* under 384.  
*shita* tongue.  
*shitagau* follow, obey 371.  
 — *ni shitagatte* in accordance with 390; then 456b.  
*shita-ji* = *shōyu* 353a.  
*shi-taku* preparations.  
*shitatameru* white (a letter or document).  
*shi-tateru* get ready, make up.  
*shi-tate-ya* tailor.  
*shitashii* intimate.  
*shitawashii* worthy of affection, feel attached. [tion].  
*shita-yomi* rehearsal, preparation — *ni shite*, *to shite* for, as 390.  
*shi-tōsu* put through, carry out.  
*shitsu* room.  
*shi-tsukeru* train.
- shi-tsukusu* do everything possible.  
*shitsu-mon* question 247d.  
*shitsu-rei* discourtesy, impoliteness 218f.  
*shi-tsusukeru* keep on doing.  
*shitte-iru-gamashii* pretending to know.  
*shiwai* stinging.  
*shi-yō* way of doing 268a; — *ga nai* can't be helped 16a; *nan to ka* — *ga arisō na mon desu* I hope it may be managed 118a, 280.  
*shi-sen* (*to* or *ni*) naturally, spontaneously.  
*shizuka na* quiet, calm, slow.  
*shizumaru* become calm.  
*shizumeru* tranquillize 181a.  
*shizumeru* sink, immerse.  
*shizumu* sink, be immersed.  
*Shizuoka* 96e.  
*sho*- many, several, 1, 270b, 440e.  
*sho* place; *shosho* various places.  
*sho suru* sentence (a criminal).  
*shō* = 1.588 quart 69, 301a.  
*shō* = *jō* = *ue* 248f.  
*shō* governmental department (in composition).  
*shō* trade, commerce 391c.  
*shō* meeting-point.  
*shō*: small.  
*shō-bai* trade, business 30h.  
*shō-bi suru* praise.  
*shō-bō-fu* fireman.  
*shō-bu* sweet flag.  
*shō-chi* cognizance, consent; *go* — *no tōri* as you know; — *itashimashita* very well.  
*sho-chū* hot season 386.  
*shō-dōku* disinfection.  
*shō-fuda* price-mark. [55a.  
*shō-gakkō* elementary school

- shō-gi* chess; — *wo sasu* play chess.  
*shō-go* noon.  
*shō-gun* commander-in-chief, "tycoon" 34h.  
*shō-gwa-kwai* assembly of artists. 251b.  
*shō-gwatsu* first month 74.  
*shō-gyō* commerce.  
*shō-kan* first edition 93.  
*shō-hō* way of doing business, trade, commerce.  
*shoi-komū* undertake.  
*sho-jaku* book.  
*shojak-kwan* library 311c.  
*shō-ji* sliding door or sash covered with paper.  
*shō-jiki na* honest, artless.  
*shō-kai* introduction 216, 309a.  
*shōkai-jō* letter of introduction.  
*sho-ki* heat (of the weather).  
*shō-kin* specie.  
*shō-ko* evidence, proof.  
*shoku* occupation, office 96e.  
*shoku-butsu* plant.  
*shokubutsu-gaku* botany.  
*shoku-gyō* occupation, trade.  
*shoku-ji* meal; — *suru* take a meal.  
*shoku-motsu* food, victuals.  
*shoku-san* increasing the production.  
*sho-kun* Gentlemen!  
*shoku-nin* workman, artisan.  
*shō-kwa suru* be digested.  
*sho-motsu* book 164c.  
*shō-nen* youth, young people.  
*shō-nin* (title) 248f. [442f.  
*shō-nō* gracious acceptance  
*shō-nō* camphor.  
*shoppai* salty.  
*shō-rai* in the future.  
*sho-sei* student.  
*sho-seki* book 227d.
- sho-sen* after all, by no means (with negative).  
*shō-sen* merchant vessel.  
*shō-setsu (bon)* novel, romance.  
*shosho* various places 1.  
*shō-sho* certificate.  
*shū shō* a little.  
*shō-tai* invitation 216.  
*shou* carry on the back xxviii, 263c.  
*shō-ya* head of a village 196a.  
*shō-yu* soy, kind of sauce 353a.  
*sho-yū-ken* proprietary rights.  
*shō-zoku* garb.  
*shōsuru* produce.  
*shu* = sake.  
*shu* lord, master, mistress.  
*shu* unit of interest 80.  
*shu* head; *uta isshu* one poem.  
*shu* sort, bind.  
*shū* sect.  
*shū* week 75.  
*-shū* country 31a, 248g, 358d.  
*-shū* collection 187c. 437b.  
*-shu* (plural ending) 1.  
*shu-bi-yoku* successfully 314.  
*shu-dan* plan, contrivance.  
*shu-gan* principal point.  
*shū-gi* congratulation, congratulatory gift 88a.  
*shū-giin* the Lower House; — *giin* representative 347c.  
*shu-gyō* training, study.  
*shu-gyoku* jewels.  
*shū-ka* sect.  
*shū-hai-nin* postman 232c.  
*shū-i* purport.  
*shū-ji* penmanship.  
*shu-jin* master 420.  
*shu-jō* the Emperor 311d.  
*shuju* in various ways.  
*shū-kan* week 75, 217d, 385.  
*shuku* stopping place.  
*shuku-hō* salute of guns.



*shū-kwaku* (*daka*) harvest, crop 387c.  
*shū-kwan* habit, custom.  
*shu-moku* wooden hammer for a bell.  
*shū-nyū* income, receipts.  
*shup-pan* setting sail.  
*shup-pan* publication 94d.  
*shu-rui* kind; species.  
*shū-sho* lamentation, mourning.  
*shus-se* rise in the world, promotion.  
*shus-setai* attendance (at a meeting or class).  
 (o) *shūto* parent-in-law 422.  
*shu-tō* vaccination.  
*shutsu-nyū* = *deiri* going out and in.  
*shutsu-nyū chō* day-book 228b.  
*shut-tai suru* be finished, be done, happen.  
*shut-tatsu suru* set out on a journey, start 197b.  
*shū-zen* repair 219a.  
*sō, so* = *sayō* in that manner, so 351, 39c; *sō desu* (*ne*) yes 134a, 191c; *sō desu* it is said 107, 118e; *sō desu ka* 415; *sō ka* 257e; *sō to wa ienai* 334a; *sō wa ihanai* 351; *sō shite* 345, xxv, 395b; *sō shita tokoro ga* 212c; *sō iu* (*yō na*) 39, 273a.  
*sō* appearance; *-sō na* 107, 115, 280, 118e.  
*sō* unit 87.  
*So Tōba* 435b.  
*sō suru* perform (music).  
*soba* side, vicinity; — *ni yoru* approach near; *no* — *ni* beside, near by 385.  
*sō-ba* market-price; — *wo yaru* engage in speculation.  
*-sō-bai* -fold 80.

*sō-ban* sooner or later 316.  
*so-bo* grandmother.  
*sochi*(*ra*) there (where you are), that, (familiar) 40c, 337.  
*sō-dan* consultation; — *ni noru* take part in a consultation. 366d.  
*sodatari* bring up, rear.  
*sodatsu* grow up, be reared.  
*sode* sleeve.  
*saeru* add.  
*go so-fu* (*sama*) your grandfather.  
*sogu* cut obliquely, slice off.  
*so-han* coarse food.  
*sō-hō* (*tomo*) both parties.  
*sō-i* difference; — (*mo*) *natu* without fail; *ni* — (*ga* or *wa*) *nai* certainly 315a.  
*soitsu* that thing (where you are) 28.  
*sō-ji* cleaning.  
*sok-ki* stenography.  
*soko* that place, there (where you are) 337; = *ya* (indefinite) 342a; — *wa* (connective) 323b.  
*soko* bottom 236d.  
*soko-koko* here and there 337.  
*sokonau* injure 348b.  
*-sokonau* 297.  
*soku* unit 90.  
*soku-baku* interference 372.  
*soku-ryō* surveying.  
*so-matsu na* coarse, rude.  
*go som-bo* your honored mother.  
*someru* dye. [ther 244c, 421.  
*(go) som-pu* (*sama*) your father.  
*somuku* act contrary to, violate 371.  
*son* loss 85a; — *ga iku* 267e.  
*son* = *mura* district 324a.  
*sonaeru* provide, furnish, offer, sonata you (not polite) 28.

*son-chō* head of a village 164b, 196a.

*son-gai* damage.

*go son-kei* (*sama*) your older brother.

*son-kei* respect xxviii.

*sonna* such 39; — *ni* so.

*sonnara* if so, then 150a.

*sono* garden.

*sono* that (where you are) 36;

— *kō* you 28, 207a; — *tōri*

like that 209a; — *mama* in that condition, as it is 441f;

*sono ba de* on the spot.

*son-ran* = *go ran* (formal) 442e.

*sonsuru*, *sonjiru* be injured, wear out 85a. [374c.

*sora* sky; = *de* from memory

*sora* Look at that! 415.

*soranzuru* memorize 374c.

*sore* that one (where you are)

36; — *de ii* that will do

117h; — *de wa*, — *ja* 365,

xxv, 400a; — *de mo* never-

theless; — *kara* 378, 198a:

— *nara* 150a; — *giri* 431a;

— *wa* explanation) 224b.

*sore-gashi* a certain person 47.

*sō-ri-daijin* prime minister

300a.

*soroban* abacus.

*soroberu* arrange in order, furnish.

*sorori sorosoro* slowly, softly, gradually.

*Sorori Skinsamon* 439e.

*sorou* be uniform 88d; *sorotta*

complete; *soroi mo sorotte*

without exception 179.

*soru*, *suru* shave.

*sorya* = *sore wa* 276d. [422.

(*go*) *sō-ryō* heir, oldest child

*so-shiki* organization, system.

*sō-shiki* funeral 255b.

*sō-shin* the whole body.

*soshiru*, *soshite* slander 263d.

*soshite* = *sō shite*.

*sō-sho* cursive style 173a.

*so-sō na* heedless.

*sosogu* sprinkle (*mizu wo*), rinse (*mizu de*).

*sosokkashii* hasty, heedless.

*satchi* = *sochi*; — *noko ni suru*

neglect.

*soto* exterior; — *wo aruku* take

a walk; *no* — *ni* outside of

386.

*soto-gawa* outside.

*sotsu-gyō* graduation; *gakko*

*wo* — *suru* graduate from

school.

*sotto* softly, gently.

*sou* be joined, go along 371,

248a.

*su* vinegar.

*sū*, *su* number; — *hyaku* several hundred.

*sū* = *suu* suck.

*suberu*, *subette* slide, slip 242f.

*subesube shita* smooth, slippery.

*subete* all, in general 345.

*sude ni* already.

*sue* end.

*sue-ko*, *suekko* youngest child.

*sueru* set, place.

*sū-gaku* mathematics 341a.

*sugari-isuku* cling fast.

*sugaru* cling.

*sugata* form, figure. [118d.

*Sugawara no Michizane* 112g,

*sugi* cryptomeria, Japan cedar.

*sugi*, *sugite* past, after 390.

*sugiru* pass by, exceed 371,

242b.

— *sugiru* 106, 297.

*sugosu* pass (time).

— *sugosu* 297.

*sugu ni* (or *to*) immediately.

*sui-gai* damage by flood.  
*sui-kwa* watermelon.  
*sui-mono* soup.  
*sui-tō-bo* day-book 228b.  
*sui-tsuku* take hold by suction.  
*sui-yō(bi)* Wednesday 75.  
*suji* line, unit 83.  
*sukenai* = *sukunai*.  
*suki na* agreeable, favorite 55b.  
*suki, suki-ma* crack, opening.  
*sukkari* entirely 128d.  
*sukoburu* very (classical).  
*sukoshi, sukoshiku* a little, somewhat.  
*suku* open up, be thinned out; *onaka ga*—get hungry 102a; *mune ga*—get relief from a feeling of oppression.  
*suku* like 55b.  
*sukunai* a few, scarce 14a; *sukunaku to mo* at least 102.  
*sumai* residence. [167b.  
*sumanai* inexcusable, rude  
*sumaseru* bring to an end, settle.  
*sumasu* clear, purify, calm; *mimi wo*—listen intently; *sumashita* indifferent.  
*sumau* dwell, reside.  
*sumi* charcoal.  
*sumi* India ink.  
*sumi* corner.  
*Sumidagawa* 23f.  
*sumi-ka* dwelling place 440i.  
 — at *sumi-nareru* come to feel at home in 275.  
*sumō* wrestling; — *wo toru* wrestle.  
*sumō-tōri* wrestler.  
*Sumpu* 413a.  
*sumu* dwell, reside 248a.  
*sumu* come to an end, be finished, be over, close 167b, 243a.

*sumu* be clear, distinct.  
*sun* =  $\frac{1}{10}$  *shaku*.  
*sunawachi* that is, namely.  
*sune* shin.  
*suppai* sour (of taste).  
*sura* even 353.  
*surari* (of a slender form or a swift motion). [ment).  
*surasura* (of a smooth move-  
*sure-au* be rubbed together, chafe, be on bad terms, pass close by.  
*sure-chigau* pass close by 289b.  
*sureito* slate 294a.  
*sure-kireru* be worn through.  
*sureru* be rubbed, worn.  
*suri* pickpocket.  
*suri-au* = *sureau*.  
*suri-muku* rub off, abrade, skin.  
*suri-tsukegi* match 84b.  
*suru* rub, polish, print.  
*suru* do 211—217, 261; amount to 67a, 166d; (with stems of verbs) 279; (with adverbs) 326; *ni*—368.  
*suru* = *soru* shave.  
*Susaki* 282g.  
*sū-shi* numeral 61a.  
*suso* skirt of a garment.  
*susugu* rinse.  
*susumeru* advance, promote, urge, administer (medicine).  
*susumu* advance; *tokei ga susunde iru* the clock is fast.  
*sutaru* be discarded.  
*sutasuta* (of fast walking).  
*sute-gane* a signal of three strokes before striking the hour.  
*suteishon* railway station.  
*sutekki* stick, cane.  
*suteru* cast away, discard, for-sake 169a, 412c.  
*sutōbu* stove.

*suu* suck, smoke (tobacco).  
*suwaru* sit.  
*suzume* sparrow.  
*suzumu* cool one's self off.  
*suzuri* (*sumi-suri*) ink-stone.  
*suzushii* cool.  
*ta* paddy-field 124d.  
*ta no, ta-* other 50, 386; *sono ta (ni)* besides that.  
*tabako* tobacco; — (*wo nomu* (*suu, fukasu*) smoke tobacco.  
*tabako-bon* tobacco tray 341.  
*tabe-mono* food.  
*taberu* eat (elegant) 143b; *tabe-tai* hungry 175b.  
*tabi* [Japanese] sock.  
*tabi (wo) suru* journey; *wo — suru* travel through.  
*tabi* time 64, 80; *futa — a* second time; — *ni* as often as, whenever 407.  
*tabi-bito* traveler.  
*tabi-datsu tabidachi wo suru* set out on a journey.  
*tabi-goto ni* as often as, whenever 407.  
*tabitabi* at times, often. [ably].  
*ta-bun* for the most part, probability (plural ending) 1, 28.  
*tachi* 303.  
*tachi-kaeru* return.  
*tachi-ki* standing tree.  
*tachimachi* suddenly.  
*tachi-tomaru* stop while walking.  
*tachi-yoru* call in passing.  
*tada* only, merely; — *de gratis* 352c, 358b, 359e.  
*tada-ima* just now (past), presently (future) 340b.  
*tadashii* righteous 105.  
*tae-ma* cessation; — (*mo*)*ku na* uninterruptedly.  
*taeru* cease.

— *ni taeru* bear, endure 292a.  
*tagaeru* alter; *yakusoku wo —* break a promise.  
*(o) tagai ni* mutually, reciprocally 58; *o tagai ga we* 320b; *o tagai sama desu* 323a.  
*tai* sea-bream.  
*tai suru* face 371; *ni tai shite* over against, toward 391.  
*tai shita* great, important, serious.  
*tai-* great.  
*tai-boku* large tree.  
*tai-gai* generality, for the most part, almost 340.  
*tai-gen* uninflected word XVIIIa.  
*Taiheiki* 90a. [153a.  
*tai-hen* extraordinary, very  
*tai-hō* cannon.  
*tai-i* main idea, substance.  
*tai-in* moon 390b.  
*tai-ji* subjugation.  
*tai-jiru taijite* subdue xb.  
*tai-kan* large man-of war.  
*tai-kin* a large amount of money.  
*tai-ko* drum.  
*Taikō* 78a. [317d.  
*taiko-mochi* buffoon, clown  
*tai-kutsu* tedium, ennui; — *suru*, — *desu* be tired 153c.  
*tai-mai* a kind of turtle 144a.  
*tai-mō* ambition 127c.  
*Taira* 441d.  
*tai-riku* continent.  
*(go) tai-rō* minister president in feudal times 441d.  
*tai-setsu na* important.  
*tai-shō* general, commander.  
*taishok-ka* gourmand.  
*tai-shoku* excessive eating.  
*tai-sō na* large, magnificent;  
*tai-sō* exceedingly, very.

- tai-tei* generality, for the most part, almost 340.  
*tai-yō* sun 390b.  
*tai-yō* important points.  
*tai-zai suru* sojourn, stay.  
*taka* amount 106; — *ga* merely, after all 454c.  
*taka* hawk, falcon 178b.  
*taka-buru* be arrogant, boast.  
*taka-gari* hunting with a falcon.  
*takai* high.  
*takameru* raise, elevate.  
*takara* treasure, wealth.  
*taka-taka-yubi* middle finger (children's word) 240d.  
*taka-yabu* bamboo grove.  
*take* bamboo.  
*take* length, height, stature 439g.  
*take-no-ko* bamboo sprouts.  
*takeru* be expert 371.  
*taki* waterfall.  
*taki-gi* fire-wood 224a.  
*taki-tsukeru* kindle.  
*tako* kite; — *wo ageru* fly a kite.  
*tako* octopus.  
*ta-koku* foreign country.  
*(o)-taku* residence, house; — *de (wa)* my husband 365.  
*taku* kindle, burn, heat, cook (rice) 109c, 224a. [168b.  
*taku-an(zake)* pickled *daiikon*  
*taku-hatsu* begging (of monks, mendicant).  
*takumi na* skilful.  
*taku-san no* (or *na*) much, many, enough; *takusan* in great quantity. [spiration).  
*takutaku* (of drops) of per-tama ball, bullet, jewel.  
*tama ni* occasionally.  
*tama-go* egg.
- tamari* pool, puddle.  
*tamaru* be accumulated (of money), be able to endure, 292a.  
*tamashii* soul, spirit. [fly.  
*tamatama* rarely, unexpected-tama-tsuki playing billiards.  
*tamau* grant (classical) 310;  
*tamae* 254a, 150, 246.  
*tamawaru* bestow, receive 259a, 263c, 309.  
*tambi* = *tabi* as often as.  
*tam-bū* = *tan*.  
*tame* advantage; — *ni naru* beneficial; *no* — *ni* for (final or causal) 387; (with passive) 261; in order that 126g, 408.  
*tameru* accumulate, save; *tamete oku* 162, 226. [mend.  
*tameru* straighten, correct, a-tamesu test, prove, try.  
*ta-moto (te-moto)* lower part of sleeve, sleeve pocket.  
*tamotsu* have, defend.  
*tan* a piece of cloth between-ten and eleven yards long.  
*tan* = 10 se 68.  
*tana* shelf 144b; — *ye ageru* pigeonhole 380.  
*tane* seed 217b; *hanashi no* — *ni naru* afford a topic for conversation. [119b.  
*ta-nin* stranger, outsider 50.  
*tamin-gamashii* behaving like a stranger, distant.  
*tan-jō* birth 77a.  
*(o or go) tanjō-bi* birthday.  
*tan-ki na* impatient, irritable.  
*tan-kō* coal mine.  
*tanomu* ask, engage, rely upon 370, 193a, 226a, 242e.  
*tanoshii* delightful, happy.  
*tanoshimu* rejoice in, enjoy 453i.

*tan-sei* exertion.  
*tansu* bureau 82c.  
*tan-sū* singular number 341a.  
*tan-tei* secret investigation, detective.  
*tanto* numerously, much.  
*tanuki* racoon-like dog.  
*tan-zan* coal mine.  
*taoreru* fall over 282c.  
*taosu* prostrate, kill.  
*tappuri*, *taputapu* abundantly, fully 325a.  
*tara* cod, haddock.  
*tarazu* closely, nearly 171, 346.  
*tare* = *dare* XXI.  
*-taraba* 246.  
*tare-gashi* a certain person 47.  
*tariru*, *taru* be enough 142; *ni tarinai* is not worth 371.  
*taru* keg, barrel.  
*tashika ni* certainly 320a.  
*ta-shō* many for few, much or little, quantity, more or less 340.  
*tas-ska na* vigorous, proficient.  
*tasu* old, make up, complete; *yō wo* — do errands.  
*tasukaru* be saved, escape with one's life, recover 262.  
*tasuke-au* help each other 58.  
*tasuke-bune* lifeboat.  
*tasukeru* help, save 184f.  
*tasuki* cord to tie back sleeves XXVII.  
*tatakai* fight, battle, war 198g.  
*tatakau* fight.  
*tataku* strike, beat, knock.  
*tatami* thick floor mat.  
*tate* height or length (opp. *yoko*).  
*-tate no* 119; *-tate ni* 321.  
*tate-kata* style of building.  
*tatematsuru* offer 309.

*tate-mono* building.  
*tateru* erect, build; *kara wo* — get angry; *furo wo* — heat the bath 109c; *mayuge wo* — let the eyebrows grow 357b; *to wo* close the door. *-tateru* 297.  
*tate-yō* style of building.  
*tatos* example 187a; = *tatoi*.  
*tatoeba* for example 187a.  
*tatoeru* compare; *tatoete iu* speak by way of illustration.  
*tatoi* although, even though 400, 249c, 359e.  
*tatsu* stand, rise, set out (on a journey), pass (of time); be valid 207a; *miji ga* — a rainbow appears; *kokoro ga tatte kuru* become agitated; *tō ga* — go to seed; *wo* — leave; *me ni* — be conspicuous; *yaku ni* — be of use.  
*tatsu* cut (paper, cloth, etc.), sunder, have nothing more to do with. *-tatsu* 297. [340b.  
*tatta* only, merely 358b; — *ima* *-tatta* 295e.  
*tatte* urgently, importunately.  
*tatte* after 390.  
*tattobu* honor, respect.  
*tattoi* honorable, precious.  
*tawanureru* sport, play.  
*tayasui* easy to accomplish.  
*tayori* communication, news.  
*tasuneru* inquire, visit 370.  
*te* hand; *te wo utsu* clap the hands; *te ni oenai* unmangeable.  
*-te* 255b.  
*te-arai* violent.  
*te-atsui* courteous, generous.  
*te-biki* guide.  
*te-bukuro* glove.

*te-chō* notebook.  
*te-dasuke* assistance, help.  
*te-fuda* visiting card.  
*te-gami* letter, epistle; — *wo dasu (yaru)* send a letter.  
*te-gara* meritorious deed.  
*te-gata* certificate, passport, check.  
*te-hon* model, pattern, copy.  
*tei* emperor (following name); *Doitsu* — German Emperor 77a, 119a.  
*tei* = *hinoto* 367a.  
*tei-do* degree, grade.  
*tei-haku* anchoring.  
*tei-jō itasu* give 309.  
*tei-koku* empire.  
*tei-nai* ground, enclosure.  
*tei-nei na* careful, polite; *teinei ni suru* treat courteously. 381d.  
*te-ire suru* repair, attend to.  
*tei-sha-ba* station.  
*tei-shu* master of a house, landlord, husband 420.  
*tei-shutsu suru* introduce (a bill) 303a.  
*teishutsu-an* bill. [ing-  
*tekateka* = *pikapika* (of shin-  
*teki* enemy.  
*-teki no, -teki* x1a.  
*teki suru* suit.  
*teki-tai* opposition 371.  
*tekitau* oppose xb.  
*teki-tō* suitability xb.  
*teki-yaku* suitable medicine, specific.  
*tek-ketsu* iron and 'blood 300a.  
*te-ma* time spent on a task; — *ga toreru* take time 198b.  
*te-mae* presence 247b; *no* — *ni* on this side of; — *de (wa)* I, we 27; *(o)* — you 28.  
*tembin-bō* pole for carrying.

*tem-bin* balance xi.  
*Tembun* 347a.  
*Temmangū* 404c.  
*Tempo* 14.  
*-ten* shop.  
*te-narai* practicing penmanship.  
*ten-chi* heaven and earth.  
*tende ni* severally, each.  
*Tenga* 403e.  
*teniwoka* xviiiA.  
*Tenjin* 404c.  
*ten-ka* (lit. under heaven) the whole country, Japan 403e.  
*(o) ten-ki* weather; — *desu* the weather is fine 34a.  
*ten-kyo* removal (of residence).  
*ten-nen* nature; — *no* natural; — *ni* spontaneously.  
*tennen-tō* smallpox.  
*ten-nō* (*ten-ō*) the Emperor 77a.  
*Tenrikyō* 204d.  
*Tenryūgawa* 73d.  
*ten-shi* (*sama*) the Emperor 77a.  
*ten-shu* tower (of a castle).  
*(o) ten-tō* (*sama*) sun 32.  
*te-nugui* towel.  
*tenzuru, tenjiru* change 219c; remove (intr.).  
*tep-pen* summit, crown.  
*tep-pō* gun xxvi.  
*(o) tera* [Buddhist] temple.  
*(o) tera-mairi* visiting a temple.  
*terasu* illumine 121h.  
*teratera* = *pikapika* (of shining).  
*teru, tette* shine (of the sun).  
*te-sei no* hand-made 60b.  
*te-suri* hand-rail, banisters.  
*tetsu* iron.  
*tetsā-bin* iron tea-kettle.  
*tetsudau* help, assist 371, 184f.  
*tetsu-dō* railroad.  
*tetsu-gaku* philosophy.

*te-tsuke (kin)*, *tekin* bargain money.

*to* door.

[verbs 325.

*to* with 372 ; as 39 ; (with ad-  
*to* and, if, when, as soon as,  
that 395—397 ; (with *mieru*)  
409a ; *to wa iu mono no* but  
399b ; *to omou* 313d ; *to mo*  
46b, 172, 400 ; *to mo* (em-  
phatic) 355 ; = *to mo* 289e ;  
see *iu*.

*to* = 10 *shō*.

*tō* ten.

[time ago 362.

*tō kara* long since ; *tō ni* a long  
*o tō sama* your father 421.

*tō* head unit 83, 85d.

*tō* class 71 ; et cetera 1b.

*tō* party.

*tō* east 107b.

[to seed.

*tō* flower stalk ; — *ga tatsu go*

*tō-* this, the said, the — in  
question 317a.

*Tō* China 122a.

*tobi-agaru* fly up, jump up.

*tobi-oriru* jump down.

*tobokeru* pretend to be silly,  
dissemble.

*toboru* burn (of a light). [*da.*

*tobu* fly, spring, jump ; see *ton-*

*tō-bun* for the present 317a.

*tō-butsu* foreign goods.

*tō-chaku* arrival 161c.

*to-chi* land, lot of ground.

*to-chi* this place.

*to-chū de* on the way 338b.

*tō-dai* lighthouse.

*to-dana* cupboard 144b.

*todokeru* deliver 59a ; report  
officially.

*todokōru* be impeded, delayed,  
in arrears.

*todoku* reach, arrive (of things).

*todomaru* stop, stay.

*tō-fu* bean-curd 72a.

*toga* fault, transgression.

*togameru* blame, censure, warn.

*tō-garashi* cayenne pepper.

*tōge* mountain pass.

*togu* whet, grind, wash (rice).

*tō-gun* eastern army 198g.

*tō-hachi-ken* (a game) 196a.

*tō-hō de (wa)* we 317a.

*Tōhoku* 334b.

*to-hō-mo-nai* extraordinary,  
outrageous ; — *takai* out-  
rageously dear 315.

*tōi* far, distant ; see *tō*, *tōku*.

*to-ishi* whetstone.

*tō-ji* medical treatment at a hot  
spring, taking the baths.

*tō-ji* at this time ; *sono* — 317a.

*tō-ji-ba* hot spring sanitarium.

*tojiru* = *tozuru* bind.

*tō-jitsu* the day in question  
317a.

*tōken* tenth day, ten days.

*Tōkaidō* 165b.

*to-kaku* in one way or another,  
is apt to, sad to-say, 345c,  
352d. [soon.

*tōkarazu* in the near future,

*tokasu* dissolve, melt.

*go tō-ke* your house 382a.

*tokei* clock, watch 160b.

*tokeru* be loosed, solved, melt-  
ed, thawed, dissolved ; van-  
ish 439c.

*toki* time ; — *wo tsubusu* waste  
time ; — *ni, wa* when, as, if  
88e, 407 ; — *ni* now (at the  
beginning of a sentence) ; —  
*to shite* at times.

*tō-ki* registration xxv.

*toki-akasu* explain.

*tokidoki* at times, now and  
then.

*Tokiwa* 162c.

[gait].

*tokkotokko* (of an old man's



- tokkuri* a sake bottle. [fully.  
*tokkuri* attentively, thoroughly,  
*toko* bed 147a.  
*toko-no-ma* alcove of a room.  
*tokoro* place 64; just when, just  
 as 407; — *ga* 212, 360a; —  
*de* 408; — *desu*, — *no* 407a.  
*tokorodokoro* various places 1.  
*toko-ya* barber-shop, barber.  
*soku* loose, melt dissolve, disen-  
 tangle, explain 270d.  
*toku* profit, gain.  
*toku to* attentively, thoroughly.  
*tōku* distance 316.  
*toku-betsu (ni)* specially 320c.  
*Tokugawa* 34b.  
*toku-kon* reader.  
*toku-i* customer.  
*toku-ten* special favor, privilege.  
*to-kwai* city, metropolis 41f.  
*Tōkyō* 41f  
*tomaru* stop, lodge, be enter-  
 tained, sit (of a bird).  
*tombi* black kite.  
*tombo* dragon-fly.  
*tomeru* stop, lodge, entertain,  
 make a note of.  
*tomi* riches, lottery; — *ni ataru*  
 win a prize.  
*tō-michi* a long way.  
*tomo* companion; (*o*) — *wo*  
*suru* go along 41b, 214, 216;  
 — *ni* together; *to* — *ni* with  
 372; *ryākō* — both 46b;  
*seki* — by all means 160a.  
*tomo-dachi* friend 1c.  
*tomokaku (mo)* at any rate 352.  
*tomu* be rich.  
(*o*)*tō-myō* light offered to a god.  
*tō-myō-dai* lighthouse. [clare.  
*tonaeru* call, name, recite, de-  
*tonari* next house, neighbor;  
 — *de* 366c.  
*ton-chi* ready wit.
- tonda* surprising, extraordinary  
 great 129.  
*tonde monai* = *tohōmonai*.  
*tonikaku* at any rate 35a.  
*tō-nin* he, she 317a.  
*ton-jaku* concert.  
*tonneru* tunnel.  
*tomo sama* His Lordship 420.  
*tonto* totally, at all (with neg-  
 atives).  
*tonya (toi-ya)* wholesale store.  
*tō-on* xi.  
*tora* tiger.  
*toraeru* seize, arrest.  
*torahōmu* granular eyelids XIII.  
*toro-daka* harvest, crop 387c.  
*toreru* be taken, obtainable  
 260.  
*tori* bird, fowl.  
*tori-* 303.  
*tōri-* kind, manner 64a; just as,  
 just like 408; *kono* — (*ni*)  
 exactly like this 322; *ano* —  
 347e. [street 277.  
*tōri* passage, thoroughfare,  
*toriaezu* immediately, in haste,  
 provisionally.  
*tori-atsukan* manage, treat.  
*tori-au* take hold of each other,  
 pay attention.  
*tori-awaseru* combine. [ment.  
*toride* fort, stronghold, intrench-  
*tori-i* portal of a Shinto shrine.  
*tori-isogu* be in a hurry.  
*tori-kaesu* exchange.  
*tori-kaesu* take back. [ou.  
 — *ni tori-kakaru* begin work  
*tōri-kakaru*, *tōri-kakaru* hap-  
 pen to pass.  
*tori-kawasu* exchange.  
*tori-kesu* retract, annul.  
*tori-kiru* take all, exhaust.  
*tori-komu* be crowded, busy (of  
 a house, hotel or store).

*tori-kuzusu* tear down.  
*tori-magireru* be in confusion, distracted.  
*tori-matameru* gather all together, settle.  
*tori-madosu* take back.  
*tori-wo-naosamu* namely, in other words.  
*tori-nasu* take the part of.  
*tōri-nukeru* pass through.  
*tori-okonau* administer, perform, celebrate 303a.  
*tori-otosu* forget to take, leave behind.  
*tori-shimaru* supervise (tr.).  
*tori-shiraberu* investigate,  
*tor-sorroeru* gather all together.  
*tori-tateru* collect (bills, taxes).  
*tori-tsugu* transmit, announce.  
 — *ni tori-tsuku* attach one's self to.  
*tori-wake* especially.  
*tori-yoseru* have sent to one's self, procure, import.  
*toru* take, catch, pass 179;  
*karuta wo* — play cards.  
*toru* pass through, pass by.  
*tō-ryū* sojourn.  
*tō-sai* this year 317a.  
*tō-seisu* at this time 317a.  
*toshi* year; — *no ichi* New Year's fair 52d; — *ga ōi* older 138d; — *wo toru* get old.  
*tōshite* through 390. [aged].  
*toshi-toru*, *toshiyoru* become  
*toshi-yori-no* aged.  
*go tō-shō* your place 382a.  
*Tōshō* Gongen 78c.  
*to-sho-kan* library 311c.  
*tozo* spiced sake 90f.  
*tosu* cause or allow to pass, conduct 209b.  
*-tōsu* 297.

*totan* zinc 294a.  
*tole* 167, 401. [all.  
*tōtei* by no means, utterly, at-  
*toleimo* by no means 352, 177c.  
*toto papa*.  
*tātō, tōto* at length, finally.  
*totomau* be arranged, harmoni-  
 ous, complete.  
*totsu-ben na* not eloquent 124a.  
*Totsuka* 73b.  
*totsu-zen* (to or ni) suddenly,  
 abruptly.  
 — *ni totte (wa)* for 390.  
*tot-tsukamaeru* catch (vulgar).  
 — *ni tottsukubu* possess (of an evil  
 spirit), bewitch.  
*tou* ask, visit 245, 370; — *wo*  
*towazu* without regard to.  
*Tō-yō* East, Orient (opp. *Seiyō*).  
*tō-zai-nan-bōku* 107b.  
*tō-zakeru, ni tōzakeru* keep at  
 a distance, withdraw from  
 372.  
*tozuru, tojiru* bind (a book)  
 375a.  
*-tsu* (genitive particle) 339a,  
 346a.  
*tsū* unit 87.  
*tsubaki* camellia. [swallow.  
*tsubame, tsubakura* chimney  
*tsu-ben* interpreter.  
*tsubo* = six *shaku* square 68.  
*tsubomi* flower, bud.  
*tsubururu* be broken, crushed,  
 destroyed.  
*tsubusa, ni* in detail, in full.  
*tsubusu* crush, rub off, destroy;  
*toki (hima) wo* — waste time;  
*kimo wo* — be terrified.  
*tsuchi* earth.  
*tsucki-no-e, tsuchi-no-to* 367a.  
*tsue* cane.  
*tsugai* pair 90.  
*tsuge* boxwood.

*tsugeru* tell 236b.

*tsugi no* the next; *kono tsugi no* next to this; *tsugi ni* next.

*tsu-gō* circumstance, convenience;—*no yoi* suitable 125c.

*tsugu* join, graft; *no oto wo*—inherit the estate or office of.

*tsugu* pour.

*tsui* pair 90. [321b.

*tsui* unconsciously, unawares *tsui (ni)* at last, finally.

*tsuide* convenience, opportunity;—*ni* by the way, incidentally 407.

*tsuieru* be spoiled, spent.

*tsuitachi* first day of the month 74.

*tsutate* screen 316a.

—*ni tsuite* in regard to, with 390.

*tsuiyasu* spend, waste.

*tsū-jō* usually, customarily.

*tsukaeru* serve 371.

*tsukai* messenger, envoy.

*tsukai-hatasu* use up.

*tsukamaeru* seize, arrest.

*tsukamatsuru*=*itasu* (very formal) 309.

*tsukamu* seize, clutch.

*tsukareru* be fatigued 258d.

*tsukau* use, employ; *tsukatte oku* employ (a servant) 226a.

*tsukawasu* send (a person) 59a.

*tsuke-agaru* "be stuck up."

*tsuke-bi* incendiary fire.

*tsuke-mono* pickle 108b.

*tsukeru* apply, affix, attend; *hi wo*—start a fire; *akari wo*—light a lamp; *no ato wo*—follow in the track of; *ni ki wo*—pay attention to; *nikki ni*—note in a diary.

*tsukeru* soak, pickle 160g; *o tsuke* soup.

—*tsukeru* 297.

(*o*)*tsuki (sama)* moon; *tsuki* month 63.

*tsuki-ataru* come up against.

*tsuki-au* associate, become acquainted xxvi, 104b.

*tsuki-hi* months and days, times.

*Tsukiji* 256a.

*tsuki-korosu* stab or gore to death.

*tsukimashite wa* so 456b.

*tsuki-mi* viewing the moon.

*tsuki-nuku* pierce through.

*tsukiru* be exhausted, used up.

*tsuki-yama* artificial mountain, rockery.

*Tsukiyomi* 121h.

*tsukkoimu* thrust in. [*yuku*].

*tsū-kō* passage (*tō*=*tōru*, *kō*=*tsū-kō* navigation).

*tsuku* stick, adhere, reach, arrive; *ne ga*—take root 204c; *kurai ni*—ascend the throne; *osamari ga*—be settled; *shigoto ga te ni tsukanai* don't make progress with the work; *tsukanai*=*dekinai* 294c.

*tsuku* strike, thrust, utter; *mochi wo*—pound *mochi*; *te*—*wo* keep hands on the floor 441h; *uso wo*—tell a lie.

*tsuku* construct (of earth etc.).

—*tsuku* 297.

*tsukue* [Japanese] table 96d.

*tsukuri* body of ideogram 367b.

*tsukuru* make, build (a house), raise (a crop), compose.

*tsukusu* exhaust; *gimu wo*—fulfil a duty.

- tsukusu* 298.  
*tsuma* consort, wife 421.  
*tsumaranai* worthless, foolish.  
*tsumari* after all, in the end, finally, so to speak.  
*tsumaru* be packed, clogged, oppressed straitened 240a; — *tokoro* = *tsumari*.  
 -*tsumaru* 298.  
*tsuma-saki* tips of the nails.  
*tsumashii* frugal, thrifty.  
*tsumazuku* stumble.  
*tsune* nail, claw, hoof.  
*tsumeru* pack.  
 -*tsumeru* 298. [water].  
*tsumetai* cold (of things, air,  
*tsumi* crime, sin; — *no aru*  
 guilty; *mujitsu no* — false  
 accusation.  
*tsuni-bito* criminal.  
*tsuni-komu* load in.  
*tsumori* estimate, intention 95a.  
*tsumoru* be piled up, be accumulated, estimate 240a.  
*o tsumu* = *otsumuri* head.  
*tsumu* be packed.  
*tsumu* pile up, load, accumulate.  
*tsumu* pluck.  
*tsumuji* whirl of hair on the head; — *no magatta* cross 453b.  
 (o) *tsumuri* head (ladies' word).  
*tsuna* rope 240c.  
*tsunagu* tie, fasten, hitch, moor.  
*tsune ni (kara)* usually, always.  
*tsuno* horn, feeler.  
*tsura* face (not polite).  
*tsurai* afflicted, suffering 197d.  
*tsū rei* common practice, usually.  
*tsurenai* heartless.  
*tsureru* take along 88e.  
*Tsurezuregusa* 294b.  
*tsuri-bashi* hanging bridge.  
*tsuri-rampu* hanging lamp.  
*tsuru* crane, stork.  
*tsuru* vine.  
*tsuru hang (tr.)*; catch (fish) with hook and line; *tsuri wo suru* angle.  
*tsurutsuru, tsururitsururi* (of slippery things).  
*Tsushima* 266b. [newspaper].  
*tsū-shin-ja* correspondent (of a *tsū-shō* popular name 436d.  
*tsū shō* commerce.  
*tsutomeru* be diligent 372.  
*tsutsu* (particle) 163a.  
*tsutsuga no-tu* without accident, safely.  
*tsutsuji* azalea 387a.  
*tsutsumi* bundle.  
*tsutsumu* cover, conceal.  
*tsutsushimu* be discreet about, be respectful.  
*tsuwamono* soldier (classical).  
*tsū-yō* being in common use, currency.  
*tsuyoi* strong, violent; *shikke ga* — damp; *kan ga* — irritable.  
*tsuyu* dew, rainy season 241a.  
*tsuzukeru* continue, keep up.  
 -*tsuzukeru* 298.  
*tsuzuke-zama ni* continuously, one after another.  
*tsuzuku* continue, hold out.  
 -*tsuzuku* 298.  
*tsuzura* basket with cover.  
*tsuzure* rags.  
*tsūzuru* be proficient 372.  
 'tte = *tote* 401.  
*u* cormorant.  
*uchi* interior, inside, house 152b, 386b; (o) — *de* at home 32a, 60b, 429b; — *de (wa)* we 365; — *no* our 253a; *no* — (*ni* or *de*) within,

- among 386; *sono* — inside that, soon 36; — (*ni*, *wa*) while, until 155. 407.
- uchi*-304. [be candid.
- uchi-akeru* open (the heart),
- uchi-gawa* inside.
- uchi-jini* death in battle 65b.
- *ni uchi-katsu* overcome.
- uchi-kesu* stop one in the midst of what he is saying.
- uchi-komu* drive in 239a, 251a.
- uchi-nuku* strike through.
- uchi tokeru* feel at ease; *uchi-tokete hanasu* speak familiarly.
- uchi-tsukeru* nail on, throw at.
- uchi-tsuzuku* continue a long time.
- uchiwa* fan 236c.
- uchi-yari* throw away, reject, let alone.
- uderu* boil in water 168d.
- ue* what is above; *yuki no* — *wo suberu* slide over the snow 242f; — *o sama* Your Grace 421; — *no* upper; *kono* — *mo nai* unsurpassed 354; *no* — *ni* (*de*) on, over 383; *no* — *de* in regard to 383; — *de* (*ni*) after, until after 406.
- ue bōsō* vaccination.
- ue-kaeru* transplant.
- ue-ki-bachi* flower pot.
- ue-ki-ya* gardener 11c.
- Ueno* 35a.
- ueru* plant.
- ugokasu* move, influence.
- ugoku* move, be influenced 362.
- uguisu* bush-warbler 146g.
- ui* mutability (classical) XXI.
- ujauja* (of wriggling things).
- uji* lineage, family name.
- Uji* 35c.
- ukaberu* launch.
- ukabu* flj at; *ko:oro ni ukanda* it occurred to me 240b.
- ukagau* peep at, spy, inquire about, visit.
- ukareru* be buoyant, giddy 263f.
- uka to*, *ukauka* thoughtlessly, inattentively: *ukauka to suru* be heedless, lazy.
- uke-au* assure, guarantee.
- uke-ou* contract for [348b.
- ukeru* receive, accept 259a, 262,
- uke-tamawaru* receive (a command), hear (polite) 309.
- uki-tatsu* be buoyant, excited.
- ukiuki suru* be light-hearted 263f.
- uki-yo* the world 387b.
- ukkari*=*uka to*.
- uku* float 263f.
- u-kwai suru* take a roundabout course.
- uma* horse xx.
- umai* delicious, clever, well done 4b, 11b.
- umare-kawaru* be reborn, become a new man.
- umare-nagara no* by birth 279c.
- umareru* be born 77a.
- ume* (*no ki*) plum tree 11b.
- ume-awaseru ume-awase wo tsukeru* make up the deficiency XXVI.
- ume-boshi* pickled plums. [*wo*].
- umeru* bury, fill in (*yu ni misu ume-tateru* fill up.
- Ume-waka* 183a.
- umi* sea 11b.
- umu* give birth to; *tamago wo* — lay eggs.
- un* luck; *un ga yoi* lucky.
- unagi* eel.

*unasareru* have a nightmare.  
*un-chin* charges for freight.  
*un-dō* activity, exercise; —  
*kwai* excursion, sports.  
*unun*, *unnun* and so on 332a.  
*unun* (of grunting in hard  
 work).  
*ura* rear, reverse, lining; *no* —  
*ni* behind, back of 384; —  
*kara* by way of a hint 378.  
*Uramigataki* 183d.  
*uramu* dislike.  
*uranai* divination, fortune tel-  
 ling; — *ja* diviner.  
*urei* grief, trouble, danger.  
*ureru* be able to sell, be sold,  
 be salable 259.  
*ureshii* joyful.  
*uri* melon.  
*uri harau* dispose of by sale.  
*uri-kwai* mercantile transac-  
 tion.  
*uri-kireru* be sold out.  
*uri-kiru* sell out.  
*uri-sageru* sell (of Govern-  
 ment) 286d.  
*uri-zane-gao* oval face 217b.  
*uroko* scale (of fish).  
*uru* sell; (with *ni*, *de*) 364.  
*urū-doshi* leap year 263b.  
*urusai* annoying.  
*urushi* lacquer. [263b.  
*urū-zuki* intercalary month  
*usagi* hare, rabbit.  
*usagi-uma* donkey.  
*useru* be lost, vanish 453f.  
*ushi* ox, cow.  
*ushinau* lose 276e, 436c.  
*ushio* water of the ocean 106c.  
*ushiro* rear; *no* — *ni* behind,  
 back 384, 329e.  
*uso* lie; — *wo tsuku* (or *iu*) lie.  
*uso-tsuki* liar.  
*usu cha* 106.

*usu-gurai* dimly lighted, gloom-  
 y.  
*usui* thin, rare, light.  
*Usuitōge* 388a.  
*uta* poem, song 181b; — *wo*  
*yomu* compose a poem; —  
*wo utau* sing a song.  
*utagau* doubt, suspect 66b.  
*(o) uta-kwai* poetical party  
 313a.  
*utau* sing.  
*uta-yomi* poet.  
*utcharu* = *uchi-yaru*; *utchatte*  
*oku* let alone.  
*u-ten* rainy weather.  
*utoi* distant, estranged, unac-  
 quainted.  
*utsu* strike, smite, fight, clap  
 (hands), cast, shoot, play  
 (a game of chance); *dempō*  
*wo* — send a telegram.  
*utsukushii* pretty, beautiful.  
*utsunuku* bend the face down.  
*utsuru* remove (of residence),  
 pass (of time), catch (of fire,  
 disease), be reflected.  
*utsusu* copy.  
*utsutsu* reality; — *wo nukasu*  
 forget the world 427c.  
*utsuwa* vessel, utensil.  
*uttaeru* accuse.  
*uttae-goto* lawsuit.  
*uwasa* rumor; *no* — *wo suru*  
 gossip about.  
*uwo* fish 107c.  
*Uwōjū* 342d.  
*nyamau* revere.  
*nyauyashii* reverential.  
*uzuku* ache (like a tooth).  
*Uzume* 335a.  
*uzumeru* bury, fill in.  
*wa* (particle) 3 — 6, 9; (with  
 a series) 4d; (in general  
 statements) 12e; (in inter-

- rogative sentences) 17g; (when predicate is a noun) 561; (may not be followed by a numeral) 393a; (with advrb) 23c, 25d; (with subordinatives) 102, 167; (contrast) 10b, 35a, 52c, 103c, 135c, 183e; *de* — *nai* 35e.
- wa* (interjection) 416.
- wa* ring, hoop, link.
- wa* unit 83.
- Wa* Japan 122a.
- wabiru* apologize 370.
- wabishii* sad 427d.
- Wadatōge* 242f. [*hai* we, I 29.
- waga* ne's own, my 203b; — *wa-gakusha* one versed in native classical literature 112a.
- waga-mama na* wilful, wayward, selfish; — *ni* without restraint.
- wai* (interjection) 416.
- waiwai* (of tumult).
- waka-danna* young master.
- wakai* young; — *shū* young fellow 1b.
- Wakamatsu* 393a.
- Wakan* Japan and China 122a.
- Wakwasansaisue* 95d.
- wakareru* be divided, part 372a;  
*o wakare mōsu* 363a, 400a.
- wakari-kitta* obvious.
- wakaru* be clear, understood, perceptible 17c, 134a, 160f; — (*mono no*) *wakatta* intelligent 130h.
- wakasu* boil (tr) 109c, 168d, 200.
- wakatsu* divide, distinguish 195.
- wake* sense, reason, cause; — *mo nai* not difficult 315a; — *mo naku* unreasonably, exceedingly 315; — *no wakaranai* unintelligible; — *ni wa ikanai* may not 369b.
- wakeru* divide, share.
- wakete* especially 345.
- waki* side, side of the chest; — *ye yaru* give away 253a; — *ni* beside, at the side of 385.
- waki-zashi* short sword.
- waku* boil (intr) 168d.
- wan* bay.
- wan* bowl.
- wara* straw.
- warabi* fern, brake.
- waraji* straw sandal 91c.
- warau* laugh, smile.
- ware* self, I (classical) 27c; *wareware* we 29a; — *wo wasureru* forget one's self 58.
- wareru* be split, cracked 375a.
- wari* ten per cent. 80, 82a.
- waru* split, divide 234c, 79.
- waru-gi* bad spirit.
- warui* bad 105a; *kuchi ga* — sarcastic 14b; *wo waruku iu* speak ill of 245b; *waruku suru* spoil 212.
- wasei no* made in Japan.
- washi* eagle.
- washi* I (vulgar) 27.
- wasuregachi na* forgetful.
- wasure-mono* things left behind 147b.
- wasureppoi* forgetful 380d.
- wasureru* forget.
- wata* cotton.
- wata-ire* padded garment.
- watakushi* self, I xxii; — *koso* I am the one 323a.
- wataru* cross, pass over.
- watashi* = *watakushi* I.
- watasu* take across, hand over.

- wa-yaku** translating into Japanese 258e.
- waza** deed, act. [tionally.
- waza to (ni)** purposely, intentionally 210a.
- wazawaza** specially, not incidentally 210a.
- wazuka no (or na)** little, trifling.
- wazuka (ni)** only.
- wasurau** suffer (*yamai wo*).
- wo** (particle) xxvi, ii, 362, 372; (with *suru* and *itasu*) 214 77c; in regard to 428a; *mono wo* 149, 399a.
- woba** = *wo wa* xxx.
- ya** arrow.
- ya** house; -*ya* 16, 11c, 95f.
- ya ei** ht 282d.
- ya** = *ka* (interrogative particle); *ya ina ya* 398; and 2, 4d.
- ya** (interjection) 417 234a, 438e; (vocative) 415, 34f; (imperative) 415, 249f.
- ya, ya** (of surprise, etc.).
- ya-ban-jin** barbarian.
- yabu** grove, thicket.
- yabure** rent, tear 429a.
- yabureru** be torn, broken, destroyed, wrecked 89h.
- yaburu** tear break, destroy.
- ya-chin** rent (of a house).
- yado** lodging, house, husband; — *de (wa)* my husband 365b.
- yadoru** lodge.
- yado-ya** hotel.
- ya-e** eight-fold 64.
- yaе-sakura** double cherry blossoms 437b.
- yagate** soon, presently.
- ya-gu** bedding 147a.
- yahari** likewise, too, still, notwithstanding 326.
- yai** (interjection) 414
- yakamashii** noisy, clamorous.
- yakedo (yake-dokoro)** burn; — *wo suru* be burned.
- yake-jini** burning to death 65b.
- yakeru** be burned, baked.
- yaki-ba** crematory.
- yaki-mochi** jealousy.
- yaki-mono** pottery.
- yak-kai** trouble, care (for another), assistance; *no — ni naru* be aided by, dependent on 208b.
- yaku** office, function, role; — *ni tatsu* be useful.
- yaku** burn (tr.), roast, bake.
- yaku** translation 258e; — *wo tsukeru* add a translation.
- yaku** medicine.
- yaku-in** official.
- (*o*) **yaku-nin** official.
- yaku sha** actor.
- yaku-sho** office, bureau.
- yaku-shu** drug.
- yaku-soku** agreement, covenant; — *wo tagaeru*, — *ni somuku* break a promise.
- ya-kwai** evening party.
- yama** mountain, forest, mine 271b,
- yama-be** region near a mountain 288a
- yama-buki** yellow rose.
- yama bushi** hermit 438f.
- yamai** disease.
- yama-sakura** wild cherry 438e.
- yameru** give up, stop.
- yami** darkness.
- yamome** widow 247a.
- yomoo** widower (classical) 247a.
- yamu** cease (as rain) 243a.
- yamu-wo-ezu** unavoidably 259b.
- yanagi** willow.



*yanagi-gōri* willow *kōri*.  
*yane* roof xx.  
*yane-ita* shingle.  
*yane ya* roof-er.  
*yani* exudation, gum.  
*ya-no asatte* two days after to-  
 morrow.  
*yao-ya* greengrocer 61.  
*yappari*=*yahari*. [398.  
*yara* (interrogative particle)  
*arakasu*=*aru* or *suru* do  
 (vu'gar) 342d.  
*yare, yareyare* (interjection).  
*yari-ageru* finish 286b.  
*yari-kakeru* begin.  
*yari-naosu* do over.  
*yari-sokonau* do amiss, spoil.  
*yari-tōsu* put through, carry-  
 out.  
*yari-tsukusu* do all one can.  
*yari tsuzukeru* keep on doing.  
*yaru* send, give, do 116c; tease  
 265c; *fune wo*—move a ship  
 forward 126d; *ni hima wo*—  
 discharge; *yatte miru* try  
 174b; *-te yaru* 308; *itte yaru*  
 send word, give orders 248e.  
*ya-sai (mono)* vegetable.  
*ya-saki* point of time, juncture  
 441c.  
*yasashii* gentle, easy.  
*yaseru* become lean; *yaseta*  
 emaciated.  
 (o) *ya-shiki* mansion (including  
 grounds).  
*yashinai* nourish, support; *ya-  
 shinai ni naru* nutritious.  
*yashiro* Shinto shrine.  
*Yaso* 138a.  
*Yaso kyō* Christianity.  
*yasui* easy, cheap; *-yasui* 110.  
*yasumeru* cause to rest.  
*yasumi* vacation.  
*yasu-mono* cheap stuff 276e.

*yasumu* rest, retire, sleep (with  
*wo*) 242c.  
*yasunzuru* be contented.  
*yatara ni* carelessly.  
*yatoi chin* hire.  
*yatoi-nin* hired person.  
*yatou* hire (a person); *o yatoi  
 kyōshi* 208a.  
*yatsu* eight. [tuous) 28a.  
*yatsu* thing, fellow (contemp-  
*yatto* with difficulty, at last, fi-  
 nally 327.  
*yattsu*=*yatsu* eight 61.  
*yat-tsukeru* overcome, scold.  
*yawarageru* soften, appease.  
*yawarakai, yawaraka na* soft,  
 tender.  
*yaya* gradually, considerably.  
*yaya-mo sureba* quite often, is  
 apt to 345c.  
*ye* to, toward xxvi, 379.  
*ye* (interjection) 417.  
*yeu* circle, dollar=two shillings  
 or 50 cents xxvi, 69.  
*yo=yoru* night; — *ga akeru*  
 day dawns; — *jū* the whole  
 night.  
*yo* world, age, reign.  
*yo* (imperative) 416b; (voca-  
 tive) 34f.  
*yo* (interjection) 416, 452b.  
*yo* four 70.  
*yo=amari*.  
*yō=yoku* well 314b.  
*yō* need 124b; business; *go* —  
 government business 306d.  
*yō* light, positive, male 390b.  
*yō* manner; *no — na, no — ni*  
 like 115, 321; — (*ni*) in such  
 a manner that, as if 409; —  
*desu* is as though, seems 40a,  
 107a, 117g, 409a.  
*yō* ocean.  
*yo-ake* daybreak.

*yobi-dashi no ukeru* be summoned (by a court of justice).

*yo-bi-gun* first reserve 357a.

*yobi-ireru* call in.

*yobi-kaesu, yobi-modosu* call back, recall.

*yobi-kakeru* call after.

*yobi sute* curt way of calling a person 421.

*yobu* call 239, 88g; *yobareru* be invited out 130b, 265e.

*yō-dateru* furnish, lend.

*Yodogawa* 127a. [through.

*yo-dōshi* the. whole night

*yo-fuku* European clothes 155b.

*yō-gen* inflected word xxxi.

*yoginai* unavoidable.

*yogoreru* be soiled.

*yo hodo* a good deal, very 174a.

*yoi* intoxication; — *ga sameru* get sober 91g.

*yoi, ii* good xxv, 99, 100b; — *yoi*

110; *yoku* 314; *yoku suru*

make good, correct 212; *yoku*

*naru* improve 126a, 366e; *yoku*

*dekiru* capable 127b.

*yō-i na* easy.

*yō-ji* business.

*yō-jin* caution; — *ga yoi* careful; *suri (mono) ga*—beware

of pickpockets

*yō-jo* adopted daughter 94e.

*yō-jō* taking care of the health.

*yōka* eight days, eighth day.

*yo-kei na* excessive; *yokei (ni)* in excess, too much, more 136.

*yokeru* get out of the way.

*yo-ki* anticipation.

*yō-ki* cheerfulness.

*yokka* four days, fourth day.

*Yōkaichi* 45a.

*yoko* side, transverse or hori-

zontal direction; — *wo tōru* pass along the side (of a house).

*yō-kō* travelling abroad. [street.

*yoko-chō, yoko-machi* cross-

*yokosu* send 59a.

*Yokosuka* 90b.

*yokotaeru* lay across.

*yokotawaru* lie athwart.

*yoku* see *yoi*.

*yoku* lust, passion, avarice; — *ga fukai* avaricious.

*yoku-baru* be avaricious 284a.

*yoku-jitsu* the following day.

*yokuyoku* very carefully, exceedingly; *yoku mo yoku mo*

how dared you 453e.

*yō-kyū* demand.

(o) *yome (san)* bride, wife 422,

436c; — *wo toru (morau)*

marry a wife; — *ni iku*

marry (of a woman); — *ni*

*yaru* give in marriage; — *wo*

*sewa suru* secure a wife for

one.

*yomogi* artemisia 145a. [ious.

*yomoyama no* many and var-

*yomu* read 239; *yonde kikaseru*

256d; *uta wo*—compose a

poem.

*Yomu* 264c. [cessary 269d.

*yondokoronai* unavoidable, ne-

*yo-no-naka* world.

*yopparai* drunkard.

*yoppite* the whole night 352.

*yoppodo-yohodo* very.

*yori* from, since, after 378, 401;

— (*mo* or *wa*) than, as 136,

139a, 354<sup>b</sup>; — *koka nai*

there is no way but to 360a.

*yori-dokoro* ground, resource

269b. [trip.

*yori michi wo suru* take a side

*yori-nuku* = *erinuku* select

*Yoritomo* 95b.  
*yoroi* armor.  
*yorokobu* rejoice, congratulate.  
*yoromeku* stumble, stagger.  
*Yōroppa* Europe.  
*yoroshii* right, all right 100b;  
*yoroshiku negau* 104c; *yoroshi-  
 shi-ru mōsu* 207a; *-te (mo)*  
*yoroshii* 167.  
*yorozu* ten thousand 61.  
*yorozu-ya* dealer in miscellaneous  
 articles 61.  
*yoru* night, by night.  
*yoru* twist.  
*yoru* approach, depend 371,  
 391; call 192b.  
*yoru* gather, assemble.  
*yō-ryō* essentials.  
*yo-san* estimate xxv.  
*yō san* sericulture.  
*yosasō* seem to be good 107.  
*yose* amusement hall.  
*yoseru* cause to approach, bring  
 together, add.  
*yose-tsukeru* bring close, allow  
 to approach.  
*yoshi* all right 98;—*ashi* char-  
 acteristics, quality 105.  
*yoshi(ya)*, *yoshimba* even if  
 400  
*yō-shi* adopted child; *wo*—*ni*  
*suru (morau)* adopt 94c. 368;  
 — *ni yaru* transfer for adop-  
 tion. — *ni iku* be adopted.  
*Yoshida Shoin* 265b.  
*Yoshimune* 404b.  
*Yoshino* 438e.  
*Yoshitsune* 188c.  
*Yoshiwara* 72g.  
*yō-shō* youth, juvenility.  
*yū-shōku* western food 155b.  
*yoso* another place or person,  
 abroad;—*no* other, another,  
 strange 437e.

*yosu* stop (tr.), give up 257d,  
 365a.  
*yō-su* circumstances, condition,  
 appearance, gestures.  
*(go) yō-tai* appearance 309b.  
*yō tashi* doing errands.  
*yotsu* four  
*yottari* four persons.  
 — *ni yotte* according to, by the  
 aid of 391; then 456b.  
*yottsu*=*yotsu* four 61.  
*you* be intoxicated 91f, 92b,  
 369; *fune ni*—get seasick.  
*yowai* weak 372..  
*yowa-mi* weakness.  
*yowari-hateru* be completely  
 exhausted, nonplussed.  
*yowaru* be weak, debilitated.  
*yōyaku*, *yōyatto yōyō* final'y,  
 with difficulty, barely; *yōya-  
 ku no koto de* with great dif-  
 ficulty 352.  
*(o) yu* hot water;—*ni hairu*  
*(mesu)* take a bath.  
*yū*=*yuu* bind xxivc.  
*yūbe* last night, last evening.  
*yubi* finger 240d.  
*yū-bin* mail, post.  
*yūbin-bako* mail-box.  
*yūbin-denshin-kyoku* post and  
 telegraph office.  
*yūbin-haitatsu(nin)* postman.  
*yūbin-kutte*, *yūbingitte* postage  
 stamp.  
*yūbin kubari* postman.  
*yūbin-kyoku* postoffice.  
*yūbin-sen*, *yūsen* mail-ship.  
*yūbin zei*, *yūzei* postage.  
*yubi-zasu* point out with the  
 finger.  
*yu dama* bubbles in boiling  
 water. [182a.  
*yu-dan* negligence, inattention  
*yū-dō* encouragement, fostering.

*yue (ni)* for the reason that, because, accordingly 410.

*yū-gata* = *yūkata* in the evening.

*yū-gei* amusing arts.

*yū-han* supper, evening meal.

*yui* 380a.

*yui-gon* instructions of a dying person, will 380a.

*yui-motsu* = *ibutsu* legacy, relics 380a. [ betrothal.

*yui-nō* presents exchanged at a *yū kata*, *yūgata* in the evening 232d.

*yū-kei* concrete xi.

*yū kei* evening.

*yuki* snow.

*yū-ki* courage xx.

*yuki-do* be thawing of snow.

*yuki-gata* place to which one has gone.

*yuti mi* viewing the snow.

*yuki-todoku* extend to details, be complete, be scrupulous.

*yuki-wataru* extend to details, be efficient 443a.

*yukkuri* leisurely, slowly 33e.

*yū-koku* in the evening 232d.

*yuku* = *iku* go xx, 221. [gone.

*yuku-e* place to which one has *yū-kwai* na delightful.

*yū-waki* waist cloth (woman's undergarment).

*yume* dream 178b, 364; *hatsu* — first dream of the year 178b; — *ni mo* at all 441g.

*yū mei* na famous 112b.

*yū-meshi* supper, evening meal.

*yumeyume* never 453g.

*yumi* bow.

*yū nyū* imports.

*yū-reki* traveling for pleasure.

*yuru* swing, shake (tr.); *fishin ga* — there is an earthquake.

*yurugu* shake, quake, be loose.

*yurui* loose, negligent.

*yurumeru* loosen.

*yurumu* be loose, moderate.

*yururi*, *yuruyuru* leisurely, slowly.

*yurusu* set at liberty, pardon, permit 149a.

*yuruyaka* na mild, not strict.

*yū-ryoku-sha* influential person.

*yū-sen* = *yubinsen* mail-ship.

*Yushima* 404c.

*yū-shi (sha)* interested person, sympathizer, volunteer, promoter.

*yū-shutsu* exports.

*yusugu* rinse (*mizu de*).

*yū-tō* hot water vessel; — *yomi* 19, 380a.

*yuu* bind, fasten 245; *mage wo* — put up the hair.

*yūwaeru*, *ivaeru* = *yuu* bind.

*yū-ya* public bath.

*yū-zei* = *yūbinzei* postage.

*yuzuru* relinquish, yield.

*za* seat 191c, 223a; — *wo susumeru* sit nearer; *ichi* — the whole company 258f.

*zai-moku* lumber, timber.

*Zaimokushima* 306e.

*zai nin* criminal.

*zai ryū* residing.

*zai-san* property.

(*go*) *zai-taku* being at home 321.

*zai-kyo* mixed residence.

*zai-patsu ya* barber-shop 232e.

*zan ji* a little while; — *no aida* 352.

*zan-kin* balance.

*zan koku* na cruel.

*zan nen* na regrettable; — *nagara* it is too bad, but.

*zap-pō* miscellaneous news.

- zarari, zarazara* (of rough things).
- za-shiki* apartment (in hotel).
- zas-shi* magazine, journal.
- za-tō* blind minstrel, blind man 223a.
- zatsu ni* confusedly, not neatly, coarsely, briefly.
- zatto* = *zatsu ni*.
- zawazawa* (of a chilly feeling or of the noise made by people passing).
- ze* (interjection) 417.
- ze-hi* (*ni* or *tomo*) by all means, necessarily 160a. [cessity.
- zeki* (*mo*) *naku* perforce, of *zei* tax, tariff.
- zei-taku* luxury; — *wo kiwameru* be extremely luxurious 345a.
- zen* table for food; *o* — *wo sageru* take things back to the kitchen 233b; unit 420b.
- zen* good.
- zen-* whole.
- zen* = *mae* front, before 384.
- go zen* Your (Hi-) Grace 420b.
- zen-aku* good and evil.
- zen-go* before or after, about.
- zeni* coins, cash, change 115a.
- zeni-ire* purse. [ness).
- zen-kwai* recovery (from sick-  
*Zen-kwō-ji* 265a.
- zennaku* = *zen-aku* good and evil.
- zen-shin* virtuous mind.
- zen-shin* the whole body.
- zen-shō* complete burning 53a.
- zen-tai* whole body; — (*ni*) in general; constitutionally, originally, properly speaking, in reality.
- zo* (interjection) 416, 427d.
- zō* elephant.
- zō* stature.
- zō* entrails, organ.
- zō-ge* ivory.
- Zōjōji* 147c.
- zō-kin* cloth for mopping floors.
- zok-kan* (*ni*) among common people.
- zoku* outlaw, rebel, robber.
- zoku* 241b.
- zoku ni* commonly, vulgarly, colloquially.
- zoku-go* colloquial, vulgarity.
- zoku-gun* rebel army.
- (*go*) *zom-mei* being alive 244c.
- zō-ni* a kind of soup 76a.
- zonzuru, zonzuru* think, know; *go zonji* 193a. [easily.
- zō-sa* (*mo*) *naku* without trouble,
- zō-sen-jo* shipyard, dockyard.
- zu* drawing, plan, map.
- zubon* [European] trousers.
- zubon-shita* drawers.
- zu-e* pictures 281a. [siderably.
- zui-bun* (*ni*) a good deal, con-
- zuzun* rapidly, readily.
- zurui* crafty, tricky.
- zutsu* apiece.
- zu-tsū* headache; — *ga suru* have a headache.
- zutto* all the way, direct, very.

## VOCABULARY TO THE ENGLISH EXERCISES\*

a, an (if needed, use numeral "one" or <i>aru</i> ).	accustomed, become <i>nareru</i> .
a (in "a <i>yen</i> an hour") <i>de</i> ; (in "twice a day") <i>ni</i> .	ache <i>uzuku, itamu</i> .
A. D. <i>kigen (go)</i> .	across <i>-koeru, kosu</i> .
abandon <i>suteru, furisuteru, okizari ni suru</i> .	actor <i>yakusha</i> .
able <i>dekiru</i> .	adapt <i>ōyō suru</i> .
about, approximately <i>oyoso — gurai, taigai — gurai, gurai, hodo, bakari, karekore</i> ; (of time) <i>goro</i> .	add <i>kuwaeru, tsukeru</i> .
about, concerning <i>ni tsuite, no koto wa, wa</i> .	address (of letter) <i>atena</i> .
above <i>ue ni (de)</i> .	address, lecture <i>enzetsu</i> .
abroad <i>gwaikoku, Seiyō (ni, ye)</i> ; go — <i>yōkō suru</i> ; be — for study <i>ryūgaku suru</i> .	addressed, be <i>tuareru</i> .
absence <i>rusu</i> ; in my — <i>rusu ni</i> .	adopt <i>yōshi ni morau</i> ; be adopted <i>yōshi ni iku</i> .
absurd <i>kudaranai</i> .	adult <i>otona</i> .
abundantly <i>takusan</i> .	advance (intr.) <i>susumu</i> .
according to <i>ni yotte, yoreba, shitagatte, shitagaeba</i> ; — the European calendar <i>seireki de</i> .	advantage <i>rieki</i> .
account of, on <i>no tame ni, de, ni</i> .	advice, seek <i>kangae wo kiku</i> .
account book <i>chōmen</i> .	advise <i>chūkoku suru, setsuyu s.</i>
accumulate (intr.) <i>tamaru, tsu-moru</i> .	affair <i>koto, monogoto</i> .
	affectionate <i>koishii</i> .
	a-foot <i>kachi de</i> .
	after (no) <i>nochi (ni), kara, tatte, tatte kara, tattara, go</i> ; (conj.) <i>-te kara, ato de</i> (with past), <i>to</i> (with present).
	afterwards, <i>nochi ni, ato de</i> .
	again, <i>mata, mō ichi do, arata-mete</i> .
	against <i>ni, ye, ni tai shite</i> .
	age <i>jidai</i> ; five years of — <i>itsutsu ni naru, go sai no</i> ; at the — of fifty <i>go jissai de</i> .

\* This list is designed, not for general use, but only to remind the student of words that he needs for the English exercises and has forgotten. It does not include personal pronouns, numerals (with numeratives), adverbs of time (339), nor foreign words.

- ago *mae* (*ni, wa*), *isen*; a while  
— *sakki, sen'toku*.
- agreement *yakusoku*.
- agriculture *nōgyō*.
- air (n.) *kūki*.
- air (v.) *hosu*.
- all *mina, notorazu, subete, kozo-*  
*zotte, sukkari, dore mo, -kire-*  
*ru, -tsukusu*; (n.) *mina sa-*  
*ma*; — night *yoppite, yodō-*  
*shi*; — the time *shijū*: —  
the way *zutto*; — over *sōshin*;  
— told *mina de*; — I have  
*aru dake no*; — in the house  
*uchijū no*; — the rooms *heya-*  
*goto ni*.
- allow to (causative) 255.
- almost *hotondo, taigai, taitei*;  
— fell *korobō to shita*.
- already *mō*.
- also *mo*.
- altogether *mina de*.
- always *tsune ni, itsu de mo*.
- among *uchi (ni, de), ni, ye*; —  
these *kono uchi*; from —  
*uchi kara*.
- amount *taka*.
- amuse myself *asobu*.
- ancient *mukashi no, ko*; in —  
times *mukashi, moto*.
- ancient (n.) *kojin*.
- and *to, mo, ya, dano, ni*; (conj.)  
*-te, ga*
- angry, get *okoru, hara ga tatsu,*  
*hara wo tateru, rippuku suru*.
- animal *dōbutsu*.
- anniversary (of death) *mei-*  
*nichi*.
- annoyed, be *komaru*.
- another *hoka no, ta-, mō*  
*hitotsu, betsu ni*; — person  
*hito*; one — *tagai ni, -au*.
- answer (v.) *kotaeru*.
- answer (n.) *henji*.
- any one, anybody *dare de mo,*  
*dare ka, hito*; anything *nan*  
*de mo, nani ka, mono*; any  
time *itsude mo*; anyway *dō*  
*de mo*; at any rate *nanibun*;  
anyhow, notwithstanding  
*sore de mo*.
- anxiety *shimpai*. [*ansuru*.  
anxious, be *shimpai suru*,  
appear *mieru, deru*; (of rain-  
bow) *tatsu*; — that *to mieru*.  
apple *ringo*.  
applicable, be *atehamaru*  
apply *tsukeru*; (make) *sueru*;  
(rouge) *sasu*.  
approach *ni yoru, sashikakaru*;  
— near *soba ni yoru*.  
apt to, be *yoku, tokaku*.  
argue *giron suru*.  
armor *yoroi*.  
army *rikugun*  
around *mawari ni*.  
arrange *soroeru*.  
arrest *toraeru, tsukamaeru*.  
arrive *tsuku*.  
arrival *tōchaku*; just after my  
— *kitate ni*.  
article, commodity *shinamono*;  
thing *mono, no*; (in docu-  
ments) *jō*.  
as, when, since, because *-te,*  
*no de, kara, toki ni, tokoro*  
*ga, tochū de*; same as *to*  
*onaji*; like *to dōyō ni, no yō*  
*ni*; as you know *go zonji no*  
*tōri*; as I ordered *iitsuketa*  
*tōri ni*; as if, as when *yō ni,*  
*yō na*; as soon as *shidai*; as  
it is *sono mama, moto no*  
*mama*; as large as *hodo*  
*ōkii*; as possible 112d.  
ascend (*ni*) *noboru*.  
ask, question *tau*; — for *tanōmu*.  
asleep, be *nete iru*.

- assassinate** *ansatsu suru.*  
**associate with** *to (ni) tsukiau, majiwaru, kōsai suru.*  
**at** *de, ni no*; (of time) *ni, kara*; (of price) *de*; at once *sugu ni, jiki ni, sassoku*; at all *kesshite, tōtei, totemo, tonto, ikkō, issai, issatsu, nanibun, de mo.*  
**attached to, be** *ni tsuku*; become — *ni natsuku.*  
**attempt to walk** *arukō to suru.*  
**attend to (work)** *yarū.*  
**attention to, pay** *ni kamau, ki wo tsukeru, chūi suru.*  
**auction, at** *seri de.*  
**autumn** *aki.*  
**avaricious** *yoku ga fukai.*  
**avoid** *sakeru, hazusu.*  
**awake** *okiru, me ga sameru, me wo samasu.* [*desu.*]  
**aware of, be** *shōchi suru, shōchi*  
**away, be** *rusu desu*; give away *hito ni, waki ni yaru.*  
**azalea** *tsutsuji*  
**bachelor** *dokushimmono.*  
**back** *-kaeru, -kaesu, -modosu.*  
**bad** *warui.*  
**baggage** *nimotsu.*  
**bamboo** *take.*  
**bamboo grass** *sasa.*  
**banish** *nagasu*  
**bank (of river)** *kishi.*  
**banquet** *enkwai.*  
**barber** *tokoya.* [*kin*]  
**bargain-money** *tetsukekin, te-*  
**barrier** *sekisho.*  
**bath** *furo, yu.*  
**bathe in** *abiru.*  
**battle** *tatakai, kassen, sensō.*  
**battledore** *hagoita.*  
**bazaar (charity)** *jizenshi.*  
**be** *de aru, de iru, de irassharu,*  
*etc., ni natte iru, ni ataru*; (of existence, number, quantity) *aru, iru, oru, irassharu, oide nasaru, etc.*; be in *haitte iru, irete aru.* am to *kazu da.*  
**bean** *mame.*  
**bear** *kuma.*  
**bear fruit** *mi (ga) naru.*  
**beard** *hige.*  
**beat down the price** *makesaseru, negiru*  
**beaten, be** *makeru.*  
**beast** *kedamono*; wild — *mōjū.*  
**beautiful** *utsukushii, kirei na*  
**because** *kara, naze naraba, naze to iu ni, nazeka to ieba* — *kara desu*  
**become** *naru.*  
**bed, go to** *neru.*  
**bedding** *yagu, toko.*  
**beef** *gyūniku.*  
**before** *mae (ni, wa), izen, made ni (wa)*; (adv.) *maemotte.*  
**beg** *negau*  
**begging priest** *takuhatsu-bōzu.*  
**begin (tr.)** *hajimeru, -kakeru.*  
**begin (intr.)** *hajimaru, -kakarū.*  
**beginning, at the** *the hajime (wa).*  
**behavior** *okonai.*  
**b.lieve** *shinzuru.*  
**bell** *kane.*  
**belong to** *no (mouo) desu.*  
**b.low** *shita ni, ika.*  
**besid** *soba ni, waki ni.*  
**best** *ichiban yoi.*  
**better** *mo'to yoi, mashi desu*; is — *to hō ga ii*; look—*hit-tatte mieru.*  
**beyond** *mukō de (or ni)*;—that *soko kara.*  
**bill (of bird)** *kuchibashi*  
**bill (money)** *satsu.*  
**bill (legislative)** *teishutsuan.*



- bind (a book) *tojiru*, *seikon s.*  
 bird *tori*.  
 birth to, give *umu*.  
 birthday *tanjōbi*.  
 birthplace *furusato*, *kokyō*.  
 bit, a *sukoshi*.  
 bite *kainu*.  
 bitter *nigai*.  
 black *kuroi*.  
 blind person *mōjin*, *mekura*,  
*satō*, *amma* 223a.  
 blood *chi*.  
 bloom (*hana ga*) *saku*.  
 blossom *hana*.  
 blow *fuku*, *fukitsukeru*.  
 boast *takaburu*.  
 boat *fune*, *kobune*, *bōto*.  
 boatman *sendō*.  
 body *karada*.  
 boil (intr.) *waku*, *nietatsu*.  
 boil (tr.) *wakasu*, *senjiru*; —  
 down *senjitsumeru*.  
 book *shonotsu*, *shōjaku*, *hon*.  
 bookbinding *seikon*.  
 bookcase *kombako*.  
 bookseller *honya*.  
 bookshelf *kondana*.  
 bookstore *honya*.  
 boot *nagagutsu*.  
 born, be *umareru*.  
 borrow *kariru*, *haishaku suru*.  
 botanical *shokubutsugakujō no*.  
 both *ryōhō (tomo)*, *dochira mo*;  
 (of persons) *futari tomo*;  
 (conj) *mo*.  
 bother, is such a *mendō desu*.  
 bottle *bin*.  
 box *hako*; nest of lacquered  
 boxes *jūbako*.  
 boy *kodomo*, *musuko*; little —  
*botchan*.  
 boy, servant *genan*.  
 branch *eda*.  
 bread *pan*.  
 break (intr.) *oreru*, *kowareru*  
 — out *okoru*, *deru*.  
 break (tr.) *oru*, *kowasu*, *kobo-*  
*tsu*; (a promise) *tagaeru*.  
 breakfast *asahan*, *asameshi*.  
 bridge *hashi*.  
 bright, be (of the sun) *teru*.  
 bring *molte kuru*, *molte agaru*,  
*jisan suru*; (water) *hiku*;  
 before *uttaeru*; — close *soba*  
*ni yosetsukeru*; — it about  
 that *yō ni suru*.  
 broad *hiro*.  
 broken, be *oreru*, *kowareru*.  
 broker *saitori*.  
 bronze *karakane*.  
 brook *kogawa*.  
 brother *kyōdai* 422.  
 bud *tsubomi*.  
 Buddhist believer *bukkyōto*;  
 temple *o tera*; priest *o tera*  
*sama*, *oshō (san)*, *bōsam*,  
*bōzu*.  
 build *tateru*, *kenchiku suru*, *fu-*  
*shin suru*; (railroad) *shiku*;  
 newly built *shinchiku no*;  
 built well *tatekata ga yoi*.  
 building *kenchiku*; (concrete)  
*tatemono*: manner of — *tate-*  
*kata*, *tateyō*.  
 buoyant, be *ukitatsu*.  
 burdock *gobō*.  
 bureau *tansu*.  
 burn (tr.) *yaku*, *moyasu*.  
 burn (intr.) *yakeru*, *moeru*, *hi*  
*ga tsuku*; be scorched *koge-*  
*ru*; be burned (on the body)  
*yakedo suru*; be burned to  
 death *yakejini suru*.  
 burst out laughing *fukidasu*.  
 bush-warbler *uguisu*.  
 business *yō*, *yōji*; trade *shōbai*.  
 busy, be *isogashii*, *torikonde*  
*iru*.

- but, only *tada* — *shika, mo* ;  
 except *no hōka* ; (conj.) *ga, keredomo, shikashi, no ni*.  
 butterfly *chōchō*.  
 buy *kau* ; — in *kaiireru, shiireru* ; (on the part of the Government) *kaiageru*.  
 by *de, ni* ; beside *no waki ni, no hitori ni* ; until *made ni*.  
 cabinet, ministry *naikaku*.  
 cage *ori, kago*.  
 cake *o kwashi*.  
 calculate *hakaru, kanjō suru*.  
 calendar *koyomi, -reki*.  
 calf *koushi*.  
 call *yobu* ; name *iu, mōsu, tonareru* ; visit *tasuneru, ukagau, tou, yoru, yotte iku, tachi-yoru* ; — after *yobikakeru* ; — in *yobiireru* ; — back *yobimodosu*.  
 calm, be *shizuka na, naide oru*.  
 camellia *tsubaki*.  
 can (*koto ga*) *dekiru* 267 ; cannot -*kaneru*.  
 cane *tsue, sutekki*.  
 captain (of ship) *senchō*.  
 captivated by, be *ni horekomu*.  
 capture *toru* ; — alive *ikedori ni suru*. [*karuta wo toru*.  
 card (game) *karuta* ; play cards  
 care, take *ki wo tsukeru, chūi suru*.  
 careful, be *yōjin ga yoi, chūi suru* ; be — about *no yōjin wo suru*. [*to*.  
 carefully *shinsetsu ni, konkon*  
 careless, be *yōjin ga warui*.  
 carp *koi*.  
 carriage *kuruma, basha*.  
 carry *hakobu, katsugu* ; — out (to the end) *yariōsu*.  
 cart *niguruma*.  
 case *baai, jiken* ;  
 cat *neko*.  
 catch *toru, tsukamaeru, tottsu-kamaeru* ; — cold *kaze wo hiku* ; — a train *kisha no ma ni au*.  
 castle (*o*) *shiro*. [*ga yoi*.  
 cautious, be *yōjin suru, yōjin*  
 cereal *kokumotsu*.  
 ceremony *shiki*. [*chigai nai*.  
 certainly *kanarazu, iyoio, ni*  
 change (tr.) *kaeru* ; (money) *kususu* ; — cars *norikaeru*.  
 change, be changed *kawaru*.  
 change, money *zeni*. [*kanji*.  
 character, letter *ji* ; Chinese — charcoal *sumi*.  
 c arges -*chin, ryō*.  
 chase *ou* ; — to a corner *sumi ni oitsumeru*.  
 chat *o hanashi*.  
 cheap *yasui*.  
 cherry *sakura*.  
 chicken *niwatori, tori*.  
 child (*o*) *ko(san), kodomo* ; oldest — *sōryō* ; youngest — *sueko*.  
 childish, childlike, be *kodomorashii, kodomomeite iru*.  
 chimney *kemuridashi, entotsu* ; lamp — *hoya*.  
 Chinese (man) *Shinajin* ; (language) *kango* ; — character *kanji* ; — book *kanseki* ; — composition *kambun* ; — poem *kanshi, shi*.  
 chopsticks *hashi*. [*kyōto*.  
 Christian believer *Kirisutchrysanthemun kiku*.  
 cigar *makitabako*.  
 circular letter *kwaijō*.  
 city *shi, shinai*.  
 civilized, be *hirakete iru*.  
 clam *hamaguri*.  
 class, rank -*tō*.

- classical language *gagen*.  
clam *tsume*.  
clean *sōji suru*.  
clean copy *seisho*.  
clear off *hareru*; be clear  
*harete iru*.  
clearly *hakkiri*.  
clever *kashi'toi, rikō na*.  
cling *sugaritsuku*.  
clog *geta*.  
close, end *shimai, owari, kure*.  
close (adv.) *soba ni*.  
closet *oshiire*.  
cloth *kire*; woolen — *rasha*.  
clothes *kimono, o meshimono*.  
cloud *kumo*.  
cloudy, be *kumotte iru*.  
coal *sekitan*.  
coat (Japanese) *haori*.  
coin *kuwahei*.  
cold *samui*; (of things) *tsumetai*; — water *mizu, o hiya*.  
cold, a *kaze, fūja*.  
colloquial, the *sokugo*.  
color *iro*; color red *aka iro wo tsukeru*.  
come *kuru, mairu, agaru, sanjō suru, irassharu, oide nasaru, mieru*; (of things) *todoku*; summer comes *natsu ni naru*; — out, — forth *deru*; — back *kaeru, kaette kuru*; — together *ochiau, yoriau*; — down on the price *makeru, hataraku*.  
command *iitsukeru*.  
coming, on the way *kigake ni*.  
company *kwaisha*; guests *kyaku*.  
competition *kyōsō*.  
complain *kogoto wo iu, piipii iu*.  
complete, be *sorotte iru*.  
completed, be *dekite iru*.  
complicated, be *irikunde iru*.  
compose, write *tsukuru*.  
con position, essay *bunshō*.  
condense *chijimeru*.  
confess *kakujō suru*.  
conflagration *kwaji*.  
confuse *magirakasu*.  
congenial, be (*tagai ni*) *ki ga au*.  
congratulate you, I *o medetō (gozaimasu)*.  
conjugation of verbs *dōshi no kenkwa*.  
considerably, considerable *dai-bu, zuibun, yohodo, nakanaka*.  
constantly *shijū, shikiri ni*.  
construct *koshiraeru, tsukuru*.  
consulate *ryōjikan*.  
consult *sōdan suru*; — a dictionary *jibiki wo hiku*; — a physician *isha ni kakaru, mite morau*; — one's own convenience *katte ni suru*.  
consulation *sōdan*.  
consumption *haibyō*.  
contain *fukumu*.  
continent *tairiku*.  
continually, continuously *nobetsu ni taemanaku, tsuzukazama ni, -tsuzuku, -tsuzukeru*.  
continue *tsuzuku, tsuzukeru*.  
contract for *ukeou*.  
contrary, on the *kaette*.  
convenient, be *benri ga yoi, benri desu*.  
conversation *hanashi*.  
cook *niru, taku, ryōri suru*.  
cooking *ryōri*.  
cool *suzushii*.  
cool, become cool *sameru*.  
cool (tr.) *samasu*; — self off *suzumu*.  
copper *akagane, dō*.

- copy (v.) *utsusu*.  
 copy, model (n.) *tehon*.  
 cormorant *u*.  
 corner *sumi*.  
 correct *naosu*.  
 cost -*ryō*, -*dai*.  
 cost (in money) *suru*.  
 cough *seki wo suru*.  
 count (nobility) *haku*(*shaku*).  
 country *kuni*, *kokka*; (opp. city) *inaka*, *zai*; whole — *tenka*.  
 court, courthouse *saibansho*.  
 cousin *itoko*.  
 crack (intr.) *wareru*, *koworeru*.  
 cracked, be *warete*, *kowarete iru*.  
 crack (n.) *suki*, *kizu*.  
 crane *tsuru*.  
 crime *tsumi*.  
 criticism *hinan*.  
 crop *saku*, *shūkwan* 387c.  
 cross *koeru*, *kosu*, *wataru*.  
 crossing (railroad) *fumikiri*.  
 crow *karasu*.  
 crown (of head) *teppen*.  
 cry *naku*.  
 cue *mage*.  
 cup, a *ippai*.  
 cure *naosu*; be cured *naoru*.  
 curio *furudōgu*.  
 custom *shūkwan*.  
 cut *kiru*; (grass, hair) *karu*; (beard) *otosu*.  
 cuttings, by means of *sashiki wo shite*.  
 damp, be *shimeppoi*, *shimette iru* 38od.  
 dangerous *abunai*, *kennon na*.  
 dark *kurai*.  
 dawdle *guzuguzu suru*.  
 day *hi*, *nichi*, *jitsu*; what — ? *ikka*, *nani yōbi*; day by day *himashi ni*; these days *kono setsu wa*; — dawns *yo ga akeru*.  
 daybreak *yoake*.  
 dead, be *shinde iru* 128a; (of a tree) *karete iru*.  
 deaf (*mimi ga*) *kikoenai*, *mimi ga tōi*.  
 dear, expensive *takai*.  
 deathbed, reach a person's *shinime ni au*.  
 debilitated, be *yowatte iru*.  
 debt *shakkin*.  
 decide *kimeru*, *kessuru*, [*kuru*.  
 decrease (intr.) *heru*, *hette*  
 deduct (from the price) *hiku*, *makeru*.  
 deep *fukai*.  
 deer *shika*.  
 defeated, be *makeru*.  
 defective *warui*.  
 deficiency, make up a *umeawase wo suru* (*tsukeru*).  
 degree *do*.  
 delicious *umai*, *oishii*.  
 deliver *todokeru*.  
 demon *oni*.  
 depend on *ni yostte* (*shitagatte*) *chigau*; depending on *ni yotte*.  
 depth *fukasa*. [*teki*.  
 design *moyō*; intention *mokudesire* (v.) *ga hoshii*, *wo nozomi desu*.  
 desirous to (desiderative) 175.  
 detail, in *seisai ni*.  
 detestable *nikui*.  
 development *hattatsu*, *enkaku*.  
 devil *oni*.  
 dictionary *jisho*, *jibiki*.  
 die *shinu*, *nakunaru*; — in battle *uchijini suru*; — out *shini-hateru*.  
 difference *chigai*, *kubetsu*.  
 different, be *chigau*.

- difficult *mutasukashii*.  
 difficulty *sashitsukae*.  
 dig *horu*.  
 digest *konareru, shōkwa suru*.  
 diligent, be *benkyō suru*; not—  
*fubenkyō desu*; diligently  
*benkyō shite*.  
 dim, be *kurai*; (of eyes) *chira-  
chira suru*.  
 dinner *go zen, go chisō*; (noon  
 meal) *hirukan, hirumeski*.  
 direction *hō*.  
 directions instructions *sashizu*.  
 directly *chokusetsu ni, jika ni*.  
 dirty *kitanai*. [*naru*.  
 disappear *mienaku naru, naku-  
disavowal torikeshi*.  
 disease *byōki*.  
 dishonest *fushōjiki na*.  
 disinfect *shōdoku suru*. [*desu*.  
 dislike *kirau, kirai desu, iya*  
 dismiss *ni hima (itoma) wo  
yaru*.  
 dismount *oriru*. [*gotatsuku*.  
 disorderly, be *gatagata suru*,  
 displease *ki ni iranai*.  
 disposition *kimae*.  
 distance, distant place *tōku*,  
*empō*; — in *ri, risū*.  
 distant *tōi*.  
 distinct *hakkiri shita*.  
 distracted, be *torimagireru*.  
 distress, be in *komaru*.  
 district *ku*.  
 ditch *hori*.  
 divide *wakeru*.  
 diviner *uranaija*.  
 do *suru* 216, 309, *yaru*; be done  
*dekiru, dekite iru, sumu*;  
 have done *dekasu*.  
 do to, it will *-te mo yoroshii*.  
 dog *inu*; — days *doiyō*.  
 doll *ningyō*.  
 dollar *doru, dara*.
- donkey *usagiuma*.  
 door *to*.  
 double *ni (sō) bai, bai*. [*ashii*.  
 doubtful *utagawashii, mutsubē*  
 doubtless *sadamete*.  
 dove *kato*.  
 dragon-fly *tombo*.  
 draughty, be *kaze ga fukiōsu*.  
 draw *hiku*.  
 drawer (in bureau) *hikidashi*.  
 drawing *e, gwa*.  
 dreadful *hidōi*.  
 dream *yume*.  
 dreary *samushii, sabishii*.  
 dribblets, in *chibichibi*.  
 drill *keiko, rempei*.  
 drink *nomu*.  
 drinker *sakenomi*.  
 drive out *oiharau, oidasu*; drive  
 up *uchiageru*.  
 drop *otosu*.  
 drought *hideri*.  
 drown *oboreru*; — self *minage  
wo suru*.  
 drug *kusuri*.  
 drunk, get (*sake ni*) *you*.  
 drunkard *yopparai*.  
 dry (tr.) *hosu*.  
 dubious *fushin na, mutasukashii*.  
 duck *ahiru*.  
 during *no aida (ma) ni*.  
 dust *kokori, gomi, chiri*.  
 dwell *sumu*; (of a foreigner)  
*zakkyō suru*.  
 dye *someru*; (teeth black) *o  
haguro wo tsukeru*.  
 dyspepsia *ibyō*.  
 each *dore mo, meimei*; — other  
*tagai ni, -au*; one — *hitotsu  
zutsu*.  
 ear *mimi*.  
 early *kayaku*. [*chikyū*.  
 earth, ground *tsuchi, chi*; globe  
 earthquake *jishin*.

- east *higashi*.  
 easily *yōi ni, yoku*.  
 easy *yasashii, yasui, yōi na*; —  
 to understand *wakari-yasui, wakari-yoi*.  
 eat *taberu, kuu, shōku*; *wo suru, agaru, meshiagaru, itadaku*.  
 ebb tide *shiohi*.  
 edition *han*; first — *shokan*; last — *shimpan*.  
 eel *unagi*.  
 effect *kōnō*.  
 efficient (*monogoto ga*) *yoku dekiru*.  
 egg *tanago, ko*.  
 either *dochira mo, de mo*.  
 elsewhere *hoka, yoso, tasho*.  
 embarrassed, be *komaru*.  
 emigrate *ijū suru*.  
 eminent *erai*.  
 emperor *kwōtei, -tei*; (of Japan) *tenshi (sama), tennō (heika)*.  
 empire *teikoku*.  
 employ *yatou, meshitsukau, oku* 226a; be employed at *ni tsutomeru*.  
 empress *kwōgō (heika)*.  
 empty, be *aite iru*.  
 enclosure *kakoi*.  
 end *owari, shimai, sue*.  
 endure, be endurable *tamaru*.  
 engage *tanomu*; — in *suru, yaru*.  
 engagement, have an *sashitsukae ga aru*.  
 enlarge *oshihirogeru*; — a house *shōchiku suru*. [ni.  
 enormously *tohōmonaku, gōgi-enough mō takusan, jūbun*; not — *tarinai*; — to *hodo*.  
 enter *hairu, haitte kuru*.  
 entertained, be *go chisō ni naru*.  
 entirely *maru de, kotogotoku, sukkari, nokorazu, mina*.  
 entrance *genkwan, irikuchi*.  
 entrust *makaseru, azukeru*.  
 envelope *jōbukuro*.  
 envoy *tsukai*.  
 epitaph *hibun*.  
 erase *kesu*.  
 erroneous, be *nachigatte iru*.  
 escape *nigeru, nigedasu*.  
 especially *toriwake, wakete, besshite, koto ni*.  
 European (man) *Seiyōjin, gwaiikokujin*; house in — style *Seiyōzukuri no ie*; — calendar *seireki*.  
 even *mo, de (sae) mo, made mo*; — though (*tatoi*) — *te mo*.  
 evening 339; — party *yakwai*.  
 ever, for *itsu made mo*; have you ever? — *ta koto ga aru ka*.  
 every *dono—mo, mai, -*; — one, — body *dare de mo*; — thing *nani kara nani made, mina*; — house *ieie*; — where, — direction *hōbō*; one — day *mainichi hitotsu zutsu*; — other day *ichi nichi oki ni*; — time that *tabi (goto) ni*.  
 exactly *chōdo, kitchiri*; — like this *kono tōri ni*; don't know — *yoku wakarinasen*.  
 examination (school) *shiken*.  
 examine *shiraberu, ginnmi suru*; (a student) *shiken suru*; (a patient) *shisatsu suru*; be examined, have examined *nite morau*.  
 exceedingly *kiwamete, wake-monaku*. [ku no hoka.  
 except, excepting *nozoite, nozo-excess, be in amaru*.  
 exchange (v.) *kaeru, torikaeru*.

- exchange, rate of *sōba*.  
 excited, be *sawagu*.  
 excused, be *yurusareru, go men wo kōmuru*.  
 excursion ticket *ōfukugippu*.  
 exercise *undō*; study *keiko*.  
 expectation *tsumori*.  
 expensive (*nedan ga*) *takai*.  
 expert *jōzu na*.  
 explain *tokiakasu, setsum. s.*  
 expose *sarasu*; —head of *sara-shikubi ni suru*.  
 extensive *hiro*i.  
 extinguish *kesu*; be extinguished *kieru*.  
 extract *nuku*.  
 extraordinary *taihen na, hijō na*.  
 extremely *kiwamete*.  
 eye *me, manako*; get one's eyes on *mikakeru*.  
 eyeglass *megane*. [*shiroi*.  
 face (n.) *kao*; — powder *o* face (v.) (*no hō ye*) *muku*.  
 fail *shikujiru, shippai suru*; — in examination *rakudai suru*; — to *-zu ni shimau*.  
 fail, without *kanarazu, machigai (sōi) naku*.  
 failure, be a *dekisokonau*.  
 faintly (of sound) *kasuka ni*.  
 fairly *kanari*.  
 fall, autumn *aki*.  
 fall (v.) *ochiru, chiru, furu* 62a; (of a person) *korobu*; (of prices) *geraku suru*; — over *taoreru*; — in love *horeru*.  
 false, be *uso desu*.  
 family *ie, uchi, -ke*; be of good — *iegara ga yoi*.  
 famine *kikin*.  
 famous *nadakai, yūmei na*.  
 fan *aogu*.  
 far *tōku, empō ni*.  
 farmer *hyakushō, nōfu*.  
 fashionable *hayari no*.  
 fast *hayai*; be — (of a clock) *susunde iru*.  
 father *chichi, oyaji, ototsan, go soimpu sama* 421.  
 fatty *aburakko*i. [*tate*.  
 favor *on, o kage, hiiki, o hiki*-favorable sign *kitchō, yoi shirase*.  
 fear *osoreru*; — that *-nakereba ii ga* 161e.  
 feasible, be *dekiru*.  
 feed *kuwaseru, tabesaseru*.  
 feel well *kagen ga yoi*; feel as if *yō na kinochi ga suru*.  
 feeler *tsuno*.  
 feeling *kokoromochi, kokochi, kimochi, kibun, kimi*.  
 fellow *otoko, wakaishū, mono, yatsu*.  
 felon *jūzainin*. [*mesu*.  
 female *onna, joshi*; (of animal) fence *kakine*.  
 festival (*o*) *matsuri, ennichi*; — of the dead *bon, bommatsuri*.  
 feudalism *hōken-seido*; feudal age *hōken jidai*.  
 few *sukunai*.  
 fief *ryōchi*.  
 field *hatake*.  
 fight *tatakau*.  
 fin *hire*.  
 finally *yōyaku, tōto, tsui, ni tsumari*.  
 fine, minute *komaka na*; good *rippa na, yoi*; (of the weather) *yoi, harete iru*.  
 finger *yubi*.  
 finish *shite shimau, -te shimau, shiageru, -ageru*; be finished *dekiru, dekiagaru, shuttai suru*; have it finished *dekasu*.

- fire *hi*; conflagration *kwaji*;  
incendiary — *tsukebi*; — alarm  
*kanshō*.
- fire (a gun) *utsu*.
- fireman *hikeshi*.
- firmly *shikkari to*,
- first (adj.) *dai ichi no, hajime  
no, saisho no*; for the first  
time *hajimete*; at first *hajime  
wa*.
- fish (n.) *sakana, uwo*.
- fish (v.) *sakana wo toru, tsuru,  
tsuri wo suru*; fishing boat  
*ryōsen*.
- fisherman *ryōshi*.
- fix *kimeru*.
- flash, like a *hirari to*.
- flatter *o seji wo iu*.
- flavor *umami*.
- flea *nomi*.
- flee *nigeru, nigete iku*.
- fleshy, be *futotte iru*. [*ishi*]
- flint (for striking fire) *hiuchi-*  
float *ukabu*.
- flounder (fish) *hirame*.
- flow *nagareru*; let — *nagasu*.
- flower *hana*; — pot *uekibachi*.
- flute *fue*.
- fly *tobu*.
- fly a kite *tako wo ageru*.
- fly-catcher *ruri*.
- fog *kiri, moya*.
- foggy, be *kiri ga fukai*.
- follow *ni shitagau, sou*.
- fond of, be *ga suki desu*; very  
— *dai suki*.
- food *tabemono, shokumotsu*.
- fool *baka*.
- foolish *baka na, bakarashii,  
tsumaranai*.
- foot *ashi*.
- for *ni, no tame ni, no wake de,  
ni shite wa*; train for Tōkyō  
*Tōkyō ye iku kisha*; change
- for to *kaeru* for you *-te  
ageru, sashiageru*; (conj.)  
*kara*.
- forbid *kinzuru*.
- foreign *gwaikoku no, gwai-,  
Seiyō no, sei-, yō-, tō-*; —  
country *gwaikoku*; — lan-  
guage *gwaikokugo*; — food  
*yōshoku*; — goods *tōbutsu*.
- foreigner *gwaikokujin, Seiyō-  
jin*.
- forest *hayashi*.
- forfeit *shikujiru*.
- forget *wasureru*.
- form *katachi, sugata*; have a  
good — *kakkō ga yoi*.
- former *mae no, sen no, sen-*.
- formerly *mukashi, moto, katsu-  
te*.
- fortunately *saiwai*.
- found, be *miataru, aru*.
- fowl *tori, niwatori*.
- fox *kitsune*.
- fractious, get *abareru*.
- frankly (*go*) *enryo naku*.
- free *jiyū na*; set — *hanasu*.
- freight *nimotsu*.
- fresh *atarashii, -tate no* 119.
- friend *tomodachi, hōyū*.
- frightened, be *odoroku*.
- frog *kaeru*.
- from (*no hō*) *kara, wo hajime*.
- front of, in *no mae de* (or *ni*).
- fruit *kudamono*; bear — *mi  
(ga) naru*.
- full, be *ippai haitte iru*; — of  
fish *sakana ga ōi*.
- funds, public *kwankin*.
- fur *ke, keiro*.
- furniture *dōgu*.
- gambling *bakuchi*.
- garden *niwa*.
- gardener *uekiga*.
- garment *kimono*; padded —



- wataire*; lined — *awase*; unlined — *hitoemono*.  
 gate *mon*.  
 gather *hirou*; — together *matomeru*, *torisoroeru*.  
 general, in *oshinabete*. [*gai*. generally *ippan ni*, *fudan*, *taigentle yasashii*.  
 geography *chiri (gaku)*.  
 get, become *naru* (see passive); — up *okiru*; — off *oriru*; — well (*byōki ga*) *naoru*; — acquainted *tsukiatte miru*.  
 gift *okurimono*, *o miyage* 84d; congratulatory — *shūgi*.  
 ginseng *ninjin*.  
 girl *onna no ko*, *musume*, *o jōsan*.  
 give *yarū*, *kureru*, *kudasaru*, *ageru*, *sashiageru* 309; share *wakeru*; devote *suteru*; please give me *kudasai*, *chōdai*, *itadaku*; — up *yameru*, *yosu*.  
 glance, with one *chirari to*.  
 glare *niramu*.  
 glass, a *ippai*.  
 glimpse of, catch a *mikakeru*.  
 gnaw *kajiru*.  
 go *iku*, *mairu*, *russharu*, *oide nasaru*, *oide ni naru*, *oide desu* 309; *deru*, *tatsu*, *mawaru*; go abroad *yōkō suru*; go across, over *koeru*, *kosu*, *wataru*; go along *sou*; go home (*uchi ye*) *kaeru*; go into *hairu*; go out (*soto ye*) *dete iku*, *dekakeru*, *soto wo aruku*; go through *tōru*; go with you *go dōhan itasu*; go off (of a gun) *dox to naru*; go out (of a lamp) *kieru*; go to bed *neru*, *geshinaru*; go on a journey *tabi ni deru*; go to the palace *sandai suru*; go for worship *sankei suru*; go to pieces *kuzureru*; go to seed *tō ga tatsu*; go and see *mite kuru*; the day is gone *hi ga kureta*.  
 go-between *nakōdo*.  
 godown *kura*, *dozō*.  
 going, on the way *ikigake ni*.  
 gold *kin*.  
 good *yoi*, *yoroshii*; be — at *ga jōzu desu*; a — many *zuidun takusan*; — morning *o hayō*.  
 goods *shina*, *shinamono*.  
 good-tempered *otonashii*.  
 goose *gachō*; wild — *gan*.  
 government *seiji*, *matsurigoto*; the — *seifu*; — army *kwangun*; at — expense *kwampi de*.  
 gradually *dandan*, *oioi*, *shidai ni*, *shidaishidai*.  
 graduation *sotsugyō*.  
 graft *tsugu*, *tsugiki wo suru*.  
 grain *kokumotsu*.  
 grammar *bunten*.  
 grand *kekko na*.  
 grandchild *magō*.  
 grandfather *o jii san*.  
 grandmother *o bā san*.  
 grass *kusa*.  
 grave *kaka*.  
 great *ōkii*, *ōki na*, *ō*, *erai*; — impoliteness *tonda shisurui*; a — deal *takusan*, *hijō ni*, *yoku*.  
 groom, hostler *bettō*.  
 ground *tsuchi*.  
 grounds, enclosure *yashiki*.  
 grow *haeru*, *sodatsu*.  
 gruel *o kayu*.  
 guarantee *ukean*.  
 guest (*o*) *kyaku (san)*.  
 guide *annaisha*.

- guilty, be *tsumi ga aru*.  
gun *teppō, taihō*; three guns  
(of a salute) *sampatsu*.  
habit *kuse, shūkwān*.  
hair *kami no ke, kami, ke*.  
hairpin *kanzashi*.  
hale *tassha na*.  
half *han, hambun*.  
hand (n.) *te*.  
hand (v.) *toru, watasu*.  
handkerchief *hankechi*.  
hand-rail *tesuri*.  
hang (tr.) *kakeru, tsuru*; hang-  
ing bridge *tsuribashi*; — self  
*kubi wo kukuru*.  
happen that *koto mo aru*; — to  
see *mitsukeru*; — to know  
*kokoroatari ga aru*; that  
happens to be on hand *ari-  
awase no*.  
happily *saiwai*.  
harbor *minato*.  
hard *katai*; —to *-nikui, -gatai*,  
hardly (use negative probable  
form); *nakanaka*.  
hare *usagi*.  
harvest (n.) *shūkwaku, kariire*,  
harvest (v.) *karu*.  
hastily *sassa to*.  
hatch *kaesu*.  
have *motsu, motte iru, ga aru*;  
— no *ga nai*; — short legs  
*ashi ga mijikai*; — a good  
time *omoshiroi me ni au*; —  
consumption *haibyō ni ka-  
katie (natte) iru* — a head-  
ache *zutsū ga suru*; — some  
cake! *o kwashi wo o agari  
nasai*; I should like to— *chō-  
dai*; have written *kaita, kai  
te aru*; — one write *kaku yō  
ni suru, kakaseru* (causative)  
255; have a thing written  
*kaite morau*.  
head *atama, kubi, kashira, o  
tsumuri*.  
headache *zutsū*.  
heal (intr.) *naoru*; (tr.) *naosu*,  
health *kenkō*.  
healthy, be *kenkō desu, karada  
no kusuri ni naru*.  
hear *kiku, kikikomu, uketama-  
waru*; be heard, can hear,  
can be heard *kikoeru*.  
heart *shinzō*; spirit *kokoro, ki*;  
by — *sora de*,  
heat (n.) *atsusa*, [ *ka su*.  
heat (v.) *taku, atatameru, wa-  
heavy omoi*; thick *atsui*.  
height *takasa*. [ *tsugu*.  
heir *atotsugi*; become — of  
hello! *oi*.  
help *tasukeru, tetsudau* 184f.  
hen *mendori*.  
here *koko, kochi (ra) de (ni or  
ye)*; — and there *achikochi*;  
be — *kite iru*.  
hereafter *kono go, igo (wa)*.  
heron *sagi*.  
herring *nishin*.  
hesitate *chūcho suru*; — to say  
*mōshi-kaneru*. [ *kakureru*.  
hide (tr.) *kakusu*; be hidden  
high *takai*; highly prized *tattoi*.  
highway *kaidō (sufi)*.  
hindrance *sashitsukae*.  
hire (v.) *yatou*.  
hire (n.) *yatoichin*.  
history *rekishi*.  
hog *buta*.  
hold *motte iru*; (in arms) *daku*.  
holidays *yasumibi, kyūka*.  
home *uchi, taku, kuni (ye)*; be  
at — *uchi (taku) ni oru, uchi  
desu*; not at — *rusu desu*;  
Home Office *naimushō*.  
homely, be *kiryō ga warui*.  
honest *shōjiki na*.

- hoof *tsune, kizume*.  
 hope (v.) *nozomu, kibō suru* ;  
 — to-ō to *omou* ; — that -*ba*  
*ii ga* 161e.  
 horn *tsuno*.  
 horse *uma* ; — car *tetsudōbasha*,  
 hospital *byōin*.  
 hostler *bettō*.  
 hot *atsui* ; — water (o) *yu* ; —  
 spring *onsen, onsemba* ; be  
 -- (of water) *waite iru*.  
 hotel *yadoya, hatagoya*.  
 hour *ji, jikan*.  
 house *ie, uchi, taku, -ke*.  
 how? *dō, dō shite, dō in fū ni,*  
*ikaga*—much, — many *ikura,*  
*iku, nan* ; about — much  
*dono gurai, dore hodo* ; — far  
*doko made* ; — far is it *dono*  
*gurai aru ka* ; — high *dore*  
*gurai takai* ; — old (o) *ikutsu* ;  
 — often *namben* ; — would  
 it be to buy *katte (wa) dō*  
*desu ka*. [*omoi koto*.  
 how! *sago, nan to* ; — heavy!  
 hungry, get *hara ga hette kuru,*  
*o naka ga suku, himojiku*  
*naru, kūfuku ni naru, tabe-*  
*taku naru* 102a, 175b.  
 hurriedly *isioide*.  
 hurry, be in a hurry *isogu,*  
*toriisogu, sassa to suru*.  
 hurt (intr.) *itai, itamu*.  
 hurt (tr.) *itameru. kisu wo tsu-*  
*keru* ; hurt self *kega wo*  
*suru* ; in hurts the eyes *me*  
*ni sawaru*.  
 ice *kōri*.  
 idea *risō, kangae, omoi*.  
 idly *burabura*.  
 if *moshi* — *nara (ba), to, toki*  
*wa, -ba* ; if only I had gone  
*ittara yokatta ni* ; if not all  
*mina de naku to mo*.  
 ill (adv.) *waruku* ; be—natured  
*iji ga warui*.  
 illegible *yomenai*.  
 illness *byōki* ; sudden—*kyūbyō*.  
 immediately *sugu (ni), jiki (ni),*  
*mamonaku*.  
 impatient, be *ki ga mijikai,*  
*tanki desu* ; wait impatiently  
*machi-kaneru*.  
 impolite *shitsurei na*.  
 important *taisetsu na*.  
 impossible *dekinai* ; — to write  
*kakaranai*.  
 in *no naka ni, -chū ni, ni oite,*  
*ni, ye, de, no, -ireru, -komu* ;  
 be in *haitte iru, irete aru*.  
 inaccessible *noborenai*.  
 inaccurate, be *machigai ga ōi*.  
 incendiary *hitsuke* ; — fire *tsuke-*  
*bi*.  
 incense *kō* ; stick of — *senkō*.  
 include *ireru*. [*ben na*.  
 inconvenient *futsugō na, fu-*  
 increase *fueru, fuete kuru*.  
 indeed *makoto ni, hontō ni*.  
 independent, be *dokuritsu suru*.  
 indisposed, be *fukwai desu*.  
 indistinct *wakaranai*.  
 indolent, be *fubenkyō desu*.  
 inedible *taberarenai*.  
 inexperienced *heta na*.  
 injured, be *sonjiru*.  
 injurious *gai ni naru*.  
 innocent, be *tsumi ga nai*.  
 inquire *tasuneru, ukagau* ; —  
 of *ni kiite miru* ; — for *saga-*  
*su*.  
 insect *mushi*.  
 inside *naka (ni, wa)*.  
 instead of *no kawari ni* ; — that  
*sono kawari ni*.  
 intend to *tsumori de iru, tsumori*  
*desu, -ō to omou*.  
 intention *tsumori*.

- interesting *omoshiroi*. [*naichi*.  
interior *naka*; (of the country)  
interval *aida, ma*. [*su*.  
intimate, be *shitaskii, koni de-*  
into *no naka ni (ye), ye, ni*.  
intoxicated, become *you*.  
introduce *hikiawaseru, shōkai s*.  
introduction, letter of *shōkaijō*.  
investigate *torishiraberu*.  
invisible *mienai*.  
invite *maneku*; be invited out  
(*kyaku ni*) *yobareru*.  
iron *tetsu*.  
irritable *tanki na*.  
island *shima*.  
issued, be *deru*.  
itself, of *hitoride ni*.  
ivory *zōge*.  
Japan *Nihon*.  
Japanese (man) *Nihonjin*; (lan-  
guage) *Nihongo*; Japanese  
scholar *wagakusha*.  
jar *kame*.  
journey *tabi*.  
judge *handan suru, handan wo*  
*kudasu*; I can't judge *waka-*  
*rimasen*.  
jump *tobu*; — in *tobikomu*; —  
down *tobioriru*.  
just (adv.) *dake, chōdo, chanto*;  
—now *tadaima, tokoro desu*;  
—go and see *chotto mite*  
*kite kure*; — opposite *jiki*  
*mukai*; — as *tōri (ni)*.  
Justice, Department of *shihō-*  
*shō*.  
keep, lodge *tomeru*; (animals)  
*kau*; — on *tsuzukeru*.  
kick *keru*.  
kill *korosu*; — self *jisatsu suru*;  
be killed in war *uchijini*  
*suru*.  
kind *shinsetsu na*. [*ru*.  
kindle (tr.) *tsukeru, takitsuke-*
- kindle (intr.) *tsuku*.  
kite *tako*.  
kitten *koneko, nekogo (neko no*  
*ko)*.  
knee *hiza*.  
knife *naifu, hōchō, kogatana*.  
knot (nautical) *kairi*.  
know *shitte iru, zonzite iru,*  
*shōchi suru, ga wakaru*; I  
don't — *shiranai, zonzima-*  
*sen, wakarimasen, kimari-*  
*masen, ikaga desu ka*; you  
— *go zonji desu*; be known,  
may be known, can know  
*shireru*; let—*shiraseru, oshi-*  
*eru*; happen to—*kokoroatari*  
*ga aru*;—Japanese *Nihongo*  
*ga dekirū*.  
lack, be lacking *tarinai*.  
lacquer *urushi*; lacquered wares  
*nurimono*.  
lady *fujin*; — of the house *oku*  
*san*.  
lake *mizuumi, kosui*.  
language *kotoba, -go*; — study  
*gogaku*.  
large *ōkii, ōki na, ō-*.  
last *owari no, shimai no*; at—  
*yōyaku*.  
late *osoi*.  
lately *konaida, konogoro, kono*  
*setsu wa*.  
later *nochi (ni, wa), nochigata*.  
laugh *warau*.  
law *hōritsu*.  
lay *shiku*; (eggs) *umu*.  
lazy, be *namakete iru, burabura*  
*shite hatarakanai*; lazy  
fellow *namakemono*.  
lead pencil *empitsu*.  
leaf *ha*.  
lean, be *yasete iru*.  
lean over *katamuku*.  
leap year *urūdoshi*.

- learn *narau, osowaru*;—a good lesson *korihateru*.
- least, at *semete, sukunaku to mo*.
- leave, depart *tatsu, deru*; place *oku*; — open *akele oku, akep-panashi ni shite oku*; — unopened *akenaide oku*; — as it is *sono mama ni shite oku*; — over *amasu, nokosu*; be left *amaru, nokoru*.
- leave of, take *ni wakareru, o itoma mōsu, go men wo kōmuru*.
- lecture *enzetsu, kōgi*.
- leech *hiru*.
- left *hidari no*.
- leg *ashi*.
- legation *kōshikwan*.
- leisure *hima, itoma*; be at — *hima ga aru, hima desu*.
- leisurely *yururi to*.
- lend *kasu*.
- length *nagasa*.
- less than *yori sukunai*.
- lesson *keiko*.
- let (causative) 255.
- letter *ji, monji*; epistle *tegami*; (Japanese) — paper *maki-gami*.
- lie (n) *uso*.
- lie (v.) *uso wo iu (tsuku)*.
- life *inochi*; loss of — *hitojini*.
- light (of weight) *karui*; thin *usui*.
- lightning *inabikari, inazuma*.
- like, resembling *no yō na, -rashii*; be —, look — *ni nite iru, rashii*; anything — that *sō iu koto*; and the — *nazo*; (adv.) *no yō ni*; — that *sonna ni*.
- like (v.) *ga suki desu, ki ni iru*; don't — *kirai desu*; should — to (desiderative) 175.
- likewise *yahari*.
- limited to, be *ni kagitte iru*.
- line *bō, sen*; family -*ke*.
- lining *ura*.
- lion *shishi*.
- lips *kuchibiru*.
- little, a *sukoshi (wa), shōshō, chitto, hitotsu, chotto*; a — while *chotto no aida (ma) ni, shibaraku*; a — while ago *sakihodo*.
- live *iru, oru, sumu, sumau*; (of foreigners) *zakkyo suru*.
- live, living *ikita*.
- lively *nigiyaka na*.
- load *tsumu, tsumikommu*.
- loan *kasu, go yōdate mōsu*.
- locality *chihō*.
- long *nagai*; a—distance *harubaru*; a — time *nagaku*; for a — time *kanete yori*; a — time ago *tō ni*; — since *tō kara, yohodo mae kara*; no longer *wokaya, imasara*.
- look at *nagameru, kembutsu suru, miru, haiken itasu, go ran nasaru*; — for, — up *sagasu, sagashidasu*; — back *ato wo miru*; — better *hitatte mieru*; — like *ni nite iru, -rashii*.
- lord *kimi, shu, daimyō, tono sama*.
- lose *nakusu, otosu*; — the way *michi ni mayou*; (in a contest) *makeru*; lost in thought *bonyari (to, shiite)*.
- lot (of ground) *jimen, chisho*; (in a lottery) *kuji*.
- loud voice *ōkii koe, takai koe*.
- love (v.) *kawaigaru*; fall in love with *ni horeru*.

- lovely *kawairashii*.  
 low *hikui*.  
 luck *fuku*.  
 lucky, be *un ga yoi*.  
 lunch *hiruhan*, *hirumeshi*.  
 magazine *zasshi*.  
 magic *mahō*; make magical signs *in wo musubu*.  
 magnificent *kōdai na*.  
 maidservant *jochū*, *gejo*, *kahi*, *osandon* 298a.  
 Majesty, His *heika*.  
 make *koshiraeru*, *tsukuru*, *suru*; — a garden of this *kore wo niwa ni suru*; — one go *ikaseru* (causative); — a face *kao wo suru*; (a garment) *shitateru*; (*mochi*) *tsuku*; (money) *mōkeru*; be made of *de dekiru*, *dekite iru*; making purchases *kainono*.  
 malady *byōki*.  
 male *otoko*; (of animals) *osu*.  
 man *hito*, *mono*; male *otoko*.  
 man-of-war *gunkan*.  
 manservant *genan*.  
 mansion (*o*) *yashiki*.  
 manufacture *seisō*.  
 manure *koyashi*, *hiryō*.  
 many *ōi* (predicative only), *zuibun aru*, *ōku no*, *takusan*, *yoku*; not—, not so—*amari* (with negatives).  
 market *ichi*.  
 market-price *sōba*.  
 marry *kekkon suru*.  
 married man *kanai no aru hito*.  
 mast *hobashira*.  
 master *shujin*, *danna*, *sensei*.  
 mat *tatami*.  
 matter *koto*.  
 matting, straw *mushiro*.  
 may *ka mo shirenai* (or probable form); you — *te mo yoroshii* (*kamawanai*); I — not *wake ni wa ikenai*.  
 meal *shokuji*; — time *shokuji wo suru toki*, *shokuji no toki*.  
 mean *to iu imi* (*koto*) *desu*.  
 meaning *imi*.  
 means of, by *de*, *motte*.  
 meat *niku*, *mi*. [*igakkō*.  
 medical *igakujō no*; — school  
 medicine *kusuri*.  
 meet *ni au*, *o me ni kakaru*.  
 meeting *kwai*.  
 melon *uri*.  
 memory *oboe*.  
 mend *naosu*, *tsugu*.  
 merchant *akindo*.  
 merchantman *shōsen*.  
 messenger *tsukai*.  
 metal *kane*. [*Chōgoku*.  
 middle *nakaba*; — provinces.  
 midst of, in the *-chū*.  
 might, with all one's *sei ippai*, *isshō-kemmei*.  
 milk *chichi*, *gyūnyū*.  
 mind (v.) *ni kamau*, *tonjaku s*.  
 mine (n.) *kwōzan*.  
 minister of state *daijin*.  
 minute, sixty seconds *fun*.  
 minute (adj.) *kuwashii*.  
 mischief, be in *itazura wo suru*.  
 misjudge *misokonau*.  
 miss (v.) *hasusu*.  
 missionary *senkyōshi*.  
 Mrs. *no oku san*.  
 mistake, make a mistake *machigau*, *onoimachigau*; mistaken *machigatta*.  
 mistake (n.) *machigatta koto*, *machigai*.  
 Mr. *san*, *danna san*.  
 mistress *oku san*.  
 model *tehon*.  
 moderately *hikaete*.

mold *ni kabe ga haeru, kabiru*.  
 moment, for a *chotto*.  
 money *kane, kin, zeni*;—changer *ryōgaeya*.  
 monkey *saru*.  
 month *tsuki, -getsu*.  
 moon *tsuki*.  
 moonlight *tsuki no akari, gekkwō*;—view *tsukimi*.  
 moor (v.) *tsunagu*.  
 more *motto, yokei, mō*; more and more *masumasu, oioi*.  
 morning *asa, gozen 339*; this—*kesa*; good — *o hayō*.  
 morning-glory *asagao*.  
 mosquito *ka*;—net *kaya*.  
 most *ichiban, mottomo*; for the most part, mostly *taigai, taitei, yoku*.  
 moth *chō, mushi*.  
 mother *haha, okkasan 421*.  
 mount, mountain *yama, -san*.  
 mountainous be *yama ga ōi*;—region *yamaguni*.  
 mouse *nezumi*.  
 mouth *kuchi*.  
 move (intr.) *ugoku*; (tr.) *ugokasu*; (residence) *hikkosu, utsuru, sumikaeru, irassharu*.  
 moxa, apply *kyū wo sueru*.  
 much *ōi* (predicative only), *takusan, taisō, kijō ni, amari*; too — *amari (takusan)*; as — as *no yō ni*.  
 mulberry *kuwa*.  
 multiply *fuyasu, kakeru*.  
 murder, murderer *hitogoroshi*.  
 murmuring sound, with a *cho-rochoro*.  
 musk *jakō*.  
 must *-nakereba (-nakute wa) naranai*;—not *-te wa naranai (ikenai)*. [*mōsu*].  
 name *na, seimei*; my — is *to*.

naturally *shizen to*.  
 near *chikai, kin*; (adv.) *chikaku, soba ni*.  
 need *ga iru, (o) iriyō desu*; (*go*) *nyūyō desu*; the books you — *go nyūyō no hon*; you — not *go ikanakute mo yoroshii, iku ni wa oyobanai*.  
 neighbor *tonari (no hito)*.  
 neighborhood *kinjo, ken*.  
 net *ami*; mosquito — *kaya*.  
 never *kesshite, totemo* (with negatives); have—gone *itta koto ga nai*.  
 new *alarashii, shin-, nezurashii*; newly built *shinchiku no*.  
 New Year *shinnen*;—Eve *ō-misoka no yoru*;—congratulations *nenshi*.  
 newspaper *shimbun*.  
 next *tsugi no*; (adv.) *kore kara*;—door *tonari*;—time *kondo*.  
 night *yoru*; one—*hito ban*; the whole—*yoppite, yodōshi*; last — *yūbe, sakuya*. [*mo*].  
 no *nai*, no matter if *-te mo, to no! ie, sō de gozaimasen*.  
 nobleman *kwazōku*. [*ragara*].  
 noisy *yakamashii*; noisily *ganone nai*.  
 nonsense *kudaranai koto*.  
 noon *shōgo, hiru*;—signal *gohō, don*.  
 normal school *shihan gakkō*.  
 north *kita*.  
 not *de (wa) nai* (or use negative inflection);—existent *, nai*;—only *bakari de naku*;—very *amari*;—yet *mada*.  
 note, annotation *chūkai*; make a — of, note down *tomeru, kakitsukeru*; take notes *kikēi suru*;—book *chōmen, techō*

- noted *na no aru, mei-*; noted place *meisho*.
- nothing *nani mo* (with negatives).
- novel (n.) *shōsetsu*.
- now *ima (de wa), mō, konogoro, kore de, kore kara*; just — *tadaima, tokoro desu*; — and then *orifushi*.
- number (n.) *kazu, sū*; (of people) *ninzu*.
- number (intr.) *aru, desu*.
- number (tr.) *kazoeru*.
- numerous (*kazu ga*) *ōi*.
- obstinate *iji ga warui*.
- ocean *umi, -yō*.
- o'clock *ji*.
- odor *nioi*.
- of *no, no uchi de, no uchi ni, ni*; of them *sono uchi*; be made of *wo motte dekiru, de dekiru*.
- off, get *oriru*; put — *nobasu*.
- offer *sashiageru*.
- office *shoku, yaku*; place of business *yakusho, yakuba*.
- officer *shikwan*.
- official *kwanni, (o) yakunin*.
- often *tabitabi, tokidoki, yoku*.
- oil *abura*; oily *abura ga ōi*.
- old *furui. furu-, ko-, mukashi no, toshi iotta (yotta)*; — person, — man *toshiyori*; — gentlemen *toshiyori no o kata, o jii san*; — lady *o bā san*; — book *furukon*; — times *mukashi no koto*.
- omit *-otosu*; (in writing) *kakiotosu*.
- on *no ue ni, ni*; on what business? *nan no yō de*; on hand *ariawase no*.
- once *ichi do, ippen, hito tabi*; (of a salute of guns) *ippatsu*; (with a perfect tense) *ittan 70a*; — in a while *tama ni*; at — *sugu ni, jiki ni, sassoku, mamonaku, mō, jiki ni*.
- one *hitotsu, ichi* (use numeratives).
- one (pron.) *mono, hō, no, n'* (as a subject often untranslated); — another *tagai ni, -au*.
- only *tada* — *shika, tatta, bakari*; not — *bakari de naku*.
- open *hiraku, akeru*; leave — *akeppanashi ni shite oku*.
- ophthalmology *gankwa*.
- opinion *kangae, setsu*.
- opportunistly *oriyoku*.
- opportunity *ori, kikwai*.
- oppose *ni hantai suru, tekitai s*.
- opposite *no mukai ni*.
- or *ka, matawa, aruiwa, go* or not *iku ka dō (desu) ka*.
- orange *mikan*.
- orchid *ran*.
- order *iitsukeru*; (goods) *atsuraeru, chūmon suru*.
- order *junjo*; system *shidara*; decoration *kunshō*; command *iitsuke, sashizu, meirei*; (for goods) *chūmon*.
- order that, in *tame ni, yō ni*.
- ordinary *futsū no, atarimae no*.
- origin *moto*.
- original *moto no*.
- orphan *minashigo*.
- other *hoku no, ta-*; some — time *mata*; others, other people *hito*; and others *-ra, -tō*; each — *tagai ni, -au*.
- ought *-beki hazu desu*; you — to know *go zonji no hazu desu*; what — I to do? *dō shitara yokarō*.
- our *watakushidomo no, uchi no*.



- out *soto* (*ni, ye*), *-deru, -dasu* ;  
 go — *soto ye deru, dekakeru, soko made deru* ; come — *deru* ; be—*dete iru, rusu desu* ; put — , take — *dasu* ; — of *no soto ni, no naka kara* .
- outrageous *tohōmonai* .
- outside *soto* (*ni, wa*) .
- over *no ue ni* ; (with numerals) *ijō* ; again—*naosu* ; be—*sumu, yamu* .
- overcoat *gwaitō* .
- overcome *ni uchikatsu* .
- overlook *miotosu* .
- overtake *ottosuku* ; be overtaken by the rain *ame ni furareru* .
- overthrow *horobosu* .
- overturned, be *hikkurikaeru* .
- own, my *jibun no* ; your — *go jibun no* .
- ox *ushi* .
- oyster *kaki* .
- painful *itai* .
- paint (n.) *pen.ri* ; artists' — *enogu* . [ *kaku* .
- paint (v.) *nuru* ; (a picture)
- palace *go sho, kwōkyō* .
- paper *kami, shi* ; newspaper *shimbun* ; (for the nose) *hanagami* ; — money *shihei, satsu* ; — slide, sliding door *shōji* ; — string *koyori* .
- parent *oya, (go) ryōshin (sama)* .
- park *kōen* .
- parliament *kokkwai* ; — building *kokkwai gijidō* .
- part *bun* .
- part *wakareru, hanareru* ; parting call *itomagoi* .
- particularly *betsudan* .
- party, political *seitō* .
- party, evening *yakwai* .
- pass (intr.) *tōru, tsūkō suru* ; — without meeting *ikichigau* .
- pass around *mawaru* .
- pass (n.) *tōge* .
- passport *ryokōken, tegata* .
- patient (n.) *byōnin* .
- patient, be *ki ga nagai* .
- pay *harau* ; (taxes) *osameru* .
- peanut *nankinname* .
- pear *nashi* .
- peasant *hyakushō* .
- peculiar *hen na* .
- peel (v.) *muku* .
- penmanship *tenarai, shūji* .
- people *hitobito, hito* (as a subject often untranslated) ; *jimin* .
- per *de* ; — cent. *wari, bu* .
- perform *suru* .
- performance, theatrical *kyōgen* .
- perplexed, be *komaru* .
- perplexedly *bonyari to* .
- persimmon *kaki* ; unmelowed — *shibukaki* .
- persistently *shikiri ni* .
- person *kata, hito, nin, mono* (“a person” often untranslated) .
- pet dog *kai-inu* .
- petition *negai sho* .
- pheasant *kiji* .
- phlegmatic, be *ki ga noroi* .
- photograph *shashin* .
- photographer *shashinya* .
- physician *isha* .
- pickle (n.) *tsukemono, takuan* .
- pickle (v.) *tsukeru* ; — in salt *shio ni tsukeru* .
- picture *e, gaku* .
- piece, unit (use a numerative) .
- piece *kire* ; go to pieces *kuzureru* .
- pier *hatoba* .
- pigeon *hato* .
- pilgrim *junrei, rokubu* .
- pine *matsu* .
- pious *shinjinbukai* .

- pitiful *aware na*.  
 pity *awaremu*, *kawaisō n. o-mou*; to be pitied *kawaisō na*.  
 place (n.) *tokoro*, *basho*, *-sho*; this — *koko*, *kochira*; noted — *mei-sho*.  
 place (v.) *oku*.  
 plant *ueru*, *uetsukeru*. [*chiue*.  
 plant *shokubutsu*; potted — *ha-plaster* (medical) *koyaku*.  
 plate *sara*.  
 play, theatrical *shibai*, *kyōgen*.  
 play *asobu*; (cards) *toru*; (checkers, *ken*, etc.) *utsu*; (musical instruments) *hiku*.  
 please *dōzo*; — give *kudasai*, *itadaku*, *chōdai*; as you — *go katte ni*.  
 plectrum, pick *bachī*.  
 plenty of *takusan*, *takusan no*.  
 plum *ume*. [*ire*.  
 pocket *kakushi*, — book *kami*  
 poem *uta*, *shi*.  
 poison *doku*.  
 poisonous *doku ni naru*; — snake *dokuja*.  
 police *keisatsu*; — station *keisatsusho*; — man *junsa*.  
 politeness *rei*.  
 political *seijijō no*; — party *seitō*; — offense *kokujihan*.  
 pond *sensui*. [*zushii*.  
 poor, bad *warui*; indigent *ma-poor* (n.) *binbōnin*.  
 population *jinkō*.  
 porcelain *setomono*.  
 portal (Shintō) *torii*.  
 possible, be *dekiru*; as — II 2d.  
 postal card *hagaki*.  
 postoffice *yūbinkyoku*. [*naru*.  
 postponed, be *nobiru*, *enki ni*  
 pot *kame*, *hachi*.  
 pound (v.) *tsuku*.  
 pour *tsugu*.  
 praise *homeru*, *shōbi suru*.  
 precisely *kiichiri*.  
 preparation *shitaku*, (for a lesson) *shitayomi*. [*yage*.  
 present (n.) *okurimono*, *o mi-present* (adj.) *ima no*; be — *iru*.  
 present (v.) *sashidasu*.  
 present, at *sashiataru*, *kono setsu*, *tadaima de wa*, *tōbun*.  
 presently *tadaima*.  
 pretty *uisukushii*, *kirei na*.  
 pretty (adv.) *daibu*.  
 previous *sakki no*.  
 price *nedan*; — mark *shōfuda*; beat down the — *makesaseru*, *negiru*.  
 priest: see Buddhist.  
 primary school *shōgakkō*.  
 prince *miyasama*, *kimi*.  
 principal *motokin*.  
 prison *kangoku (sho)*, *rōya*.  
 private *hisoka na*, not public *shiritsu no*, *shi-*; in a — way *ombin ni*.  
 prize (v.) *chinchō suru*; highly prized *tattoo*. [*form*].  
 probably *tabun* (use probable  
 professor *kyōju*.  
 proficient *jōzu na*, *tassha na*; be — in *ni tsūzuru*.  
 profligacy *hōtō*. [*mu*.  
 progress *shimpo*; make — *susu*.  
 promise *yakusoku*.  
 pronunciation *katsuen*.  
 properly *chanto*.  
 property *zaisan*.  
 prosper *hanjō suru*.  
 protracted, be *nagabiku*.  
 proverb *kotowaza*.  
 province *kuni*, *ko*.  
 provisionally *kari ni*.  
 public *kwān-*.

publish *shuppan suru*.  
 pull *hipparu*; — out *nuku*.  
 punish *bassuru*.  
 pup *koinu*, *inukoro*, (*inu no*) *ko*.  
 pupil *seito*.  
 purchase *kau*; (on the part of the Government) *kaiageru*; making purchases *kaimono*.  
 purpose *tsumori*, *mokuteki*; for the — of *-ō to motte*.  
 purse *saisu*, *kanēire*.  
 pursue *okkakeru*.  
 put *oku*; — in *ireru*, *mazeru*; — in (cold water) *umeru*; — in (a lining) *tsukeru*; — into a vase *ikeru*; — out *dasu*; — on *noseru*, *tsukeru*; — on a fire (fuel) *kuberu*; — on (clothes) *kiru*, *tsukeru*, *mesu*; — away *shimau*; — up *ageru*.  
 quarrel *kenkwa*.  
 queen *nyōō*. [*na*.  
 queer *hen na*, *kitai na*, *kimyō*  
 question *shitsumon*.  
 quickly *hayaku*, *kyū ni*. [*kai*.  
 quick-tempered, be *ki ga miji*-  
 quit *yameru*, *josu*.  
 quite *mattaku*, *sukkari*, *yohodo*,  
*taisō*, *daibu*; — forgot *tsui*  
*wasureta*; — true *mattaku*  
*(sō) desu*.  
 race (ethnological) *jinsu*.  
 railroad *tetsudō*.  
 rain (n.) *ame*.  
 rains, it *ame ga (barabara)*  
*furu*.  
 rainbow *niji*.  
 rainy weather *uten*; rainy sea-  
 son *baiu*, *nyūbai*.  
 rapids (n.) *hayase*.  
 rare, be *metta ni nai*.  
 rat *nezumi*.  
 rattle *garagara suru*.

raw *nama no*; — beef *gyūniku*  
*no nama*; — fish *namazaka-*  
*na*; — silk *ito*.  
 reach *oyobu*, *au*.  
 read *yomu*, *miru*; — to *ni yon-*  
*de kikaseru*. [*dekiai no*.  
 ready, be *dekite iru*; — made  
 really *makoto ni*, *jitsu ni*, *hontō*  
*ni*, *dōmo*.  
 rear *sodateru*.  
 reason *wake*, *riyū*; special —  
*jiyō*, *tsugō*; for some — *nandaka*.  
 rebel *zoku*; — army *zokugun*.  
 recall *yobikaesu*; revoke *tori-*  
*kesu*; remember *omoidasu*.  
 receive *ukeru*, *morau*, *kōmuru*,  
*tamawaru*, *itadaku* 259a; be  
 received *todoku*.  
 recent *konaida no*.  
 recently *konaida*, *konohodo*,  
*konogoro*, *chikagoro*, *senjitsu*,  
*sendatte*.  
 recitation, lesson *keiko*; (from  
 memory) *anshō*; give a — *is-*  
*seki hanasu*.  
 recklessly *muyami ni*.  
 reckon *kanjō suru*.  
 record *kakitomeru*, *tsukeru*.  
 recover (tr.) *torikaesu*.  
 recover (intr.) *naoru*, *zenkawai*  
*suru*.  
 re-cover *harikaeru*.  
 recreation *asobi*.  
 red *akai*.  
 reduce *kiku*.  
 refrain *hikaeru*.  
 regard to, in *ni tsuite*.  
 region *hen*.  
 regulation *kisoku*.  
 relation *kwanker*. [*soku*.  
 relative *shinrui*, *shinseki*, *shin-*  
 reluctance, with *shibushibu*.  
 remedy *kusuri*.

- remember *oboeru*; — me to *ni yoroshiku osshakte kudasai*.  
 remove; see *move*.  
 rent *kariru, kasu, kashite oku*.  
 repeatedly *tabitabi*.  
 repent of *kuiru*.  
 reply (v.) *henji wo suru*.  
 report *todokeru*.  
 representative *giin*.  
 request *negau, tanomu*.  
 required, be *kakaru*.  
 resemble *ni nite iru*.  
 reside *sumau*. [al — *kwōkyō*.  
 residence *sumai, taku*; imperi-  
 residue *kasu*.  
 respects, in many *banji*.  
 responsibility *sekinin, seme*.  
 responsible, be *sekinin ga aru*;  
 make one's self — for *hiki-  
 ukeru*.  
 rest (v.) *yasumu*. [nokori.  
 rest, vacation *yasumi*; balance  
 restaurant *ryōriya*.  
 Restoration *go isshin*.  
 retainer *kerai*.  
 retire (for rest) *yasumu*; go in-  
 to retirement *in'kyō ni naru*.  
 return *kaeru, modoru, kaette  
 kuru, kaesu, modosu*.  
 revere *uyamau*.  
 reverse (n.) *hantai*.  
 review *sarau, fukushū suru*.  
 revision *kaisei*.  
 re-write *kakikaeru*. [han, meshi.  
 rice *ine, kome, mai, gozen, go-  
 ride noru, uma de iku*.  
 right *migi no*; just *tadashi*.  
 riksha *jinrikisha, kuruma*; —  
 man *kurumahiki, kurunaya,  
 shafu*.  
 rise *latsu; okoru, okiru*; the sun  
 rises *hi ga deru*; — up *oki-  
 agaru*; — in the world *shusse  
 suru*.  
 risky *kennon na*.  
 river *kawa*.  
 road *michi*; — side *michibata*.  
 roast *iru*; roasted beans *iri-  
 mame*.  
 rob *nusumu*.  
 robin *komadori*.  
 rockery *tsukiyama*.  
 roll (intr.) *korobu, korogaru*;  
 (of thunder) *gorogoro naru*.  
 roll (tr.) *korogasu, maku*.  
 roll (n.) *makimono*.  
 roof *yane*.  
 room *ma, heya, zashiki*.  
 root *ne*; take — *ne ga tsuku*.  
 rotten *kusatte iru*.  
 rouge *beni*. [rubbed *sureru*.  
 rub *suru*; — oil on *ni hiku*; be  
 rudeness *burei*.  
 ruin self *mi wo mochikuzusu*.  
 ruins *ato*. [nigedasu.  
 run *hashiru, kakeru*; — away  
 rust (v.) *sabi ga tsuku*.  
 rustling sound. with a *gasa-  
 gasa*.  
 saddle *kura*.  
 sail *ho*; — boat *hobune*.  
 sailor *sendō*.  
 sake of, for the *no tame ni*.  
 salt *shio*; — pickle *shiozuke*.  
 salty *shiokarai, shoppai*.  
 salute *shukuhō*.  
 same *onaji, dō-*; the — thing  
 as *torimonaosazu*.  
 sample *mhon*.  
 sarcastic, be *kuchi ga warui*.  
 sardine *iwashi*.  
 sash *obi*.  
 satisfied, be *manzoku suru*.  
 saunter *buraburaaruku* [ru.  
 save *tasukeru*; (money) *tame-  
 say iu, hanasu, mōsu, ossharu*;  
 they —, it is said *sō desu*.  
 scarce *sukunai*.

- scarf (priest's) *kesa*.  
scatter (*harabara*) *maku*, *chirasu*, *chirakasu*.  
scenery *keshiki*.  
scholar, learned man *gakusha*; pupil *seito*. [*gakkō*.  
school *gakkō*; primary — *shōscol* *shikaru*.  
screen *byōbu*. [*senchō*.  
sea *umi*, *oki*, *-kai*; — captain  
search *sagasu*.  
season *jisetsu*.  
seat *za*, *seki*, *koshikake*.  
second (adj) *dai ni no*. [*chō*.  
section *bulun*; (of a street)  
secure for one (a servant or  
wife) *sewa suru*.  
see *miru*, *haiken itasu*, *go ran  
nasaru*, *kembutsu suru*; meet  
*o me ni kakaru*; be seen, can  
be seen, can see *mieru*;  
allow 255 (causative); see  
to it that *yō ni suru*.  
seed *tane*.  
seedling *nae*.  
seem, seem as if *yō ni mieru*,  
*yō desu*; — to be *-rashii*,  
*-sō desu*; — to be none, —  
not *nasasō desu*; seems to  
me *yō ni omou*.  
seldom *metta ni*.  
select *erinuku*.  
self (myself, yourself, etc.,) *mi*,  
(*go*) *jibun de*, *hitori de*.  
sell *uru*; — out *uriharau*; be  
sold out *urikireru*; (on the  
part of the Government) *uri-  
sageru*, *haraisageru*.  
send *okuru*, (*okutte*) *yokosu*, *to-  
dokeru*, *tsukawasu*, *motaseru*  
(*motasete*) *yaru*, *dasu*; (word)  
*itte yokosu*; (a letter) *dasu*,  
*sashiageru*; (a telegram)  
*utsu*.  
sensitive, be *ki ga hayai*.  
sentence *bun*, *bunshō*.  
sepulcher *go ryō*, *misasagi*, *go  
byō*, *otayama*.  
serious *tai shita*, *mitsukashii*.  
sermon *sekkyō*.  
servant *meshitsukai*; (man) *ge-  
nan*; (girl) *gejo*, *kahi*, *osan-  
don*.  
serve (intr.) *hōkō suru*. [*dekiru*.  
serve (a meal) *dasu*; be served  
set (tr.) *oku*, *sueru*; (a watch)  
*awaseru*; — free *hanasu*.  
set out *tatsu*, *tabidatsu*.  
settle *sumaseru*, *torimatomeru*.  
sever *furikiru*.  
severe *hageshii*; (of earth-  
quake) *tsuyoi ōkii*.  
severely *sanzan (ni)*.  
sew *nuu*.  
shallow *asai*.  
shampoo *momu*, *amma wo  
toru*.  
shampooer *amma*.  
shell *kara*.  
shin *sune*.  
shine *teru*.  
shingle *yaneita*, *koba*.  
ship *fune*, *sen*; — yard *sōsenjō*.  
shirt *juban*, *shatsu*.  
shoe *kutsu*.  
shoot *utsu*.  
shop *mise*; — keeper *akindo*.  
shopping *kaimono*.  
shore *kishi*.  
short *mijikai*; (of stature) *sei  
ga hikui*; a—time *shibaraku*.  
shorthand *sokki*; take down in  
— *sokki suru*.  
should *-tara yoroshii*.  
show *miseru*, *go ran ni ireru*.  
shrewd *kashikoi*, *rikō na*.  
shrine *o miya*; Shinto — *o ya-  
shiro*; ancestral — *otamaya*.

- shut *shimeru, shimete oku*;—  
up the house *amado wo tateru*.
- sick, be *byōki desu, byōki ni natte iru*; get — *byōki ni kakaru (naru)*; — one, — person, — people *byōnin*.
- sickness *byōki, yamai*.
- side *kō*.
- sight, get out of *mienaku naru*; be out of — *kakureru*.
- sign *shirushi, shirase*; good — *kiitchō, engi no yoi koto*.
- silent, be *damaru*; keep — *damatte iru*.
- silk *kinu*; raw — *ito*.
- simple *assari shita*.
- since *kara, irai*; long — *tōkara, yohodo mae kara*.
- sing *utau*; (of a bird) *saezuru*.
- sink *shizumu*.
- sir *danna (san)*.
- sister *shimai* 422.
- sit *suwaru*; (on a chair) (*koshi wo*) *kakeru*.
- size *ōkisa*.
- skating *kōrisuberi*.
- skillful *jōzu na*.
- skin (n.) *kawa*.
- skin (v.) *muku, surimuku*.
- skirt *suso*.
- slander *soshiru*.
- sleep *neru, nemuru*.
- sleepy *nemui*.
- sleeve *sode, tamoto*. [*suru*].
- slender, be *hosonagai, surari to*
- slide, paper *shōji*.
- slippery *subesube shita*.
- slow *osoī, noroi*.
- slowly *noronoro*.
- sly, on the *kossori*.
- small *chiīsai, komakai*.
- smallpox *tennentō*.
- smart, be *ki ga kittle iru*.
- smash *kowasu*.
- smell of (intr.) *no nioi ga siru*.
- smoke (n.) *kemuri*.
- smoke (tobacco) *nomu, suu, pokaripokarito fukasu*.
- snake *hebi*.
- snap, with a *pin to*.
- sneeze *kushami suru*.
- snow *yuki*.
- so *sō, kō, a, sonna ni, konna ni, anna ni, sahodo*; so many *amari*; (conj.) *kara*; so that *yō ni*; so as not to *-nai yō ni*; so high that *hodo takai, takakute*.
- soak *hitasu*.
- sober, get *yoi ga sameru*.
- sock *kutsushita*.
- soft *yawarakai, yawaraka na*.
- soldier *heisotsu, heitai*.
- some (pron.) *sukoshi*.
- some *aru* (often not to be translated); — one, — body *dare ka, hito*; — where *dokoka*; — time ago *sakki*; for — time *shibaraku*; — other time *izure*, — times *toki to shite, toki ni yotte*. [422.
- son *musuko, segare, go shisoku*
- song *uta*.
- soon *hayaku, chikai uchi (ni), sugu ni, jiki ni, tōkarasu*,
- very — *sassoku*; as — as to *sugu (ni)*.
- sore *itai*. [(*desu*).
- sorry, I am *o kinodoku sama*
- sot *ōzakenomi*.
- sound (n.) *oto*. [*suru, kikoeru*].
- sound (v.) *hibaku, naru, oto ga*
- sour *suppai*.
- south *minami*.
- spark *hibana*.
- sparrow *suzume*.
- speak *hanasu, iu*.

- speaker, crator *benshi*.  
 special *kakubetsu na*; with—  
   pains *sekkaku*.  
 specially *betsu ni, kakubetsu,*  
   *betsudan, tokubetsu ni* 320c.  
 speculation (in stocks) *sōba*.  
 spend *tsukan, tsuiyasu*.  
 spirit *ki, kokoro*.  
 spite of the fact that, in *no ni*  
 spoil (intr.) *waruku naru, ike-*  
   *naku naru.* [*kunau*.  
 spoil (tr.) *waruku suru, shiso-*  
 spot, on the *sono ba de*.  
 spread *shiku*; — sails *ho wo*  
   *kakeru*.  
 spring *karu*.  
 sprinkle *maku, sosogu.* [*meku*.  
 stagger (*hyorohyoro to*) *yoro-*  
 stake (money) *kakeru*.  
 stand *tatsu, tatte iru*.  
 start, start out *tatsu, deru, de-*  
   *kakeru, shuttatsu suru*; —on  
   a journey *tabi ni deru.* [*dasu*.  
 start a conflagration *kwaji wo*  
 startled, be *gyotto suru*.  
 station (railway) *suteishon, tei-*  
   *shaba*.  
 statue *sō*.  
 stature *sei*.  
 stay *tomaru, iru, taizai suru*.  
 steadily *jitto*.  
 steal *nusumu*.  
 steamboat, steamer (*jō*) *kisen*.  
 steel (for striking fire) *hi-*  
   *uchigane*.  
 stenograph *sokki suru*.  
 still *mada, yahari*.  
 stomach *i, hara, onaka*.  
 stone *ishi*.  
 stony, *ishi no ōi*.  
 stop (tr.) *tomeru, yameru*.  
 stop (intr.) *tomaru*.  
 stopping place *shuku, yado*  
   (*ya*).
- storehouse *kura*.  
 storm *ōkaze, arashi shike*.  
 story (*o*) *hanashi*.  
 story-teller *hanashika*.  
 stout, be *futtote iru*.  
 strange *hen na, kitai na*.  
 street *dōro, machi*; —car *tetsu-*  
   *dō-basha*; — car line *basha-*  
   *tetsudō*.  
 strike *utsu, tataku*.  
 string *ito*; paper — *koyori*.  
 strong *tsuyoi jōbu na*; (of liq-  
   uor) *kitsui*; (of tea) *koi*.  
 stuck up, get *tsukeagaru*.  
 student *gakusei, shosei, seito*.  
 studious, be *ō nkyō suru, desu*.  
 study (v.) *gakumon suru ben-*  
   *kyō suru, keiko suru manabu*  
   *narau*; can — *gakumon ga*  
   *dekiru*.  
 stumble *ketsumazuku*.  
 style-*fu*; (literary) *buntai*.  
 stylish, be *sharete iru*.  
 substantial *shikkari shita*.  
 subtract *hiku*.  
 succeed *seikō suru, jōju suru*.  
 such: see 39.  
 suck *suu*.  
 sudden illness *kyūkyō*.  
 suddenly *kyū ni, fui ni, totsue-*  
   *zen, desu*.  
 suffice, be sufficient *tariru*.  
 sugar *satō*. [*satsu suru*.  
 suicide *jisatsu*; commit — *jī-*  
   sullen, be *pumpun suru*.  
 summer *natsu*.  
 sun *hi taiyō o tentō sama*; the  
   — is up *hi ga deta*; the —  
   has set *hi ga kureta*.  
 sunflower *himawari*.  
 sunshine *hinata*.  
 supper *yūhan*.  
 sure, *moiōyori*.  
 surely *kitto, kanarazu*.

- swallow (n.) *tsubame*; — tail coat *embifuku*.  
 swallow (v.) *nomu*.  
 sweet *amai*; become — (of a persimmon) *shibu ga nukeru*.  
 swift *hayai*; (of a stream) *nagare ga hayai*.  
 swim *oyogu*; — out *oyogideru*; swimming *mizuabi*; swimming place *oyogiba*.  
 sword *katana*; the two swords *daishō*. [seido.  
 system *soshiki*; (of government) tail *o, shippo*.  
 tailor *shitateya*.  
 take *toru, motte iku (mairu)*: (a person) *tsureru, tsurete iku*; (a bath) *mesu*; (a castle) *otosu*; (an examination) *ukeru*; (a cold) *hiku*; — care *ki wo tsukeru*; — one's leave *go men wo kōmuru, o itoma mōsu*; — in *no naka ye ireru*; — out *dasu*; — off (a garment) *nugu*; — down (in writing) *kakitoru*; — over *hikiukeru*; — the place of *ni narikawaru*; — hold of (as a leech) *ni suitsuku*; (of time) *kakaru*; be taken with consumption *haibyō ni kakaru (naru)*; — the trouble to *sekkaku*.  
 talented, be *sai ga aru*.  
 talk (v.) *hanasu, hanashi wo suru, shaberu, iu*.  
 talk (n.) *hanashi*.  
 tall, be *sei ga takai*.  
 taste *aji*. [meru.  
 tax *zei*; pay taxes *zei wo osha- tea o cha*. [waru.  
 teach *oshieru*; be taught *osota*.  
 teacher *sensei*.  
 teacup *chawan*.  
 teakettle *tetsubin*.  
 tear *saku, yaburu*; — down *to- rikuzusu*.  
 tearfully *nakunaku*.  
 tears *namida*; be moved to — *namidagumu*.  
 tease *jirasu, hiyakasu*.  
 telegram *dempō, denshin*.  
 telephone *denwa*.  
 tell *ni iu, hanashite kikaseru mōshite yaru, iitsukeru*.  
 temperature *ondo*.  
 temple (Buddhist) *o tera*.  
 temporarily *kari ni*.  
 tepid *nurui*. [years *nengen*.  
 term (at school) *gakki* — of than *yori*. [masu.  
 thank you, I *arigatō (gozai- that (pron) are, sore; (adj.) ano, sono, asoko no, achira no; that place asoko, soko, achi (ra), sochi (ru); — time (sono) tōji; in — manner, to — effect; like — sonna ni*.  
 that (conj.) *to iu, to iu no ga (wo or wa), koto ga (wo or wa), no ga (wo or wa); (purpose) yō ni; (result) hodo*.  
 thaw *tokeru*.  
 the : see I; the more the better *ōi hodo yoroshii*.  
 theater *shibai (goya), gekijō*.  
 then (adv.) *sono toki, sore kara; (conj.) sō shite, sonnara*.  
 there *asoko, soko, achi (ra), sochi (ra) de (ni or ye); — is, — are (naka ni wa) aru*.  
 these; see this.  
 thick *atsui*; (of a fog) *fukai*.  
 thicket *yabu*.  
 thief *dorobō*.  
 thing *mono*.  
 thin *usui*. [goto.  
 thing *mono, koto*; things *mono-*



- think *omou, omowareru, kangaueru.*
- thirsty, be *nodo ga kawasite iru, nonitai.*
- this (pron.) *kore*; (adj.) *kono, koko no, kochira no, tō-, hon-*; — place *koko, kochi (ra)*; — time *kondo*; about — time *imagoro*; by — time *mō*; from — time on *kore kara*; as high as — *konna ni takai.*
- those: see "that".
- though *tatoi* — *te mo, no ni, no kuse ni.*
- thought *kangae, oboshimeshi.*
- throat *nodo.*
- through *tōshite, -tōsu, -nukeru, -kireru*; — and — (of a wetting) *bisshori.*
- throw *nageru*; — at, — upon *buttsukeru, nagekakeru*; — away *suteru.*
- thud, with a *patatto.*
- thunder *kaminari.*
- tide *shio*; ebb — *hikishio, shiohi*; flood — *michishio, sashishio, ageshio.*
- tie *iwaeru, shibaru.*
- tiger *tora.*
- tight *shikkari to, pishanto.*
- time *toki, ji, jibun*; leisure *hima, itoma*; dreadful — *hidoi me*; by the — *made ni wa*; some — ago *sakki*; for some — *sakki kara*; five times *go hen, go do, itsu tabi*; five times as large as *yori go bai hodo okii.*
- tip *saki*; tips of the toes *tsumasaki.*
- tippler *jōgo.*
- tire ones' self, be tired *tsukareru kutabireru.*
- to (*no hō*) *ye, ni, made (ni), ni mukatte, ni kakete*; (sign of infinitive) *no ga (wo or wa), (tame) ni (wa), yō ni, made ni wa.*
- together *issho ni, tomo ni, -au.*
- toil, *kasegu.*
- tongue *shita.*
- too, excessively *amari, -sugiru*; also *mo*; — much *yokei (na koto).*
- tooth *ha.*
- tortoise-shell *bekkō.*
- toward *ni mukatte, tai shite.*
- town *machi.*
- toy *omocha.*
- track (railway) *reiru.*
- train (railway) *kisha.*
- train (v.) *shitsukeru.*
- transaction *urikai.*
- translate *yaku suru, naosu*; — literally *chokuyaku suru.*
- trasplant *uekaeru.*
- travel *tabi suru, ryokō suru*; — through *wo tabi suru.*
- traveler *tabibito.*
- treat *shite yaru, toriatsukai*; (medically) *ryōji suru.*
- treatment, medical (at a hot spring) *tōji.*
- treaty *jōyaku.*
- tree *ki.*
- trick *gei.*
- trifling *chiisai.*
- troubled, be *komaru*; trouble self about *ni kamau.*
- true *mokoto no, hontō no.*
- truly *makoto ni, jitsu ni.*
- trunk (for baggage) *kaban.*
- trustworthy *shikkari shita.*
- truth, honest *hontō no koto.*
- turn (intr.) *mawaru*; — round *furikaeru*; — up *dekiru.*
- twenty (years of age) *hatachi.*
- twice *ni do.*

- umbrella *kasa, kōmorigasa, karagasa, amagasa.*  
 unable, to be *koto wa dekinai, -kaneru.*  
 unavoidable *yondokoronai, yōginai.*  
 uncivilized *hirakenai.*  
 uncomfortable, feel *kokoromochi ga warui.*  
 uncommon *mezurashii.*  
 unconsciously *oboezu.*  
 under *no shita ni* ; study under *ni (tsuite) narau* ; what is — one's feet *ashimoto.*  
 underscore *shita ni bō wo kiku.*  
 understand *ga wakaru.*  
 uneasy *fuanshin na.*  
 unendurably *-te tamaranai.*  
 unexpectedly *hakarazu.*  
 unfortunately *ainiku.*  
 university *daigaku, daigakkō.*  
 unlearned *gakumon no nai.*  
 unless *kagiri wa* (or use simply negative conditional).  
 unsavory *mazui.*  
 unskillful *heta na.*  
 until *made (ni), ni kakete* ; (conj.) *uchi wa.*  
 usually *hijō ni.*  
 unskillfully *nossori.*  
 up *ue ni, -ageru, -agaru, -hateru, -hataasu* ; get up *okiru* ; be up *okite iru, nenai.*  
 urgent *isogu.*  
 use (v.) *mochiiru, tsukau* ; — up *tsukaihataasu.*  
 use (n.) *yō, yaku* ; go out of — *mochiinakku naru.*  
 useful, be *yaku ni tatsu.*  
 useless *yaku ni tatanai, fuyō na, muda na, dame na.*  
 usual *atarimae no, itsu mo no, rei no, tsūrei no* ; more than — *itsu mo yori ōi.*  
 usually *tsūrei, fudan, heizei, taigai, taitei.*  
 vacant, be *aite iru.*  
 vacation *yasumi.*  
 vaccinate *uebōsō wo suru.*  
 valuable *chōhō na.*  
 vary *chigau, kawaru.*  
 various *iroiro (na)* ; — places *achikochi.*  
 vase *hanaike.*  
 veal *koushi no niku.*  
 vegetable *yasai (mono).*  
 vehicle *kuruma.*  
 venison *shika no niku.*  
 veranda *engawa.*  
 verb *dōshi.*  
 very, very much *goku, hanahada, yohodo, taisō, taihen, nakanaka, amari, hidoku, ōki ni.*  
 vexatious *mendōkusai.*  
 vicinity *kinjo.*  
 view (v) : see "see."  
 vigorous, be *tassha desu, pimpin shite iru.*  
 villa *bessō.*  
 village *mura.*  
 vine *tsuru, katsura.*  
 visit *itte miru, tazuneru, ukagau, hōmon suru, matwaru.*  
 voice *koe.*  
 volcano *kwazan.*  
 volume *satsu.*  
 vulgar *iyashii, kitanai.*  
 wait *matte iru* ; — impatiently *machikaneru.*  
 waken *okosu.*  
 walk *aruku, sampo suru.*  
 wall *ishigaki, kabe.*  
 want (v.) : see wish.  
 war *sensō, ikusa, tatakai.*  
 wares *shina (mono).*  
 warm *atsui, attakai.*  
 watch (*kw.ichū*) *tokei.*

- water *mizu*, *ohiya*; hot — *o yu*.  
 water (v.) *ni mizu wo kakeru*.  
 waterfall *taki*.  
 wave *nami*.  
 way *michi*; on the — *ikigake ni*, *tochū de*; on the — back *kaerigake ni*; lose the — *michi ni mayou*, *michi wo machigaeru*.  
 weak *yowai*; (of tea) *usui*; be-  
 come — *yowaru*.  
 wear *kiru*, *mesu*; (on the head) *kaburu*; (a sword) *sasu*; (shoes) *haku*.  
 weather *o tenki*.  
 weave *oru*.  
 weight *mekata*.  
 well (n.) *ido*.  
 well (adj.) *yoi*, *jōbu na*, *tassha na*, *nubyō na*, get — *byōki ga* *naoru*. [ni.  
 well (adv.) *yoku*, *umaku*, *jōzu*  
 well (interj.) *oya!*  
 west *nishi*.  
 Western, foreign *Seiyō nō*.  
 wet, be *nurete iru*, *shimette iru*.  
 wet (tr.) *nurasu*.  
 whale *kujira*.  
 what? *nani*; (adj.) *dō iu*, *donna*, *nan to iu*, *nan no*, *nani*;  
 — day *ikka*, *nannichi*, *naniyōbi*; — kind of, — sort of *dō iu*, *donna*, etc.; (relative *mono*, *koto*, *no*.  
 when? *itsu (kara)*; (conj.) *toki ni*, *jibun ni*, *to*, *-tara*, *no ni*.  
 where? *doko (ye)*, *dochira*, *doko wo sashite*.  
 whether — or *ka* — *ka*.  
 which *dore*; (of the two) *dochira*; (adj.) *dono*, *doko no*, *dochira no*. [zu.  
 while, for a *shibaraku*, *hitoma-*
- while (conj.) *uchi (ni, wa)*, *aida (ni, wa)*.  
 white *shiroi*.  
 who? *dare*, *donata*; (relative) *hito*, *mono*.  
 whole *subete*, *nokorazu*, *maru de*, *issai*, *zen-*, *-jū*; the — night *yodōshi*.  
 whose? *dare no*. [de.  
 why? *naze*, *dō shite*, *dō iu wake* width *haba*.  
 wife *tsuma*, *sai*, *kanai*, *oku san*, *o kami san*, *saikun*, *nyōbō*; — and children *saishi*.  
 wild, naturally *shizen to*.  
 wild beast *mōjū*.  
 wilful *wagamama na*.  
 willow *yanagi*.  
 win *katsu*.  
 wind *kaze*. [garasu.  
 window *mado*; — glass *mado*-  
 windpipe *nodobue*.  
 windy, be *kaze ga tsuyoi*.  
 wine *budōshu*. [fuyufuku.  
 winter *fuyu*; — clothing *fuyugi*,  
 wipe *fuku*.  
 wish to *-tai to omou*, *-tai to iu*;  
 — it were, — I could, *-ba ii ga*;  
 — you would, — he would *-te moritai (itadakitai)*.  
 wistaria *fuji*.  
 with *to issko ni*, *to tomo ni*, *to ni tsuite ni*; (of instrument) *de*, *wo motte*; a loud voice *takai koe de*, *ōki na koe wo shite*.  
 withdraw from *wo tōzakeru*.  
 within *no uchi (ni)*, *chū (ni)*, *no aida (ni)*, *kan (ni)*, *no naka ni (ye)*.  
 without *nakute wa*, *naku*, *nashi ni wa*; — going *ikazu ni*; — fail *kanarazu*; — any special reason *nantonaku*.

- wolf *ōkami*.  
 woman *onna*.  
 wood *ki*.  
 wooden *ki no*.  
 word *kotoba* ; in a — *hito kuchi ni* ; send — *itte yokosu*.  
 work, be at work (v.) *nataraku*, *shigoto wo suru*.  
 worn (n.) *yō*, *shigoto*.  
 world *yo*, *yononaka*, *sekai*.  
 worm *mushi*.  
 worn (off), be *sureru*.  
 worth something, be *yaku ni tatsu* ; not worth a rin *ichi rin ni mo naranai*.  
 would (use probable form), he wouldn't be in such distress if *nara anna ni komaru n' de wa nakatta ni*.  
 wound *kizu*.  
 wrecked, be *hasen suru* 89h.  
 wrestler *sumōtori*.  
 wrestling *sumō*.  
 write *kaku*, *tsukuru*, *koshiraeru*.  
 writing-brush *fude*.  
 year *toshi*, *nen*, *sai* ; five years of age *itsutsu ni naru*, *go sai no* ; end of the — *nemimatsu*.  
 yearly *nennen*.  
 yes *hai*, *sayō*, *sō desu*.  
 yet *mada*.  
 yield *makeru*.  
 yonder *mukō ni (de)*, *asoko ni (de)*.  
 young (*toshi ga*) *wakai*, *chii-sai* ; — man *seinen*.  
 youth, juvenility *yōshō*.  
 zero *rei*, *reiten*, *reido*.  
 zoölogical *dōbutsugakujō no* ; — garden *dōbutsuen*.

## GRAMMATICAL INDEX.\*

- accent *on-setsu* xxiv, xxx.  
 accusative *dai-shi-kaku* 11 ;  
     with a passive 261 ; see *wo*.  
 active *nō-dō-chō* used instead of  
     passive 261b.  
 adjectives *keiyōshi* 24. 98 —  
     140 ; derived from adverbs  
     345, 352 ; used as substan-  
     tives 105, 131.  
 adverbs *fuku-shi* 314 — 361 ;  
     from regular adjectives 24.  
     98, 315 ; from subordinatives  
     162, 171, 344 ; used as sub-  
     stantive 315 ; position 57a,  
     424. [408.  
 adversative conjunctions 399,  
 agent *hataraki-te* 369, 255, 261  
     132a, 160f.  
 agglutination 1.  
 alternative 99, 175, 245a ; with  
     *aruwa* 398.  
 apposition *dō-kaku* 396b ; ap-  
     positional genitive 8.  
 article *kwanshi* 1. [189b, 300b.  
 asyndeton 2, 70, 225a, 41d,  
 attributive word *ren-tai-gen*,  
     classical adjective 98 ; classi-  
     cal verb 144 ; need not be  
     polite form 55d ; attributive  
     clause 13, 53 ; two clauses to  
     one word 54, 439b.  
 causal clause 104h, 101, 132,  
     401, inverted 424.
- causative *shi-dō* 200 ; regular  
     254.  
 clause *ku* as adjective 123, 127.  
 comparative degree *hikaku kyū*  
     135, 23d, 25f ; with *kara* 378.  
 compounds *juku-go*, *juku-ji* ;  
     — nouns 15 — 21, 106 ; —  
     adjectives 106, 109 ; — verbs  
     *kumitate dōshi* 284 — 308 ;  
     euphonic changes xxx.  
 concessive *kyōyō-hō* ; by inflec-  
     tion 99, 265d ; subordinative  
     with *mo* 102, 167, 172 ; ad-  
     jective or verb with (*no*) *ni*  
     132, 273 ; adverb or verb  
     with *to mo* 316, 400 ; other  
     idioms 401, 289c, 360a ; in-  
     verted 424. [144.  
 conclusive word *shūshi-gen* 98,  
 conditional *katei-hō*, *yakusoku-*  
     *hō* 424 — 423 ; by inflection  
     99, 148, 158, 246 ; subordi-  
     native with *wa* 102, 167, 171 ;  
     with conjunctions 396, 400,  
     407, 408 ; preterit with *hō*  
     153f ; future with *mon'* 148a,  
     158a ; used as connective  
     312e ; inverted 424.  
 conjugation *dōshi no henkwa*,  
     *kwatsuyō* 140, 179.  
 conjunctions *setsu-zoku-shi* 395  
     — 413 ; derived from subor-  
     dinatives 456b.

\* See also the Table of Contents. For Japanese words see the Vocabulary Index. The Japanese equivalents of the most common terms are given to facilitate conversation with the teacher.

- connective form 98, 280; conditional used as 312e.
- consonants *shi-in* xxviii-xxix; double xxviii.
- contrast *tai-hi* 3, 101: see *wa*.
- dative *dai san kaku* 9; see *ni*.
- demonstrative *shi-shi* (指示) 36.
- dependent clause *soku-ku* 424—425. [109, 284.
- derivative *shi-shi* (支詞) 21, desiderative 100, 175.
- dialect *namari, kō-gen* xiv.
- duplicative *jū-go* 326, 330.
- ellipsis *shō-ryaku* 426, 164, 209c, 218d, 218f, 317f.
- euphony *om-bin* xxiv — xxxi, 69, 79, 214.
- feminine gender *jo-sei* 2.
- final clause with *ni* 278; with *tote* 401; with *tame ni* 408.
- frequentative 141c.
- future *mi-rai* 143.
- gender *sei* 2.
- genitive *dai ni kaku* 7 (see *no*); classical form 339a, 346a; explicative 89a; objective 121f. [xviii.
- grammar *bun-ten*; classical homonymns *dō-on-i-gi* xiii.
- honorifics *kei-go* xv, 142, 278; — by inflections 268, 254a; *o* and *go* 31, 100, 216, 421; special verbs 189, 206, 308; take the place of personal pronouns 313c.
- hybrids *jūbako-yomi, yūtō-yomi* 19, 77b, 197b, 380a.
- imperative *meirei-hō* 150, 158, 246; particles 415.
- inconclusive word *renjō-gen* 98, 280. [354.
- indefinites *fu-jō-dai-meishi* 45,
- indicative *chokusetsu-hō* 272 — 280; with *mo* 400.
- infinitive *fu-jō-hō* 141; of purpose 278, 368.
- inflection *ken-kwa, kukkyoku*; tendency to—in Japanese ix; of Chinese words xb.
- interjections *kan-tō-shi* 414.
- interrogatives *gimon-dai-meishi* 42; used with *wa* and *ga* 17g, 20c, 42c; particles 415; *ka* not required 397b: in conditional clauses 249c; position in sentence 424.
- intransitives *ji-dōshi* 180, 100, 221, 239;— and passives 262, 260c;— in compounds inversion 424, 198e. [285.
- masculine gender *dan-sei* 2.
- modifiers, position of 7, 424.
- negative *hi-tei, uchi-keshi* 141; by inflection 100, 154; present for preterit 56a; *de* not required 276b; with *wa* 35e; with *mo* 354; accumulation of negatives 160e.
- nominative 3: see *ga*.
- nouns *jitsu-meishi* 1—26: see substantives.
- number, *sū*. 1
- numerals *sū-shi* 61—97; resemble adverbs 341, 424; as substantives 424a.
- numeratives *jo-sū-shi*, 82—93; take no particles 65.
- object *mokuteki-kaku*; with *wo* 11; with *wa* 3; with *no* 213; with *ga* 268; indirect—370; position in sentence 424.
- onomatopes 325.
- optative 149.
- ordinal *junjo-sūshi* 93.
- passive *ju-dō-chō*; 259—266.
- past *kwa-ko* 143; emphatic—275c, 295c; as adjective 128; with *toki* 407.

perfect : see past.

person 27, 141 : see honorifics.

personal pronoun *jin-dai-meishi*.

pleonasm *zei-gen* 72c, 198a, 352a, 352c, 359e, 404a.

plural, *fuku-sū* 1, 28, 42, 57.

postpositions *kō-chi-shi* 362 — 394. [266.

potential *kanō-hō* 259; regular predicate; — nouns 13, 190, 365; — adjectives 24.

prepositions represented by *wo* 362; represented by auxiliary verb 284 : see postpositions.

present *gen-zai* 143; — negative for past 115, 156b; with *to* 396; with *toki* 407.

preterit : see past. [154.

probable *kas-zen* (蓋然) 143, progressive 163a.

pronouns *dai-meishi* 27 — 60; should include *koko*, *ima*, *do-ko*, *itsu*, etc. 36a, 42a; represented by adverbs 49, 57.

pronunciation *hatsu-on* xxiv — xxxi.

purpose : see final.

quotation 396; — of a polite phrase addressed to one's self 306a,

result 101, 409 (*hodo*), 413b.

singular *tan-sū* 1.

stems *go-kon*; of adjectives 106; of verbs 142; used like subordinatives 162b, 280, 285; used as substantives 106, 277; with *suru* 213, 279; with *fu*-196c; used as adverbs 350.

subject *shu-kaku* 3 (see *ga*, *wa*); with *wo* 428a; with *de* 365; subordinate 6, 259c, 261b; often vague 268a; position in sentence 424.

subordinative *jū-zoku-hō* 141b; significance 563a, 369c; of adjectives 101; of verbs 162 — 170; negative — 170, 408a; affected by negative of principal verb 156a; with *oku*, *itadaku* 226; with *kuru* 231; with *shimau*, *morau* 250; used as adjective 137b; as adverb 344; as postposition 390; as conjunction 456b.

substantives used as adjectives 133 — 123; as verbs 213; as adverbs 337; as postpositions 383; as conjunctions 406; substantivized verbs 272.

superlative degree *saijō kyū* 136.

syllabary *gojūon*, *iroha* xx, xxi syntax *bunshō-gaku* ix-x 424 — 426; like Manchurian 1; not like Chinese 1x.

tense *ji hō* (時法) 143.

transitives *ta-dōshi*: see intransitives.

units *tan-i* 64, 68-70, 82-93.

verbs *dō-shi* 141 — 313; two classes 10, 142, 185; used as adjectives 53, 127; position in the sentence 424.

vocative *dai go haku* 415.

vowels *bō-in* xxiv-xxvii; in compounds xxxa.

明治三十六年九月十五日印刷  
 明治三十四年九月十五日再版印刷  
 明治三十二年四月十七日再版印刷  
 明治三十四年四月十七日再版印刷  
 明治三十二年十月二十日訂正參版發行



版權所有

編輯  
 行人兼

仙臺市光禪寺通五十九番地

クリストファー、ノツス

印刷人

東京市京橋區銀座四丁目一番地

デー、エス、スペンサー

印刷所

東京市京橋區銀座四丁目一番地

教文館印刷所

發行所

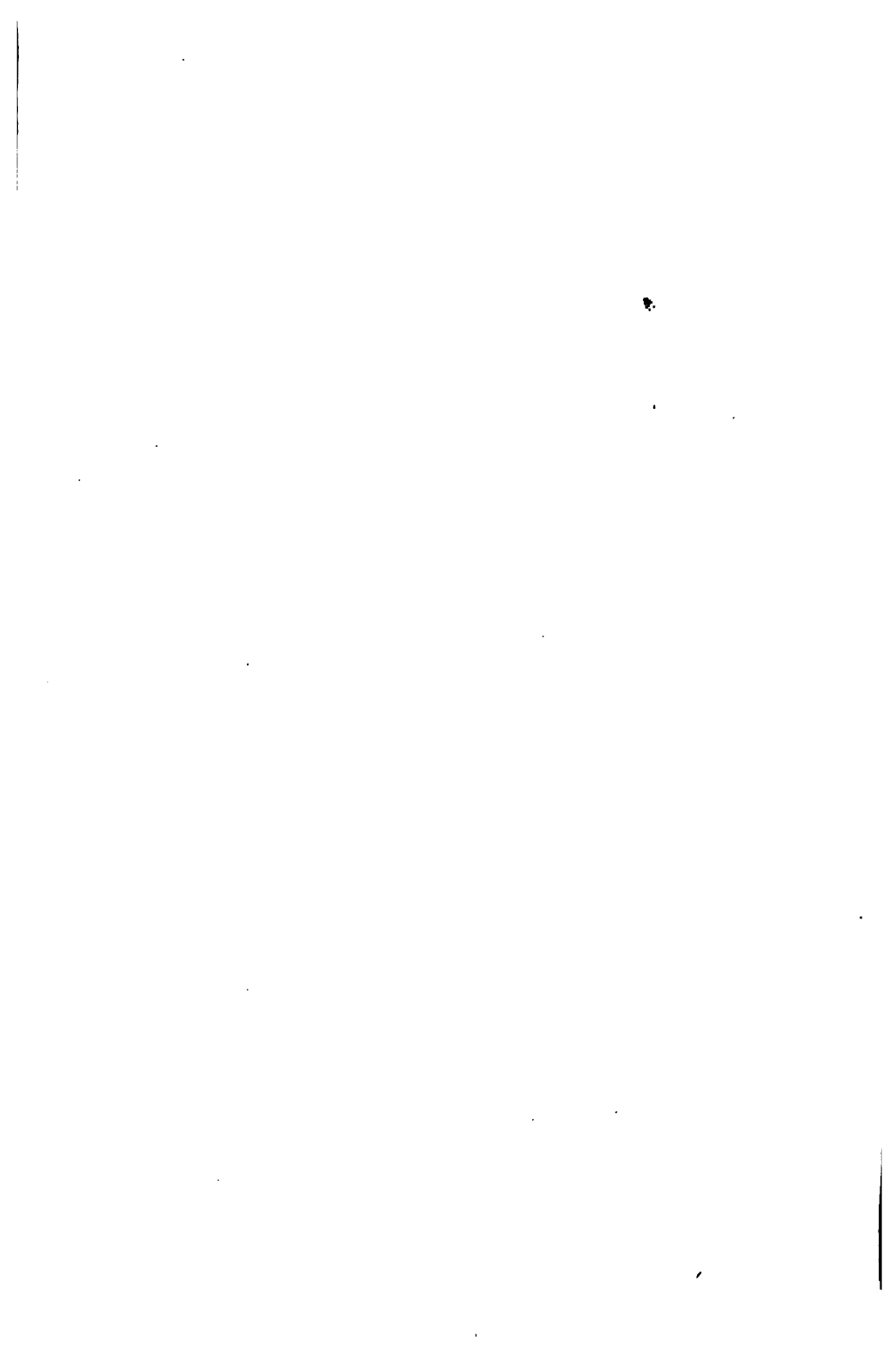
東京市京橋區銀座四丁目一番地

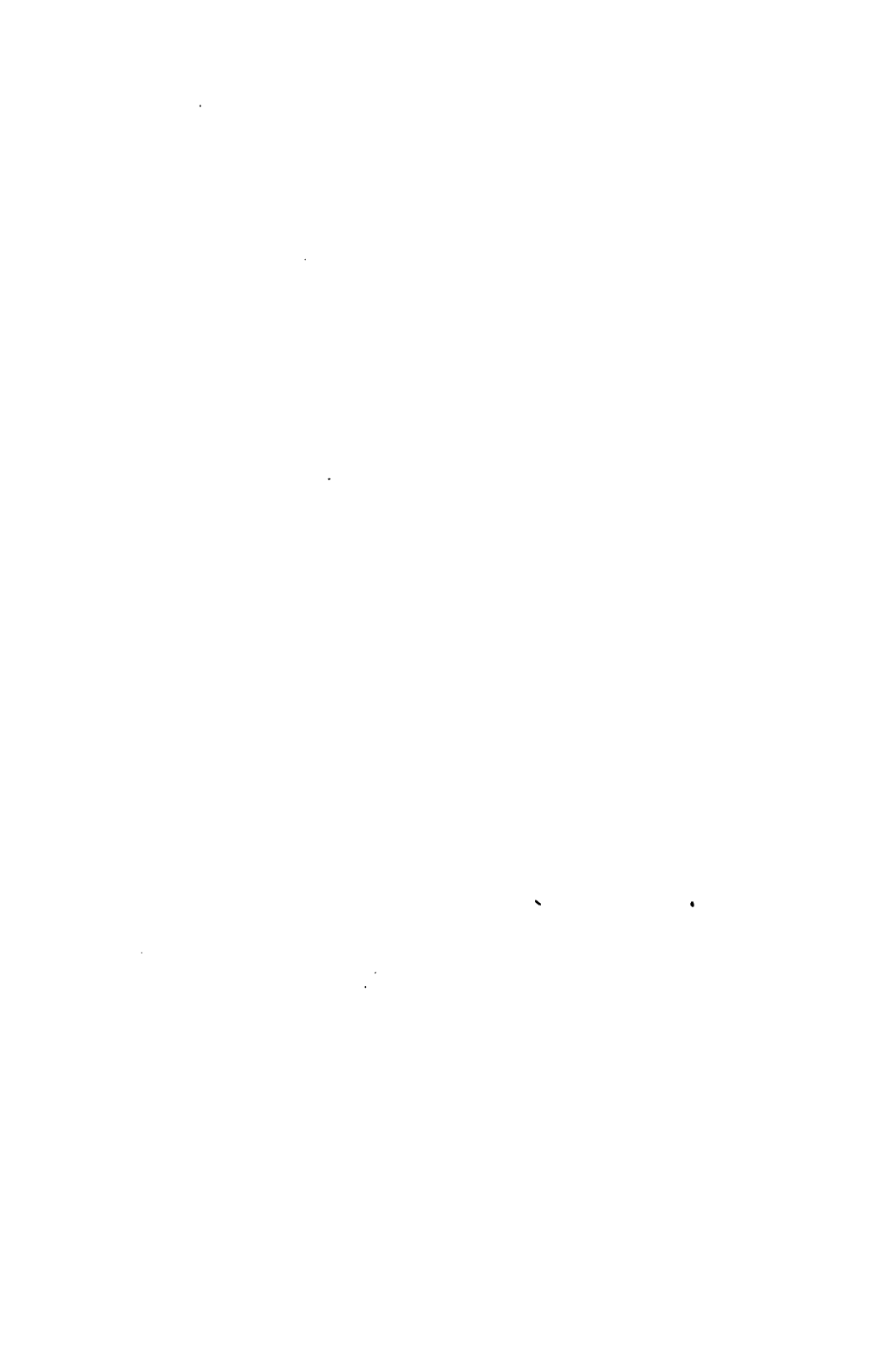
教文館

定價金五圓



1017







UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY  
BERKELEY

Return to desk from which borrowed.  
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

7 Sep 50 MW

REC'D

MAR 17 '67-8 AM

MAY 10 1952 LU

LOAN DEPT.

JUN 10 1952 LU

10 Nov '54 DP

OCT 27 1954 LU

23 May 1956

REC'D

MAY 30 1953

MAR 15 1957 15

YU 54415

221154

715  
L274

**THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY**

